



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



due T 2118.27.460.

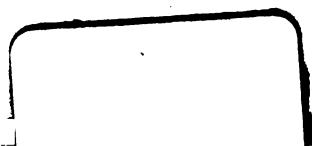
HARVARD COLLEGE  
LIBRARY



THE ESSEX INSTITUTE  
TEXT-BOOK COLLECTION

GIFT OF  
GEORGE ARTHUR PLIMPTON  
OF NEW YORK

JANUARY 25, 1924



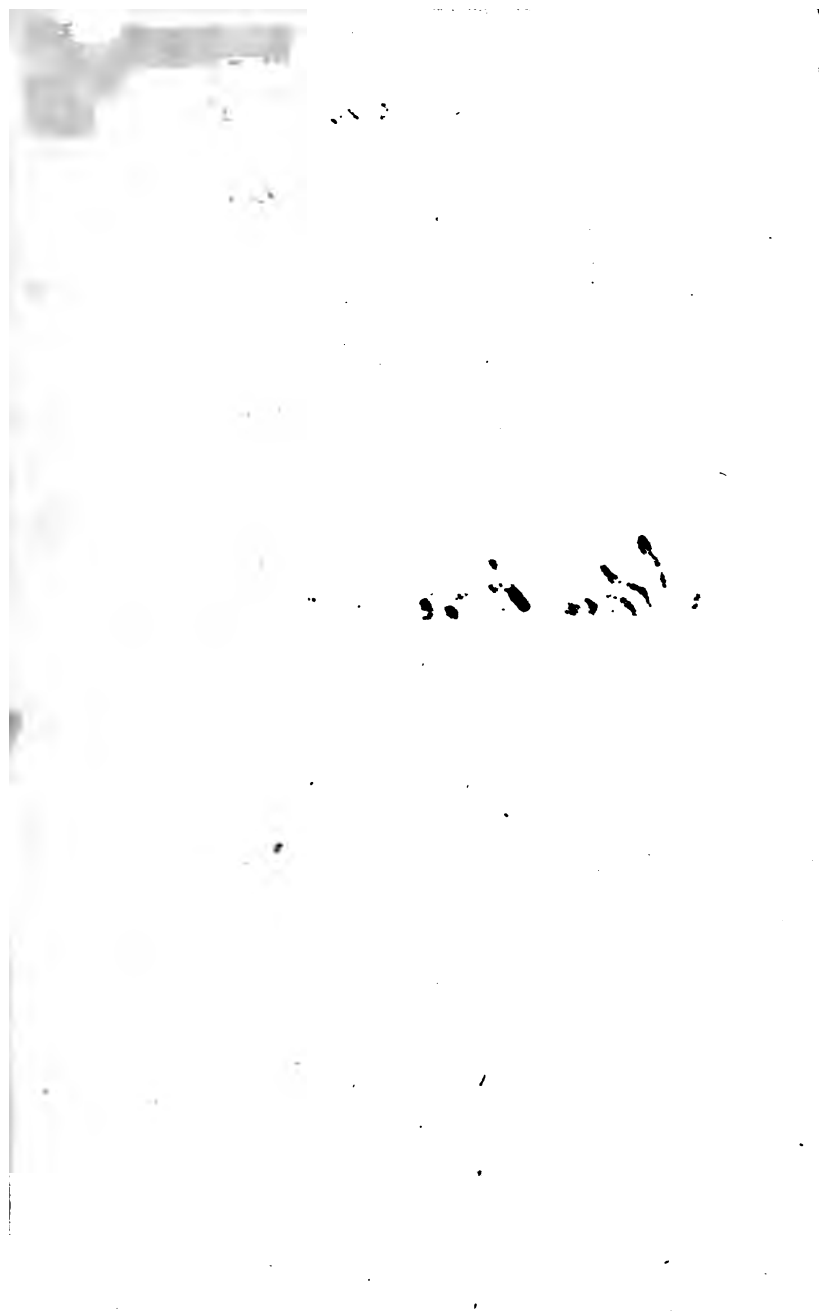
Benjamin Tucker  
Salem. 1830



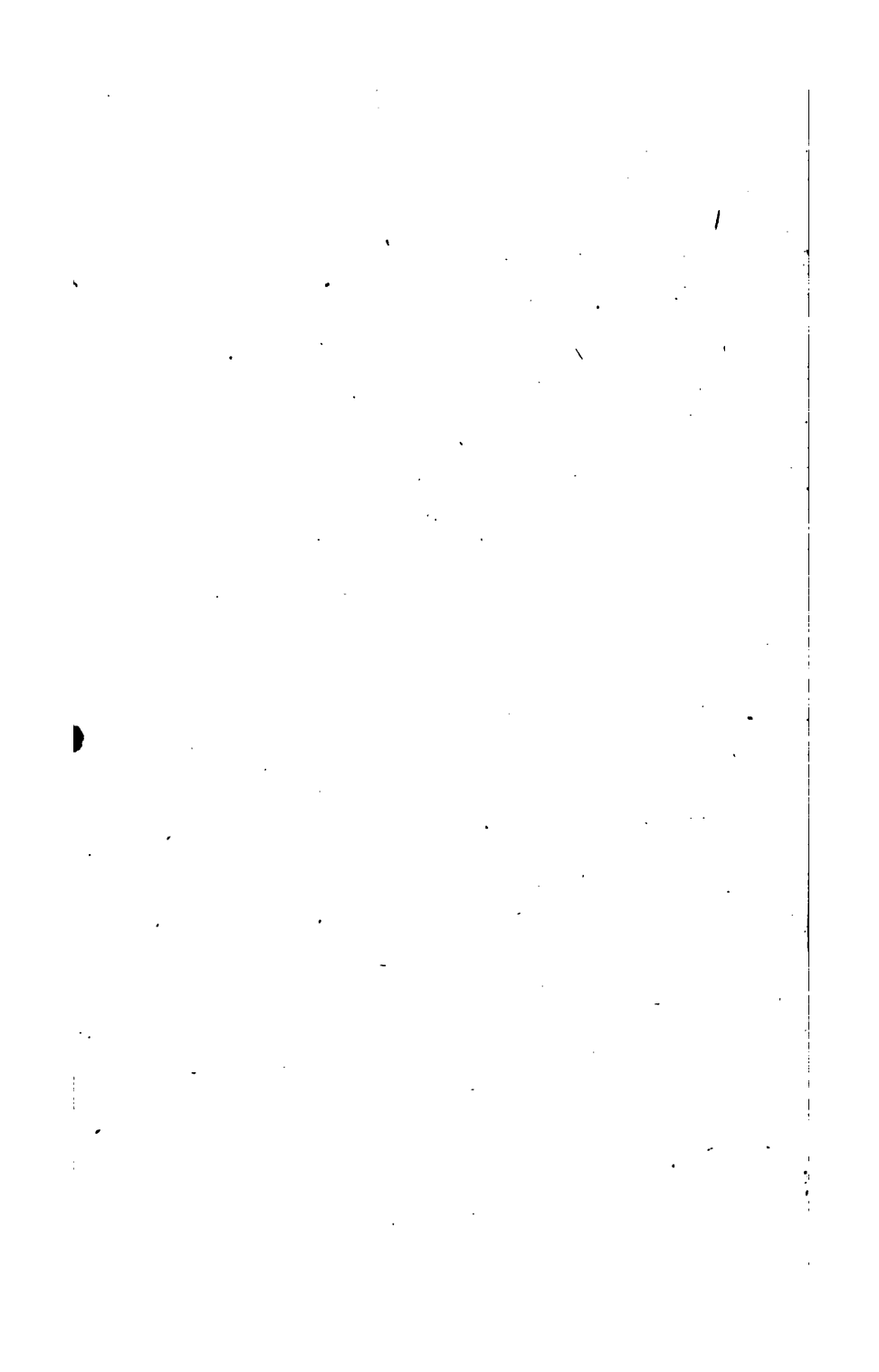
3 2044 102 869 211

John Rose Lee.









**GRAMMAR**  
OF THE  
**SPANISH LANGUAGE,**  
WITH  
**PRACTICAL EXERCISES.**

**The First Part**

Containing a List of the Abbreviations which are frequently found in writing and books; A Treatise on Pronunciation and Alterations in Orthography, founded upon the latest Rules established by the Academy of Madrid; Comparative Rules of the Spanish and English Languages; A general Scheme of the Terminations of Regular Verbs; An alphabetical List of the Irregular Verbs, conjugated in their order; A Table, illustrating the use of Prepositions in Spanish; Lists of the Names of different Countries, Islands, Capes, Seas, Rivers, Cities, and Christian Names.

**The Second Part**

Containing a Collection of Exercises interlined; a Vocabulary; Familiar Phrases and Dialogues; a Treatise on Spanish Versification; Spanish Extracts, &c. the whole carefully accented.

BY M. JOSSE.

REVISED, AMENDED, IMPROVED, AND ENLARGED,  
BY F. SALES.

*Instructor of French and Spanish at Harvard University, Cambridge.*

THIRD AMERICAN EDITION.

"PEU DE PRÉCEPTES, ET BEAUCOUP DE PRATIQUE."

**FIRST PART.**

**BOSTON:**  
**MUNROE AND FRANCIS, 128 WASHINGTON-STREET,**  
**CORNER OF WATER-STREET.**

1827.

Educ T 2118.27.460

At the Bookstore of the publishers of this Grammar may be found the following *Elementary Works* prepared for students by F. SALES, corrected according to the latest rules on Orthography by the SPANISH ACADEMY, necessary English explanations at the bottom of the pages, and the pronunciation facilitated with the accents of prosody.

RUDIMENTS of the SPANISH LANGUAGE, 1 vol. 18mo.

COLMENA ESPAÑOLA, or SPANISH EXTRACTS, 1 vol. 18mo.

CÁRTAS MARRUÉCAS, followed by a SELECTION OF POEMS, by CADÁLISO, 1 vol. 12mo.

CARTILLA ó SILABARIO y MÉTODO PRÁCTICO de enseñár á leer, para los Estados de la América Meridional.

HARVARD COLLEGE LIBRARY  
GIFT OF  
GEORGE ARTHUR PLIMPTON  
JANUARY 25, 1924

DISTRICT OF MASSACHUSETTS, TO WIT :

*District Clerk's Office,*

BE it remembered, that on the eighteenth day of August, A. D. 1827, and in the fifty second year of the Independence of the United States of America, F. SALES, of the said District, has deposited in this office the title of a book, the right whereof he claims as Proprietor, in the words following, to wit :

"A GRAMMAR of the SPANISH LANGUAGE, with Practical EXERCISES. The First Part containing a List of the Abbreviations which are frequently found in writing and books ; A Treatise on pronunciation and alterations in Orthography, founded upon the latest rules established by the Academy of Madrid ; Comparative rules of the Spanish and English Languages ; A general scheme of the terminations of Regular Verbs ; An Alphabetical List of the Irregular Verbs, conjugated in their order ; A Table, illustrating the use of Prepositions in Spanish ; Lists of the names of different Countries, Islands, Capes, Seas, Rivers, Cities, and Christian Names. The Second Part containing a Collection of Exercises interlined ; A Vocabulary ; Familiar Phrases and Dialogues ; a Treatise on Spanish Versification ; Spanish Extracts, &c. the whole carefully accented. By M. JOSSE. Revised, amended, improved, and enlarged, by F. SALES, Instructor of French and Spanish at Harvard University, Cambridge. Third American Edition. '*Peu de préceptes, et beaucoup de pratique.*'"

In conformity to the act of the Congress of the United States, entitled, "An act for the encouragement of learning, by securing the copies of maps, charts and books, to the authors and proprietors of such copies, during the times therein mentioned;" and also to an act, entitled, "An act supplementary to an act, entitled an act for the encouragement of learning, by securing the copies of maps, charts, and books, to the authors and proprietors of such copies during the times therein mentioned ; and extending the benefits thereof to the arts of designing, engraving, and etching, historical and other prints."

JOHN W. DAVIS, Clerk of the District of Massachusetts.

TO THE  
PATRONS AND LOVERS OF THE SPANISH LANGUAGE  
IN THE  
UNITED STATES OF NORTH-AMERICA,

THIS THIRD EDITION,  
*amended, improved, and enlarged,*

OF  
**Josse's Grammar,**

IS  
RESPECTFULLY DEDICATED,

BY  
THEIR OBEDIENT SERVANT,

**THE EDITOR.**

# ADVERTISEMENT

TO THE  
THIRD EDITION.

---

WE have the satisfaction of announcing to the liberal and enlightened patrons and lovers of the Spanish Language in these United States, that a Third Edition of Josse's Grammar is about to be issued from the press. We will not aver that it is exactly the same in all its parts as the last Edition, though this had been honoured by flattering commendations ; but we will confidently assert that if the previous Editions merited the approbation of the most competent and respectable judges of similar productions, the present will be found still more deserving of general acceptance.

Every part of the work has been carefully and minutely examined, and such parts as were susceptible of melioration have been assiduously amended.

We will not detail the particulars in which this Edition is superior to the preceding, as it would be a tedious enumeration of corrections and improvements ; but Instructors and Students will perceive it in almost every page ; especially in the rules and illustrations regarding the use of the Future and Conditional tenses ; in the degree of perfection to which the Alphabetical List of the Irregular Verbs has been brought ; in the new lights introduced upon the right use of the Verbs **HABÉR** and **TENÉR**, **SER** and **ESTÁR** and other verbs occasionally used as Auxiliaries ; in short, upon every other point which is singular and peculiar to the Castilian tongue.

For the relief of those who may learn by this **METHODOICAL** and **PRACTICAL SYSTEM**, we have thought proper to mark with an acute accent the vowel of every word in the Grammar on which the stress in pronouncing is laid ; so that, after a few lessons, no uncertainty can remain respecting this important subject.

*Boston, 18th August, 1827.*

## ADVERTISEMENT TO THE SECOND EDITION.

---

GRATEFUL for the approbation that our labours have met with in the rapid diffusion of a large edition of this Grammar, and encouraged by the favourable judgment passed on the theoretical and practical method observed in this elementary work, by the most distinguished philologists and eminent scholars in our country ; we now present to the American nation a second edition carefully revised, considerably altered, and improved throughout ; particularly in the arrangement of the Conjugation of the Irregular Verbs ; in giving the English signification of the Table of Prepositions published by the Royal Academy ; in prefixing an Article to every word in the Vocabulary to denote its gender ; and in assimilating as far as possible the English phraseology to the Spanish, in the Familiar Phrases and Dialogues.

We have enlarged this new edition by the addition of interesting Extracts from some of the best Spanish Writers ; with specimens of critical, familiar, and commercial Letters ; Mercantile Documents ; a Treatise on Spanish Versification, translated from the latest Paris edition of Josse's Grammar, and a copious Table of Contents ; the whole corrected in conformity to the most recent decisions on orthography of the Spanish Academy.

Our earnest purpose having been to render this publication extensively useful and acceptable to all classes and ages of learners, the public may rest assured that no pains have been spared to attain so desirable an object.

*Boston, May, 1825.*

---

## ADVERTISEMENT TO THE FIRST EDITION.

---

FROM the first appearance in this metropolis of Josse's Grammar, a desire has been entertained of adapting it to the English language ; but the little encouragement hitherto promised, in the United States, to an undertaking of this kind, has delayed its execution.



This system however has been used, and recommended to such learners of the Spanish Language as were well acquainted with the French, and we have always had the satisfaction to find them well pleased with it, commonly expressing their regret, that it had not yet been adapted to the English language.

The recognition of the North and South American Sovereignties by our Government, has determined us to make the attempt. This glorious act on the part of our nation opens such a boundless field for scientific, political and commercial advantages to the rising generation, that we could not deny ourselves the gratification of aiding the generous purpose by presenting a *key*, which will, it is hoped, open an easy way to the attainment of knowledge, honours, and wealth.

The English and Spanish Grammars, which we have hitherto used, are so irregular and incorrect, that it has required the utmost patience and perseverance of both teacher and pupil to wade through them. To this should be added the enormous price at which they are imported and sold, tending to prevent many a studious youth from acquiring a language, not only noble and beautiful, but spoken in so many regions of the earth, that the benign rays of the star of day are perennially smiling upon and fertilizing some one of them.

This work of adaptation and improvement has been commenced and finished, at different intervals, in the course of the last season, as our regular occupations would permit. We have endeavoured to perform our task faithfully; should our labour meet with approbation, we shall be rewarded; should a contrary fate await it, we shall console ourselves with the reflection that our motive was good. In the mean time it is requested that all defects which shall be discovered be made known, and any improvements suggested which may occur; so that this grammar in future editions may be rendered as perfect as possible.

We have thought proper, in order to render this work complete, and save an additional expense, to insert the Vocabulary and Dialogues of Fernandez at the end of the second part, altering the orthography according to the latest rules of the Spanish Academy. The object of collections of this kind is to teach the most usual words and phrases in familiar conversations; a sure method, after passing carefully through the Grammar and Exercises, of learning to speak a foreign language with propriety.

*Boston, October, 1822.*

## TRANSLATION OF THE PREFACE

TO THE  
PARIS EDITION.

---

THE Spanish Grammars, heretofore published for the French people, do not seem to have attained the end intended by their authors. Several of these productions have become in some manner obsolete, since the Royal Academy has given clear and precise rules for the Castilian Language, which are at present generally adopted. The more modern grammars, on the contrary, seem to be nothing more than the translation of the Grammar of the Spanish Academy. In composing them it has been too much forgotten that they are intended for the use of Frenchmen.

A grammar published in London in 1799 by Josse, Master of Languages, reprinted in the same city in 1804 and 1810, is distant alike from both these extremes, and has appeared to us to unite method with clearness in the exposition of the principles and rules compared with the French language. The author has enriched his work with a selection of interlined Exercises accompanied with notes and references to the principal rules, which may enable beginners, from the outset, to join practice to the study of precepts; a method of rendering the student familiar with the construction and difficulties of a foreign language whose utility has been fully demonstrated. This advantage alone must ensure to the Grammar of Josse a preference over those which have preceded it.

Such is the Grammar now offered to the public. By extending the knowledge of it in France, we deserve the gratitude of the lovers of the Spanish Language, the copiousness, elegance and grandeur of which are too generally acknowledged, to make it necessary for us to demonstrate its superiority over the greater part of European Languages.

We observe however that, while we have conformed to the plan of the author, and have adopted his work, we have made numerous corrections, suppressed useless repetitions, and made important additions on the subject of Participles, Prepositions, the Accent, &c. A few rules which had been omitted have been supplied, others have been modified, and several parts have been elucidated. Finally, the style has been carefully revised, and often rendered more concise.

G. HAMONIERE.

## COMMON SPANISH ABBREVIATIONS.

---

A. C.	Áño Cristiáno,	<i>in the year of Christ.</i>
A. a. <sup>s</sup>	Arróba, or arróbas,	<i>twenty-five pounds.</i>
As.	Áños,	<i>years.</i>
A. A.	Autóres,	<i>authors.</i>
A. V. E.	Á. V. <sup>ra</sup> Es. <sup>cia</sup> ,	<i>to Y. E.</i>
Adm. <sup>or</sup>	Administrador,	<i>administrator.</i>
Ag. <sup>to</sup>	Agosto,	<i>August.</i>
Am. <sup>o</sup>	Amigo,	<i>friend.</i>
An. <sup>to</sup>	António,	<i>Anthony.</i>
Ang. <sup>o</sup>	Angosto,	<i>narrow.</i>
App. <sup>co</sup> App. <sup>ca</sup>	Apostólico, ca,	<i>apostolical.</i>
Art.	Artículo,	<i>article.</i>
Arzbpo.	Arzobispo,	<i>archbishop.</i>
At. <sup>o</sup>	Aténto,	<i>respectful.</i>
B.	Beáto,	<i>blessed.</i>
B.	Vuélta,	<i>turn over.</i>
Barr.	Barril,	<i>barrel.</i>
B. <sup>r</sup>	Bachillér,	<i>bachelor.</i>
B. L. M.	Béso ó bésa las mãos,	<i>I kiss, or he kisses the hands.</i> [feet.
B. L. P.	Béso ó bésa los piés,	<i>I kiss or he kisses the</i>
B. <sup>mo</sup> P. <sup>o</sup>	Beatísimo Pádre,	<i>most blessed father.</i>
C. A. R.	Cat. <sup>o</sup> Ap. <sup>co</sup> Rom. <sup>o</sup>	<i>Cath. Apost. Rom.</i>
C. M. B.	Cúyas mãos béso,	<i>whose hands I kiss.</i>
C. P. B.	Cúyos piés béso,	<i>whose feet I kiss.</i>
Cam. <sup>a</sup>	Cámara,	<i>chamber.</i>
Cap.	Capítulo,	<i>chapter.</i>
Cap. <sup>n</sup>	Capitán,	<i>captain.</i>
Capp. <sup>a</sup>	Capellán,	<i>chaplain.</i>
Col.	Cólumna,	<i>column.</i>
Comis.	Comisário,	<i>comissary.</i>
Comp. <sup>a</sup>	Compañía,	<i>company.</i>
Cons. <sup>o</sup>	Conséjo,	<i>council.</i>
Conv. <sup>te</sup>	Conveniénto,	<i>convenient.</i>

Corr. <sup>te</sup>	Corriente,	<i>current.</i>
C. <sup>do</sup>	Cuando,	<i>when.</i>
C. <sup>to</sup> C. <sup>ta</sup>	Cuánto, ta,	<i>how much.</i>
D. <sup>or</sup> D. <sup>or</sup> D. <sup>a</sup>	Don, Doña,	<i>mister, mistress.</i>
D. D. <sup>*</sup>	Doctóres,	<i>doctors.</i>
D. <sup>r</sup> or D. <sup>or</sup>	Doctór,	<i>doctor.</i>
D. <sup>s</sup>	Diós,	<i>God.</i>
D. <sup>ho</sup> dha.	Dicho, dicha,	<i>said, ditto.</i>
Dro.	Derécho,	<i>right or duty.</i>
Dic. <sup>re</sup> 10. <sup>re</sup>	Diciembre,	<i>December.</i>
Doz.	Docéna,	<i>dozen.</i>
Dom. <sup>o</sup>	Domíngo,	<i>Sunday.</i>
Ecc. <sup>o</sup> Ecc. <sup>a</sup>	Eclesiástico, ca,	<i>ecclesiastic.</i>
Enm. <sup>do</sup> , vále.	Enmendádo,	<i>amended, valid.</i>
En. <sup>o</sup>	Enéro,	<i>January.</i>
Es. <sup>mo</sup> Es. <sup>ma</sup>	Escelentísimo, ma,	<i>most excellent.</i>
Es. <sup>no</sup> p. <sup>co</sup>	Escribáno público,	<i>Not.<sup>s</sup> Public.</i>
Fho. fha.	Fécho, fécha,	<i>dated.</i>
Feb. <sup>o</sup>	Febrero,	<i>February.</i>
Fol.	Fólio,	<i>folio.</i>
F. <sup>r</sup>	Fráy, Fréy,	<i>brother of certain relig-</i>
Fran. <sup>co</sup>	Francisco,	<i>Francis. [ious orders.</i>
Frnz.	Fernández,	<i>Fernandez.</i>
Gue. or gde.	Guárde,	<i>save, preserve.</i>
Gra.	Grácia,	<i>grace.</i>
Gen. <sup>l</sup> or gral.	General,	<i>general.</i>
Id. Yd.	Ídem,	<i>ditto.</i>
Igla.	Iglesia,	<i>church.</i>
Il. <sup>e</sup>	Ilústre,	<i>illustrious.</i>
Il. <sup>mo</sup> Il. <sup>ma</sup>	Ilustrísimo, ma,	<i>most illustrious.</i>
Inq. <sup>or</sup>	Inquisidór,	<i>inquisitor.</i>
Intend. <sup>te</sup>	Intendénte,	<i>intendant.</i>
Jhs.	Jesús,	<i>Jesus.</i>
Jph.	Joséf, José,	<i>Joseph.</i>
Jn.	Juán,	<i>John.</i>
L. L.	Léyes,	<i>laws.</i>
Lib.	Líbro,	<i>book.</i>
Lib. <sup>s</sup> lb.	Líbras,	<i>pounds.</i>
Lin.	Línea,	<i>line.</i>
Lic. <sup>do</sup>	Licenciádo,	<i>licentiate.</i>

\* D. D. stands also for *Dónes*, plural of *Don*. The duplication of the initial letter of titles indicates the plural number.

V. M.	Vuéstia Magestád,	<i>your Majesty.</i>
V. R.	Vuéstia Real,	<i>your Royal.</i>
Ult. <sup>o</sup>	Último,	<i>last.</i>
V. V. <sup>e</sup>	Venerable,	<i>venerable.</i>
V. A.	Vuéstia Altéza,	<i>your highness.</i>
V. B. <sup>d</sup>	Vuéstia Beatitúd,	<i>your beatitude.</i>
V. I.	Vuéstia Il. <sup>ma</sup> ,	<i>your grace.</i>
V.E or V.Ex.	Vueceléncia,	<i>your excellency.</i>
V. G.	Vérbi grácia,	<i>for example.</i>
Vm.Vmd.V.	Vuéstia, vuésa mercéd,	<i>you, your worship, your</i>
Vd.*	or ustéd,	<i>favour.</i>
V. P.	Vuéstia Paternidád,	<i>your paternity.</i>
V. R. <sup>a</sup>	Vuéstia Reveréncia,	<i>your reverence.</i>
V. S. <sup>a</sup> , Usía,	V. <sup>a</sup> Señoría,	<i>your lordship, honour.</i>
V. S. I.	Vueseñoría Ilustrísima,	<i>your most illustrious rev-</i>
V. S. <sup>d</sup>	Vuéstia Santidád,	<i>your holiness. [erence.</i>
V. <sup>on</sup>	Real vellón,	<i>real of bullion, coin.</i>
Vol.	Volúmen,	<i>volume.</i>
V. S. G.	Vuélva si gústa,	<i>please turn over.</i>
Vro. vra.	Vuéstio, vuéstia,	<i>your.</i>
X. <sup>mo</sup>	Diézmo,	<i>tenth and tithe.</i>
Xp. <sup>to</sup>	Crístio,	<i>Christ.</i>
Xpt. <sup>no</sup>	Crístiano,	<i>Christian.</i>
Xptóbal,	Crístóbal,	<i>Christopher.</i>

\* An *s* is added to these abbreviations when more than one person is addressed ; and then they stand for *vuéstras mercédes*, *vuésas mercédes* or *ustédes*, in the plural.

---

# SPANISH GRAMMAR.

---

## INTRODUCTION.

**GRAMMAR** is the art of speaking and writing correctly.

Speaking correctly is to speak according to established rules, as regards both the pronunciation of letters, syllables and words, and the arrangement and combination of these words among themselves.

Writing correctly is to write in conformity to the rules and usage adopted by the best writers.

We shall first consider words as sounds, show the letters that form them, and succinctly give the rules most proper to fix their pronunciation.

Considering them afterwards as signs of our thoughts, we shall examine their nature, and their accidental variations, the order they observe between themselves, and the rules of their union.

Most grammarians treat separately upon the rules of syntax. It has appeared to us more methodical, precise and simple, to place these rules in the chapters relating to each kind of words. From this it follows, however, that the examples we give for the understanding of the rules sometimes precede the knowledge, which they suppose of certain parts of speech. But those examples are always accompanied by the translation; which greatly diminishes a slight inconvenience, which a second reading of the grammar will remove, and which is abundantly compensated by the advantage of avoiding frequent repetitions and references, a multiplicity of which fatigues and discourages beginners.

## CHAPTER I.

## OF WORDS CONSIDERED AS SOUNDS.

Words, considered as sounds, are formed of letters and syllables. The only syllables that require explanation are *gue, gui*; *que, qui*; we shall speak of them at the letter *u*, in which all the difficulty lies.

The Spanish language reckons twenty-eight letters. The following is the order and particular denomination of these letters :

ALPHABET, a, b, c, ch, d, e, f,  
Denomination. ah, bay, thay,\* chay, day, á, á-fay,§

ALPHABET, g,† h, i, j,† k, l,  
Denomination. hay,† át-chay, é, hótah,† kah, á-lay,

ALPHABET, ll,† m, n, ñ,† o,  
Denomination. á-lee-ay, á-may, á-nay, á-nee-ay, o,

ALPHABET, p, q, r, s, t, u,  
Denomination. pay, koo, air-ray, á-say, tay, oo,

ALPHABET, v, x, y, z,\*  
Denomination. vay, á-kiss, e-gree-á-gah, thay-tah.

The letters are all of the feminine gender.

The Spanish language has five vowels, which are *a, e, i, o, u*. They are called vowels, because they have a perfect sound of themselves, without being joined to other letters.

The other letters are CONSONANTS; they are thus called, because they cannot form a perfect sound without the assistance of vowels.

\* Pronounced as *tha* in the English word *thane*.

§ In pronouncing the letters, lay the stress upon the accented vowels.

† *g* and *j* are guttural, and their pronunciation can be learned only from a master; the English combination under them conveys the nearest sound possible.

‡ *ll* and *ñ* are pronounced as the liquid *l* and *gn* in French; as in *treille*, *vine-arbour*; *régnér*, to reign; Example, *avellána*, *áibert*; *guadána*, *sithe*.

## OF THE PRONUNCIATION OF VOWELS.

A.—This letter is pronounced as *ah* in English. Ex. *Amár*, to love ; *álba*, dawn.

E.—This letter is pronounced as *a* in the alphabet in English. Ex. *Eclipse*, eclipse.

*Exceptions.* Before *r*, *s*, *z*, in the same syllable, *e* is pronounced as in the English words, *carē*, *snare*. Ex. *ver*, to see ; *verdadero*, true ; *espía*, spy ; *vez*, time. On the contrary, in *veristmil*, probable, and similar cases, it is close, because *e*, in this last word, forms a part of the first syllable, and *r* begins the second.

I.—This vowel is pronounced as *e* in English, except when it is marked with the acute accent, when it is long, and pronounced like *ee* in English, as in the words, *todavía*, yet ; *origen*, origin ; *sílaba*, syllable.

O.—The *o* is generally pronounced as in English ; it is, however, necessary to observe, that it is sometimes open, sometimes close, and sometimes long. It is open,—1st,—in words of one syllable, when it is not immediately followed by another vowel, and before *r* at the end of a syllable. Ex. *lo*, the, it ; *no*, no, not ; *vos*, you ; *dolór*, grief ; *amór*, love. —2d.—At the end of words when it is accented ; for example, in the third person of the singular of the preterite definite of regular and several irregular verbs. Ex. *Amó*, he loved ; *temió*, he feared ; *subió*, he went up. And this *o* must necessarily be distinguished by the pronunciation and the accent in the first conjugation, so as not to confound the first person of the present of the indicative *amo*, I love, with the third of the preterite definite, *amó*, he loved. It is long, whenever it is immediately followed by another vowel, as in *voy*,\* go ; *hoy*,\* to-day ; *day*,\* I give. In other cases it is close.

U.—*U* is pronounced *oo*. We except from this rule the syllables *que*, *qui*, *gue*, *gui*, in which the *u* is not sounded.

Sometimes in the diphthong, *gue*, *gui*, the *u* preserves its sound of *oo*, as in *argüir*, to argue ; *agüero*, omen. Not to leave any doubt in this respect, the Spanish Academy writes the *u* with two dots whenever it must be pronounced *oo*, so that it is very easy for any stranger to see, at the first glance,

\* See note at the bottom of the next page.



the difference of the pronunciation between *guérra*, war ; and *vergüenza*, shame ; *seguir*, to follow ; and *argüir*, to argue.

Y.—This letter is sometimes a vowel and sometimes a consonant. It is a vowel when it is preceded by another vowel, making with it a diphthong, as in the words *ley*,\* law ; *Rey*,\* King ; *muy*, very. It is also a vowel, when it is a conjunctive particle. Ex. *Pan y agua*, bread and water. In almost every other case it is a consonant, as in *sáya*, petticoat ; *yerro*, error ; *yugo*, yoke ; &c.

## OF DIPHTHONGS.

A diphthong is the union of two vowels expressing a double sound, and pronounced by a single emission of the voice, these are sixteen in number :

ai or ay.*	dábais, you gave ;	hay, there is, there are.
au.	páusa, pause ;	causa, cause.
ei or ey.*	véis, you see ;	ley, law.
ea.	línea, line ;	Bóreas, Boreas.
eo.	virgíneo, virginal ;	cutáneo, cutaneous.
eu.	déuda, debt ;	déudo, kinsman.
ia.	grácia, grace ;	hácia, towards.
ie.	ciélo, heaven ;	ciéno, mud.
io.	précio, price ;	nécio, fool.
iu.	ciudad, city ;	viúdo, widower.
oe.	héroe, hero ;	áloe, aloes.
oi or oy.*	sóis, you are ;	tóy, I go.
ua.	frágua, forge ;	água, water.
ue.	dueño, master ;	suéño, dream.
ui or uy.*	ruído, noise ;	muy, very.
uo.	árduo, arduous ;	mútuo, mutual.

N. B. When in these combinations the *i* and *u* are accented, as in *brío*, *efectúa*, each vowel forms a distinct syllable.

## The TRIPHTHONGS are four :

iai.	preciáis, you value.	
iei.	vacíeis, you may empty.	
uai, uay.*	santiguáis, you bless.	Paraguáy.*
uei, uey.*	averigüéis, you may search ;	buéy, ox.

\* The custom of using the letter *i* instead of *y* as a vowel is becoming more general. Ex. *Réyno*, *reynár*, are now spelt, *réino*, *reindr*, &c.

## OF THE PRONUNCIATION OF THE CONSONANTS.

B.—*B*, in the beginning of a word, is always pronounced as in English. (See Obs. page 20.)

C.—*C* has the sound of *th* in English, as in the word *thane*, before *e* and *i*; and the sound of *k*, before *a*, *o*, *u*. Formerly the *c* with the *cedilla* (*ç*) was used, as in *capáto*, shoe; *çutáno*, such a one; but it is no longer used, and the *z* has been substituted in its place: thus we now write *zapáto*, *zutáno*; double *cc* as in *dicción*, *ficción*, &c. pronounce *dick-theón*, *fick-theón*.

Ch.—These two letters are pronounced as in English in the word *cheek*; as *chico*, small; *chocoláte*, chocolate. In words derived from the ancient languages, it sounds like *k*, as *Chártbdis*, *Melchisedéck*. (See Obs. page 20.)

D.—*D* is pronounced in the beginning of a word, as in English; but when the *d* is between two vowels, it is as soft as the *th* in the words *though*, *the*. Ex. *Dádo*, a dye; *dédo*, finger. It is pronounced lisping at the end of a word, as *libertád*, *Madrid*. (See Obs. page 20.)

F.—*F* is pronounced as in English.

G.—*G* is pronounced as in English before *a*, *o*, *u*. It is guttural before *e*, *i*. Ex. *mugér*, woman; *elegír*, to elect. Before *n* it has the Latin and English pronunciation. Ex. *dígn*o, worthy; *indígn*o, unworthy; *ignoránte*, ignorant; *enígma*.

H.—The *H* is mute and only lightly aspirated before *ue*. Ex. *huévo*, egg; *huéso*, bone. The Academy suppresses it after the *t*, and uses *f* instead of *ph*. Ex. *Filosofía*, philosophy; *teátro*, theatre; *Filadélfia*, Philadelphia.

The letter *h* has been retained in many words, though not pronounced; and in several it has taken the place of the letter *f*, formerly used. Ex. *fíjo*, son; *facér*, to do; *fermosúra*, beauty, are now written *híjo*, *hacér*, *hermosúra*.

J.—*J* is pronounced guttural before all the vowels. It is found before *e* and *i* only in the words *Jesús*, *Jerusalén*, *Jeremías*, and in the diminutives and derivatives of the nouns that terminate in *ja* or *jo*; as *pája*, straw; *pajíta*, little straw; *viéjo*, old man; *viejecito*, little old man.

K.—The K is admitted only in foreign words, and is pronounced as in English.

L.—This letter is pronounced as in English.

LL.—When *ll* occurs in a word, it is liquid, and pronounced as in the words *seraglio* and *William*, in English. Ex. *Llaga*, wound; *lleno*, full; *caballo*, horse; *llegar*, to arrive; *llover*, to rain; *lluvia*, rain.

M.—*M* and *N* are pronounced as in English.

N.—*N* having this mark (*~*) which the Spaniards call *n* with *tilde*, has the same sound as *n* in *onion*, *minion*, &c. Ex. *Señor*, Sir; *niñez*, childhood; *enseñar*, to teach.

P and Q—are pronounced as in English.

R.—*R* preserves in Spanish its natural pronunciation. Ex. *razón*, reason; *rico*, rich; and when it is double, both letters must be distinctly heard. Ex. *cárrro*, cart; *carrera*, career; *zurra*, flogging. (See Obs. page 20.)

S.—*S* is always pronounced hard, like double *ss*, even between two vowels, as in *assembly*. Ex. *sábio*, wise; *sebo*, tallow; *famóso*, famous; *espóso*, husband; *sosiego*, tranquillity.

T.—*T* never loses the sound it has in the alphabet, and is always hard.

V.—The Spaniards often confound the sound of this letter with that of *b*; but the Academy disapproves of it, and recommends that it should be pronounced as the English. Ex. *valentía*, valour; *velo*, veil; *vil*, vile; *voluntad*, will; *vuéto*, flight.

X.—*X* is pronounced like *s* when followed by a consonant, and it is lightly sounded *s* when followed by *c*. Ex. *extrangéro*,\* *estráño*, *excépto*, *excitár*, &c. It is pronounced like *ks* when it is found between two vowels, as *examinár*, *existir*, *séxo*. In a few words ending in *x*, it is somewhat guttural. Ex. *Relóx*,† watch; *box*, box-tree; *carcáx*, quiver. (See Obs. page 20.)

N. B. The *x* is not now used as a guttural letter; the *j* is used in its place before the vowels *a*, *o*, *u*, and the *g* before *e* and *i*. (See Obs. page 20.)

\* Now spelt *extrangéro*, *estráño*, *excépto*, *excitár*

† Now written *reloj*, *boj*, *carcáj*, &c.

Z.—The Z is only used now before *a, o, u*, and is pronounced like the *c* before *e* and *i*. Ex. *zapáto*, shoe; *zorra*, fox; *zumo*, juice; and is always pronounced lisping after a vowel, as *juéz*, judge; *nuéz*, walnut.

### Observations.

1st. The Spanish Academy, conforming to the pronunciation, has suppressed double consonants, when one alone is pronounced. In the Spanish books, printed within a few years, the double letters *ss, ff, &c.* are no longer found, and *cc, nn, rr*, only when both consonants are sounded; as in the words *accésio, ennoblecer, bárro*. Double *ll* is to be considered only as the sign of the liquid letter *l*, and not as a double consonant.

2d. But as Spanish books less modern have not followed fixed rules as respects not only doubling the consonants, but also the orthography, when the pronunciation does not indicate it in an evident manner, we inform beginners,—1st.—that they ought to have recourse to the latest Dictionaries, (though it is to be regretted that these have as yet been printed and reprinted in England and in the United States most carelessly in this important point of view,) because it may be supposed that their authors have generally adopted the orthography of the Spanish Academy;—2d.—that, in consulting these Dictionaries, the scholar should remember, that, if he does not find the word at the first search, it is because its orthography has varied, and because the Spanish writers have often confounded, and do sometimes still confound the letters *b* and *v*; *s* and *c*; *c* and *ch*, and sometimes *q*; *c* and *q* in the syllables *qua, que, qui*; *c* and *x*; *f* and *h*, in the beginning of a word; *i* and *y*; *j* and *g*, in the syllables *je* and *ji*. Some writers use the *j* entirely for the guttural sound, and never the *g* nor *x*; but we follow the decisions of the Academy and not the whims of every schemer. *X*, having had till lately the guttural sound, was confounded with *g*, before *e, i*; and with the *j*, which is always guttural before all vowels. Instead of looking in the Dictionary for *alredrío, fertdo, léxos, cuándo, zélo, química, &c.* he should look for *albedrío, herido, léjos, cuándo, célo, química, &c.* (See Syllabical Table and Observations, page 20.)

## SYLLABICAL TABLE.

		Orthographical alterations made by the Royal Academy of Madrid, and now generally adopted by Spanish writers.	
ba,* be, bi, bo, bu, ca,                   co, cu, ce, ci, cha,tche,chi,cho,chu, da,† de, di, do, du, fa,   fe, fi, fo, fu, ga,                   go, gu, ge, gi, gue,gui, güe,güi, ha,   he, hi, ho, hu, ja,   je, ji, jo, ju, ka,   ke, ki, ko, ku, la,   le, li, lo, lu, lla, lle, lli, llo, llu,	ma, me, mi, mo, mu, na, ne, ni, no, nu, ña, ñe, ñi, ño, ñu, pa, pe, pi, po, pu, qua,§               quo, que,qui, que,qüi, ra,   re, ri, ro, ru, rra, rre, rri, rro, rru, sa, se, si, so, su, ta, te, ti, to, tu, va, ve, vi, vo, vu, xa,¶ xe, xi, xo, xu, xâ, xê, xî, xó, xú, ya, ye, yi, yo, yu, za, ze, zi, zo, zu,	cua,               cuo,  cue, cui,	ja, ge, gi, jo, ju, xa, xe, xi, xo, xu,  za, ce, ci, zo, zu.

## IMPORTANT OBSERVATIONS.

\* *B* is always hard at the beginning of a word, whatever letter may follow it. Ex. *baráto*, cheap; *bendito*, blessed; *brávo*, brave; *blánco*, white. In the middle of a word, between two vowels, *b* is softened into nearly a *v*. Ex. *bebér*, to drink; *subír*, to go up. *Bla*, *ble*, &c. are always pronounced hard, as in English, whatever place they occupy in a word. Ex. *hablár*, to speak; *establecé*, to establish. *Bra*, *brc*, &c. preceded by a consonant, are pronounced hard, as *hómbre*, man; *aldámbré*, wire; but if preceded by a vowel, the *b* is generally softened into almost a *v*. Ex. *obrár*, to act; *abrír*, to open; *póbre*, poor.

† *Chá*, *ché*, &c. with a circumflex, *aa*, is stated in page 17, has heretofore been used with the sound of *kah*, *kai*, in words derived from the ancient languages; but now we use in the place of it, *ca*, *que*, *qui*, *co*, *cu*; as *químia*, chemistry; *querubín*, cherubim; *Caribdis*, Charibdis; *quílo*, chyle.

‡ The letter *d*, when preceded by a consonant is sounded hard. Ex. *endéble*, feeble; *enderredár*, to straighten; and *dra*, *dre*, &c. preceded by a vowel like *th* in either. Ex. *medrá*, to thrive; *adrede*, on purpose; *podrír*, to rot; *ladrón*, thief.

§ *Q* is changed into *c*, in all words where it is followed by *ua*, *uo*, *ue*, *ui*, and we write *cuándo*, when; *cuóta*, quota; *cuéstion* question; *cuocién*, quotient.

|| *R*, in the beginning and middle of words, is pronounced as in English, as *ría*, river; *erário*, treasury; but double *rr*, in Spanish, is pronounced a little stronger than the *r* in English at the beginning of a word, as *pérro*, dog; *cárro*, cart; *Pisárro*.

¶ *Xa*, &c. used to be guttural, and pronounced like the *j*, when the

## OF THE ACCENT.

There is but one long syllable in each Spanish word. It is generally indicated by the acute accent placed upon the vowel. But this accent is suppressed, when the long syllable may be otherwise known, except in certain cases where use requires it should be preserved.

The following are the principal rules established by the Spanish Academy, for the use or suppression of the accent upon the vowel of the long syllable.

1st. The monosyllable must not be accented, because it is long from its nature.

*Exceptions.* We accent—1st.—the conjunctions *é*, and ; *ó*, *ú*, or ; and the preposition *á*, to.—2d.—The monosyllable *él*, he, him ; *mí*, me, pronouns personal : *sí*, yes, oneself, affirmative particle or pronoun ; *dé*, *sé*, and *vé*, (from the verbs *dar*, *saber*, *ser*, *ir*, to give, to know, to be, and to go,) to distinguish these monosyllables from *el*, the, article ; *mi*, my, pronoun possessive ; *si*, if, conditional particle ; *de*, of, preposition ; *se*, himself, &c. pronoun ; and *ve*, see thou, verb.

2d. The accent is suppressed in words of many syllables terminated by only one vowel, because their *penultima* is long from its nature.

*Exceptions.* 1st. In verbs, in the first and third person of the singular of the perfect and future of the indicative, the last syllable is long, and receives the accent. Ex. *amé*, I loved ; *amó*, he loved ; *amaré*, I shall love ; *conocí*, I knew, *conocerá*, he shall know, &c. The accent remains,

vowel following the *x* had not the circumflex accent over it, so (*á*). The Spanish Academy, in the two last editions of their Dictionary, printed in 1817 and 1822, and in their last improved Treatise on Orthography, have used, instead of the guttural *x*, the letter *j*, before the vowels *a*, *e*, *u* ; and the letter *g*, before *e* and *i* ; but some writers use *j* for *x* before all the vowels. Ex. *jabón*, soap ; *géfe*, chief ; *México*, Mexico ; *jugo*, juice. The *x* is preserved only in those words, in which it is pronounced as *ks*. Ex. *exagerár*, pronounced *eksagerár*, to exaggerate. The *x* has also been changed into an *s* in all the instances in which it is followed by another consonant. Ex. *extranjero*, stranger ; *escépto*, except ; *excitar*, to excite. The object of the Academy, in all the foregoing alterations, has been to simplify the orthography, and make it conform to the pronunciation as nearly as possible ; therefore we have adopted these improvements in the orthography and pronunciation throughout this Grammar, Book of Exercises, &c. &c.

even when we add a pronoun to some one of these words. Ex. *cogíte*, I caught thee ; *halléle*, I found him ; *comeránlo*, they will eat it. 2d. It is the same with the last syllable of the words *allá*, there ; *café*, coffee ; *dejó*, he left ; *Perú*, *Bercebú*, *Tribú*.

3d. In Spanish words of more than two syllables, the two last are often short. We call words of this kind, *esdrújulos*, dactyles. Some of them, as *cámara*, chamber ; *espíritu*, spirit ; *santísimo*, most holy ; take the accent upon the *antepenultima*, which is accented in the same manner in those verbs which are made *esdrújulos* by the annexed pronoun, as *mírame*, look at me ; *oyeme*, hear me ; which, without the adjunction of the pronoun, would be written without an accent, *mira*, look ; *oye*, hear. Others, compounded of a verb followed by two pronouns, and many adverbs, terminated in *mente*, have the accent upon the syllable preceding the *antepenultima*. Ex. *búscamelo*, seek it for me ; *díjosenos*, people told us ; *fácilmente*, easily. Finally, certain adverbs in *mente*, derived from words *esdrújulos*, receive the accent upon the fifth syllable, reckoning from the last. Ex. *barbaramente*, barbarously ; *intrépidamente*, intrepidly ; words derived from *barbaro*, *intrépido*.

3d. The accent is suppressed upon the *penultima*, in words of two syllables, terminated with two vowels, as *nao*, ship : *sea*, let him be ; *lea*, let him read ; *mío*, mine ; and in the words terminated in *ia*, *ie*, *io*, *ua*, *ue*, *uo*, which, considering the two vowels as diphthongs, are classed with dissyllables : for instance, *India* ; *Julio*, July ; *agua*, water ; *mutuo*, mutual ; &c.

*Exceptions.* The first and third persons of the singular of the perfects of the verbs deviate from this rule, since they always have, as we have said, the last syllable long and accented. We must then write *leí*, I read ; *fié*, I trusted ; *temió*, he feared ; *pidió*, he asked, &c.

4th. Words terminating in *y* preceded by a vowel, which forms a diphthong, have no accent ; their last syllable is always long. Ex. *Muley*, *convoy*, *Paraguay*.\*

5th. In words ending with two vowels, and of three or more syllables, the position of the long syllable varies. 1st. The last vowel is long, and takes the accent in the words

---

\* See Note, page 10.

*puntapié*, a kick ; *tirapié*, a strap ; and in the first and third persons of the singular of the perfect of the indicative of verbs ; as, *acarreé*, I carried ; *continué*, I continued ; *distribuí*, I distributed ; *codició*, he coveted ; *esceptuó*, he excepted. 2d. The penultima vowel is long, and receives the accent in the nouns and verbs terminated in *ae*, *ia*, *ie*, *io*, *ua*, *ue*, *uo* ; for example, *provée*, he provides ; *filosofía*, philosophy ; *desafío*, challenge ; *graduó*, I graduate.

*Exceptions.* The accent is suppressed in all the persons ending in *ia*, of the imperfect of the indicative and 1st conditional tense, because the *i* is always long. For the same reason we do not accent the penultimate vowel of the terminations *ae*, *ao*, *au*, *ea*, *eo*, *oa*, *oe*, *oo*. However, sometimes these vowels form a diphthong ; then the syllable that precedes them is long and receives the accent. Ex. *héroe*, hero ; *línea*, line ; *cutáneo*, cutaneous ; *purpúreo*, purple coloured. If the final vowels *ia*, *ie*, *io*, *ua*, *ue*, *uo*, of words of three or more syllables, form diphthongs, it is also the preceding syllable which is long ; but the accent is suppressed. Ex. *Eseperiencia*, experience ; *disturbio*, disturbance ; *Nicaragua*.

6th. The last syllable of the words ending with a consonant is commonly long, and does not receive an accent. The accent is, on the contrary, marked, if the long syllable is the penultima, as in the words *árbol*, tree ; *virgen*, virgin ; *mártir*, martyr ; *alférez*, ensign ; or the antepenultima, as in *Júpiter*, *régimen*, *Aristóteles*.

*Exceptions.* 1st. The last syllable of any person singular of a verb, ending with a consonant, take the accent, if it be long. Ex. *amarás*, thou shalt love ; *serás*, thou shalt be, &c.—2d.—In patronymick names terminated in *z*, as *Pérez*, *Sanchez*, *Fernandez*, the penultima is always long, and is not accented.

7th. The plural of verbs and nouns follows the rule of their singular. The only exception is the plural *carácterés*, whose long accented syllable is not the same as in the singular, which is *carácter* on the penultima.

#### Observation.

See (pages 15, 17, 18,) what we have said of the accent circumflex and of the diæresis upon the *u*, signs formerly



introduced by the Spanish Academy to fix the pronunciation in a few uncertain cases. The circumflex is now entirely suppressed, in consequence of depriving the *z* of its former guttural sound, and using the *j* and *g* in its place; and in consequence of using *cu*, *que*, *qui*, instead of *chá*, *ché*, *chí*, in words derived from the ancient languages. The diæresis is only used in *güe*, *güi*, to denote that the *u* must be sounded separately from the *i*. (See Obs. page 20.)

## OF PUNCTUATION.

Punctuation is in Spanish the same as in English. However, as it often happens in the Spanish language, that punctuation alone indicates the interrogative sense of the phrase; and that, if the period be long, the reader is informed too late by the note of interrogation which follows it, the Spanish Academy then makes use of a particular mark, causing the phrase to be preceded by the note of interrogation reversed. Ex. *¿ No te espánta la cercanía de un precipicio, que encubierto con las aspariencias de vânas seguridades, será para tí tanto mas fatál cuánto ménos imaginado ?* Art thou not frightened at the vicinity of a precipice, which, concealed under the appearance of false security, will be the more fatal to thee, as it is less suspected ?

If, in Spanish, we are not warned by the interrogative note, this phrase is only affirmative, *thou art not frightened*, &c. Its turn and the transposition of a pronoun do not announce at the outset, as in English, that the sense is interrogative. The same is true as respects the note of admiration in long periods, as *¡Válgame Dios, cuántas provincias y cuántas naciones conquistó !* &c. Bless me, how many provinces and nations he conquered ! &c.

## CHAPTER II.

## OF WORDS CONSIDERED AS SIGNS OF OUR THOUGHTS.

WORDS are divided into different classes, which Grammarians call Parts of Speech; which are, the Article, Noun, Pronoun, Verb, Participle, Adverb, Preposition, Conjun-

tion, and Interjection. Of these parts of speech, the last four are invariable. The *article*, *noun*, *pronoun*, and *participle*, are declined ; they have *genders*, *numbers*, and *cases*. The *verb* is conjugated ; it has *modes*, *tenses*, *numbers*, and *persons*, as will be seen hereafter.

We shall speak of the *genders* and *numbers*, in the chapter of nouns to which they belong.

Though, in the Spanish language, nouns do not change their terminations in changing their relations, as they do in the Greek and Latin tongues, we shall, however, conform to the Grammar of the Spanish Academy, which admits six cases, to wit ; the *nominative*, *genitive*, *dative*, *accusative*, *vocative*, and *ablative*.

The *nominative* is the case that denotes the noun or pronoun, which is the subject of a proposition.

The *genitive* denotes the person to whom belongs the object of which we speak.

The *dative* denotes the person or thing towards which the action of the verb is directed, or for which there results from it an advantage or disadvantage.

The *accusative* represents the person or thing which is the direct regimen of the verb or end of its signification without preposition, or preceded by one of those which govern this case ; such as, *ánte*, *cóntra*, *entre*, *hácia*, &c. *before*, *against*, *among*, *between*, *towards*, &c.

The *vocative* serves to call. We place in this case the persons to whom we address our speech.

The *ablative* serves to express the matter of or manner in which a thing is made ; the cause from which it proceeds ; or the instrument with which it is done. This case is always accompanied by one of the prepositions that govern it ; such as *con*, *de*, *en*, *por*, &c. *with*, *from*, *in*, *by*, &c.

---

### CHAPTER III.

#### OF THE ARTICLE.

THE *Article* is a small word placed before nouns, or before any other word taking their place, to determine the person, the thing, or the action spoken of : therefore it is called definite or determinate.

The *article* has three genders in Spanish ; the masculine, feminine, and neuter. For the masculine it is *el*, the ; for the feminine *la*, the ; and for the neuter *lo*, the. The two first have the two numbers, and the last has only the singular.

## DECLENSION OF THE ARTICLES.

*Masculine Article.*

<i>Singular.</i>		<i>Plural.</i>	
<i>Nom.</i>	<i>el</i> , - - - <i>the.</i>	<i>Nom.</i>	<i>los</i> , - - - <i>the.</i>
<i>Gen.</i>	<i>del</i> ,* - - <i>of the.</i>	<i>Gen.</i>	<i>de los</i> , - <i>of the.</i>
<i>Dat.</i>	<i>al</i> ,* - - <i>to the.</i>	<i>Dat.</i>	<i>á los</i> , - <i>to the.</i>
<i>Acc.</i>	<i>el</i> , <i>al</i> ,† - - <i>the.</i>	<i>Acc.</i>	<i>los</i> , <i>á los</i> † - <i>the.</i>
<i>Abl.</i>	<i>del</i> ,* - <i>from the.</i>	<i>Abl.</i>	<i>de los</i> , - <i>from the.</i>

*Feminine Article.*

<i>Singular.</i>		<i>Plural.</i>	
<i>Nom.</i>	<i>la</i> , - - - <i>the.</i>	<i>Nom.</i>	<i>las</i> , - - - <i>the.</i>
<i>Gen.</i>	<i>de la</i> , - - <i>of the.</i>	<i>Gen.</i>	<i>de las</i> , - <i>of the.</i>
<i>Dat.</i>	<i>á la</i> , - - <i>to the.</i>	<i>Dat.</i>	<i>á las</i> , - - <i>to the.</i>
<i>Acc.</i>	<i>la</i> , <i>á la</i> ,† - - <i>the.</i>	<i>Acc.</i>	<i>las</i> , <i>á las</i> ,† - <i>the.</i>
<i>Abl.</i>	<i>de la</i> , - <i>from the.</i>	<i>Abl.</i>	<i>de las</i> , <i>from the.</i>

*Neuter Article.*

<i>Nom.</i>	<i>lo</i> , - - - <i>the.</i>	} This article has no plural, and is used only before Adjectives and Participles passive.
<i>Gen.</i>	<i>de lo</i> , - - <i>of the.</i>	
<i>Dat.</i>	<i>á lo</i> , - - <i>to the.</i>	
<i>Acc.</i>	<i>lo</i> , - - - <i>the.</i>	
<i>Abl.</i>	<i>de lo</i> , - <i>from the.</i>	

We have said in the definition of the article, that it must only be placed before nouns substantive, or *before any other part of speech that does their office* ; from which must be concluded, that there are parts of speech that, without being substantives are sometimes employed as such. Really in these phrases *el leer me gusta*, reading pleases me ; *preferir lo útil á lo agradable*, to prefer the useful to the agreeable ; *ignorar el porqué*, to be ignorant of the why ; *leer* is a verb,

\* *Del* and *al* are abbreviations of *de el* and *á el*, which custom has introduced, and which the Academy has approved, in order to distinguish, by this contraction, the genitive, ablative, and dative of *el*, article, from the same cases of *él*, pronoun. Thus *del*, *al*, signify of or from the, to the ; and *de él*, *á él*, signify of or from him, to him.

† See Note, page 31.

*útil* and *agradable* are adjectives, and *porqué* is an adverb ; but those words do the office of substantives, and it is for this reason that they take the article.

#### OF THE USE OF THE ARTICLES.

**RULE I.**—The article never admits of any elision in Spanish ; but there are a few feminine nouns that, beginning with an *a*, take the masculine article *el*, instead of the feminine *la*, in order to avoid the disagreeable meeting of two *a*'s. Therefore we say *el agua*, water ; *el ala*, the wing ; *el alma*, the soul ; *el ama*, the mistress ; *el ave*, the bird ; *el águila*, the eagle ; *el amo*, the master ; *el hambre*, hunger ; *la agua*, *la ala*, &c. would be too harsh. But it is necessary to observe,—1st.—that this change of article is admitted only in the singular, because the clashing of the two vowels does not take place in the plural.—2d,—if these nouns are accompanied by an adjective, this adjective must be put in the feminine : we then say, *el agua es fría* ; *el ala derecha* ; the water is cold ; the right wing ; and not *el agua frío* ; *el ala derecho*—3d.—observe that the nouns above mentioned are nearly all which usage has permitted to deviate from the general rule.

**Rule II.**—The article is placed in Spanish before nouns taken in a *universal sense*, even before proper names of regions, countries, rivers, winds and mountains, and should be repeated before each noun. Ex. *el oro*, gold ; *la plata*, silver ; *el cobre*, copper ; *la Francia, de la Francia, á la Francia*, France, of France, to France ; *la Castilla, de la Castilla, á la Castilla*, Castille, of Castille, to Castille ; *el Ebro, el Tago*, the Tagus, &c. ; because the common nouns *región, provincia, río*, &c. are understood.

**Exceptions.**—1st. Those countries are excepted which take their names from their capital cities. Ex. *Nápoles y Corfú son unos países muy favorecidos de la naturaleza*, Naples and Corfu are countries very much favoured by nature ;—2d.—the names of countries which are under the regimen of the preposition *en* ; as, *está en España*, he is in Spain ; *vive en Francia*, he lives in France.—3d.—those nouns that serve to modify or qualify the preposition *de* with a noun that precedes ; as, *el reino de Inglaterra*, the kingdom of England ; *las ciudades de Francia y de Alemania*, the cities of France and Germany ; *un tenedor de hierro*, an iron fork ; *una casa de madera*, a wooden house ; and, lastly,

the article is omitted before the names of countries, from which we speak of going to or returning from. Ex. *vuelto de Prusia*, I return from Prussia; *llega de Polonia*, he arrives from Poland; *va á Méjico*, he goes to Mexico.

**Remark 1st.** Though the name of a country be under the regimen of the preposition *en* or *de*, it must be preceded by the article when it is personified, or when it is taken in a definite sense and in the whole extent of its signification. Ex. *La urbanidad de la Francia*, *el interés de la Inglaterra*, *la fertilidad de la Italia*, the politeness of France, the interest of England, the fertility of Italy —2d.—The article is always placed before the names of certain distant countries; as, *llego del Japon*, *de la China*, *del Perú*, I arrive from Japan, from China, from Peru. We say; *Ir á Indias*, or *á las Indias*; *venir de Indias*, or *de las Indias*, to go to the Indies, to come from the Indies.

**RULE III.**—When the names of kingdoms and provinces are preceded in English by a verb expressing the idea of *coming, returning, going, coming back, sending and sending back*, the preposition *á* is used in Spanish, corresponding to the English *to*. Ex. *Ir á Francia*, to go to France; *volveré á Inglaterra*, I shall return to England, &c.; on the contrary, *at, in, in the, &c.* are translated in Spanish, by *en*, when the preceding verb does not express any motion. Ex. *Está en París*, he is at Paris; *nació en Roma*, he was born in Rome; *estaré en casa*, I shall be in the house, or at home. We however say,—to be at the door, *estar á la puerta*; to wait for at the door, *esperar á la puerta*, &c.

**RULE IV.**—The nouns *Señor, Señora, Señores, Señoras, Señorito, Señoritos, Señorita, Señoritas*, Mister or Sir, Mistress or Madam, Gentlemen or Sirs, Masters, young Gentlemen, Ladies, Miss, Misses, always take the article, except,—1st.—when they are preceded by one of the pronouns possessive *mi, tu, my, thy, &c.* and when they are in the vocative. We must then say: *el Señor del Campo*, *la señora Sancho*, *la señorita Villégas*, *mi señora Sancho*, *el señorito Quiróga*; *mi señorito Quiróga*; *mi señorita Villégas*; *cómo está vm.\** *señor don Francisco*, or *señora doña Francisca*? Mister del Campo, Mistress Sancho, Master Quiroga, Miss Villegas, my lady Sancho, my young lady Villegas; how do you do, Sir Francis, or Lady Frances?

---

\* See Abbreviations, page 12.

N. B. 1st. When we speak of, or to a person in high station, or to whom we owe respect, we use in Spanish these words ; *señor don, señora or señorita doña*, which must always be placed before christian names. Ex. *El señor don Pedro B.* My Lord Peter B. ; *la señora doña María A.* My Lady Mary A.—It is necessary to remember that the words *Don* and *Dña*, are never employed before a surname or family name. We shall then say, *El señor de Matallánas ; la señora de Villa Torre* ; and not, *el señor don de Matallánas ; la señora doña de Villa Torre*.

N. B. 2d. *Mi señora, mi señorita*, are expressions which indicate more deference than *la señora, la señorita*.

RULE V.—When one of the words, sir or mister, mistress or madam, my lord, my lady, *señor, señora*, are accompanied with a title, the article is placed before that word, and not before the title. The marshal, *el señor mariscal* ; the duchess, *la señora duquesa* ; the bishop, *el señor obispo*. But if we use *mi señor, mi señora*, the article is placed as in English. My lord the bishop, *mi señor el obispo, mi señora la duquesa*.

RULE VI.—The neuter article is placed only before adjectives used as substantives, and taken in an absolute indeterminate case ; as, *se debe preferir lo útil á lo agradable*, one ought to prefer the useful to the agreeable. *Lo bueno es preferible á lo hermoso*, the good is preferable to the beautiful.

## CHAPTER IV.

### OF NOUNS.

NOUNS are either *substantive* or *adjective*. The noun *substantive* expresses the name of a person or thing ; the noun *adjective* expresses its quality. Ex. *Un hombre docto*, a learned man ; *una hermosa mugér*, a handsome woman ; *hombre* and *mugér*, man and woman, are substantives ; *docto* and *hermosa*, learned and handsome, are adjectives.

### OF THE SUBSTANTIVE.

The substantive is either *common, proper, or collective*.

The substantive *common* is that which may be applied to several persons or several things ; as, *general*, general ; *ciu-*

*dád*, city ; *réino*, kingdom. One may say, *un general Inglés*, an English general, a French general ; *la ciudad de Londres*, *la ciudad de París*, the city of London, the city of Paris ; *el reino de Francia*, *el reino de Inglaterra*, the kingdom of France, the kingdom of England, &c.

The substantive *proper* expresses a separate idea, a single person or thing ; as, *Néro*, *París*, *Londres* ; Nero, Paris, London.

The substantive *collective* is that which, though in the singular, presents to the mind several persons or things, either as making one whole, or as making part of a whole. The first is called *collective general* ; as *ejército*, *rebaño*, *foresta*, army, flock, forest. The second is called *collective partitive* ; as, *trópa*, *infinidad*, troop, infinity, &c.

RULE VII.—The noun substantive *collective partitive* may govern the verb that follows it in the plural ; but the noun substantive *collective general* never governs it in that number. We may then say, *entraron en Londres una trópa*, *una infinidad de ladrones* ; but we cannot say : *el ejército perecieron*, *el rebaño perecieron* ; say *el ejército pereció*, &c.

#### GENDERS.

The *gender* originally denoted only the distinction of the sexes as male or female. The *masculine* designates man or the male. The *feminine* denotes woman or the female. Afterwards, by extension, we have attributed the masculine or feminine gender to other nouns, though they had no relation to either sex : the neuter has since been added to them in several languages.

There are three genders in the Spanish language : the *masculine*, *feminine*, and *neuter*. This last has only a relation to vague and indeterminate things : it is applicable only to adjectives, and has no plural. Ex. *Lo bueno*, *lo malo*, *lo justo*, *ésto*, *aquello*, &c. ; the good, the bad, the just, this, that, &c.

#### OF NUMBERS.

*Numbers* serve to designate one or many objects. There are two numbers, the *singular* and *plural*. The *singular* designates only one person or thing, as *hombre*, man ; *mujer*, woman ; *libro*, book, *pluma*, pen. The *plural* designates many persons or things ; as, *los hombres*, men ; *mujeres*, women ; *libros*, books ; *plumas*, pens.

## OF THE FORMATION OF THE PLURAL OF NOUNS.

The *plural* of nouns substantive and adjective is formed in Spanish in two different manners, according to the termination of the singular.

The nouns are terminated either with a *short vowel*, that is, *not accented*; or with a *long vowel*, that is, *accented*; or lastly, with a consonant.

**RULE VIII.** When the noun is terminated with a short vowel, the plural is formed by adding an *s* to the singular; Ex. *Cárta*, letter; *cártas*, letters; *lláve*, key; *lláves*, keys; *buéno*, *buéna*, good; *buénos*, *buénas*, good, &c.

When the noun terminates with a *long vowel*, or with a consonant, the plural is formed by adding *es* to the singular. Ex. *Alelí*, gilly-flower; *alelías*, gilly-flowers; *verdad*, truth; *verdades*, truths; *razón*, reason; *razones*, reasons; *hábil*, able; *hábiles*, able; *feliz*, happy; *felices*, happy. *Maravé* forms its plural in three ways. We say *maravédis*, *maravédies*, and *maravédises*.

**N. B.** The nouns, both substantive and adjective, which terminate with a *z* in the singular, change *z* into *c* to form their plural, with the addition of the letters *es*: Ex. *Luz*, light, *lúces*; *feliz*, happy, *felices*, &c.

## DECLENSION OF NOUNS.

Substantives masculine of a person, beginning with a consonant.

	Singular.				
N.	el	pádre,	-	-	the father.
G.	del	pádre,	-	-	of the father.
D.	al	pádre,	-	-	to the father.
A.	al	pádre,*	-	-	the father.
V.	pádre,	-	-	-	o father.
Ab.	del	pádre,	-	-	from the father.

\* Though the observation we are about to make belongs to the rules relative to the regimen of verbs, we have thought fit to give it here, in order to make known the reason of the difference that exists between the accusative of the nouns of persons and that of the nouns of things. Whenever a *rational being*, or *personified thing* is the object of this action of the active verb, the verb governs the noun in the compound (as it is called) accusative with the preposition *a*; and, as we have already said in speaking of the article, *al* is a contraction of the preposition *a* and of the article *el*. When on the contrary the object of the action of the active verb is a noun that expresses an inanimate thing, the verb governs it in the accusative without any preposition. See rule LVI, page 164, which refers to this observation.



*Plural.*

N.	los	pádr	es,	-	-	-	-	the	fathers.
G.	de los	pádr	es,	-	-	-	-	of the	fathers.
D.	á los	pádr	es,	-	-	-	-	to the	fathers.
A.	á los	pádr	es,	-	-	-	-	the	fathers.
V.	pádr	es,	-	-	-	-	-	o	fathers.
Ab.	de los	pádr	es,	-	-	-	-	from the	fathers.

Substantive feminine of a person, beginning with a consonant :

*Singular.*

N.	la	mugér,	-	-	-	-	the	woman.
G.	de la	mugér,	-	-	-	-	of the	woman.
D.	á la	mugér,	-	-	-	-	to the	woman.
A.	á la	mugér,	-	-	-	-	the	woman.
V.	mugér,	-	-	-	-	-	o	woman.
Ab.	de la	mugér,	-	-	-	-	from the	woman.

*Plural.*

N.	las	mugéres,	-	-	-	-	the	women.
G.	de las	mugéres,	-	-	-	-	of the	women.
D.	á las	mugéres,	-	-	-	-	to the	women.
A.	á las	mugéres,	-	-	-	-	the	women.
V.	mugéres,	-	-	-	-	-	o	women.
Ab.	de las	mugéres,	-	-	-	-	from the	women.

Substantives feminine of a person, beginning with an a :

*Singular.*

N.	el	áma,	-	-	-	-	the	mistress.
G.	del	áma,	-	-	-	-	of the	mistress.
D.	al	áma,	-	-	-	-	to the	mistress.
A.	al	áma,	-	-	-	-	the	mistress.
V.	áma,	-	-	-	-	-	o	mistress.
Ab.	del	áma,	-	-	-	-	from the	mistress.

*Plural.*

N.	las	ámas,	-	-	-	-	the	mistresses.
G.	de las	ámas,	-	-	-	-	of the	mistresses.
D.	á las	ámas,	-	-	-	-	to the	mistresses.
A.	á las	ámas,	-	-	-	-	the	mistresses.
V.	ámas,	-	-	-	-	-	o	mistresses.
Ab.	de las	ámas,	-	-	-	-	from the	mistresses.

## Substantive masculine of a thing :

*Singular.*

N.	el	libro,	-	-	-	-	-	the	book.
G.	del	libro,	-	-	-	-	-	of the	book.
D.	al	libro,	-	-	-	-	-	to the	book.
A.	el	libro,*	-	-	-	-	-	tha	book.
V.		libro,	-	-	-	-	-	o	book.
Ab.	del	libro,	-	-	-	-	-	from the	book.

*Plural.*

N.	los	libros,	-	-	-	-	-	the	books.
G.	de los	libros,	-	-	-	-	-	of the	books.
D.	á los	libros,	-	-	-	-	-	to the	books.
A.	los	libros,	-	-	-	-	-	the	books.
V.		libros,	-	-	-	-	-	o	books.
Ab.	de los	libros,	-	-	-	-	-	from the	books.

## Substantive feminine of a thing :

*Singular.*

N.	la	cása,	-	-	-	-	-	the	house.
G.	de la	cása,	-	-	-	-	-	of the	house.
D.	á la	cása,	-	-	-	-	-	to the	house.
A.	la	cása,	-	-	-	-	-	the	house.
V.		cása,	-	-	-	-	-	o	house.
Ab.	de la	cása,	-	-	-	-	-	from the	house.

*Plural.*

N.	las	cásas,	-	-	-	-	-	the	houses.
G.	de las	cásas,	-	-	-	-	-	of the	houses.
D.	á las	cásas,	-	-	-	-	-	to the	houses.
A.	las	cásas,	-	-	-	-	-	the	houses.
V.		cásas,	-	-	-	-	-	o	houses.
Ab.	de las	cásas,	-	-	-	-	-	from the	houses.

N. B. Neuter nouns never relate to persons but only to indeterminate things ; as, *lo bueno*, *lo malo*, *lo útil*, *lo pasado*, *lo escrito*. They have neither vocative case nor plural number, and are declined with the neuter article.

---

\* See the preceding note, page 31.

## DECLENSION OF A NEUTER NOUN.

N.	lo	útil,	- - - - -	the	useful.
G.	de lo	útil,	- - - - -	of the	useful.
D.	á lo	útil,	- - - - -	to the	useful.
A.	lo	útil,	- - - - -	the	useful.
Ab.	de lo	útil,	- - - - -	from the	useful.

*Remark.* The neuter article is not placed indifferently before all adjectives employed as substantives, but only (as we have said in rule vi, p. 29) before those that are taken in a sense absolutely indeterminate. In this phrase, *el hombre sábio prefiere siempre lo útil á lo agradable*, the wise man prefers always the useful to the agreeable; the neuter article is necessary before *útil* and *agradable*, because those nouns do not express any determinate object. But in the following phrases, *el malo será castigado*, the wicked shall be punished; *el azul de este paño es muy subido*, the blue of this cloth is very lively; one cannot make use of the neuter article, because the nouns substantive that are implied are sufficiently determinate; in truth, it is evident that *hombre* is understood before *malo*, and *color* before *azul*, and in these cases the article takes the gender of the substantive to which it relates.

## OF PROPER NOUNS, OR NAMES.

The proper names of men and women, of cities, towns, villages, months, &c. do not take any article, and are declined by the aid of the prepositions *de* and *á*. *De* serves for the genitive and ablative, and *á* for the dative and accusative before proper names of men and women, and personified objects, and for the dative only before nouns of things.

## DECLENSION OF SOME PROPER NAMES.

N.	Pédro,	Peter.	N.	Ána,	Ann.
G.	de Pédro,	of Peter.	G.	de Ána,	of Ann.
D.	á Pédro,	to Peter.	D.	á Ána,	to Ann.
A.	á Pédro,*	Peter.	A.	á Ána,*	Ann.
Ab.	de Pédro,	from Peter.	Ab.	de Ána,	from Ann.

N.	António,	Antony.	N.	Lóndres,	London.
G.	de António,	of Antony.	G.	de Lóndres,	of London.
D.	á António,	to Antony.	D.	á Lóndres,	to London.
A.	á António,*	Antony.	A.	Lóndres,	London.
Ab.	de António,	from Antony.	Ab.	de Lóndres,	from London.

\* See note, page 31.

## OF NOUNS TAKEN IN A PARTITIVE SENSE.

Nouns taken in a partitive sense, often expressed in English by *some*, *any*, are always without an article in Spanish.

RULE IX. Whenever the noun, taken in a partitive sense, expresses an object vaguely and in an indeterminate sense, it does not take in Spanish a preposition nor an article. Ex. *Dáme pan*, give me bread; *cómo carne*, I eat meat; *compraré manzanas*, I shall purchase apples; *Bébo vino*, I drink wine.

RULE X. When on the contrary the noun is taken in a determinate sense, it must be preceded by the genitive of the masculine or feminine article, singular or plural, according to the gender and number to which it belongs, or simply by the preposition *de*, if it does not admit the article. Ex. *Dáme del pan que has comprado*, give me of the bread that thou hast purchased; *dáme de tu pan*, give me of thy bread. In the second example we use only the preposition *de*, because the possessive pronoun *tu* does not take the article.

RULE XI. If the noun taken in a determinate sense is in the plural, and it should be wished to express only the idea of *some*, *a few*, this should then be expressed by *unos*, *unas*, or *algunos*, *algunas*; according to the gender of the noun substantive. Ex. *Comeré unas ó algunas ciruelas*, I shall eat plums, that is, *some* plums; *he comprado algunos libros*, I have bought a few books, &c. But if the quantity, instead of being limited by the sense of *some*, is absolutely undetermined, then *some* is not expressed. Ex. *tiene muy buenos libros*, he has very good books. *Tenemos amigos*, we have friends.

DECLENSION OF THE INDEFINITE ARTICLE *un*, *una*; *a* OR *an* IN ENGLISH.*Singular masculine.*

N. & A.	un	amigo,	- - -	a	friend.
G. & Ab.	de un	amigo,	- - -	of or from a	friend.
D.	á un	amigo,	- - -	to a	friend.

*Plural.*

N. & A.	amigos,	- - -	friends.
G. & Ab.	de	amigos,	- - - of or from friends.
D.	á	amigos,	- - - to friends.

*Singular feminine.*

N. & A.	úna	mónja,	-	-	-	a	nun.
G. & Ab.	de	úna	mónja,	-	-	of a	nun.
D.	á	úna	mónja,	-	-	to a	nun.

*Plural.*

N. & A.		mónjas,	-	-	-	nuns.
G. & Ab.	de	mónjas,	-	-	-	of nuns.
D	á	mónjas,	-	-	-	to nuns.

*General observations upon the Genders.*

The proper and appellative names of men, and male animals, as also the nouns that express arts, sciences, dignities, professions, trades, &c. fit for men, are of the masculine gender; as, *hombre*, man; *caballo*, horse; *patriarca*, patriarch; *poeta*, poet, &c.

Names of females, and of professions, trades, &c. fit for females, are of the feminine gender. Ex. *mujer*, woman; *cabra*, goat; *costurera*, seamstress; *abadesa*, abbess, &c.

The names of kingdoms, cities, towns, and villages, generally take, says the Madrid Academy, the gender of the appellative nouns, expressed or understood, to which they refer. For instance, *Tolédo* and *Madrid* are of the feminine gender, because the feminine appellative nouns *ciudad* and *villa*, city and town, are understood, the first before *Tolédo*, and the second before *Madrid*. *Fuencarrál* is masculine, because the masculine word *lugar*, village, is understood. The names *Cúba* and *Moréa* are of the feminine gender because the appellative *isla*, island, is understood before the first, and the word *península*, peninsula, before the last. However, the Academy adds, some of the names above mentioned, when they are not joined to the common noun belonging to them, follow the rule of their termination. Thus *España*, *Salécia*, and almost all the names of countries ending in *a*, are feminine; *Ferról* and *Viséu* are masculine, though the appellative noun of the two first be *reino*, kingdom; that of *Ferról*, *ciudad*, city; and that of *Viséu*, *villa*, town. The same is true in regard to others, which practice will make known.

OF THE GENDER OF NOUNS CONSIDERED WITH REGARD TO  
THEIR TERMINATIONS.

AN nouns ending in *a*, are feminine, except *albacea*, executor ; *anagrama*, anagram ; *antípoda*, antipodes ; *axioma*, axiom ; *clima*, climate ; *crisma*, chrism ; *día*, day ; *dilema*, dilemma ; *diploma*, diploma ; *dóγμα*, dogma ; *dráma*, drama ; *epigrama*, epigram ; *Etna*, Etna ; *fa*, fa, (note of music ;) *idioma*, idiom ; *léma*, lemma ; *maná*, manna ; *mápa*, map ; *poema*, poem ; *problema*, problem ; *síntoma*, symptom ; *sistema*, system ; *sofisma*, sophism ; *tapabóca*, slap given on the mouth ; *téma*, theme ; *teoréma*, theorem ; and some others.

All those that terminate in *o*, are masculine, except *máno*, hand ; and *náo*, vessel.

Those that terminate in *ción* or *tión*, are of the feminine gender, as *cuestión*, question ; *meditación*, meditation ; *acción*, action ; *objeción*, objection, &c. These words are the same in both languages, except that in Spanish the *t* of the termination *tión*, of the English word is changed into a *c*, when it has the sound of *sh*.

The nouns that in Spanish terminate in *tad* or *dad*, terminations that correspond to that of the Latin in *tas*, and to that of the English in *ty*, are of the feminine gender ; as, *humanidad*, humanity ; *puridad*, purity ; *adversidad*, adversity. As to the nouns that have other terminations, they are subject to so many exceptions, that it is impossible to establish in regard to them satisfactory rules.

SUBSTANTIVES THAT ARE OF BOTH GENDERS, according to  
the decision of the Academy.

Albalá,	-	-	-	-	-	-	cocket, passport.
Anatéma,	-	-	-	-	-	-	anathema.
Arte,	-	-	-	-	-	-	art.
Azúcar,	-	-	-	-	-	-	sugar.
Canal,	-	-	-	-	-	-	canal.
Cisma,	-	-	-	-	-	-	schism.
Cútis,	-	-	-	-	-	-	skin.
Dóte, dótes,	-	-	-	-	-	-	dowry, endowments.
Embléma,	-	-	-	-	-	-	emblem.
Hermafrodíta,	-	-	-	-	-	-	hermaphrodite.
Mar,	-	-	-	-	-	-	sea.

Márgen,	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	margin, bank.
Néma,	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	seal.
Néuma,	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	significant gesture.
Orden,	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	order.
Puénste,	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	bridge.
Réuma,	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	rheum.
Tribú,	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	tribe.

N. B. Tribú, *tribe*, though of both genders, generally takes the masculine.

#### OF NOUNS ADJECTIVE.

##### *Formation of the feminine of nouns adjective.*

In the Spanish language, as in almost all others, the adjective agrees in gender and number with the substantive to which it relates. It is then necessary to know the manner in which the feminine is formed from the masculine. Of the formation of the plural, we have given the rules, when speaking of the numbers.

Nouns adjective, the termination of which is in *o*, form their feminine by changing *o* into *a*; as *buéno*, *buéna*, good; *álto*, *álta*, high, &c.

Those that terminate in the masculine, with any other letter, have generally but one termination for both genders. We say then, *un hémhre alégre*, a merry man; and *una mugér alégre*, a merry woman; *un hómhre felíz*, a happy man; *una mugér felíz*, a happy woman, &c.

The following nouns, terminating in the singular, with a consonant, are excepted from the above rule, the feminine being formed by adding an *a* to the masculine. *Haragán-a*, lazy; *holgazán-a*, idle; *mamantón-a*, a sucking child; *harón-a*, sluggish; *hampón-a*, vain; as also national adjectives, as *Francés-a*, French; *Inglés-a*, English; *Aragónés-a*, Aragonese; *Andalúz-a*, Andalusian, &c. (See in page 195, the table of names of countries, and national adjectives.) Among the adjectives of this last class, some are found that terminate in *a*, and do not undergo any change in the feminine, as *Pérsa*, Persian; *Moscovíta*, Muscovite, &c.

#### COLLOCATION AND AGREEMENT OF THE ADJECTIVE WITH THE SUBSTANTIVE.

1st. The adjective is generally placed in Spanish after the substantive. However, the Spaniards, like the French, consult taste and harmony in its collocation.

2d. The adjective must always agree in gender and number with the substantive that it qualifies.

3d. When an adjective relates to two singular substantives, it must be put in the plural.

4th. When an adjective serves to qualify in the same phrase several substantives of different genders, it is put in the plural and in the masculine.

#### OF NOUNS DIMINUTIVE AND AUGMENTATIVE.

The Spanish language abounds, like the Italian language, in diminutives and augmentatives.

**RULE XII.** There are two kinds of diminutive nouns : 1st.—those that express tenderness, or the gentleness of any object whatever that is small ; and their termination is in *ito* or *ico* for the masculine, *ita* or *ica* for the feminine, which are added to the nouns, whether adjective, or substantive, without altering any thing in them, when they terminate with a consonant, but suppressing the last letter, if it be a vowel. Ex. *pájaro* bird ; *pajarito*, small or pretty little bird ; *casa*, house ; *casita*, small, or pretty little house ; *señor*, sir ; *señorito*, young gentleman, or master. From this rule should be excepted *buéno*, *buéna*, the diminutive of which is *bonito*, *bonita*, and which most often has only the meaning of *pretty*.

2. Those which denote contempt or pity, or which lessen the object without adding to it the idea of pretty, are generally terminated in *uelo*, *illo* or *cillo*, for the masculine, *uela*, *illa*, or *cilla* for the feminine, according to the foregoing rule respecting diminutives. Ex. *pérro*, dog ; *perrillo*, ugly little dog ; *mugér*, woman ; *mugercilla*, *mugercuela*, contemptible little woman ; *hómbre*, *hombrecillo*, *hombrezuelo*, miserable little man.

There are other diminutives terminating in *ete*, *in*, *éjo*, &c. but they are comparatively little used.

**RULE XIII.** The augmentative nouns add to the positive the signification of the words *big* or *large*, and are formed by adding *on*, *ázo*, *onázo*, or *óte* for the masculine, and *óna*, *áza*, or *onáza*, for the feminine, following the same rule as the diminutives in regard to the termination. Ex. *hómbre*, man ; *hombroón*, *hombroázo*, *hombroonázo*, big or large man ; *mugér*, woman ; *mugeróna*, *mugeráza*, *mugeronáza*, big or large woman ; *pérro*, dog ; *perrón*, *perrázo*, *perronázo*, big



or large dog ; *grande*, large ; *grandón*, *grandote*, *grandazo*, *grandonazo*, very big or large and without proportion.

#### DEGREES OF COMPARISON IN THE ADJECTIVES.

The adjectives may qualify the objects either absolutely, that is, without any relation to other objects, or relatively, that is, with relation to other objects. Hence arise three degrees of qualification, to wit : the *positive*, the *comparative*, and the *superlative*.

The *positive* is the adjective expressed without there being a comparison, as *buéno*, good ; *málo*, bad.

The *comparative* serves to establish between the objects that are compared a relation of *superiority*, *inferiority* or *equality*.

The adjective is in the *superlative* when it expresses the quality either in a very high or in the highest degree ; which forms two kinds of *superlatives*, the one *absolute*, and the other *relative*.

#### OF THE COMPARATIVES.

As a comparison may be made, not only by means of adjectives, but also by the aid of substantives, verbs and adverbs, we shall consider the comparatives in these four different cases. The Spanish language participates in this part of the Grammar, with the latin tongue, and difficulties would doubtless be found in it, should we content ourselves with merely treating of comparatives in relation to adjectives.

#### OF COMPARATIVES CONSIDERED IN RELATION TO ADJECTIVES.

**RULE XIV.** 1st. The comparative of *superiority* is always expressed by *mas*, more ; and the *que* following, by *than*. Ex. He is more learned than you, *él es mas sabio que vm.*

2d. The comparative of *inferiority* is formed by *ménos*, less, followed by *que*, than, or by *no-tan*, not so, and the *as* following is rendered by *cómo*. Ex. He is less learned than his brother, or he is not so learned as his brother ; *él es ménos dócto que su hermano*, or *él no es tan dócto cómo su hermano*.

3d. The comparative of *equality* is formed by *tan-cómo*, as-as ; or *no-ménos que*, not less-than. Ex. You are as prudent as your sisters, *vm. es tan prudente cómo sus hermanas*, or, you are not less prudent than your brothers, *vm. no es ménos prudente que sus hermanos*.

N. B. The following nouns are comparatives from their nature : *mayór*, larger, greater ; *menór*, lesser, smaller ; *mejór*, better ; *peór*, worse ; *superiór*, superior ; *inferiór*, inferior. We also say, *el mayór*; *el menór*; *el mejór*, *el peór*, the largest, the greatest ; the least, the smallest ; the best, the worst ; but then these adjectives are superlatives.

## COMPARATIVE OF SUPERIORITY.

*Of the comparative in relation to substantives, verbs, and adverbs.*

RULE XV. This comparative before the substantive, the adverb, and after the verb, is rendered by *mas-que*, more-than, and admits no preposition after it. Ex. He has more prudence than you, *tiene mas prudencia que vm.* ; she has more science than money, *tiene mas ciencia que dinero* ; we have more enemies than he, *tenemos mas enemigos que él* ; I esteem thee more than Mary, *te estimo mas que á María* ; we act more prudently than they, *obramos mas prudentemente que ellos*.

N. B. The foregoing rule perfectly agrees with the English construction. *More than*, *less than*, followed by a noun of number, *one*, *two*, *three*, &c. are translated by *mas de* and *ménos de*. Ex. She has more than ten guineas, *tiene mas de diéz guineas* ; she has more than seven brothers, *tiene mas de siete hermanos* ; we have less than a thousand dollars, *tenemos ménos de mil pesos* ; less than 20 years, *ménos de 20 años*.

*Comparative of Inferiority.*

RULE XVI. 1st. This comparative, considered in relation to substantives, may be expressed by *less* or *fewer-than*, or by *so much* or *so many-as*, preceded by the negative *not*.

*Less-than* is rendered by *ménos-que*. Ex. Less prudence than, *ménos prudencia que* ; fewer friends than, *ménos amigos que*, &c. *Not so much* or *so many-as*, is expressed by *no-tánto, -a, -os, -as, -cómo*, according to the gender and number of the noun to which, *so much*, *so many* relate. Ex. I have not so much money as you, *no tengo tanto dinero cómo vm.* ; Peter has not so much ambition as John, *Pédro no tiene tanta ambición cómo Juán* ; Francis has not so

many books as his brother, *Francisco no tiene tantos libros como su hermano.*

2d. In relation to verbs; *less-than* is expressed by *ménos-que*; *not-so much* is expressed by *no-tanto*, and *as*, by *cuánto* or *cómo*. Ex. I do not love him *so much as* I esteem him, *no le quiero tanto cuánto or cómo le estimo*; you study *less than* we, *vm. estudia ménos que nosotros.*

3d. In relation to adverbs; *less-than* is rendered by *ménos-que*, and *not-so* or *not-so-as* by *no-tan-cómo*. Ex. They act less prudently than you, or they do not act so prudently as you, *óbran ménos prudentemente que vm.*, or *no óbran tan prudentemente cómo vm.*

N. B. Before participles passive *so much-as*; *as much-as*, are rendered by *tan-como*. Ex. He is not so much esteemed as he, *no es tan estimado cómo él*.—I am as much loved as she is, *sóy tan amado cómo ella.*

### Comparative of equality.

RULE XVII. 1st. The comparative of equality, considered in relation to nouns substantive, is expressed by *as much-as*, *as many-as*, or by *not less-than*. *As much*, *as many*, is translated by *tánto*, *-a-os-as*, according to the gender and number of the substantive, and the following *as* by *cómo*. Ex. She has as much meekness as her sister, *tiene tanta dulzura cómo su hermana*; he acts with as much rigour as justice, *obra con tanto rigor cómo justicia*. *Not less-than* is rendered by *no ménos-que*. Ex. I am not less hungry than you, *no tengo ménos hambre que vm.*; we have not fewer protectors than friends, *no tenemos ménos protectores que amigos.*

2d. In regard to verbs; *as much as* is expressed by *tánto* *cuánto* or *cómo*. Ex. I punish him as much as he deserves, *le castigo tanto cuánto or cómo merece.*

*Not-less than* is always translated by *no-ménos-que*. Ex. You do not eat less than his brother, *vm. no come ménos que su hermano.*

3d. In relation to adverbs: *as-as* is rendered by *tan-cómo*. Ex. He sings as well as you, *canta tan bien cómo vm.*

*Not-less-than* is translated by *no-ménos-que*. Ex. I do not write less correctly than he, *no escribo ménos correctamente que él.*

### Of Superlatives.

There are two kinds of superlatives, the one absolute and the other relative.

**RULE XVIII.** The first expresses a quality in the supreme degree, but without comparison, and then the adjective is preceded by *muy*, *very* ; and if the adjective can form its superlative of itself, then, without having recourse to *muy*, we add to the positive *ísimo* or *ísima*, *ísimos* or *ísimas*, according to the gender and number of the substantive to which it refers, cutting off the final letter of the adjective, if it ends with a vowel. Ex. Paris is a very beautiful city. *París es una ciudad muy hermosa or hermosísima.*

The superlative absolute of the adverbs is likewise formed by *muy*, or by changing *emente* or *amente* into *ísimamente*. Ex. *Prudent-emente*, prudently, *prudent-ísimamente* ; *cándidamente*, candidly, *candid-ísimamente*.

N. B. 1st. It is proper to observe that there are adjectives and adverbs which do not admit the last form of the superlative ; consequently when a doubt occurs whether it may be used with any adjective or adverb, the surest way will be to make use of *muy*, *very*, with the positive.

N. B. 2d. From the general rule of absolute superlatives must be excepted a few adjectives that cannot be subjected to it, as, *buéno*, good ; *bonísimo*, very good ; *fuérte*, strong ; *fortísimo*, very strong. All those that terminate in *ble* change that syllable into *bilísimo*, for the superlative. Ex. *Amá-ble*, amiable, *ama-bilísimo* ; *afáble*, *afa-bilísimo*. The following nouns are superlatives in their nature ; *óptimo*, *pésimo*, *máximo*, *mínimo*, *ínfimo*, *suprémo*, very good, very bad, very great, very small, very low, supreme.

**RULE XIX.** The superlative relative expresses a quality in the highest degree, by comparison with other objects, and it is formed in English by one of these articles or pronouns, *the*, *of*, or *from the*, *to the* ; *my*, *thy*, *his*, *her*, *its*, *our*, *your*, *their*, followed by *most*, *least*, *best*, *worst* ; and in Spanish by one of these ; *el*, *la*, *los*, *las* ; *del*, *de la*, *de los* or *de las* ; *al*, *á la*, *á los* or *á las* ; *mi*, *tu*, *su*, *nuéstro*, *vuestro*, *su*, *sus*, followed by *mas*, *ménos*, *mejór*, *peór* ; and these articles and pronouns must agree in gender and number with the noun to which they relate. Ex. The most pure and constant pleasures, *los mas puros y constantes placeres.*

The adverb forms its superlative relative by *lo mas*, the most; *lo ménos*, the least; both which must always precede it. *Lo* is here a neuter article.

*Observations upon the Comparatives and Superlatives.*

RULE XX. The comparatives govern the verb that follows the *que*, *than*. Ex. He is more learned than he appears, *él es mas dócto que parece*, or *de lo que parece*.

RULE XXI. When the substantive, to which the adjective in the superlative relative refers, is preceded by the definite article and is immediately followed by the adjective, then the article is not repeated before *mas* nor the adjective. Ex. He was prepared to deal the most terrible marks of his resentment, *quedó en disposición de usar de las demostraciones mas terribles de su resentimiento* (Feijóo.) But if the substantive is not immediately followed by *mas*, most, then the article must be repeated. Ex. *El hombre que veo es el mas dócto*, the man I see is the most learned.

RULE XXII. The superlative relative governs the verb that follows the *que* in the indicative. Ex. The most powerful prince that has been, *el príncipe mas poderoso que ha habido*.

If, however, the verb, in English, is in the potential, we put it indifferently in the second or third conditionals. Ex. The best that I could find, *el mejor que halláse or hallára*.

And if it is in the future, we put it in the future conjunctive, or in the present of the subjunctive. Ex. The least that I can or shall be able, *lo ménos que pueda or pudiese*.

RULE XXIII. *Most* and *least* joined to a verb are rendered by *mas* and *ménos*. Ex. He is the man that I most love, *él es el hombre que mas quiero*.

This is the woman that I least esteem, *ésta es la mugér que ménos estimo*.

RULE XXIV. 1st. *The more-the more*, (that is, *the more* repeated in different members of a sentence, the second being as a consequence of the first,) are expressed by *cuánto mas-tánto mas*. The more virtuous man is, the more happy he is, *cuánto mas virtuoso es el hombre, tánto mas es feliz*.

2d. *The less-the less; the more-the less; the less-the more* are expressed by *cuánto ménos-tánto ménos; cuánto mas-tánto ménos; cuánto ménos-tánto mas*.

3d. *So much the more than, so much the less than*, are translated by *tánto mas que, tánto ménos que*.

#### OF NUMERAL ADJECTIVES AND SUBSTANTIVES OF NUMBER.

Adjectives of number are words that serve for enumeration. We call them adjectives because their office is to modify, and because every noun that modifies is an adjective. They are distinguished into two kinds, the *cardinals* and *ordinals*.

The cardinals serve to designate absolutely and simply the various numbers; the *ordinals* mark the order of persons or things in relation to the numbers.

The cardinal numbers are ;

únno, úna, -	-	-	-	-	one,
dos, -	-	-	-	-	two,
tres, -	-	-	-	-	three,
cuátro, -	-	-	-	-	four,
cínco, -	-	-	-	-	five,
séis, -	-	-	-	-	six,
siéte, -	-	-	-	-	seven,
ócho, -	-	-	-	-	eight,
nuéve, -	-	-	-	-	nine,
diéz, -	-	-	-	-	ten,
ónce, -	-	-	-	-	eleven,
dóce, -	-	-	-	-	twelve,
tréce, -	-	-	-	-	thirteen,
catórce, -	-	-	-	-	fourteen,
quince, -	-	-	-	-	fifteen,
diéz y séis, -	-	-	-	-	sixteen,
diéz y siéte, -	-	-	-	-	seventeen,
diéz y ócho, -	-	-	-	-	eighteen,
diéz y nuéve, -	-	-	-	-	nineteen,
véinte, -	-	-	-	-	twenty,
véinte y únno, -	-	-	-	-	twenty-one,
véinte y dos, -	-	-	-	-	twenty-two,
véinte y tres, -	-	-	-	-	twenty-three,
véinte y cuátro -	-	-	-	-	twenty-four,
véinte y cínco, -	-	-	-	-	twenty-five,
véinte y séis, -	-	-	-	-	twenty-six,
véinte y siéte, -	-	-	-	-	twenty-seven,
véinte y ócho, -	-	-	-	-	twenty-eight,

véinte y nuéve,	-	-	twenty-nine,
treínta,	-	-	thirty,
cuarénta,	-	-	forty,
cincuénta	-	-	fifty,
sesénta,	-	-	sixty,
seténta,	-	-	seventy,
ochénta,	-	-	eighty,
novénta,	-	-	ninety,
ciénto,	-	-	a or one hundred,
doscientos-as,*	-	-	two hundred,
trescientos-as,	-	-	three hundred,
cuatrocientos-as,	-	-	four hundred,
quinientos-as,	-	-	five hundred,
seiscientos-as,	-	-	six hundred,
setecientos-as,	-	-	seven hundred,
ochocientos-as,	-	-	eight hundred,
novecientos-as,	-	-	nine hundred,
mil,	-	-	a or one thousand,
dos mil,	-	-	two thousand,
mil y ciénto,	-	-	eleven hundred,
mil y doscientos-as,	-	-	twelve hundred,
cién mil,	-	-	a or one hundred thousand,
doscientos-as mil,	-	-	two hundred thousand,
millón,	-	-	million.

N. B. This last number is not an adjective, it belongs to the class of substantives.

priméro-a,†	-	-	first,
segúndo-a,	-	-	second,
tercéro-a,	-	-	third,
cuárto-a,	-	-	fourth,
quínto-a,	-	-	fifth,
sésto-a,	-	-	sixth,
séptimo-a	-	-	seventh,
octávo-a,	-	-	eighth,
nóno-a,	-	-	ninth,
décimo-a,	-	-	tenth,
undécimo-a,	-	-	eleventh,
duodécimo-a,	-	-	twelfth,

\* The masculine termination *os* is changed into *as* for the feminine.

† Primero, m. primera, f. &c.

décimo tércio, décima tércia,	thirteenth,
décimo cuárto, décima cuárta,	fourteenth,
décimo quinto, décima quinta,	fifteenth,
décimo sésto, décima sésta,	sixteenth,
décimo séptimo, décima séptima,	seventeenth,
décimo octávo, décima octáva,	eighteenth,
décimo nóno, décima nóna,	nineteenth,
vigésimo-a,	twentieth,
vigésimo primo-a-a,	twenty-first,
vigésimo segúndo-a-a,	twenty-second,
vigésimo tércio-a-a,	twenty-third,
trigésimo-a,	thirtieth,
cuadragésimo-a,	fortieth,
quincuagésimo-a,	fiftieth,
sexagésimo-a,	sixtieth,
septuagésimo-a,	seventieth,
octogésimo-a,	eightieth,
nonagésimo-a,	ninetieth,
nonagésimo primo, &c.-a-a,	ninety-first,
centésimo-a,	a or one hundredth,
ducentésimo-a,	two hundredth,
trecentésimo-a,	three hundredth,
cuadragentésimo-a,	four hundredth,
quingentésimo-a,	five hundredth,
sexcentésimo-a,	six hundredth,
septengentésimo-a,	seven hundredth,
octogentésimo-a,	eight hundredth,
nonagentésimo-a,	nine hundredth,
milésimo-a,	a or one thousandth,
antepenúltimo-a,	antepenultima,
penúltimo-a,	penultima,
último-a, postréro-a,	last.

Besides these two kinds of numbers, there are yet three others that belong to the class of substantives ; these are the *collective*, *distributive* and *proportional*.

The *collective* numbers serve to denote determinate quantities, as, *a dozen*, una docéna ; *half a dozen*, una média docéna ; *a hundred of*, una centéna ; *a thousandth*, un millár ; *a million*, un millón or cuénto.

The *distributive* serve to denote the different parts of a whole ; as, *the half*, la mitad ; *the third*, el tércio ; *a fourth*, una cuárta, &c.



The *proportional* are those that serve to denote the progressive increase of the number of things ; as, the *double*, el dúplo ; the *quadruple*, el cuadrúplo ; the *hundred fold*, el centúplo, &c.

N. B. All the cardinal numbers are indeclinable, except *uno*, one, and the compounds of *ciento* ; for, we say *uno*, *una*, *doscientos*, *doscientas*, &c. The ordinals form their feminine by changing *o* into *a*, as adjectives.

ADJECTIVES WHICH, JOINED TO A SUBSTANTIVE, LOSE ONE OR MORE LETTERS IN THE SINGULAR ONLY.

RULE XXV. 1st. *Uno*, one ; *primero*, first ; *tercero*, third ; *postrero*, last ; *alguno*, some ; *ninguno*, none ; *bueno*, good ; and *maló*, bad, wicked, when they are followed by a substantive, lose the last vowel, but only in the masculine. Ex. *Un hombre*, one man ; *el primér hombre*, the first man, &c. However, *tercero* does not always lose it ; for we say, *el tercér día* or *el tercero día* ; and both manners of speaking are admitted by the Academy.

2d. *Ciento*, hundred, loses the last syllable before a substantive. Ex. *Cien hombres*, a hundred men ; *cién mugéres*, a hundred women.

3d. *Grande*, great, large, loses the last syllable before a substantive which begins with a consonant, whenever it signifies *great in merit, in qualities* ; but if it only has the signification of *large in extent, in dimensions*, or if the substantive that follows it begins with a vowel or an *h*, it loses none of its letters. We therefore say, *una gran mugér*, a great woman ; *un gran caballo*, a noble horse, if to these words *great, noble*, we attach the idea of great in merit, in qualities ; but we must say, *una grande casa*, a large house ; *un grande amigo*, a great friend ; *un grande almirante*, a great admiral ; *un grande odio*, a great hatred.

4th. *Santo*, saint, loses also the last syllable before a proper name. Ex. *San Pedro*, *San Francisco*, &c. We except however from this rule *Santo Domingo*, *Santo Tomás*, *Santo Toribio*, and *Santo Tomé*.

N. B. 1st. It is not necessary, in order that this suppression of letters should take place, that the adjective be immediately followed by the substantive ; for, if we must say *un hombre*, *un libro*, we must also say, *un hábil hombre*, *un*

*buén libro*, although in these examples *un* be separated from its substantive by an adjective.

If the substantive is not expressed, the adjective that relates to it, does not then lose any letter. Ex. *uno ó dos hombres*, one or two men ; *uno de esos señores*, one of those gentlemen. In the first example, the substantive *hombre* is understood after *uno*, and in the second the word *señor* ; thus we cannot say *un ó dos hombres*, *un de esos señores*.

N. B. 2d. Whenever the word *ciento* takes after it another number, it preserves all its letters : we must then say, *ciento y dos*, *ciento y cinco*, *ciento y nueve hombres*, and not *cién y dos*, *cién y cinco*, *cién y nueve hombres*.

N. B. 3d. In speaking of sovereigns, and in quotations, we generally make use of ordinal numbers as in English, but the article *the* is not expressed in Spanish. Ex. Henry the Fourth, *Enrique Cuárto* ; Chapter the Seventh, *Capítulo Séptimo*.

N. B. 4th. When in English the cardinal numbers are followed by *o'clock*, *hora*, and one wishes to tell or ask the hour of the day, then the cardinal number must be preceded by the article *la* before *una*, *hora* is understood, and *las* before the other numbers, *horas* being implied, and the expression *o'clock* is suppressed ; and if the verb *to strike*, expressed in English, is translated into Spanish, it is rendered by *dar*. Ex. What o'clock is it ? *que hora es ?* one o'clock, *la una* ; three o'clock, *las tres* ; four o'clock, *las cuatro* ; it has struck five o'clock, *las cinco han dado* ; it has just struck six o'clock, *las seis acaban de dar* ; seven o'clock is about striking, *las siete están para dar*.

*Twelve o'clock at noon* is translated by *las doce*, or *las doce del día* ; and *midnight* by *las doce de la noche*, or *media noche*. In the following examples and others like them, *afternoon* is translated by *de la tarde* and *in the evening* by *de la noche*. Ex. At five o'clock in the afternoon, *á las cinco de la tarde* ; at eight o'clock, at ten o'clock in the evening, *á las ocho*, *á las diez de la noche* ; at six o'clock in the morning, *á las seis de la mañana* ; at four o'clock in the morning, *á las cuatro de la mañana*.

N. B. 5th. The verb *it is*, taken impersonally in English in some of the preceding examples and the like, is not impersonal in Spanish ; it agrees on the contrary in number

*hora*, hour understood, and the pronoun *it*, is d. Ex. It is one o'clock, *es la una* ; it is two dos ; it is half after three, *son las tres y mé-*  
*nos a quarter of four, son las cuatro ménos cuárto.*

N. B. 6th. In speaking of the days of the month, if we express the word *día*, day, it must be preceded by the article, and followed by the ordinal or cardinal number, but most commonly by the cardinal. Ex. The twelfth of January, *el día doce de Enero*. If we suppress the word *día*, then we make use of the cardinal number, preceded by the preposition *a* or *en*. Ex. The twelfth of January, *a* or *en* *doce de Enero*. We also say *el priméro, el segundo, &c. de Enero*, and then the word *día* is understood.

This is the way in which letters are dated.

*Madrid, y Febréro 20 de 1822. Cambridge, 20 de Júlio de 1824. Boston, á 1.º de 7.bre 1827.*

## CHAPTER V.

### OF PRONOUNS.

PRONOUNS hold the place of nouns, recall the idea of them, and prevent their repetition, which would render the speech languid. They are divided into *personal, possessive, demonstrative, relative, interrogative, and indefinite*.

#### OF PRONOUNS PERSONAL.

Pronouns personal denote persons, or hold the place of persons or personified things. Such, for the first person of the singular, are *yó, me, mí, I, me* ; and, for that of the plural, *nos, nosotros, nosotros, we, us*. For the second person—Sing. *tú, te, tí, thou, thee* ;—Plur. *vos, vosotros, vosotros, ye, you*.

For the third person.—Sing masc. *él, he, him or it*.—Masc. plur. *ellos, they, them*.—Fem. sing. *ella, she or it* ; fem. plur. *ellas, they or them*.—Sing masc. and fem. *le, to him, to her, him*. (*Le* is of both genders when it is in the dative, and of the masculine only, when in the accusative.) Sing. fem. *la, her* ; plur. masc. and fem. *les, to them* ; plur. masc. *los, them* ; plur. fem. *las, them*.

There is another pronoun of the third person, which is *se*, oneself, *se*, himself, herself, itself ; it is of the three genders. In English *oneself* cannot relate but to the singular ; *se* in Spanish may be employed with both numbers without varying its termination. It is called reflective, because it denotes the relation of a person or thing to him, to her, or itself.

Among personal pronouns some are used only of persons, and others are used alike of persons and things. Those of the first person are only applied to persons or personified things ; those of the third are indifferently used of persons and things.

Pronouns may be *nominatives*, and of the *direct* or *indirect regimen*.

They are *nominatives* when they are the subjects of the proposition. In this phrase, *yo hablo*, I speak ; *yó*, I, is a pronoun nominative, because it is the subject of the proposition.

A pronoun is a *direct regimen*, when it is the object of the action expressed by the verb ; and it is an *indirect regimen* when it is the end of the action expressed by the verb. In these phrases, *Diós le castigará*, God will punish him ; *mi padre te dará su opinión*, my father will give thee his opinion ; *le* is the direct regimen, because it is the object of the punishment expressed by the verb *castigará* ; and *te* put for *á tí* is the indirect regimen, because, instead of being the object of the action expressed by the verb *dará*, it is the end of it ; the object is the thing given, that is, *his opinion*, and the end is the person to whom the opinion is to be given, that is, *to thee*.

### Declension of personal pronouns.

#### PRONOUN OF THE FIRST PERSON.

Singular of both genders.				Pron. as regimen.*			
N.	yó,	-	-	I.			
G.	de mí,	-	-	of me.			
D.	á mí,	-	-	to me.	me,	-	- to me.
A.	á mí,	-	-	me.	me,	-	- me.
Ab.	de mí,	-		from me.			

\* We give to these pronouns the denomination of *pronouns used as a regimen*, (objective pronouns,) because it appears to be more intelligible and conformable to true principles.

*Plural masculine. Pron. as Regiment.*

N.	nos,* nosotros,	-	we,				
G.	de nosotros,	-	of us.				
D.	á nosotros,	-	to us.	nos,	-	-	to us.
A.	á nosotros,	-	us.	nos,	-	-	us.
Ab.	de nosotros,	-	from us.				

*Plural feminine.*

N.	nos,* nosótras,	-	we.				
G.	de nosótras,	-	of us.				
D.	á nosótras,	-	to us.	nos,	-	-	to us.
A.	á nosótras,	-	us.	nos,	-	-	us.
Ab.	de nosótras,	-	from us.				

## SECOND PERSON.

*Singular of both genders.*

N.	tú,†	-	thou.				
G.	de tí,	-	of thee.				
D.	á tí,	-	to thee.	te,	-	-	to thee.
A.	á tí,	-	thee.	te,	-	-	thee.
Ab.	de tí,	-	from thee.				

*Plural masculine.*

N.	vos,‡ vosotros,	-	ye or you.				
G.	de vosotros,	-	of you.				
D.	á vosotros,	-	to you.	os,	-	-	to you.
A.	á vosotros,	-	you.	os,	-	-	you.
Ab.	de vosotros,	-	from you.				

\* *Nos* is only used by the King, Dignitaries, and Superior Officers and Tribunals in church and state,

† We seldom use the pronoun *tú* in Spanish. However, masters use it in speaking to their domestics; man and wife; parents in speaking to their children, brothers to brothers, lovers to lovers, and friends to their friends; but except in these cases, it is not used in good company, and we make use for both genders of *usted* for the singular, and of *ustedes* for the plural, putting the following verb in the third person. *Usted* is an abbreviation of *vuestra merced*, which signifies *your favour*, and *ustedes*, an abbreviation of *vuestras mercedes*, *your favours*. If these pronouns are followed by an adjective that relates to them, this adjective must always take the gender of the person to whom we speak. Ex. Sir, are you well? *señor está vm. bueno*? Madam, I have been told that you are well, *señora me han dicho que vm. está buena*. In conversation we pronounce *usted* and *ustedes*, but we write *vm.* and *vms.* (See Abbrev. page 12.)

‡ *Vos* is used with the Deity, Holy Virgin, Saints, Sovereigns and persons of high rank; and superiors use it also instead of *tú* with their inferiors.

*Plural feminine.**Pron. as Regimen.*

N.	vos, vosótras,	-	you.				
G.	de vosótras,	-	of you.				
D.	á vosótras,	-	to you.	os,	-	-	to you.
A.	á vosótras,	-	you.	os,	-	-	you.
Ab.	de vosótras,		from you.				

## THIRD PERSON.

*Singular masculine.*

N.	él,*	-	-	he, it.			
G.	de él,†	-	-	of him, of it.			
D.	á él,	-	-	to him, to it.	le, se,	-	- to him.†
A.	á él.	-	-	him, it.	le, lo,	-	- him.†
Ab.	de él,			from him, from it.			

*Plural masculine.*

N.	ellos,	-	-	they.			
G.	de ellos,	-	-	of them.			
D.	á ellos,	-	-	to them.	les, se,	-	- to them.†
A.	á ellos,	-	-	them.	les, los,	-	- them.†
Ab.	de ellos,			from them.			

\* Instead of the pronouns of the third person singular and plural, masculine and feminine, if we address one or many persons to whom we owe much respect, we make use of *su merced*, and *sus mercedes*. Ex. *Su merced está bueno*; *sus mercedes están buenos*, you are well.

† Formerly we used to suppress the *e* of the preposition *de*, before *él* pronoun, as *dél, délla, déllos, déllas*; now this contraction is rejected by the Academy; it is suppressed before *el*, article. (See the note, page 26.)

‡ As it is easy to confound, in the use of these pronouns, those of the dative with those of the accusative, and as the Spaniards themselves confound them frequently, we have thought the following observations necessary.

A verb may have two regimens, one direct, and the other indirect. (See the difference of these two regimens, p. 55.) If the pronoun is the direct regimen, as in these phrases, *I see him, I respect her, I love them*, all these pronouns are in the accusative, and we must say, *lo veo, la respeto, los or las quiero*. But, if it is the indirect regimen, as in the following phrases, *he wrote to him a letter, I gave them good advice*, the pronouns are in the dative, and we must say in Spanish, *le escribí una carta, les di buenos consejos*. *Le, les*, serve in the dative or indirect case for both genders.

*Singular Feminine.**Pron. as Regimen.*

N.	élla,	-	-	she, it.				
G.	de élla,	-	-	of her, of it.				
D.	á élla,	-	-	to her, to it.	le, se,	-	-	to her. †
A.	á élla,	-	-	her, it.	le, la,	-	-	her. †
Ab.	de élla,	-	-	from her, from it.				

*Plural feminine.*

N.	éllas,	-	-	they.				
G.	de éllas,	-	-	of them.				
D.	á éllas,	-	-	to them.	les, se,	-	-	to them. †
A.	á éllas,	-	-	them.	les, las,	-	-	them. †
Ab.	de éllas,	-	-	from them.				

## PRONOUN REFLECTIVE.

N.	se,	-	-	one, people, we.	(Indef. Pronoun.)			
G.	de sí,	-	-	of oneself, himself, herself, itself, themselves.				
D.	á sí,	-	-	to oneself, himself, herself, &c.	se,	-	-	to himself, &c.
A.	á sí,	-	-	oneself, &c.	se,	-	-	himself, &c.
Ab.	de sí,	-	-	from oneself, &c.				

N. B. 1st. When the word *mismo*, *self*, is united to this pronoun, it agrees in gender and number with the noun or nouns to which the pronoun relates, as *sí mismo*, *sí misma*, &c. Ex. *Ellos hablan de sí mismos*, they speak of themselves; *éllas se condenan á sí mismas*, they condemn themselves.

N. B. 2d. *Se*, one, we, they, people, is often used as a nominative to the verb. Ex. *Se piensa*, people think, or rendered by the passive voice; as, it is thought; *Se dice*, people say, or it is said.

N. B. 3d. The pronouns *mí*, *tí*, *sí*, *ME*, *THER*, *ONESELF*, preceded by the preposition *con*, *WITH*, are changed in Spanish into *mígo*, *tígo*, *sígo*, which are united to the preposition. Ex. *conmigo*, with me; *consigo*, with him, with her, with them.

## TABLE OF PRONOUNS AS REGIMEN OR OBJECTIVE.

			Dative, Accusative.
1st. pers. sing. masc. and fem.	to me, me,	me,	me.
1st. pers. plur. masc. and fem.	to us, us,	nos,	nos.
2d. pers. sing. masc. and fem.	to thee, thee,	te,	te.
2d. pers. plur. masc. and fem.	to you, you,	os,	os.

† See the note on the preceding page.

		Dative.	Accusative.
3d. pers. sing. masc. & neut.	to him, to it, him, it,	le, se,	le, lo.
3d. pers. plur. masc.	to them, them,	les, se,	les, los.
3d. pers. sing. fem.	to her, her,	le, se,	le, la.
3d. pers. plur. fem.	to them, them,	les, se,	les, las.
3d. pers. pron. reflect. sing.	to himself, herself,	} se,	se.
& plur. masc. & fem.	itself, themselves.		

ON THE CONSTRUCTION OF PRONOUNS AS REGIMEN, OR OBJECTIVE.

**RULE XXVI.** The PRONOUNS AS REGIMEN, *me, nos ; te os ; le, lo, les, los ; la, las, se*, must be placed after the verb, whenever it is in the *infinitive, imperative*, or a *gerund* ; and in these cases they are united close to the verb, so as to form with it, at least in appearance, a single word. Ex. *No quieró dárló*, I will not give it ; *dálo*, give it ; *dándolo*, in giving it.

In all other cases, the general rule requires that they be placed before the verb. Ex. *Te digo*, I tell thee ; *le escribirá*, he will write to him. We however find examples of pronouns used as regimen, placed after verbs in other modes and tenses than those mentioned in the preceding rule ; as, *dígolo*, I say it ; *harélo*, I shall do it ; *sucédeme muchas veces*, it often happens to me. But as it is practice that must determine the propriety of this construction, it is best for the scholar to follow the general rule, until well versed in the language.

**RULE XXVII.** The pronouns of indirect regimen, TO HIM, TO HER, TO IT, and TO THEM, when they are accompanied by one of the pronouns of direct regimen, *lo, la, los, las*, must be translated by *se*. Ex. *Se lo, se la daré*, I will give it to him, to her, to it, to them.

**RULE XXVIII.** We use also very elegantly the same pronoun *se*, when, besides the pronouns of direct regimen, *lo, la, &c.* the verb has a noun for an indirect regimen, and then *se* is merely an expletive. Ex. *Se lo prometó á vm.*, I promise it to you ; *se* and *á vm.* stand for *to you* or *to your favour* separately, therefore it is a repetition to give clearness and force to the idea.

**RULE XXIX.** This pronoun *se* is also frequently used in Spanish to express the passive of verbs, as in these phrases ; *se movió la tierra*, the earth was shaken ; *la tempestad se apaciguó*, the tempest was appeased ; *se dóbla ó repíte*



*el clamór*, the cries are increased or repeated. In these phrases *se* denotes that the verbs have a passive signification, though they retain the active termination. This is like the latin ; *terra movit ; tempestas sedavit ; clamor ingeminat*.

RULE XXX. When the pronoun *nos*, *us*, is a direct regimen, and is found immediately after the verb that governs it in the accusative, this verb, if it is in the first person of the plural, loses its final *s*. Ex. *Divertámonos*, we amuse ourselves ; *amámonos*, we love one another ; and in the imperative mode, if the second person of the plural is followed by *os*, *you*, it loses the *d*. Ex. *Cubríos*, cover yourselves.

N. B. To give more clearness and energy to the phrase, we frequently place the pronoun, in Spanish, when it is the object of the action, both before and after the verb ; and in this case one of the pronouns is always without the preposition, and the other is always preceded by the preposition *á* ; as in the following phrases ; *le estiman á él*, they esteem him ; *me han escrito á mí*, they have written to me ; *yó á tí no te quiero*, I do not love thee. Also, when the verb has no other regimen but *you*, if this pronoun is rendered by *vuestra merced*, or *vuestras mercedes*, we often elegantly place before the verb one of these pronouns *le*, *lo*, *la*, *les*, *los*, *las*, *les*, according to the gender and number of the person or persons which the pronoun represents, and according to the case the verb governs. Ex. *No le basta á vm. el pretendér . . .* it is not sufficient for you to pretend . . . *Yá lo han dicho, señora ; jamás la visitarán á vm.* ; they said it ; madam, they never will see you.

#### OF PRONOUNS POSSESSIVE.

The *pronouns possessive* serve to denote the possession of an object. They follow the rules of adjectives.

In order to render the use of these pronouns more clear and striking, we distinguish them into two kinds ; those that are always joined to a noun and do not take an article ; as *mi*, *tu*, *su*, &c. *my*, *thy*, *his*, &c. Ex. *Mi padre*, my father ; *tu madre*, thy mother ; *su hijo*, his son : and those that are not joined to the noun, and take the article : as, *el mío*, *el tuyo*, *el suyo*, &c. *mine*, *thine*, *his*, &c.

## OF PRONOUNS POSSESSIVE THAT ARE ALWAYS JOINED TO NOUNS.

These pronouns denote possession, either as respects one person or many.

Those which, in Spanish, relate only to one person, are, in the singular, *mi*, my; *ti*, thy; and in the plural, *mis*, my; *tus*, thy.

Those which denote that the possession relates to many, are *nuéstro*, masculine, *nuéstra*, feminine; *nuéstros*, masculine, *nuéstras*, feminine, our; *vuestro*, masculine, *vuestra*, feminine, your. For the third person in the singular, *su*, his, her, or their; and in the plural *sus*, his, her or their; and these pronouns of the third person may, in Spanish, relate to one possessor, or to many.

## DECLENSION OF PRONOUNS POSSESSIVE.

N. B. The declension of these pronouns presenting no difficulty, it will be sufficient to decline the first and give the nominative of the others. They take no article.

## SINGULAR AND PLURAL.

*Masculine and feminine.*

N. <i>mi</i> , sing.	-	-	<i>mis</i> , plur.	-	-	-	<i>my</i> .
G. <i>de mi</i> ,	-	-	<i>de mis</i> ,	-	-	-	<i>of my</i> .
D. <i>á mi</i> ,	-	-	<i>á mis</i> ,	-	-	-	<i>to my</i> .
A. <i>mi</i> , <i>á mi</i> ,	-	-	<i>mis</i> , <i>á mis</i> ,	-	-	-	<i>my</i> .
Ab. <i>de mi</i> ,	-	-	<i>de mis</i> ,	-	-	-	<i>from my</i> .

When this pronoun *my* is used in calling, in addressing a person, or in exclamations, instead of *mi*, *mis*, we make use of *mío*, *mía*, *míos*, *mías*, without an article; they are placed after the noun to which they refer, and take its gender and number. Ex. *Amigo mío*, my friend; *hija mía*, my daughter; *amigos míos*, my friends, &c.

## SINGULAR AND PLURAL.

*Masculine and feminine.*

Tu,	-	-	-	tus,*	-	-	-	-	thy.
su,	-	-	-	sus,†	-	-	-	-	his, her, its.
nuéstro,	-	-	-	nuéstra,	os,	as,	-	-	our.‡
vuestro,	-	-	-	vuestra,	os,	as,	-	-	your.‡
su,	-	-	-	sus,	-	-	-	-	their.

## OF PRONOUNS POSSESSIVE NOT JOINED TO NOUNS.

These pronouns admit the masculine, feminine, and neuter termination, and relate, as well as the preceding, to one or more persons. Those that relate to a single person, are ; *el mío*, masc. *la mía*, fem. sing. *los míos*, masc. *las mías*, fem. plural, mine ; *el tuyo* masc. *la tuya*, fem. sing. *los tuyos*, *las tuyas*, fem. plural, thine.

\* We have said when speaking of personal pronouns, page 52, that *tú* and *vos* are not used in good society. It is the same with the possessive pronouns *tu* and *vuestro*, in the place of which we make use of *de tm.* in speaking to one person, and of *de vms.* in speaking to several ; and we place before the noun substantive one of these articles *el*, *los*, *la*, *las*, according to the gender and number of the noun. Ex. Your son, that is, the son of your favour, or of your favours, *el hijo de tm.* or *de vms.* (*tm.* if we speak only to the father or to the mother ; *vms.* if we speak to both.)

† When we speak of a person for whom we wish to show much respect, instead of *su*, we may make use of *su Mercéd*, *su Señoría*, *su Excelencia*, according to the rank of the person ; and such a phrase as the following ; I have seen the Corregidor, and hope to obtain his protection (that is the protection of his favour,) is rendered in Spanish, *he visto al señor Corregidor, y espero merecer la protección de su merced.*

‡ Though the pronouns *nuéstro* and *vuestra* seem as though they ought to express the idea of more than one person, it happens sometimes that they relate only to one ; for the king says *Nuéstro consejo*, our council ; and in speaking to a person distinguished for his rank and authority, we make use of *vuestro*, *vuestra*. We say for example, *Vuestra Magestad*, *vuestra Beatitude*, *vuestra Ilustrísima*, *vuestra Alteza*, &c. Your Majesty, your Holiness, your Grace, your Highness, &c. We use the same pronouns *vuestro* and *vuestra*, in speaking to God, to the Holy Virgin, and the Saints. When *your* is turned by of *your favour* or of *your favours*, *de tm.* or *de vms.* we frequently use the pronouns *su* and *sus*, instead of the article before the substantive. Ex. *He recibido su carta* (or *sus cartas*) *de tm.* or *de vms.* I have received your letter or your letters ; i. e. the letter of your worship or worships, your favour or favours.

Those that relate to several persons, are ; *el nuestro*, masc. *la nuestra*, fem. sing. *los nuestros*, masc. *las nuestras*, fem. plural, ours ; *el vuestro*, masc. *la vuestra*, fem. sing. *los vuestros*, masc. *las vuestras*, fem. plural, yours ; *el suyo*, masc. *la suya*, fem. his, hers, theirs ; *los suyos*, masc. *las suyas*, fem. his, hers, theirs.

N. B. These pronouns are always preceded by the noun to which they relate, and with which they agree in gender and number ; this noun is that which represents the object possessed, and not the possessor.\*

The following declension will serve as a rule for those pronouns that are declined with the article.

#### DECLENSION OF THE PRONOUN, MIO.

##### *Singular Masculine and feminine.*

N.	el mío,	-	-	la mía,	-	-	mine.
G.	del mío,	-	-	de la mía,	-	-	of mine.
D.	al mío.	-	-	á la mía,	-	-	to mine.
A.	el or al mío,	-	-	la mía or á la mía,	-	-	mine.
Ab.	del mío	-	-	de la mía,	-	-	from mine.

##### *Plural masculine and feminine.*

N.	los míos,	-	-	las mías,	-	-	mine.
G.	de los míos,	-	-	de las mías,	-	-	of mine.
D.	á los míos,	-	-	á las mías,	-	-	to mine.
A.	los míos, or á los míos,	-	-	las mías, or á las mías,	-	-	mine.
Ab.	de los míos,	-	-	de las mías,	-	-	from mine.

The following pronouns are to be declined in the same manner.

##### *Singular masculine and feminine.*

el tuyo,	-	-	-	la tuya,	-	-	thine.
el suyo,	-	-	-	la suya,	-	-	his, hers.
el nuestro,	-	-	-	la nuestra,	-	-	ours.
el vuestro,	-	-	-	la vuestra,	-	-	yours.
el suyo,	-	-	-	la suya,	-	-	theirs.

\* This rule requires a particular attention, because the English most always cause these pronouns to agree with the possessor and not with the object possessed. Ex. *Is that your sister's book?* No, it is mine ; here is hers ; hers, pronoun, refers to sister, and not to book ; in Spanish, on the contrary, we must say : *es éste el libro de su hermana de un. ?*—No, es el mío ; he aquí el suyo ; suyo is in the masculine because it refers to libro and not to hermana.

*Plural masculine and feminine.*

los túyos,	-	-	las túyas,	-	-	thine.
los súyos,	-	-	las súyas,	-	-	his, hers.
los nuéstrs,	-	-	las nuéstras,	-	-	ours.
los vuéstrs,	-	-	las vuéstras,	-	-	yours.
los súyos,	-	-	las súyas,	-	-	theirs.

N. B. With the neuter article we say, *lo mío*, what is mine ; *lo tuyo*, what is thine, &c. as with the adjectives.

RULE XXXI. These last pronouns, *mío*, *tuyo*, &c. sometimes accompany a substantive, principally in exclamations, or when they are used in addressing a person, but then the substantive precedes the pronoun, and does not take an article. Ex. Father ! *pádre mío* ! mother ! *mádre mía* ! come, friend, &c. *ven, amigo mío*, &c.

RULE XXXII. When the verb *to be* is taken in the sense of *to belong*, we use in Spanish as in English the possessive pronoun *mío*, mine, *tuyo*, thine, &c. without the article, but this pronoun in Spanish agrees in gender and number with the thing possessed of which we speak. Ex. This book is mine, *este libro es mío* ; this house is thine, his, theirs, ours, &c. *esta casa es tuya, suya, nuestra*, &c.

N. B. 1st. When the verb *to be*, taken in the sense of *to belong*, is followed or preceded by another pronoun or by a noun, this noun or pronoun must be put in the genitive. Ex. This book is Mr. B's, *este libro es del señor B.* ; this horse is my brother's, *este caballo es de mi hermano* ; whose house is this, *de quién es esta casa* ? (see the pronoun *cuyo*, Rule XXXIV, page 63.)

N. B. 2d. This same observation must be regarded for the possessive pronoun *yours*, after the verb *to be*, when instead of *vuestro*, we should wish to employ *vm.* and *vm.* (*vuestra merced* and *vuestras mercedes*,) *your favour* and *your favours*. Thus, in this phrase ; this book is yours ; if I express *yours* by *de vm.*, I must say, *este libro es de vm.*, sing, *de ustedes*, plural.

RULE XXXIII. To translate *of mine*, *of thine*, *of his*, &c. the Spaniards use commonly the possessive pronouns *mío*, *tuyo*, *suyo*, &c. placed as in English, but without the preposition *of*. Ex. A brother of his, *un hermano suyo* ; a friend of mine, *un amigo mío* ; an uncle of his, of hers, of theirs, *un tío suyo*.

## OF PRONOUNS DEMONSTRATIVE.

Pronouns demonstrative indicate, and place, as it were, under the eye, the person or the thing of which they hold the place. They are divided into three kinds.

The following pronoun designates the object that is near the person that speaks.

<i>Singular masculine and feminine.</i>						
Éste,	-	ésta,	-	-	-	<i>this.</i>
<i>Plural masculine and feminine.</i>						
Éstos,	-	éstas,	-	-	-	<i>these.</i>
<i>Neuter.</i>						
Ésto,	-	-	-	-	-	<i>this, this thing, any thing.</i>

N. B. We find in ancient authors, *aquéste, aquésta, aquéstos, aquéstas, aquésto*, instead of *éste, ésta, &c.*

If the object is more distant from the person that speaks, than from the one to whom the speech is addressed, we make use of the following pronoun ;

<i>Singular masculine and feminine.</i>						
Ése,	-	ésa,	-	-	-	<i>that.</i>
<i>Plural Masculine and feminine.</i>						
Ésos,	-	ésas,	-	-	-	<i>those.</i>
<i>Neuter.</i>						
Éso,	-	-	-	-	-	<i>that, that thing, any thing.</i>

N. B. We also find *aquése, aquésa, aquésos, aquésas, aquéso*, for *ése, ésa, &c.*

The pronouns that follow, express a distant object, both from the person who speaks, and from him to whom the speech is addressed.

<i>Singular masculine and feminine.</i>						
Aqué!, él,	-	aquélla, la,	-	he, that,	-	she, that.
<i>Plural masculine and feminine.</i>						
Aquéllas, los,	-	aquéllas, las,	-	they,	-	those.
<i>Neuter.</i>						
Aquélo,	-	élo, lo,	-	-	-	that, - it.

There are also three other pronouns which are compounded of the preceding and of the adjective *ótro, ótra*, other. Viz.

*Masculine and feminine, singular and plural.*

Estótro, estótra, estótro, estótras, *this other, these others.*  
 Esótro, esótra, esótro, esótras, *that other, those others.*  
 Aquél otro, aqué- aquéllos otros, &c. } *that other, those others.*  
 la otra, quéllas ótras, }

*Neuter.*

Estótro, esótro, aquéllo otro, - *this and that other.*

N. B. *He who, she who, they who, or that*, are translated by, *él que or quién, la que, las or las que, or by aquél que, aquélla que, aquéllos or aquéllas que*; and *that of*, by *él de, aquél de*; *la de, aquélla de*; and *lo de, aquéllo de*, by *that of, the thing of*.

*What or that which*, are translated by *lo que, aquéllo que*.

## OF PRONOUNS RELATIVE.

Pronouns relative are those that relate to a noun or pronoun which precedes. Some take the article, others do not.

The following do not take the article.

*Singular masculine and feminine.*

N. que, quién,\* - - - - *who, that, which.*  
 G. de quién, - - - - *of whom, whose, &c.*  
 D. á quién, - - - - *to whom.*  
 A. á quién or que, - - - - *whom.*  
 Ab. de quién, - - - - *from whom.*

*Plural masculine and feminine.*

N. que, quiénes,† - - - - *who, that, which.*  
 G. de quiénes, - - - - *of whom, whose, &c.*  
 D. á quiénes, - - - - *to whom.*  
 A. á quiénes, - - - - *whom.*  
 Ab. de quiénes, - - - - *from whom.*

*Neuter.*

lo que, - - - - *that which, what.*  
 de lo que, - - - - *of what.*  
 á lo que, - - - - *to what.*

\* *Quién* and *quiénes* are applied only to persons and personified things; *que* both to persons and things.

† We also use *quién* in the plural number, says the Grammar of the Academy, and it gives the following examples. *Los primeros con quién topámos éran los gimnosofistas*, the first whom we met were the gymnosophists. *Aquéllos siete sábios á quién tanto veneró la Grecia*, those seven sages so much venerated by the Greeks.

N. B. *Whose* is translated by the pronoun *cuyo, cuya, cuyos, cuyas*, following the gender and number of the thing possessed, by which this pronoun *cuyo* must be immediately followed, if it is relative, but from which it is commonly separated by the verb, when in its interrogative. It always agrees with the object possessed, and never with the possessor.

*CUYO, CUYA, CUYOS, CUYAS.*

**RULE XXXIV.** The pronoun *cuyo* is relative and interrogative, and is used for *whose, of which*; but care should be taken to observe, as has been already said, that it agrees with the thing possessed, and not with the possessor, and is applicable in Spanish to persons as well as to things. Ex. Whose book is this? *cuyo es este libro?* Whose pens are those? *cuyas son esas plúmas?* She is a lady whose qualities are known, *es una señora cuyas prendas son conocidas.* London the streets of which are so wide, *Lóndres cuyas calles son tan anchas.*

**RULE XXXV.** When the pronoun *that*, preceded by a noun or pronoun to which it relates, may be rendered by *of whom, in whom, by whom, for whom, &c.* it must be expressed by *de quién, á quién, en quién, por quién, &c.* Ex. It is of oneself that one ought to be afraid, *de sí mismo es de quién se ha de tener miedo*, that is, *of whom, &c.* It is to God that we must have recourse, *es á Dios á quién es preciso de acudir*, that is, *to whom, &c.*

ANOTHER PRONOUN RELATIVE.

This pronoun is sometimes declined with the article.

*Singular masculine and feminine.*

N.	el cuál	-	-	la cuál,	-	-	<i>which.</i>
G.	del cuál	-	-	de la cuál,	-	-	<i>of which.</i>
D.	al cuál	-	-	á la cuál,	-	-	<i>to which.</i>
A.	el cuál, al cuál,	-	-	la cuál, á la cuál,	-	-	<i>which.</i>
Ab.	del cuál,	-	-	de la cuál	-	-	<i>from which.</i>

*Plural masculine and feminine.*

N.	los cuáles,	-	-	las cuáles,	-	-	<i>which.</i>
G.	de los cuáles,	-	-	de las cuáles,	-	-	<i>of which.</i>
D.	á los cuáles,	-	-	á las cuáles,	-	-	<i>to which.</i>
A.	los cuáles, á los cuáles,	-	-	las cuáles, á las cuáles	-	-	<i>which.</i>
Ab.	de los cuáles,	-	-	de las cuáles,	-	-	<i>from which.</i>

*Neuter.*

N.	lo cuál, &c.	-	-	-	-	-	<i>which, which thing.</i>
----	--------------	---	---	---	---	---	----------------------------



## OF PRONOUNS INTERROGATIVE.

Pronouns interrogative are those which serve to interrogate ; they are declined with the article.

*Singular masculine and feminine.*

N.	quién,	-	-	-	-	-	-	who.
G.	de quién,	-	-	-	-	-	-	of whom.
D.	á quién,	-	-	-	-	-	-	to whom.*
A.	quién, á quién,	-	-	-	-	-	-	whom.
Ab.	de quién,	-	-	-	-	-	-	from whom.

*Plural masculine and feminine.*

quienes, &c. &c.	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	who.
------------------	---	---	---	---	---	---	---	------

*Neuter.*

N.	que, cuál,	-	-	-	-	-	-	what, which.
G.	de que,	-	-	-	-	-	-	of what.
D.	á que,	-	-	-	-	-	-	to what.
A.	que,	-	-	-	-	-	-	what.
Ab.	de que	-	-	-	-	-	-	from what.

*Which*, separate from the noun, is translated by *cuál*, *cuáles*, of both genders. Ex. You have read these books ; which of the two do you prefer ? *Vm. ha leído estos libros ; cuál de los dos prefiere ?* *Cuál es su obra ?* Which is his work ?

*What*, immediately followed by a noun, is rendered by *que* of both genders and numbers. Ex. What book do you read ? *que libro lees ?* What o'clock is it ? *que hora es ?* What fruits will you buy ? *que frutas comprará vm ?* *Que hombre ha visto vm. ?* What man have you seen ?

*Wherein* is rendered by *en que*.

## OF PRONOUNS INDEFINITE.

These pronouns are thus called, because they express an object vague and indeterminate. All those that are placed in this class are not always pronouns, strictly so called, but become adjectives when they are joined with nouns, and present some particulars which it is essential to make familiar.

\* See Rule XXXIV, page 63, for the pronoun *cuyo*, *a*, *os*, *as*.

Nobody,	- - - - -	-	<i>nadie, ninguno.</i>
None,	- - - - -	-	<i>ninguno, ninguna.</i>
No, not any, (followed by a noun,)	-	-	<i>ninguno, ninguna.</i>
Not one,	- - - - -	-	<i>ni uno, ni una.</i>
Neither,	- - - - -	{	<i>ni uno ni otro, ni una ni otra ; plural, ni unos ni otros, ni unas ni otras.</i>
Both,	- - - - -	{	<i>ambos-as, entrámbos, ámbos á dos, uno y otro, una y otra ; plural, unos y otros, unas y otras.</i>
Each, every,	- - - - -	-	<i>cada.</i>
Each one,	- - - - -	-	<i>cada uno, cada una.</i>
Every body, todos.	<i>otro, otra,</i>	<i>another ;</i>	<i>otros, otras, others.</i>
One another,	- - - - -	{	<i>uno otro, una otra ; plural, unos otros, unas otras.</i>
Of others,	- - - - -	{	<i>de otro, de otros. To others, á otro, á otros ; and if of others is governed by a substantive, it is then translated by agéno, agéna, agénos, agénas, ac- cording to the gender and number of the noun to which it relates ; as, the property of others, el bien agéno, &amp;c.</i>
Some one, somebody,	- - - - -	-	<i>alguién, alguno.</i>
Some, (relating to a noun,)	- - - - -	-	<i>alguno-a, os-as.</i>
Some, (always joined to a noun,)	<i>unos, unas,</i>	<i>algunos, algunas.</i>	
Many, several,	- - - - -	-	<i>muchos, muchas, varios, varias.</i>
Whosoever, whatsoever,	<i>cualquier-a,</i>	<i>plur. cualesquiera.</i>	} These pronouns govern the subjunctive.
Whoever, whosoever,	- - - - -	-	
Whenever,	- - - - -	-	
Whatever,	- - - - -	-	
However, howsoever,	<i>cualquiera cosa que ;</i>	<i>por mucho que.</i>	
Even, yet,	- - - - -	-	<i>mismo, aún.</i>
Such a one,	- - - - -	-	<i>fulano, a ; zutano, a.</i>
One says, or it is said,	- - - - -	-	<i>se dice.</i>
They assure, or it is assured,	- - - - -	-	<i>aseguran.</i>
People believe, or it is believed,	- - - - -	-	<i>se cree.</i>

\* See pages 54 and 55.

## OBSERVATIONS UPON THE INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

**RULE XXXVI.** *Any one* and *any body* in interrogative phrases, or in phrases implying doubt, must be expressed in Spanish by *uno, alguno*. Of all those who know the motives of my conduct is there *any one* who has blamed it ? *de todos los que conocen los motivos de mis acciones, hay acaso uno ó, alguno que las haya condenado ?* I doubt that *any one* has blamed it, *dudo que alguno las haya condenado*. I doubt that *any one* be as wise as he, *dudo que alguno sea tan sabio como él, &c.* This office suits him better than *any one else* ; *este empleo le conviene mejor que á cualquier otro*.

**RULE XXXVII.** *Nobody, no person whatever*, is translated by *ninguno, nadie* ; and *nothing whatever* is translated by *nada*. Ex. *Nobody whatever* has spoken ill of you to me, *nadie me ha hablado mal de vm.* Whatever genius one may have, one cannot, without application, excel in *any thing whatever*, *por mas or por mucho ingenio que uno tenga, en nada puede sobresalir sin aplicación*.

**RULE XXXVIII.** In Spanish the following pronouns *nobody, none, not one, neither, nothing* ; *nadie, ninguno, ni uno, ni uno ni otro, nada*, require that the verb be preceded by the negative *no*, when they are placed after it ; but this negative is suppressed when they precede it. Ex. He cannot excel in any thing, *en nada puede sobresalir, or no puede sobresalir en nada* ; the first construction is the most elegant.

N. B. The adverbs *jamás, nunca*, never, follow the same rule.

## CHAPTER VI.

## OF VERBS.

The *verb* is that part of speech which is essentially the bond of our thoughts, the soul of all our reasonings, and the only one that has the property of pointing out the relation that they have with the present, past and future. Its office is to express actions, passions and situations.

There are six kinds of verbs, to wit ; the *active, passive, neuter, reflective, reciprocal* and *impersonal*.

The *active* verb is that of which the regimen is direct, or after which one may put *alguno, alguna cosa*, some one, some thing. *Amár*, to love, is an *active* verb, because we may say, *amár á alguno*, to love some one, *amár la virtud*,

to love virtue, and because in these two phrases the regimen is direct. *Buscar*, to seek, is also an *active* verb, because we may say, *buscar á algúno*, *buscar alguna cosa*, to seek somebody, to look for something.

The *passive* verb is that which is formed from the *active*, takes the direct regimen to form its subject, and always is followed by one of these prepositions, *FOR* or *DE*; as, *el hombre virtuoso es amado DE todos*, the virtuous man is loved by every body.

The *neuter* verb is that after which we cannot put *some one*, nor *some thing*, *algúno*, *alguna cosa*. *Existir*, *dormir*, to exist, to sleep, are neuter verbs, because we cannot say: *dormir á algúno*, *dormir alguna cosa*, to sleep some one, to sleep something.

The *reflective* verb is that of which the subject and the regimen are the same person, or *that* which is conjugated with two pronouns of the same person, expressed or understood; *Arrepentirse*, to repent, is a reflective verb, because in order to conjugate it, we must make use of two pronouns, and say; yo me *arrepiento*, tú te *arrepientes*, él se *arrepiente*, &c. or, me *arrepiento*, te *arrepientes*, se *arrepiente*, &c. (and then *yo*, *tú*, *él*, are understood,) I repent, thou repentest, he repents, &c.

The *reciprocal* verb\* is that which expresses the action of several subjects that act one upon the other. Ex. *Los verdaderos amigos deben amarse y servirse unos á otros*, true friends must love and serve one another.

The *impersonal* verb is that which is used, in all its tenses, only in the third person of the singular. *Tronar*, to thunder, is an impersonal verb, because it has in each tense only the third person. We say, *truéna*, *tronaba*, *tronó*, *tronará*, &c. it thunders, it did thunder, it thundered, it will thunder; but we cannot say, I thunder, thou thunderest, we thunder, unless it be in a figurative sense.

Verbs may be *regular*, *irregular*, or *defective*.

The regular verbs, in the Spanish language, are those of which the radical letters are always the same, and of which

\* In order that the verb should clearly express reciprocity, it is often necessary to add to it the following words, *uno á otro*, *mutuamente*, *á porfía*, one another, mutually, in emulation of one another. In this phrase, *Cícero y Antonio no dejaban de alabarse uno á otro*, Cicero and Anthony did not cease to praise one another; if we should not put *uno á otro* there would be an equivocation which would leave a doubt of the reciprocity of the action.

the terminations are, in all the tenses, conformable to those of the verb that serves as a model for them.

We call those irregular which vary in the radical letters, or which do not agree, in all the tenses, with the terminations of the verb, that serves as a model.

N. B. We understand by *radical letters* those which precede the termination of the infinitive. We reckon only three conjugations in Spanish, the first has the infinitive terminated in *ar*, as *amár*, to love; the second has it in *er*, as *temér*, to fear; the third has it in *ir*, as *subír*, to go up. In these verbs all the letters that precede *ar*, *er*, and *ir*, that is, *am*, *tem*, and *sub*, are radical, and those that follow them in all the tenses, as well as in all the persons, form the terminations.

Lastly, we call those verbs defective, that want certain tenses or certain persons, which use does not admit.

There are besides *auxiliary* verbs, so called, because they serve to conjugate the others. The Spanish language reckons three, to wit; *habér* and *tenér*, to have; and *ser*, to be.

#### OF CONJUGATION.

To conjugate a verb, is to collect or recite all its terminations, as *amo*, *amas*, *ama*, &c. I love, thou lovest, he loves, &c; *amaba*, *amabas*, *amaba*, &c. I did love, thou didst love, he did love, &c.

These different terminations form *modes*, *tenses*, *numbers* and *persons*.

#### OF MODES.

Modes are different manners of using the verb. There are five, *infinitive*, *indicative*, *conditional*, *imperative* and *subjunctive*.

The *infinitive* expresses indefinitely, and in a general manner the action or state that the verb designates. The infinitive is consequently neither susceptible of number nor person, as, *amár*, *temér*, *subír*, to love, to fear, to go up.

The *indicative* points out and indicates in a direct and absolute manner what we affirm of a person or thing, as, *amo y témo al Dios que me crió, y cuya justicia recompensará á los buenos, y castigará á los malos*; I love and fear the God who created me, and whose justice will reward the good, and punish the wicked.

The *conditional* is the manner of expressing the affirmation depending upon a condition; as, *yo leería si tuviéra*

*libros, I should read* if I had books ; *yo hubiéra escrito una carta ántes de comér, si no hubiése tenido la visita del señor Conde de Floridablanca, I should have written a letter before dinner, if I had not had a visit from Count de Floridablanca.*

The *imperative* expresses the action of commanding, praying or exhorting. This mode has but one tense that designates the present in relation to the action of commanding, and the future in relation to the thing commanded ; as, *dáme éste libro, give me this book. Venid mañana, come to-morrow. Hágame vm. el favór de . . . do me the favour of . . .* This tense has no first person in the singular, because we do not command ourselves ; but it has in the plural, because then it is rather others than ourselves that we address.

The *subjunctive* is a mode which, in order to make sense, requires to be preceded by another verb, expressed or understood, on which it depends. It depends upon it, because it makes sense with and would not make any without it. These words, *quisiera que viniése, I should wish that he came or would come, make sense ; but these, que viniése, that he came, alone and separate, would not make any.*

#### OF TENSES.

We shall follow, in the division of tenses, the method received by the most esteemed and approved grammarians ; and in order to obviate the very serious difficulties which the three futures and the three conditionals of the Spanish verbs present, we have thought it best to deviate from the plan followed by the Academy of Madrid. This plan may be excellent for the Spaniards who join, to the study of grammar, a constant practice ; but it is too obscure for foreigners, as it deviates too much from the usage of other languages, and contains rules which are not sufficiently particular. Therefore, instead of comprising the two futures conjunctive, the second and third conditional in the subjunctive, we shall place the two futures in the indicative, we shall make a mode of the conditional that will have three terminations, and the subjunctive will have the tenses that it commonly has in other languages. This order has appeared to us the most proper to render obvious the relations that exist between the Spanish and English languages. (See N. B. 2d, &c. page 80.)

## OF THE TENSES OF THE INFINITIVE.

The tenses of the infinitive are the *present*, the *preterite*, the *gerund* and the *participle*.

The present of the infinitive always designates the present time relative to the preceding verb; as, *le veo correr*, I see him run; *le oí cantar*, I heard him sing; *le verá bailar*, I shall see him dance.

The preterite on the contrary denotes the past time relative to the preceding verb; as, *creía haberle visto*, I thought I had seen him; literally, I thought to have seen him.

The gerund designates,—1st,—the state of the subject, the reason or foundation of the action, as in these phrases: *canta durmiendo*, he sings in his sleep; *el emperador de Alemania, temiendo que la paz no durase mucho tiempo, licenció muy pocas tropas*, the emperor of Germany, fearing that the peace would not last long, disbanded only a few troops. In the first example, *durmiendo*, expresses the state of the subject; and in the second, *temiendo* expresses the reason or grounds of the action of the emperor.

2d. It denotes a manner or a mean of attaining an end, and then it is almost always preceded by the preposition *en*, in. Ex. *No espere el hombre ser jamás feliz en dejándose arrastrar de sus pasiones, no lo puede ser sino en dominándolas*. Let man never expect to be happy in giving himself up to his passions, he can only be so by subduing them.

3d. It serves to express a condition. Ex. *Siendo esto así, volveré á Francia*, this being so, I shall return to France.

4th. It is frequently used with the verb *estar*, to be, to show in a more positive manner that an action is, was, has been or will be done at the very time of which we speak. Ex. *Está escribiendo*, he is writing; *estaba escribiendo*, he was writing; *estará escribiendo*, he will be writing.

The *participle* is thus called, because it participates in the nature of the verb and that of the adjective. It is of the nature of the verb, because it has its signification and regimen. It is of the nature of an adjective, because it expresses a quality.

The *participles* are divided into present and past; into the present; as, *amante*, *obediénte*, *oyénte*; into past;—as, *amado*, *obedecido*, *oído*. The *participles of the present* have the ter-

mination in *ante*, as *amánte* for the first conjugation. Those of the second and third have it in *énte*, as *obediénte*, *oyénte*.

The participles present are in use only in part of the verbs; the greater part being rather verbal adjectives than participles, because they have not a regimen as their verbs. Ex. *Oyénte*, hearing; *leyénte*, reading; are verbal adjectives, because we cannot say, *oyénte el sermón*, *leyénte libros*, usage not permitting us to give a regimen to these participles.

The participles past of regular verbs have their terminations in *ádo*, for the first conjugation; and in *ído*, for the second and third. Those that do not follow this rule are irregular, and are found in their place in the alphabetical list which is subjoined. (See page 122.)

There are some verbs which have two participles past, the one regular and the other irregular. The first is always employed with the auxiliary verb *habér*, to have; the second is never joined to it, but follows the rule of adjectives, except *ingérto*, grafted; *présó*, caught; *prescrito*, prescribed; *provisto*, provided; and *róto*, broken; which are used with the auxiliary *habér* just as well as the regular participle.

## VERBS THAT HAVE TWO PARTICIPLES.

		Part. Regular.	Part. Irregular.
Ahitár,	to surfeit,	ahitado,	ahíto.
Bendecir,	to bless,	bendecido,	bendíto.
Compelér,	to compel,	compelido,	compúlso.
Concluir,	to conclude,	concluído,	conclúso.
Confundir,	to confound,	confundido,	confúso.
Convencer,	to convince,	convencido,	convícto.
Convertir,	to convert,	convertido,	convérso.
Despertár,	to awake,	despertado,	despiérto.
Elegir,	to choose, to elect,	elegido,	elécto.
Enjugar,	to wipe,	enjugado,	enjúto.
Excluir,	to exclude,	escluído,	esclúso.
Espeler,	to expel,	espelido,	espúlso.
Espressar,	to express,	espresado,	espréso.
Estinguir,	to extinguish,	estinguído,	estínto.
Fijár,	to fix,	fijado,	fijo.
Hartár,	to satiate,	hartado,	hártó.
Incluir,	to include,	incluído,	inclúso.
Incurrir,	to incur,	incurrído,	incúrso.
Insertár,	to insert,	insertado,	insérto.



		Part. Regular.	Part. Irregular.
Invertir,	<i>to transpose.</i>	invertido,	inverso.
Ingerir,	<i>to ingraft,</i>	ingerido,	ingerto.
Juntar,	<i>to join,</i>	juntado,	junto.
Maldecir,	<i>to curse,</i>	maldecido,	maldito.
Manifestar,	<i>to manifest,</i>	manifestado,	manifiesto.
Marchitar,	<i>to wither,</i>	marchitado,	marchito.
Omitir,	<i>to omit,</i>	omitido,	omiso.
Oprimir,	<i>to oppress,</i>	oprimido,	opreso.
Perfeccionar,	<i>to perfect,</i>	perfeccionado,	perfecto.
Prender.	<i>to seize, to arrest,</i>	prendido,	preso.
Prescribir,	<i>to prescribe,</i>	prescrito,	prescrito.
Proveer,	<i>to provide,</i>	proveído,	provisto.
Recluir,	<i>to confine,</i>	recluido,	reclúso.
Rompér,	<i>to break,</i>	rompido,	roto.
Soltar,	<i>to loosen or release,</i>	soltado,	suélto.
Suprimir,	<i>to suppress,</i>	suprimido,	supreso.

There are other participles, the termination of which is passive and the signification active ; such as the following.

Acostumbrado,	-	-	<i>accustomed.</i>
Agradecido,	-	-	<i>grateful.</i>
Atrevido	-	-	<i>bold.</i>
Bién cenado,	-	-	<i>who has supped well.</i>
Bién comido,	-	-	<i>who has dined well.</i>
Bién hablado,	-	-	<i>who speaks well.</i>
Callado,	-	-	<i>discreet.</i>
Cansado,	-	-	<i>tiresome.</i>
Comedido,	-	-	<i>prudent.</i>
Desesperado,	-	-	<i>in despair.</i>
Disimulado,	-	-	<i>dissembling, hypocritical.</i>
Entendido,	-	-	<i>intelligent.</i>
Esforzado,	-	-	<i>brave, intrepid.</i>
Fingido,	-	-	<i>deceitful, artful. [formed.</i>
Leído,	-	-	<i>who has read much, well in-</i>
Medido,	-	-	<i>cautious, circumspect.</i>
Mirado,	-	-	<i>prudent, regardful.</i>
Moderado,	-	-	<i>moderate.</i>
Negado,	-	-	<i>destitute of intelligence.</i>
Ocasionado,	-	-	<i>quarrelsome.</i>
Osado,	-	-	<i>daring, undaunted.</i>
Parado,	-	-	<i>slow, heavy.</i>

Parecido, - - -	resembling.
Partido, - - -	liberal, who shares what he has.
Pausado, - - -	deliberate.
Porfiado, - - -	obstinate, stubborn.
Preciado, - - -	vain, presumptuous.
Precavido, - - -	cautious.
Presumido, - - -	presumptuous.
Recatado, - - -	considerate, discreet.
Sabido, - - -	learned.
Sacudido, - - -	rough, untractable.
Sentido, - - -	sensitive, susceptible.
Sufrido, - - -	enduring, patient.
Trascendido, - - -	penetrating, keen minded.
Valido, - - -	confident, favourite.

All the participles have also a passive signification, and it is the sense of the phrase that determines which of the two significations we must adopt. We see, for example, that in these expressions, *hombre leído*, a well read man ; *mujer leída*, a well read woman ; *libro leído*, a book that has been read ; *carta leída*, a letter that has been read ; the participles *leído*, *leída*, have an active signification, when they refer to *hombre* and to *mujer* ; and passive, when they refer to *libro* and to *carta*. Thus, if I say, *Pédro es un hombre cansado*, and *Pédro está cansado de trabajar*, we see by the different use of the two verbs, *es*, *está*, (See upon these two verbs the Rule XLIX, page 95,) that the first of these phrases signifies, Peter is a tiresome man, and the second, Peter is tired of working.

#### OF THE TENSES OF THE INDICATIVE.

The Spaniards reckon eight tenses in the indicative, which are the *present*, the *imperfect*, the *preterite definite*, the *preterite indefinite*, the *preterite anterior*, the *pluperfect*, the *future absolute*, and the *future anterior*. We shall place in continuation of these two futures, the *future conjunctive simple*, and the *future conjunctive compound*, (though it seems they should belong to the subjunctive or conjunctive mode) so as the better to compare them together ; and exhibit the difference between them. In the conjugation of the *irregular verbs*, we place the *future conjunctive* in its natural place in the subjunctive mode. This method will give ten tenses to the indicative in the regular conjugations,

The *present* denotes that a thing is, or is done at the moment we speak ; as, *sóy*, I am ; *amo*, I love ; *súbo*, I go up.

The *imperfect* denotes the past with relation to the present, and makes known that a thing was present in a past time ; as, *yó escribía*, or *estaba escribiendo cuándo mi hermano llegó*, I did write, or I was writing when my brother arrived.

The *imperfect* serves also to denote habitual actions, or actions often repeated in a past time ; as, *yó iba á la comedia él año pasado dos veces cada semana*, I went (used to go) last year to the play twice a week.

It serves also to express the qualities, either good or bad, of men who are no more ; as, *Nerón era un tirano*, Nero was a tyrant ; *Enrique cuarto era un rey benéfico*, Henry the fourth was a beneficent king.

The *preterite* may designate, either in a precise or only in a vague and indeterminate manner, that a thing has been done.

Thence arises two preterites ; the *preterite definite* and the *preterite indefinite*. The *preterite definite* denotes a thing done at a time of which nothing more remains ; as, *escribí ayer*, I wrote yesterday ; *comí el lunes último en casa del señor Pitt*, I dined on Monday last at the house of Mr. Pitt.

The *preterite indefinite* denotes a thing done at a time designated in an indeterminate manner, or at a time past but of which something yet remains ; as, *la muerte de tu hermano me ha afligido mucho*, the death of thy brother has afflicted me much ; *he recibido esta semana muchísimas visitas*, I have received this week a great many visits.

These two preterites cannot be indifferently used one for the other, it is essential to perceive clearly the difference that exists between them. In order that we may use the preterites definite, it is at least necessary that the time elapsed of which we speak should be a whole day ; as, *fui ayer á la comedia*, I went yesterday to the play ; *vi al rey la semana pasada*, I saw the king last week. We cannot therefore say, *estudié esta mañana* ; *escribí hoy*, *esta semana*, *este mes*, *este año*, &c. ; I studied this morning, I wrote to day, this week, this month, this year, &c. because the morning, the day, the week, the month, the year, are not entirely elapsed. On the contrary, in order that we may use the *preterite indefinite*, there must yet remain some part of the time past of which

we speak ; as, *he visto esta mañana al primer pintor del rey de España*, I have seen this morning the first painter of the king of Spain; *hemos visto grandes eventos en este siglo*, we have seen great events in this century.\*

There is still another preterite, which is called *preterite anterior*, because it expresses a thing past before another in a time past ; as, *después que hubo visto al rey, salió de Madrid*, after I had seen the king, I went out of Madrid.—This preterite is only used after the adverbs of time, *después que*, *luego que*, *así que*, *cuándo*, after, as soon as, so soon as, when.

The *pluperfect* is compounded of two past tenses. It denotes a thing not only as past in itself, but also as past in regard to another thing which is also past ; as, *yo había ya cenado cuando entró*, I already had supped when he came in.

N. B. The futures, as well as the conditionals, presenting to strangers considerable difficulty, we request them to pay to the following rules a particular attention.

#### OF THE FUTURES.

There are in the Spanish language four futures ; the future simple or absolute ; the future compound or anterior ; the future conjunctive simple, and the future conjunctive compound.

The future absolute denotes that a thing will be, or will be done at a time which is yet to come ; as, *sí, amaré siempre al Dios que me crió*, yes, I shall always love the God who created me.

N. B. This future has often the signification of the *imperative*, in the second person ; as, *amarás á Dios de todo tu corazón*, thou shalt love God with all thy heart ; *no robarás*, thou shalt not steal.

The *future anterior* denotes the future with relation to the past, making known that, at the time a thing will happen, another shall be past ; as, *habré acabado mi carta cuando tal ó tal cosa suceda*, I shall have finished my letter when such or such a thing happens.

These two futures differ in this, that in the *future absolute* the time may or may not be determined ; as, *iré, ó iré mañana á Bristol*, I shall go, or I shall go to-morrow to Bristol. On the contrary, in the future anterior, the period is neces-

---

\* The above is the most proper way ; however, Spaniards often use the Pret. Definite as in English for a period of time not entirely elapsed ; as, *le encontré esta mañana*, I met him this morning, &c.

sarily determined ; as, *habré comido cuándo vm. llégue*, I shall have dined when you arrive.

The *future conjunctive*, which is so called because it is always joined either to a conjunction or an adverb, or to a pronoun that governs it, serves to denote a future action always expressed in English by the present of the indicative, when the verb is preceded by the conjunction *si* or *cuándo*, if or when ; sometimes by the present of the subjunctive when the verb is preceded by a conjunction that governs it in this mode, as, *ojalá, con tal que, así que, luego que, dado que, puesto que*, &c. and often by the future absolute or anterior.

*Rules for using the future conjunctive.*

**RULE XXXIX.** We use the future conjunctive when the verb is governed by the conjunction *si*, if ; and when the phrase expresses a future action ; as, *no te digo que vivas, ni que muéras ; vive si PUDIÉRES, y muere, si no PUDIÉRES mas*, I do not tell thee to live or to die ; live, if thou canst ; die, if thou canst not do better.

**RULE XL.** We make use of the future conjunctive whenever the verb is preceded by one of the pronouns *él que, los que, la que, las que, lo que*, he who, that, &c. ; or by the adjective *cuánto, a, os, as*, used in the sense of *tódo él que, toda la que, todos los que, todas las que, todo lo que ; quién, quiénes*, (a pronoun relative) when it is used in the sense of one of the above pronouns *él que, los que, &c.* and finally, when the verb is governed by the adverb *cuándo*, if these pronouns, and this adjective and adverb are themselves preceded by another verb expressing an action, which the remainder of the phrase causes to depend on choice or chance ; as, *elige, pués, de éstos dos partidos él que mas te agradáre*, choose then of these two measures that which will please thee most. *Tenemos ya determinádo hacér en obsequio súyo todo lo que alcanzáren nuéstras fuérzas*, we have resolved to do in his behalf all that shall be in our power.—*Sólo podrán ser delincuentes, los que de vosotros nos juzgáren delincuentes*, those only can be guilty, who, among you, shall judge us guilty. *Mánda, lo que gustáres....renuéva á nuéstro buén amigo mi fino afécto, y á euántos se acordáren de mí, dirás de mi páрте todo lo que quisiéres*, command what you please—renew to our good friend my sincere attachment, and say from me all that you please to all those who shall remember

me. *Vm. leerá este libro cuándo quisiere*, you will read this book when you please. *Cuándo quiera ó quisiere la fortuna, será rico*.—The compound tense of the future conjunctive follows the same rules.

N. B. 1st. The present of the subjunctive may be used in almost every one of the above-mentioned cases, instead of the future conjunctive.

2d. After the conjunction *si*, if, the verb expressing a future action is most frequently put in the future conjunctive.

3d. The conjunction *si*, if, &c. and the adverb *cuándo*, when, &c. are also used in the present, imperfect, and preterite of the indicative mode and their compound tenses, when we affirm, declare, in the present and past time. Ex. *Si tengo educación, lo debo á mis maestros*; *Cuándo tenía dinero, todos me pedían prestado*; *si tuvo suceso, fué por mi ayuda*.

#### OF THE CONDITIONAL.

This mode has in the Spanish language three simple and three compound tenses, the terminations of which are in *ría*, *ra* and *se*. We shall call the three first, *conditionals present*, and the three others, *conditionals past*.

The *conditionals present* denote that a thing would be, or would be done in the present time under certain conditions; as *yó leería* or *leyera*, *si tuviera* or *tuviése libros*, I would read if I had books.

The *conditionals past* denote that a thing would have been in a time past under certain conditions; as, *habría* or *hubiera* *ido ayer á la comedia*, *si hubiera* or *hubiése estado bueno*. I should have gone yesterday to the play, if I had been well.

#### *Rules for the use of the conditional tenses.*

RULE XLI. The first conditional, the termination of which is *ría* and *ra*, may be used indifferently whenever the verb is not governed by any conjunction; which is the case with one of the members in all conditional propositions; as, *leería* or *leyera* *todo el día*, *si mi existencia no dependiera* or *dependiése de mi trabajo*. I should read the whole day, if my support did not depend upon my labour. *El número de los pobres no sería* or *fuera tan grande*, *si fuera* or *fuése menor el de los aváros*, the number of poor would not be so great, if that of misers were less considerable.

**RULE XLII.** The second conditional, the termination of which is *ra*, and the third which is terminated in *se*, are used whenever the verb is governed by a conditional conjunction ; as, *si*, if ; *sinó*, unless ; *aunque*, though ; *bién que*, although ; *dádo que*, granting that, &c. or by an interjection expressing a desire : Ex. *Aunque* *hubiera* or *hubiese*\* *paz*, though peace should take place. *¡Ojalá* *fuera* or *fuése* *cierto* ! Would to God it were certain ! If there be in the second member of these sentences, another conditional, we should make use of the first ; as, *Si* *hubiera*, or *hubiese* *buéna fé*, *sería* *mayór la solidéz de los contrátos*, if there should be good faith, the solidity of contracts would be greater.

**RULE XLIII.** The second conditional is used with elegance after the interrogative pronouns, when we use it with an exclamation, or to express surprise. Ex. *Quién lo creyera ? quién lo imaginara ?* who would believe it ? who would imagine it ? *¿Sin el auxilio de la escritura, órgano de todas las ciencias, que hubiera en el mundo sinó ignorancia ?* without the aid of writing, the organ of all the sciences, what would there be in the world but ignorance ?

**RULE XLIV.** We use the second or third conditional after *cuándo*, though, and after the pronouns *él que*, *los que*, *la que*, &c. and after *cuánto*, *a*, *os*, *as*, (mentioned in Rule XL, page 76, when speaking of the future conjunctive,) when they themselves are preceded by a verb expressing an action, which the remainder of the phrase causes to depend on choice or chance ; as *le dije que tomáse en mi huérta todo lo que, or cuánto quisiera*, I told him to take in my garden all that or whatever he should wish. *Prometió dárme el dinero que yo necesitara or necesitase*, he promised to give me the money that I might want.

**RULE XLV.** When a conditional phrase does not begin with a conjunction ; such as, *si*, *aunque*, *luego que*, &c., we may make use of the first and second conditional, and say ; *fortuna sería* or *fuera que lloviese* ; *buéno sería* or *fuera que lo mandásen*. (Grammar of the Academy.) But in such a case if there should be another conditional in the second member of the phrase, this last must take the third termination, as in the preceding examples. It is even necessary to

\* Observe as a general rule throughout the Conjugations, that the terminations *ria*, *ra* ; and *ra* and *se* may be used indifferently for one another, but never *ria* for *se*, nor *se* for *ria*. (See page 80.)

observe that in general, when a phrase begins with the second conditional and the first cannot be applied to the second member,\* we must have recourse to the third, and not repeat the second; if, on the contrary, it begins with the third, we must, instead of repeating it in the second member, make use of the second: as, *obligado me viera ya sin duda á enmudecer, ó me contentára con ser el débil eco de sus elevadas cláusulas, si los nuevos progresos de la Academia no abriesen nuevo campo de asuntos al ingenio, no ofreciesen á la elocuencia nuevas mieses, &c.* I should, without doubt, find myself obliged to keep silence, or content myself with being the feeble echo of his eloquent speeches, if the new progress of the Academy did not open to genius new subjects, and offer to eloquence new harvests, &c.

N. B. 1st. Whenever the conditional is expressed by means of the conjunction *si*, the verb that it governs is in English in the imperfect of the subjunctive, and this imperfect is always translated in Spanish by one of the two conditionals, according to the rules stated above, when the conjunction expresses a future condition; if on the contrary it expresses one already past, the verb is put in Spanish in the same tense as in English. Ex. *Si yo fuera rico, socorrería á los pobres*, if I were rich, I would assist the poor; *si él era*

---

\* Though Rule XLV. be extracted and faithfully translated from the Grammar of the Spanish Academy, we think it might lead to error, if we should not give it a little more clearness. We therefore observe,—1st.—that a conditional phrase must contain two propositions; the one principal, and the other subordinate. We call a principal proposition that after which we place the conjunction, and a subordinate proposition that which is placed after the conjunction. Each of those propositions may contain several members. In this phrase; *sería recompensado, si fuera diligente*, he would be rewarded, if he were diligent; *he would be rewarded*, is the principal proposition. In the following, *sería recompensado y todos le estimarian, si estudiara con mas atención y fuera mas amante de la verdad*, he would be rewarded and every body would esteem him, if he should study with more attention and were more fond of truth; each of these propositions contains two members.—2.—That the Academy, in speaking of the second member, understands the whole subordinate proposition; for, if it contains several members, the same conditional must be used in each one of them; it is the same with the principal proposition as is seen in the example stated in Rule XLV, *obligado me viera, &c.* the first proposition of which terminates with these words; *á sus elevadas cláusulas*, and the second begins at *si los nuevos progresos*. In the two members of the principal proposition, the verbs are in the second conditional, and in the subordinate proposition they are in the third.



*pobre el año pasado, no era culpa mía*, if he was poor last year it was not my fault. (See N. B. 3d. page 77.)

N. B. 2d. It must be seen by the preceding rules and examples, that the *second conditional* is frequently used to hold the place of the first and third; for we may say indifferently *el tiempo pudiera or podría ser mejor; hize que viniéra. or viniése*. But it is not the same with the first and third; they are so opposed that one cannot be used for the other. Therefore, to translate this phrase; I should wish to go to Seville, we may say; *yó querria or quisiéra ir á Sevilla*, but not *yó quisiése ir á Sevilla*.

The conditionals past follow the same rules as the conditionals present, and though the verb governed by the conjunction *si* should in English be in the pluperfect of the indicative, it must in Spanish be put in the second or third conditionals past. Ex. *Si lo hubiera or hubiése sabido*, if I had known it, or had I known it.

☞ The above N. B. 2d. is so true and important that the conjugations will be improved in this edition by it, as far as space will permit it without altering the paging.

#### USE OF THE IMPERATIVE.

RULE XLVI. The use of this mode in Spanish is not entirely the same as in English. In the latter language, it serves not only to command, pray, and exhort, but also to forbid; the Spaniards on the contrary, express the prohibition by means of the present of the subjunctive, and sometimes by the future. Ex. *No hables*, do not speak; *no me respondas*, do not answer me; *no mates*; *no matarás*; do not kill; thou shalt not kill.

N. B. The *first person plural of the IMPERATIVE* is always like the *first of the plural of the SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT*.

#### USE OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

This mode has four tenses, the *present*, the *imperfect*, the *preterite* and the *pluperfect*; it expresses, as the indicative, the *present, past, and future*.

#### *Rules for using the tenses of the subjunctive.*

As it is impossible to establish well defined rules to make known in a sure manner the use of the tenses of the subjunctive, we cannot pretend to determine every case in which we must make use of them; but we will endeavour to establish rules, which will obviate the greatest part of the difficulties.

RULE XLVII. The verb that follows the conjunction *que*,

that ; must be put in the indicative, when the verb preceding it, expresses *affirmation* in a direct, positive and independent manner ; but it must be put in the subjunctive when the preceding verb expresses *doubt*, surprise, fear, admiration, uncertainty, desire, hope, will, permission, prohibition and command. Thus we say ; *sé que está malo*, I know that he is sick ; *los ateístas dicen que no háy Diós*, the atheists say that there is no God ; because the verb *sé* and *dicen* express a direct and positive affirmation. But we must say ; *no créa or dúdo que esté malo*, I do not believe or I doubt that he is sick. *Los ateístas quieren que no háya Diós*, the atheists wish that there may not be a God. *Deséo que venga*, I desire that he may come. *Me admíro que no háya llegado*, I am surprised that he is not arrived ; because in these phrases the verbs preceding the conjunction express a doubt, desire or surprise.

N. B. After *Ojalá*, *Plégue á Diós*, &c. adverbs, always expressing a desire, the verb is put in the subjunctive.

RULE XLVIII. The relatives *que*, *quién*, *cuyo*, *a*, *os*, *as*, govern the subjunctive, when the phrase is interrogative or negative, or when it expresses a doubt, desire or condition. Ex. *No conozco una sola mugér, cuya alma sea mas sensible que la de la señora N.*, I do not know a woman whose soul is more sensible than that of Madam N.

REMARK. See, 1st.—the N. B. in continuation of the rules relative to the use of the tenses of the future conjunctive and the rules that relate to it, (page 77 ;)—2d.—the successive rules relative to the use of the tenses of the conditional ; and 3d.—under the head of conjunctions, those that govern the subjunctive ; (page 194.)

#### OF THE PERSONS AND NUMBERS OF VERBS.

Verbs have three persons. The pronouns personal are their characteristics. The first person is that which speaks ; as, *yo amo*, *nosotros* or *nosotras amamos*, I love, we love. The second person is that to whom we speak ; as, *tú amas*, *vosotros* or *vosotras amáis*, thou lovest, you love. The third person is that of whom we speak ; as, *él* or *ella ama*, *ellos* or *ellas aman*, he or she loves, they love.

In ancient authors, the termination of the second person of the plural is in *des*, instead of *is*. Thus, they said and wrote *amádes*, *amarédes* ; *temédes*, *temiades* ; *sufrídes*, *sufriades*, &c. instead of *amáis*, *amartéis* ; *teméis*, *temíais* ; *sufris*, *sufríais*, &c.

The verbs have both numbers ; the singular is used when the verb has only a single person or thing for its nominative : as, *yó, tú, él, ella* ; and the plural when it has many ; as *nosótro*s or *nosótras*, *vosótro*s or *vosótras*, *ellos* or *ellas*.

N. B. It is not the same with the Spanish language as with the English and French, in which the verb must always be preceded by the pronoun that governs it. In Spanish, as in Latin, the terminations generally distinguish the persons, consequently the pronouns are generally suppressed. We use them with advantage to add energy to the expression, as in these examples ; *tú lo has hécho* ! It is thou who hast done it ! *yó lo mándo*, it is I who order it ; *tú ríes é yó llóro*, thou laughest and I weep ; *tú no quíeres hacérlo* ; *pués lo haré yó*, thou wilt not do it ; well, I shall do it.

## CONJUGATIONS.

The Spanish language, as we have already said, has but three conjugations, which are known by the termination of the infinitive. The first has the infinitive terminated in *ar*, as, *am-ár*, to love ; the second in *er*, as, *tem-ér*, to fear ; the third in *ir*, as *sub-ir*, to go up. It has besides three auxiliary verbs, which are so called because they serve to conjugate the other verbs in their compound tenses. These auxiliary verbs are *habér* and *tenér*, to have ; and *ser*, to be. In conjugating the latter, we add to it *estár*, an irregular verb, translated by the same English verb, *to be*, being of such great use, that it is proper to study it, as soon as the auxiliary verbs are learnt.

*Conjugation of the auxiliary verb HABÉR, to have.\**

	INFINITIVE.				
Present.	Habér,†	-	-	-	to have.
Preterite.	Habér habído,	-	-	-	to have had.
Gerund.	Habiendo,	-	-	-	having.
Participle.	Habído,	-	-	-	had.

\* This verb was used formerly as active, to express possession ; and in this last acceptance it had the following imperative ; *hábe tú*. (now out of use) *háya él, háyamos nosótro*s, *habéd vosótro*s, *háyan ellos*. Now the verb *habér* is seldom used but as an auxiliary or as an impersonal. See its conjugation for this last acceptance, page 120.

† *Haber*, followed by the preposition *de* and another verb in the infinitive, forms a future tense. Ex. *He de habér*, I am to have ; *había de tenér*, I was to have or possess ; *habré de amár*, I shall have to love, &c. (See page 156.)

## INDICATIVE.

*Present.*

Yó he,	-	-	-	-	-	<i>I have.</i>
Tú has,	-	-	-	-	-	<i>thou hast.</i>
Él ha,	-	-	-	-	-	<i>he has.</i>
Nosótro <sup>s</sup> hémos, <i>or</i> habémos,	-	-	-	-	-	<i>we have.</i>
Vosótro <sup>s</sup> habéis,*	-	-	-	-	-	<i>you have.</i>
Ellos han,	-	-	-	-	-	<i>they have.</i>

*Imperfect.*

Yó había,	-	-	-	-	-	<i>I had.</i>
Tú habías,	-	-	-	-	-	<i>thou hadst.</i>
Él había,	-	-	-	-	-	<i>he had.</i>
Nosótro <sup>s</sup> habíamos,	-	-	-	-	-	<i>we had.</i>
Vosótro <sup>s</sup> habíais,*	-	-	-	-	-	<i>you had.</i>
Ellos habían,	-	-	-	-	-	<i>they had.</i>

*Preterite definite.*

Yó hube,	-	-	-	-	-	<i>I had.</i>
Tú hubiste,	-	-	-	-	-	<i>thou hadst.</i>
Él hubo,	-	-	-	-	-	<i>he had.</i>
Nosótro <sup>s</sup> hubimos	-	-	-	-	-	<i>we had.</i>
Vosótro <sup>s</sup> hubisteis,	-	-	-	-	-	<i>you had.</i>
Ellos hubieron,	-	-	-	-	-	<i>they had.</i>

*Preterite indefinite.*

Yó he habido,	-	-	-	-	-	<i>I have had.</i>
Tú has habido,	-	-	-	-	-	<i>thou hast had.</i>
Él ha habido,	-	-	-	-	-	<i>he has had.</i>
Nosótro <sup>s</sup> hémos habido,	-	-	-	-	-	<i>we have had.</i>
Vosótro <sup>s</sup> habéis habido,	-	-	-	-	-	<i>you have had.</i>
Ellos han habido,	-	-	-	-	-	<i>they have had.</i>

*Preterite anterior.*

Yó hube habido,	-	-	-	-	-	<i>I had had.</i>
Tú hubiste habido,	-	-	-	-	-	<i>thou hadst had.</i>
Él hubo habido,	-	-	-	-	-	<i>he had had.</i>
Nosótro <sup>s</sup> hubimos habido,	-	-	-	-	-	<i>we had had.</i>
Vosótro <sup>s</sup> hubisteis habido,	-	-	-	-	-	<i>you had had.</i>
Ellos hubieron habido,	-	-	-	-	-	<i>they had had.</i>

\* See page 81, at the bottom, what we have said on the termination of the second person plural in ancient authors. Formerly the second person plural of all the verbs instead of terminating in *is* were terminated in *des*; they used to say *habédes, habíades, &c.*

*Pluperfect.*

Yó había habído,	-	-	-	<i>I had had.</i>
Tú habías habído,	-	-	-	<i>thou hadst had.</i>
Él había habído,	-	-	-	<i>he had had.</i>
Nosótroš habíamos habído,	-	-	-	<i>we had had.</i>
Vosótroš habíais habído,	-	-	-	<i>you had had.</i>
Ellos habían habído,	-	-	-	<i>they had had.</i>

*Future absolute.*

Yó habré,	-	-	-	-	<i>I shall or will have.</i>
Tú habrás,	-	-	-	-	<i>thou wilt have.</i>
Él habrá,	-	-	-	-	<i>he will have.</i>
Nosótroš habrémos,	-	-	-	-	<i>we shall have.</i>
Vosótroš habréis,	-	-	-	-	<i>you will have.</i>
Ellos habrán,	-	-	-	-	<i>they will have.</i>

*Future anterior.*

Yó habré habído,	-	-	-	<i>I shall have had.</i>
Tú habrás habído,	-	-	-	<i>thou wilt have had.</i>
Él habrá habído,	-	-	-	<i>he will have had.</i>
Nosótroš habrémos habído,	-	-	-	<i>we shall have had.</i>
Vosótroš habréis habído,	-	-	-	<i>you will have had.</i>
Ellos habrán habído,	-	-	-	<i>they will have had.</i>

*Future conjunctive simple.*

Si or cuándo,	-	-	-	-	<i>If or when,</i>
Yó hubiere,	-	-	-	-	<i>I have or shall have.</i>
Tú hubieres,	-	-	-	-	<i>thou wilt have.</i>
Él hubiere,	-	-	-	-	<i>he will have.</i>
Nosótroš hubiéremos,	-	-	-	-	<i>we shall have.</i>
Vosótroš hubiéreis,	-	-	-	-	<i>you will have.</i>
Ellos hubieren,	-	-	-	-	<i>they will have.</i>

*Future conjunctive compound.*

Si or cuándo,	-	-	-	-	<i>If or when,</i>
Yó hubiere habído,	-	-	-	-	<i>I have or shall have had.</i>
Tú hubieres habído,	-	-	-	-	<i>thou wilt have had.</i>
Él hubiere habído,	-	-	-	-	<i>he will have had.</i>
Nosótroš hubiéremos habído,	-	-	-	-	<i>we shall have had.</i>
Vosótroš hubiéreis habído,	-	-	-	-	<i>you will have had.</i>
Ellos hubieren habído,	-	-	-	-	<i>they will have had.</i>

## CONDITIONALS.

*First conditional present.*

Yo habría <i>or</i> hubiera*	-	-	<i>I should have.</i>
Tu habrías,	-	-	<i>thou wouldst have.</i>
Él habría,	-	-	<i>he would have.</i>
Nosotros habríamos,	-	-	<i>we should have.</i>
Vosotros habrías,	-	-	<i>you would have.</i>
Ellos habrían,	-	-	<i>they would have.</i>

*Second and third conditionals present.*

Si, <i>or</i> cuando,	-	-	<i>If or though,</i>
Yo hubiera <i>or</i> hubiese,	-	-	<i>I had or should have.</i>
Tú hubieras <i>or</i> hubieses,	-	-	<i>thou wouldst have.</i>
Él hubiera <i>or</i> hubiese,	-	-	<i>he would have.</i>
Nosotros hubiéramos, <i>or</i> hubiésemos,	-	-	<i>we had or should have.</i>
Vosotros hubierais <i>or</i> hubieseis,	-	-	<i>you had or would have.</i>
Ellos hubieran <i>or</i> hubiesen,	-	-	<i>they would have.</i>

*First conditional past.*

Yo habría <i>or</i> hubiera habido,	-	-	<i>I should have had.</i>
Tú habrías habido,	-	-	<i>thou wouldst have had.</i>
Él habría habido,	-	-	<i>he would have had.</i>
Nosotros habríamos habido,	-	-	<i>we should have had.</i>
Vosotros habrías habido,	-	-	<i>you would have had.</i>
Ellos habrían habido,	-	-	<i>they would have had.</i>

*Second and third conditionals past.*

Si, <i>or</i> cuando,	-	-	<i>If or though,</i>
Yo hubiera, <i>or</i> hubiese habido,	-	-	<i>I had or should have had.</i>
Tú hubiera, <i>or</i> hubieses habido,	-	-	<i>thou wouldst have had.</i>
Él hubiera, <i>or</i> hubiese habido,	-	-	<i>he would have had.</i>
Nosotros hubiéramos, <i>or</i> hubiésemos habido,	-	-	<i>we had or should have had.</i>
Vosotros hubierais, <i>or</i> hubieseis habido,	-	-	<i>you would have had.</i>
Ellos hubieran, <i>or</i> hubiesen habido,	-	-	<i>they would have had.</i>

\* See pages 79 and 80 about the terminations of this and the following tense.

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

*Present.*

Yó háya,	-	-	-	-	<i>I may have.</i>
Tú háyas,	-	-	-	-	<i>thou mayst have.</i>
Él háya,	-	-	-	-	<i>he may have.</i>
Nosótro <span>s</span> háyamos,	-	-	-	-	<i>we may have.</i>
Vosótro <span>s</span> háyais,	-	-	-	-	<i>you may have.</i>
Éllo <span>s</span> háyan,	-	-	-	-	<i>they may have.</i>

*Imperfect.*

Yó hubié <span>s</span> e,	-	-	-	-	<i>I might have.</i>
Tú hubié <span>s</span> es,	-	-	-	-	<i>thou mightest have.</i>
Él hubié <span>s</span> e,	-	-	-	-	<i>he might have.</i>
Nosótro <span>s</span> hubié <span>s</span> emos,	-	-	-	-	<i>we might have.</i>
Vosótro <span>s</span> hubié <span>s</span> eis,	-	-	-	-	<i>you might have.</i>
Éllo <span>s</span> hubié <span>s</span> en,	-	-	-	-	<i>they might have.</i>

*Preterite.*

Yó háya habído,	-	-	-	-	<i>I may have had.</i>
Tú háyas habído,	-	-	-	-	<i>thou mayst have had.</i>
Él háya habído,	-	-	-	-	<i>he may have had.</i>
Nosótro <span>s</span> háyamos habído,	-	-	-	-	<i>we may have had.</i>
Vosótro <span>s</span> háyais habído,	-	-	-	-	<i>you may have had.</i>
Éllo <span>s</span> háyan habído,	-	-	-	-	<i>they may have had.</i>

*Pluperfect.*

Yó hubié <span>s</span> e habído,	-	-	-	-	<i>I might have had.</i>
Tú hubié <span>s</span> es habído,	-	-	-	-	<i>thou mightest have had.</i>
Él hubié <span>s</span> e habído,	-	-	-	-	<i>he might have had.</i>
Nosótro <span>s</span> hubié <span>s</span> emos habído,	-	-	-	-	<i>we might have had.</i>
Vosótro <span>s</span> hubié <span>s</span> eis habído,	-	-	-	-	<i>you might have had.</i>
Éllo <span>s</span> hubié <span>s</span> en habído,	-	-	-	-	<i>they might have had.</i>

*Conjugation of the auxiliary verb TENER, to have,  
to hold, to possess.\**

## INFINITIVE.

<i>Present.</i>	Tenér, <sup>†</sup>	-	-	<i>to have, hold, possess.</i>
<i>Preterite.</i>	Habér tenído,	-	-	<i>to have had.</i>
<i>Gerund.</i>	Teniéndo,	-	-	<i>having.</i>
<i>Participle.</i>	Tenído,	-	-	<i>had.</i>

\* This verb is *auxiliary* and *active*. As *auxiliary* it is seldom used. As *active* it denotes possession, and must always be used to translate the verb *to have* when this verb is not auxiliary. We say, *he leido el*

## INDICATIVE.

*Present.*

Yó tengo,	-	-	-	<i>I have, or possess.</i>
Tú tienes,	-	-	-	<i>thou hast.</i>
Él tiene,	-	-	-	<i>he has.</i>
Nosotros tenemos,	-	-	-	<i>we have.</i>
Vosotros tenéis,	-	-	-	<i>you have.</i>
Ellos tienen,	-	-	-	<i>they have.</i>

*Imperfect.*

Yó tenía,	-	-	-	<i>I had, or did possess.</i>
Tú tenías,	-	-	-	<i>thou hadst.</i>
Él tenía,	-	-	-	<i>he had.</i>
Nosotros teníamos,	-	-	-	<i>we had.</i>
Vosotros teníais,	-	-	-	<i>you had.</i>
Ellos tenían,	-	-	-	<i>they had.</i>

*Preterite definite.*

Yo tuve,	-	-	-	<i>I had, or possessed.</i>
Tú tuviste,	-	-	-	<i>thou hadst.</i>
Él tuvo,	-	-	-	<i>he had.</i>
Nosotros tuvimos,	-	-	-	<i>we had.</i>
Vosotros tuvisteis,	-	-	-	<i>you had.</i>
Ellos tuvieron,	-	-	-	<i>they had.</i>

*Preterite indefinite.*

Yó he tenido,	-	-	-	<i>I have had, or possessed.</i>
Tú has tenido,	-	-	-	<i>thou hast had.</i>
Él ha tenido,	-	-	-	<i>he has had.</i>
Nosotros hemos tenido,	-	-	-	<i>we have had.</i>
Vosotros habéis tenido,	-	-	-	<i>you have had.</i>
Ellos han tenido,	-	-	-	<i>they have had.</i>

*Preterite anterior.*

Yó hube tenido,	-	-	-	<i>I had had, or possessed.</i>
Tú hubiste tenido,	-	-	-	<i>thou hadst had.</i>
Él hubo tenido,	-	-	-	<i>he had had.</i>
Nosotros hubimos tenido,	-	-	-	<i>we had had.</i>
Vosotros hubisteis tenido,	-	-	-	<i>you had had.</i>
Ellos hubieron tenido	-	-	-	<i>they had had.</i>

*libro*, I have read the book ; but we must say, *téngo un libro*, and not *he un libro*, I have a book ; because in the first example the verb *to have* is auxiliary to the verb *to read*, and in the second it is active and denotes possession.

† *Tenér que* before an infinitive is *to have to*. Ex *Téngo que salir*, I have to go out. (See page 156.)



*Pluperfect.*

Yó había tenido,	- -	<i>I had had, or possessed.</i>
Tú habías tenido,	- -	<i>thou hadst had.</i>
Él había tenido,	- -	<i>he had had.</i>
Nosotros habíamos tenido,	- -	<i>we had had.</i>
Vosotros habíais tenido,	- -	<i>you had had.</i>
Ellos habían tenido,	- -	<i>they had had.</i>

*Future absolute.*

Yó tendré,	- - -	<i>I shall have, or possess.</i>
Tú tendrás,	- - -	<i>thou wilt have.</i>
Él tendrá,	- - -	<i>he will have.</i>
Nosotros tendremos,	- - -	<i>we shall have.</i>
Vosotros tendréis,	- - -	<i>you will have.</i>
Ellos tendrán,	- - -	<i>they will have.</i>

*Future anterior.*

Yo habré tenido,	- -	<i>I shall have had, or possessed.</i>
Tú habrás tenido,	- -	<i>thou wilt have had.</i>
Él habrá tenido,	- -	<i>he will have had.</i>
Nosotros habrémos tenido,	- -	<i>we shall have had.</i>
Vosotros habréis tenido,	- -	<i>you will have had.</i>
Ellos habrán tenido,	- -	<i>they will have had.</i>

*Future conjunctive simple.*

Si, or cuándo,	- -	<i>If, or when,</i>
Yó tuviere,	- - -	<i>I have, or possess.</i>
Tú tuviéres,	- - -	<i>thou shalt have.</i>
Él tuviere,	- - -	<i>he shall have.</i>
Nosotros tuviéremos,	- - -	<i>we shall have.</i>
Vosotros tuviéreis,	- - -	<i>you will have.</i>
Ellos tuviéren,	- - -	<i>they will have.</i>

*Future conjunctive compound.*

Si, or cuándo,	- -	<i>If, or when,</i>
Yó hubiere tenido,	- -	<i>I have had.</i>
Tú hubiéres tenido,	- -	<i>thou wilt have had.</i>
Él hubiere tenido,	- -	<i>he will have had.</i>
Nosotros hubiéremos tenido,	- -	<i>we shall have had.</i>
Vosotros hubiéreis tenido,	- -	<i>you will have had.</i>
Ellos hubiéren tenido,	- -	<i>they will have had.</i>

CONDITIONALS.

*First conditional present.*

Yó tendría, or tuviéra,	-	-	-	<i>I should have, or possess.</i>
Tú tendrías,	-	-	-	<i>thou wouldst have.</i>
Él tendría,	-	-	-	<i>he would have.</i>
Nosotros tendríamos,	-	-	-	<i>we should have.</i>
Vosotros tendríais,	-	-	-	<i>you would have.</i>
Ellos tendrían,	-	-	-	<i>they would have.</i>

*Second and third conditionals present.*

Si, or cuándo,	-	-	-	<i>If, or though,</i>
Yó tuviéra, or tuviése,	-	-	-	<i>I should have.</i>
Tú tuviéras, or tuviéses,	-	-	-	<i>thou shouldst have.</i>
Él tuviéra, or tuviése,	-	-	-	<i>he should have.</i>
Nosotros tuviéramos, or tuviésemos,	-	-	-	<i>we should have.</i>
Vosotros tuviérais, or tuviéseis,	-	-	-	<i>you should have.</i>
Ellos tuvieran, or tuviésen,	-	-	-	<i>they should have.</i>

*First conditional past.*

Yó habría, or hubiéra tenido,	-	-	-	<i>I should have had.</i>
Tú habrías tenido,	-	-	-	<i>thou wouldst have had.</i>
Él habría tenido,	-	-	-	<i>he would have had.</i>
Nosotros habríamos tenido,	-	-	-	<i>we should have had.</i>
Vosotros habríais tenido,	-	-	-	<i>you would have had.</i>
Ellos habrían tenido,	-	-	-	<i>they would have had.</i>

*Second and third conditionals past.*

Si, or cuándo,	-	-	-	<i>If, or though,</i>
Yó hubiéra, or hubiése tenido,	-	-	-	<i>I had, or should have had.</i>
Tú hubiéras, or hubiéses tenido,	-	-	-	<i>thou wouldst have had.</i>
Él hubiéra, or hubiése tenido,	-	-	-	<i>he would have had.</i>
Nosotros hubiéramos, or hubiésemos tenido,	-	-	-	<i>we should have had.</i>
Vosotros hubiérais, or hubiéseis tenido,	-	-	-	<i>you would have had.</i>
Ellos hubieran, or hubiesen tenido,	-	-	-	<i>they would have had.</i>

## IMPERATIVE.

*Present or future.*

Ten tú,*	-	-	-	-	<i>have thou, or possess.</i>
Tenga él,	-	-	-	-	<i>let him have.</i>
Tengámos nosotros,	-	-	-	-	<i>let us have.</i>
Tened vosotros,*	-	-	-	-	<i>have you, or ye.</i>
Tengan ellos,	-	-	-	-	<i>let them have.</i>

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

*Present.*

Yó tenga,	-	-	-	-	<i>I may have, or possess.</i>
Tú tengas,	-	-	-	-	<i>thou mayst have.</i>
Él tenga,	-	-	-	-	<i>he may have.</i>
Nosotros tengámos,	-	-	-	-	<i>we may have.</i>
Vosotros tengáis,	-	-	-	-	<i>you may have.</i>
Ellos tengan,	-	-	-	-	<i>they may have.</i>

*Imperfect.*

Yó tuviése,	-	-	-	-	<i>I might have, or possess.</i>
Tú tuviéses,	-	-	-	-	<i>thou mightest have.</i>
Él tuviése,	-	-	-	-	<i>he might have.</i>
Nosotros tuviésemos,	-	-	-	-	<i>we might have.</i>
Vosotros tuviéseis,	-	-	-	-	<i>you might have.</i>
Ellos tuviésen,	-	-	-	-	<i>they might have.</i>

*Preterite.*

Yó haya tenido,	-	-	-	-	<i>I may have had.</i>
Tú hayas tenido,	-	-	-	-	<i>thou mayst have had.</i>
Él haya tenido,	-	-	-	-	<i>he may have had.</i>
Nosotros hayamos tenido,	-	-	-	-	<i>we may have had.</i>
Vosotros hayáis tenido,	-	-	-	-	<i>you may have had.</i>
Ellos hayan tenido,	-	-	-	-	<i>they may have had.</i>

*Pluperfect.*

Yó hubiése tenido,	-	-	-	-	<i>I might have had.</i>
Tú hubiéses tenido,	-	-	-	-	<i>thou mightest have had.</i>
Él hubiése tenido,	-	-	-	-	<i>he might have had.</i>
Nosotros hubiésemos tenido,	-	-	-	-	<i>we might have had.</i>
Vosotros hubiéseis tenido,	-	-	-	-	<i>you might have had.</i>
Ellos hubiésen tenido,	-	-	-	-	<i>they might have had.</i>

\* In all the verbs, the 2d person, singular and plural, of the imperative, takes the termination of the 2d person, sing. and plur. of the present subjunctive, when used with a negation. Ex. *Have thou not, no tengas. Have ye not, no tengáis.*

*Conjugation of the auxiliary verb SER, and ES-TÁR, meaning also TO BE.*

INFINITIVE.

<i>Present.</i>	Ser,	estár,	<i>to be.</i>
<i>Preterite.</i>	Habér sido,	habér estado,	<i>to have been.</i>
<i>Gerund.</i>	Siendo,	estando,	<i>being.</i>
<i>Participle.</i>	Sido,	estado,	<i>been.</i>

INDICATIVE.

*Present.*

Yó soy,	or	estóy,	-	-	<i>I am.</i>
Tú eres,		estás,	-	-	<i>thou art.</i>
Él es,		está,	-	-	<i>he is.</i>
Nosotros somos,		estamos,	-	-	<i>we are,</i>
Vosotros sois,		estáis,	-	-	<i>you are.</i>
Ellos son,		están,	-	-	<i>they are.</i>

*Imperfect.*

Yó era,	or	estaba,	-	-	<i>I was.</i>
Tú eras,		estabas,	-	-	<i>thou wast.</i>
Él era,		estaba,	-	-	<i>he was.</i>
Nosotros éramos,		estábamos,	-	-	<i>we were.</i>
Vosotros érais,		estabais,	-	-	<i>you were.</i>
Ellos eran,		estaban,	-	-	<i>they were.</i>

*Preterite definite.*

Yó fui,	or	estuve,	-	-	<i>I was.</i>
Tú fuiste,		estuviste,	-	-	<i>thou wast.</i>
Él fué,		estuvo,	-	-	<i>he was.</i>
Nosotros fuimos,		estuvimos,	-	-	<i>we were.</i>
Vosotros fuisteis,		estuvisteis,	-	-	<i>you were.</i>
Ellos fueron,		estuvieron,	-	-	<i>they were.</i>

*Preterite indefinite.*

Yó he sido	or	estado,	-	-	<i>I have been.</i>
Tú has sido,		estado,	-	-	<i>thou hast been.</i>
Él ha sido,		estado,	-	-	<i>he has been.</i>
Nosotros hemos sido,		estado,	-	-	<i>we have been.</i>
Vosotros habéis sido,		estado,	-	-	<i>you have been.</i>
Ellos han sido,		estado,	-	-	<i>they have been.</i>

*Preterite anterior.*

Yó hube sido,	or	estado,	-	<i>I had been.</i>
Tú hubiste sido,		estado,	-	<i>thou hadst been.</i>
Él hubo sido,		estado,	-	<i>he had been.</i>
Nosotros hubimos sido,		estado,	-	<i>we had been.</i>
Vosotros hubisteis sido,		estado,	-	<i>you had been.</i>
Ellos hubieron sido,		estado,	-	<i>they had been.</i>

*Pluperfect.*

Yó había sido,	or	estado,	-	<i>I had been.</i>
Tú habías sido,		estado,	-	<i>thou hadst been.</i>
Él había sido,		estado,	-	<i>he had been.</i>
Nosotros habíamos sido,		estado,	-	<i>we had been.</i>
Vosotros habíais sido,		estado,	-	<i>you had been.</i>
Ellos habían sido,		estado,	-	<i>they had been.</i>

*Future absolute.*

Yo seré,	or	estaré,	-	<i>I shall be.</i>
Tú serás,		estarás,	-	<i>thou wilt be.</i>
Él será,		estará,	-	<i>he will be.</i>
Nosotros seremos,		estaremos,	-	<i>we shall be.</i>
Vosotros seréis,		estaréis,	-	<i>you will be.</i>
Ellos serán,		estarán,	-	<i>they will be.</i>

*Future anterior.*

Yó habré sido,	or	estado,	-	<i>I shall have been.</i>
Tú habrás sido,		estado,	-	<i>thou wilt have been.</i>
Él habrá sido,		estado,	-	<i>he will have been.</i>
Nosotros habrémos sido,		estado,	-	<i>we shall have been.</i>
Vosotros habréis sido,		estado,	-	<i>you will have been.</i>
Ellos habrán sido,		estado,	-	<i>they will have been.</i>

*Future conjunctive simple.*

Si, or cuándo,			-	<i>If, or when.</i>
Yó fuere,	or	estuviere,	-	<i>I be, or shall be.</i>
Tú fuéres,		estuviéres,	-	<i>thou wilt be.</i>
Él fuere,		estuviere,	-	<i>he will be.</i>
Nosotros fuéremos,		estuviéremos,	-	<i>we shall be.</i>
Vosotros fuéreis,		estuviéreis,	-	<i>you will be.</i>
Ellos fuéren,		estuviéren,	-	<i>they will be.</i>

*Future conjunctive compound.*

Si, or cuándo,		<i>If, or when,</i>
Yó hubiere sido,	or estado,	- <i>I have been.</i>
Tú hubiéres sido,	estado,	- <i>thou wilt have been.</i>
El hubiere sido,	estado,	- <i>he will have been.</i>
Nosotros hubiéremos sido,	estado,	- <i>we shall have been.</i>
Vosotros hubiéreis sido,	estado,	- <i>you will have been.</i>
Ellos hubieren sido,	estado,	- <i>they will have been.</i>

## CONDITIONALS.

*First conditional present.*

Yó sería or fuera,	estaría or estuviera,	<i>I should be,</i>
Tú serías,	estarías,	- <i>thou wouldst be.</i>
El sería,	estaría,	- <i>he would be.</i>
Nosotros seríamos,	estaríamos,	- <i>we should be.</i>
Vosotros seriais,	estariais,	- <i>you would be.</i>
Ellos serían,	estarían,	- <i>they would be.</i>

*Second and third conditionals present.*

Si, or cuándo,		} <i>If or though I were or should be, &amp;c.</i>
Yó fuera or fuése,	estuviera or estuviése,	
Tú fueras or fuéses,	estuvieras or estuviéses,	
El fuera or fuése,	estuviera or estuviése,	
Nosotros fuéramos or fuésemos,	estuviéramos or estuviésemos,	
Vosotros fuerais or fuérais,	estuvierais or estuviérais,	
Ellos fueran or fuésen,	estuvieran or estuviésen,	

*First conditional past.*

Yó habría sido,	or estado,	- <i>I should have been.</i>
Tú habría sido,	estado,	- <i>thou wouldst have been.</i>
El habría sido,	estado,	- <i>he would have been.</i>
Nosotros habríamos sido,	estado,	- <i>we should have been.</i>
Vosotros habríais sido,	estado,	- <i>you would have been.</i>
Ellos habrían sido,	estado,	- <i>they would have been.</i>

*Second and third conditionals past.*

Si, or cuándo,		} <i>If or though I had been, or should have been, &amp;c.</i>
Yó hubiera, or hubiese sido,	or estado,	
Tú hubieras, or hubieses sido,	estado,	
El hubiera, or hubiese sido,	estado,	
Nosotros hubiéramos, or hubiésemos sido,	estado,	
Vosotros hubierais, or hubiérais sido,	estado,	
Ellos hubieran, or hubiesen sido,	estado,	

## IMPERATIVE.

*Present or future.*

Sé tú,	or	está tú,	<i>be thou.</i>
Séa él,*		esté él,*	<i>let him be.</i>
Seámos nosotros,		estémos nosotros,	<i>let us be.</i>
Séd vosotros,		estád vosotros,	<i>be you.</i>
Séan ellos,*		estén ellos,*	<i>let them be.</i>

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

*Present.*

Yó séa,	or	esté,	<i>I may be.</i>
Tú séas,		estés,	<i>thou mayst be.</i>
El séa,		esté,	<i>he may be.</i>
Nosotros seámos,		estémos,	<i>we may be.</i>
Vosotros seáis,		estéis,	<i>you may be.</i>
Ellos séan,		estén,	<i>they may be.</i>

*Imperfect.*

Yó fuése,	or	estuviése,	<i>I might be.</i>
Tú fuéses,		estuviéses,	<i>thou mightest be.</i>
El fuése,		estuviése,	<i>he might be.</i>
Nosotros fuésemos,		estuviésemos,	<i>we might be.</i>
Vosotros fuéseis,		estuviéseis,	<i>you might be.</i>
Ellos fuésen,		estuviésen,	<i>they might be.</i>

*Preterite.*

Yó háya sido,	or	estado,	<i>I may have been.</i>
Tú háyas sido,		estado,	<i>thou mayst have been.</i>
El háya sido,		estado,	<i>he may have been.</i>
Nosotros háyamos sido,		estado,	<i>we may have been.</i>
Vosotros háyais sido,		estado,	<i>you may have been.</i>
Ellos háyan sido,		estado,	<i>they may have been.</i>

*Pluperfect.*

Yó hubiése sido,	or	estado,	<i>I might have been.</i>
Tu hubiéses sido,		estado,	<i>thou mightest have been.</i>
El hubiése sido,		estado,	<i>he might have been.</i>
Nosotros hubiésemos sido,		estado,	<i>we might have been.</i>
Vosotros hubiéseis sido,		estado,	<i>you might have been.</i>
Ellos hubiésen sido,		estado,	<i>they might have been.</i>

\* *Spa* *vm.*, be you, sing.—*Séan* *vm.*, be you, plural.—and so on; use the third person in polite style in *all* the tenses of *all* the verbs. See note 2d. page 52.

### Rules on the verbs SER and ESTÁR.

**RULE XLIX.** The verb *to be* cannot be translated in Spanish indifferently by *ser* or by *estar*. *Ser*, joined to an adjective, gives it sometimes an entirely different meaning from that which *estar* would give it. It is consequently necessary to understand well the use of these two verbs. We observe then, that we must use the verb *ser*,—1st.—whenever we speak of qualities essential to the subject ;—2d.—of qualities relating to the mind or to the heart ;—3d.—whenever we speak of an art, a dignity, an employment, a trade, &c. or of the dimensions of an object ;—4th.—for the conjugation of the passive verbs ;—5th.—when it is used for, *to belong*, and when it is used impersonally : Ex. *Soy hombre*, I am a man ; *somos mortales*, we are mortal ; *son buenas gentes*, they are good people ; *son instruidos*, they are learned ; *sóis prudentes*, you are prudent ; *eran caritativos*, they were charitable ; *ser alto, chico, gordo, flaco*, to be tall, short, fat, lean ; *ser rey, primer ministro, general, juez, pintor, sastre, zapatero*, &c, to be a king, prime minister, a general, a judge, a painter, a tailor, a shoe-maker, &c. ; *ser amado, aborrecido*, to be loved, hated ; *de quién es este anillo ? es de María*, whose ring is this ? it is Mary's ; *yó soy*, it is I ; *tú eras*, it was thou ; *él fué*, it was he ; *nosotros seremos*, it will be we ; *vosotros seriais*, it would be you, &c.

We make use, on the contrary, of *estar*,—1st.—whenever we speak of the state of health ;—2d.—of being in any place ;—3d.—of an emotion or of a sudden and transient sensation ;—4th,—a manner or state of being. Ex. *Estár bueno ó malo*, to be well or ill ; *estar en casa, en el jardín, en el campo*, to be at home, in the garden, in the country ; *estar enfadado*, to be offended ; *estar contento*, to be content.

Nevertheless, in the following examples and other similar ones, we can make use of *ser* or of *estar* indifferently ; *ser* or *estar del mismo parecer*, to be of the same opinion ; *ser corregidor* or *estar de corregidor en Madrid*, to be corregidor at Madrid. We must however observe in the second example, that if we make use of *estar*, this verb must be followed by the particle *de*, for, *estar corregidor, alcálde*, would not be Spanish, as it is never immediately followed by a substantive.

N. B. *Ser bueno, ser malo*, signifies to be good, to be bad ; *estar bueno, estar malo*, signifies to be well or ill ; *estar me-*



*jór*, to be better, to be better in health ; *estár peor*, to be more sick, to be worse.

**RULE L.** The verb *estár* is often used as in English *to be*, before another verb to signify in a more positive manner that an action is doing, has been done, or will be done, at the very moment in which we speak, or of which we speak ; and then the verb which follows is put in the gerund. Ex. *Está escribiendo*, he writes, that is, he is writing ; *estaba escribiendo*, he wrote, that is, he was writing ; *entonces estarán escribiendo*, they will write then, that is, they will then be writing. (See the *Appendix* in page 459, for more particular remarks on *Ser* and *Estar*, *Habér* and *Tenér*.)

A GENERAL SCHEME OF THE TERMINATIONS OF REGULAR  
VERBS IN THEIR SIMPLE TENSES.

The figures 1, 2, 3, signify the *first*, *second* and *third* conjugations.

All the regular verbs of each conjugation are easily conjugated by changing the terminations *ar*, *er*, *ir*, of the infinitive into those expressed as follows.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

<i>Present.</i>	<i>Gerund.</i>	<i>Participle.</i>	<i>If there is an active part.</i>
1. ar,	ando,	ado,	ante;
2. er, }	iendo,	ido,	iente or yente,*
3. ir, }			

INDICATIVE.

*Present.*

<i>Singular.</i>			<i>Plural.</i>		
1. { yó	tú,	él.	nosótro,	vosótro,	ellos.
2. { o,	as,	a.	amos,	áis,	añ.
3. { o,	es,	e.	{ émos,	éis,	en.
			{ ímos,	ís,	en.

*Imperfect.*

1. ába,	ábas,	ába.	ábamos,	ábais,	ában.
2. } ía,	ías,	ía.	íamos,	íais,	ían.
3. }					

*Preterite definite.*

1. é,	aste,	ó.	amos,	asteis,	áron.
2. } í,	iste,	ió	ímos,	isteis,	iéron.
3. }					

\* See 5th and 6th observations preceding the Conjugation of the Irregular verbs, page 122.

*Future absolute.*

1. aré,	arás,	ará.	arémos,	aréis,	arán.
2. eré,	erás,	erá.	erémos,	eréis,	erán.
3. iré,	irás,	irá.	irémos,	iréis,	irán.

*Future conjunctive simple.*

1. áre,	áres,	áre.	áremos,	áreis,	áren.
2. } iére,	iéres,	iére,	iéremos,	iéreis,	iéren.
3. }					

## CONDITIONALS.

*First conditional present.*

1. aría,*	arías,	aría.	aríamos,	aríais,	arían.
2. ería,	erías,	ería.	eríamos,	eríais,	erían.
3. iría,	irías,	iría.	iríamos,	iríais,	irían.

*Second and third conditionals present.*

1. ára,*	áras,	ára.	áramos,	árais,	áran.
2. } iéra,	iéras,	iéra.	iéramos,	iérais,	iéran.
3. }					
1. áse,*	áses,	áse.	ásemos,	áseis,	ásen.
2. } iése,	iéses,	iése.	iésemos,	iéseis,	iésen.
3. }					

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

1. a,	e.	émos,	ad,	en.
2. } e,	a.	ámos,	{ ed,	an.
3. }			{ id,	an.

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

*Present.*

<i>Singular.</i>			<i>Plural.</i>		
1. { yó	tú,	él.	nosotros,	vosotros,	ellos.
2. { e,	es,	e.	émos,	éis,	en.
3. { a,	as,	a.	ámos,	áis,	an.

*Imperfect.*

1. áse,	áses,	áse.	ásemos,	áseis,	ásen.
2. } iése,	iéses,	iése.	iésemos,	iéseis,	iésen.
3. }					

\* See the rules about the use of these conditional tenses, pages 77 to 80, inclusive.

## PARADIGMS OF THE THREE CONJUGATIONS.

*First conjugation in AR.*

## INFINITIVE.

<i>Present.</i>	Am-ár, -	-	-	<i>to love.</i>
<i>Preterite.</i>	Habér amádo, -	-	-	<i>to have loved.</i>
<i>Gerund.</i>	Amádo, -	-	-	<i>loving.</i>
<i>Participle.</i>	Amádo, -	-	-	<i>loved.</i>

## INDICATIVE.

*Present.*

Yó amo, -	-	-	-	<i>I love, or do love.</i>
Tú amas, -	-	-	-	<i>thou lovest.</i>
Él ama, -	-	-	-	<i>he loves.</i>
Nosotros amamos, -	-	-	-	<i>we love.</i>
Vosotros amáis, -	-	-	-	<i>you love.</i>
Ellos aman, -	-	-	-	<i>they love.</i>

*Imperfect.*

Yó amaba, -	-	-	-	<i>I did love.</i>
Tú amabas, -	-	-	-	<i>thou didst love.</i>
Él amaba, -	-	-	-	<i>he did love.</i>
Nosotros amábamos, -	-	-	-	<i>we did love.</i>
Vosotros amábais, -	-	-	-	<i>you did love.</i>
Ellos amaban, -	-	-	-	<i>they did love.</i>

*Preterite definite.*

Yó amé, -	-	-	-	<i>I loved.</i>
Tú amaste, -	-	-	-	<i>thou lovedst.</i>
Él amó, -	-	-	-	<i>he loved.</i>
Nosotros amamos, -	-	-	-	<i>we loved.</i>
Vosotros amasteis, -	-	-	-	<i>you loved.</i>
Ellos amaron, -	-	-	-	<i>they loved.</i>

*Preterite indefinite.*

Yó he amado, -	-	-	-	<i>I have loved.</i>
Tú has amado, -	-	-	-	<i>thou hast loved.</i>
Él ha amado, -	-	-	-	<i>he has loved.</i>
Nosotros hemos amado, -	-	-	-	<i>we have loved.</i>
Vosotros habéis amado, -	-	-	-	<i>you have loved.</i>
Ellos han amado, -	-	-	-	<i>they have loved.</i>

*Preterite anterior.*

Yó hube amado, -	-	-	-	<i>I had loved.</i>
Tú hubiste amado, -	-	-	-	<i>thou hadst loved.</i>
Él hubo amado, -	-	-	-	<i>he had loved.</i>

Nosotros hubimos amado,	-	-	<i>we had loved.</i>
Vosotros hubisteis amado,	-	-	<i>you had loved.</i>
Ellos hubieron amado,	-	-	<i>they had loved.</i>

*Pluperfect.*

Yó había amado,	-	-	<i>I had loved.</i>
Tú habías amado,	-	-	<i>thou hadst loved.</i>
Él había amado,	-	-	<i>he had loved.</i>
Nosotros habíamos amado,	-	-	<i>we had loved.</i>
Vosotros habíais amado,	-	-	<i>you had loved.</i>
Ellos habían amado,	-	-	<i>they had loved.</i>

*Future absolute.*

Yó amaré,	-	-	<i>I shall love.</i>
Tú amarás,	-	-	<i>thou wilt love.</i>
Él amará,	-	-	<i>he will love.</i>
Nosotros amaremos,	-	-	<i>we shall love.</i>
Vosotros amaréis,	-	-	<i>you will love.</i>
Ellos amarán,	-	-	<i>they will love.</i>

*Future anterior.*

Yó habré amado,	-	-	<i>I shall have loved.</i>
Tú habrás amado,	-	-	<i>thou wilt have loved.</i>
Él habrá amado,	-	-	<i>he will have loved.</i>
Nosotros habrémos amado,	-	-	<i>we shall have loved.</i>
Vosotros habréis amado,	-	-	<i>you will have loved.</i>
Ellos habrán amado,	-	-	<i>they will have loved.</i>

*Future conjunctive simple.*

Si, or cuándo,	-	-	<i>If or when,</i>
Yó amare,	-	-	<i>I love or shall love.</i>
Tú amares,	-	-	<i>thou wilt love.</i>
Él amare,	-	-	<i>he will love.</i>
Nosotros amáremos,	-	-	<i>we shall love.</i>
Vosotros amáreis,	-	-	<i>you will love.</i>
Ellos amaren,	-	-	<i>they will love.</i>

*Future conjunctive compound.*

Si, or cuándo,	-	-	<i>If, or when,</i>
Yó hubiere amado,	-	-	<i>I have loved.</i>
Tú hubieres amado,	-	-	<i>thou wilt have loved.</i>
Él hubiere amado,	-	-	<i>he will have loved.</i>
Nosotros hubiéremos amado,	-	-	<i>we shall have loved.</i>
Vosotros hubiéreis amado,	-	-	<i>you will have loved.</i>
Ellos hubieren amado,	-	-	<i>they will have loved.</i>

## CONDITIONALS.

*First conditional present.*

Yó amaría, <i>or</i> amára,	-	-	<i>I should love.</i>
Tú amarías,	-	-	<i>thou wouldst love.</i>
Él amaría,	-	-	<i>he would love.</i>
Nosótroa amariámoa,	-	-	<i>we should love.</i>
Vosótroa amariáiá,	-	-	<i>you would love.</i>
Elloa amarián,	-	-	<i>they would love.</i>

*Second and third conditionals present.*

Si, <i>or</i> cuándo,			<i>If, or though,</i>
Yó amára <i>or</i> amáae,	-	-	<i>I should love.</i>
Tú amáraa	amáaeá,	-	<i>thou wouldst love.</i>
Él amára	amáae,	-	<i>he would love.</i>
Nosótroa amáraamoá	amáaeamoá,	-	<i>we should love.</i>
Vosótroa amáraáiá,	amáaeáiá,	-	<i>you would love.</i>
Elloa amáraán	amáaeán,	-	<i>they would love.</i>

*First conditional past.*

Yó habríá <i>or</i> hubiéra amádo,	-	-	<i>I should have loved.</i>
Tú habríáa amádo,	-	-	<i>thou wouldst have loved.</i>
Él habríá amádo,	-	-	<i>he would have loved.</i>
Nosótroa habríáamoá amádo,	-	-	<i>we should have loved.</i>
Vosótroa habríááiá amádo,	-	-	<i>you would have loved.</i>
Elloa habríáán amádo,	-	-	<i>they would have loved.</i>

*Second and third conditionals past.*

Si, <i>or</i> cuándo,			
Yó hubiéra, <i>or</i> hubiéae amádo,			} <i>If for though, I had loved, or should have loved, &amp;c.</i>
Tú hubiéraa,	hubiéaeá amádo,		
Él hubiéra,	hubiéae amádo,		
Nosótroa hubiéramoa,	hubiéaeamoá amádo,		
Vosótroa hubiéraáiá,	hubiéaeáiá amádo,		
Elloa hubiéran,	hubiéean amádo,		

## IMPERATIVE.

*Present or future.*

Áma tú,*	-	-	-	<i>love thou.</i>
Áme él,	-	-	-	<i>let him love.</i>

\* Verbs in the imperative require the pronouns governed close after them, when used affirmatively; and before them, as usual, when used negatively; Ex. *Love me, áame; do not love me, no me áame; Receive us, recibídoaa; do not receive us, no noa recibáiá.*

Amémos nosotros,	-	-	<i>let us love.</i>
Amád vosotros,	-	-	<i>love ye.</i>
Ámen ellos,	-	-	<i>let them love.</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE.

*Present.*

Yó áme,	-	-	<i>I may love.</i>
Tú ámes,	-	-	<i>thou mayst love.</i>
Él áme,	-	-	<i>he may love.</i>
Nosotros amémos,	-	-	<i>we may love.</i>
Vosotros améis,	-	-	<i>you may love.</i>
Ellos ámen,	-	-	<i>they may love.</i>

*Imperfect.*

Yó amáse,	-	-	<i>I might love.</i>
Tú amáses	-	-	<i>thou mightest love.</i>
Él amáse,	-	-	<i>he might love.</i>
Nosotros amásemos,	-	-	<i>we might love.</i>
Vosotros amáseis,	-	-	<i>you might love.</i>
Ellos amásen,	-	-	<i>they might love.</i>

*Preterite.*

Yó háya amádo,	-	-	<i>I may have loved.</i>
Tú háyas amádo,	-	-	<i>thou mayst have loved.</i>
Él háya amádo,	-	-	<i>he may have loved.</i>
Nosotros háyamos amádo,	-	-	<i>we may have loved.</i>
Vosotros háyais amádo,	-	-	<i>you may have loved.</i>
Ellos háyan amádo,	-	-	<i>they may have loved.</i>

*Pluperfect.*

Yó hubiése amádo,	-	-	<i>I might have loved.</i>
Tú hubiéses amádo,	-	-	<i>thou mightest have loved.</i>
Él hubiése amádo,	-	-	<i>he might have loved.</i>
Nosotros hubiésemos amádo,	-	-	<i>we might have loved.</i>
Vosotros hubiéseis amádo,	-	-	<i>you might have loved.</i>
Ellos hubiésen amádo,	-	-	<i>they might have loved.</i>

*Second conjugation in ER.*

INFINITIVE.

<i>Present.</i>	Tem-ér,	-	-	<i>to fear.</i>
<i>Preterite.</i>	Habér temido,	-	-	<i>to have feared.</i>
<i>Gerund.</i>	Temiendo,	-	-	<i>fearing.</i>
<i>Participle.</i>	Temido,	-	-	<i>feared.</i>

## INDICATIVE.

## Present.

Yó temo,	-	-	-	-	<i>I fear.</i>
Tú temes,	-	-	-	-	<i>thou fearest.</i>
El teme,	-	-	-	-	<i>he fears.</i>
Nosotros tememos,	-	-	-	-	<i>we fear.</i>
Vosotros teméis,	-	-	-	-	<i>you fear.</i>
Ellos temen,	-	-	-	-	<i>they fear.</i>

## Imperfect.

Yó temía,	-	-	-	-	<i>I did fear.</i>
Tú temías,	-	-	-	-	<i>thou didst fear.</i>
El temía,	-	-	-	-	<i>he did fear.</i>
Nosotros temíamos,	-	-	-	-	<i>we did fear.</i>
Vosotros temíais,	-	-	-	-	<i>you did fear.</i>
Ellos temían,	-	-	-	-	<i>they did fear.</i>

## Preterite definite.

Yó temí,	-	-	-	-	<i>I feared.</i>
Tú temiste,	-	-	-	-	<i>thou fearedst.</i>
El temió,	-	-	-	-	<i>he feared.</i>
Nosotros temimos,	-	-	-	-	<i>we feared.</i>
Vosotros temisteis,	-	-	-	-	<i>you feared.</i>
Ellos temieron,	-	-	-	-	<i>they feared.</i>

## Preterite indefinite.

Yó he temido,	-	-	-	-	<i>I have feared.</i>
Tú has temido,	-	-	-	-	<i>thou hast feared.</i>
El ha temido,	-	-	-	-	<i>he has feared.</i>
Nosotros hemos temido,	-	-	-	-	<i>we have feared.</i>
Vosotros habéis temido,	-	-	-	-	<i>you have feared.</i>
Ellos han temido,	-	-	-	-	<i>they have feared.</i>

## Preterite anterior.

Yó hube temido,	-	-	-	-	<i>I had feared.</i>
Tú hubiste temido,	-	-	-	-	<i>thou hadst feared.</i>
El hubo temido,	-	-	-	-	<i>he had feared.</i>
Nosotros hubimos temido,	-	-	-	-	<i>we had feared.</i>
Vosotros hubisteis temido,	-	-	-	-	<i>you had feared.</i>
Ellos hubieron temido,	-	-	-	-	<i>they had feared.</i>

*Pluperfect.*

Yó había temido,	-	-	-	<i>I had feared.</i>
Tú habías temido,	-	-	-	<i>thou hadst feared.</i>
El había temido,	-	-	-	<i>he had feared.</i>
Nosotros habíamos temido,	-	-	-	<i>we had feared.</i>
Vosotros habíais temido,	-	-	-	<i>you had feared.</i>
Ellos habían temido,	-	-	-	<i>they had feared.</i>

*Future absolute.*

Yó temeré,	-	-	-	<i>I shall fear.</i>
Tú temerás,	-	-	-	<i>thou wilt fear.</i>
El temerá,	-	-	-	<i>he will fear.</i>
Nosotros temeremos,	-	-	-	<i>we shall fear.</i>
Vosotros temeréis,	-	-	-	<i>you will fear.</i>
Ellos temerán,	-	-	-	<i>they will fear.</i>

*Future anterior.*

Yó habré temido,	-	-	-	<i>I shall have feared.</i>
Tú habrás temido,	-	-	-	<i>thou wilt have feared.</i>
El habrá temido,	-	-	-	<i>he will have feared.</i>
Nosotros habrémos temido,	-	-	-	<i>we shall have feared.</i>
Vosotros habréis temido,	-	-	-	<i>you will have feared.</i>
Ellos habrán temido,	-	-	-	<i>they will have feared.</i>

*Future conjunctive simple.*

Si, or cuándo,	-	-	-	<i>If, or when,</i>
Yó temiere,	-	-	-	<i>I shall fear.</i>
Tú temieres,	-	-	-	<i>thou wilt fear.</i>
El temiere,	-	-	-	<i>he will fear.</i>
Nosotros temiéremos,	-	-	-	<i>we shall fear.</i>
Vosotros temiéreis,	-	-	-	<i>you will fear.</i>
Ellos temiéren,	-	-	-	<i>they will fear.</i>

*Future conjunctive compound.*

Si, or cuándo,	-	-	-	<i>If, or when,</i>
Yó hubiere temido,	-	-	-	<i>I have feared.</i>
Tú hubieres temido,	-	-	-	<i>thou wilt have feared.</i>
El hubiere temido,	-	-	-	<i>he will have feared.</i>
Nosotros hubiéremos temido,	-	-	-	<i>we shall have feared.</i>
Vosotros hubiéreis temido,	-	-	-	<i>you will have feared.</i>
Ellos hubiéren temido,	-	-	-	<i>they will have feared.</i>



## CONDITIONALS.

*First conditional present.*

Yó temería, or temiéra, - - -	<i>I should fear.</i>
Tú temerías, - - -	<i>thou wouldst fear.</i>
Él temería, - - -	<i>he would fear.</i>
Nosotros temeríamos, - - -	<i>we should fear.</i>
Vosotros temeríais, - - -	<i>you would fear.</i>
Ellos temerían, - - -	<i>they would fear.</i>

*Second and third conditionals present.*

Si, or cuándo, - - -	<i>If, or though.</i>
Yó temiéra or temiése, - - -	<i>I feared.</i>
Tú temiéras or temiéses, - - -	<i>thou shouldst fear.</i>
Él temiéra or temiése, - - -	<i>he should fear.</i>
Nosotros temiéramos or temiésemos, - - -	<i>we should fear.</i>
Vosotros temiérais or temiéseis, - - -	<i>you should fear.</i>
Ellos temiéran or temiésen, - - -	<i>they should fear.</i>

*First conditional past.*

Yó habría or hubiéra temido, - - -	<i>I should have feared.</i>
Tú habrías temido, - - -	<i>thou wouldst have feared.</i>
Él habría temido, - - -	<i>he would have feared.</i>
Nosotros habríamos temido, - - -	<i>we should have feared.</i>
Vosotros habríais temido, - - -	<i>you would have feared.</i>
Ellos habrían temido, - - -	<i>they would have feared.</i>

*Second and third conditionals past.*

Yó hubiéra or hubiése temido,	<i>If, or though, I had feared, or should have feared, &amp;c.</i>
Tú hubiéras, or hubiéses temido,	
Él hubiéra, or hubiése temido,	
Nosotros hubiéramos, or hubiésemos temido,	
Vosotros hubiérais, or hubiéseis temido,	
Ellos hubiéran, or hubiésen temido,	

## IMPERATIVE.

*Present or future.*

Téme tú, - - -	<i>fear thou.</i>
Téma él, - - -	<i>let him fear.</i>
Temámos nosotros, - - -	<i>let us fear.</i>
Teméd vosotros, - - -	<i>fear ye.</i>
Téman ellos, - - -	<i>let them fear.</i>

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

*Present.*

Yó tema,	-	-	-	<i>I may fear.</i>
Tú temas,	-	-	-	<i>thou mayst fear.</i>
Él tema,	-	-	-	<i>he may fear.</i>
Nosotros temamos,	-	-	-	<i>we may fear.</i>
Vosotros temáis,	-	-	-	<i>you may fear.</i>
Ellos teman,	-	-	-	<i>they may fear.</i>

*Imperfect.*

Yó temiese,	-	-	-	<i>I might fear.</i>
Tú temieses,	-	-	-	<i>thou mightest fear.</i>
Él temiese,	-	-	-	<i>he might fear.</i>
Nosotros temiésemos,	-	-	-	<i>we might fear.</i>
Vosotros temiéseis,	-	-	-	<i>you might fear.</i>
Ellos temiesen	-	-	-	<i>they might fear.</i>

*Preterite.*

Yó háya temido,	-	-	-	<i>I may have feared.</i>
Tú háyas temido,	-	-	-	<i>thou mayst have feared.</i>
Él háya temido,	-	-	-	<i>he may have feared.</i>
Nosotros háyamos temido,	-	-	-	<i>we may have feared.</i>
Vosotros háyais temido,	-	-	-	<i>you may have feared.</i>
Ellos háyan temido,	-	-	-	<i>they may have feared.</i>

*Pluperfect.*

Yó hubiese temido,	-	-	-	<i>I might have feared.</i>
Tú hubieses temido,	-	-	-	<i>thou mightest have feared.</i>
Él hubiese temido,	-	-	-	<i>he might have feared.</i>
Nosotros hubiésemos temido,	-	-	-	<i>we might have feared.</i>
Vosotros hubiéseis temido,	-	-	-	<i>you might have feared.</i>
Ellos hubiesen temido,	-	-	-	<i>they might have feared.</i>

*Third conjugation in 1B.*

## INFINITIVE.

<i>Present.</i>	Sufr-ír,	-	-	<i>to suffer.</i>
<i>Preterite.</i>	Habér sufrido,	-	-	<i>to have suffered.</i>
<i>Gerund.</i>	Sufriendo,	-	-	<i>suffering.</i>
<i>Participle.</i>	Sufrido,	-	-	<i>suffered.</i>

## INDICATIVE.

*Present.*

Yó sufro,	-	-	-	-	<i>I suffer.</i>
Tú sufres,	-	-	-	-	<i>thou sufferest.</i>
El sufre,	-	-	-	-	<i>he suffers.</i>
Nosotros sufrimos,	-	-	-	-	<i>we suffer.</i>
Vosotros sufrís,	-	-	-	-	<i>you suffer.</i>
Ellos sufren,	-	-	-	-	<i>they suffer.</i>

*Imperfect.*

Yó sufría,	-	-	-	-	<i>I did suffer.</i>
Tú sufrías,	-	-	-	-	<i>thou didst suffer.</i>
El sufría,	-	-	-	-	<i>he did suffer.</i>
Nosotros sufríamos,	-	-	-	-	<i>we did suffer.</i>
Vosotros sufríais,	-	-	-	-	<i>you did suffer.</i>
Ellos sufrían,	-	-	-	-	<i>they did suffer.</i>

*Preterite definite.*

Yó sufrí,	-	-	-	-	<i>I suffered.</i>
Tú sufriste,	-	-	-	-	<i>thou sufferedst.</i>
El sufrió,	-	-	-	-	<i>he suffered.</i>
Nosotros sufrimos,	-	-	-	-	<i>we suffered.</i>
Vosotros sufristeis,	-	-	-	-	<i>you suffered.</i>
Ellos sufrieron,	-	-	-	-	<i>they suffered.</i>

*Preterite indefinite.*

Yó he sufrido,	-	-	-	-	<i>I have suffered.</i>
Tú has sufrido,	-	-	-	-	<i>thou hast suffered.</i>
El ha sufrido,	-	-	-	-	<i>he has suffered.</i>
Nosotros hemos sufrido,	-	-	-	-	<i>we have suffered.</i>
Vosotros habéis sufrido,	-	-	-	-	<i>you have suffered.</i>
Ellos han sufrido,	-	-	-	-	<i>they have suffered.</i>

*Preterite anterior.*

Yó hube sufrido,	-	-	-	-	<i>I had suffered.</i>
Tú hubiste sufrido,	-	-	-	-	<i>thou hadst suffered.</i>
El hubo sufrido,	-	-	-	-	<i>he had suffered.</i>
Nosotros hubimos sufrido,	-	-	-	-	<i>we had suffered.</i>
Vosotros hubisteis sufrido,	-	-	-	-	<i>you had suffered.</i>
Ellos hubieron sufrido,	-	-	-	-	<i>they had suffered.</i>

*Pluperfect.*

Yó había sufrido,	-	-	-	<i>I had suffered.</i>
Tú habías sufrido,	-	-	-	<i>thou hadst suffered.</i>
Él había sufrido,	-	-	-	<i>he had suffered.</i>
Nosotros habíamos sufrido,	-	-	-	<i>we had suffered.</i>
Vosotros habíais sufrido,	-	-	-	<i>you had suffered.</i>
Ellos habían sufrido,	-	-	-	<i>they had suffered.</i>

*Future absolute.*

Yó sufriré,	-	-	-	<i>I shall suffer.</i>
Tú sufrirás,	-	-	-	<i>thou wilt suffer.</i>
Él sufrirá,	-	-	-	<i>he will suffer.</i>
Nosotros sufriremos,	-	-	-	<i>we shall suffer.</i>
Vosotros sufriréis,	-	-	-	<i>you will suffer.</i>
Ellos sufrirán,	-	-	-	<i>they will suffer.</i>

*Future anterior.*

Yó habré sufrido,	-	-	-	<i>I shall have suffered.</i>
Tú habrás sufrido,	-	-	-	<i>thou wilt have suffered.</i>
Él habrá sufrido,	-	-	-	<i>he will have suffered.</i>
Nosotros habremos sufrido,	-	-	-	<i>we shall have suffered.</i>
Vosotros habréis sufrido,	-	-	-	<i>you will have suffered.</i>
Ellos habrán sufrido,	-	-	-	<i>they will have suffered.</i>

*Future conjunctive simple.*

Si, or cuándo,	-	-	-	<i>If, or when,</i>
Yó sufriere,	-	-	-	<i>I suffer.</i>
Tú sufrieres,	-	-	-	<i>thou wilt suffer.</i>
Él sufriere,	-	-	-	<i>he will suffer.</i>
Nosotros sufriéremos,	-	-	-	<i>we shall suffer.</i>
Vosotros sufriereis,	-	-	-	<i>you will suffer.</i>
Ellos sufrieren,	-	-	-	<i>they will suffer.</i>

*Future conjunctive compound.*

Si, or cuándo,	-	-	-	<i>If, or when,</i>
Yó hubiere sufrido,	-	-	-	<i>I shall have suffered.</i>
Tú hubieres sufrido,	-	-	-	<i>thou wilt have suffered.</i>
Él hubiere sufrido,	-	-	-	<i>he will have suffered.</i>
Nosotros hubiéremos sufrido,	-	-	-	<i>we shall have suffered.</i>
Vosotros hubiereis sufrido,	-	-	-	<i>you will have suffered.</i>
Ellos hubieren sufrido,	-	-	-	<i>they will have suffered.</i>

## CONDITIONALS.

*First conditional present.*

Yó sufriría, or sufriera, - - -	<i>I should suffer.</i>
Tú sufrirías, - - -	<i>thou wouldst suffer.</i>
El sufriría, - - -	<i>he would suffer.</i>
Nosotros sufriríamos, - - -	<i>we should suffer.</i>
Vosotros sufriríais, - - -	<i>you would suffer.</i>
Ellos sufrirían, - - -	<i>they would suffer.</i>

*Second and third conditionals present.*

Si, or cuándo, - - -	<i>If, or though,</i>
Yó sufriera, or sufriese, - - -	<i>I suffered.</i>
Tú sufrieras, or sufrieses, - - -	<i>thou shouldst suffer,</i>
El sufriera, or sufriese, - - -	<i>he should suffer.</i>
Nosotros sufriéramos, or sufriésemos, - - -	<i>we should suffer.</i>
Vosotros sufrieráis, or sufriéseis, - - -	<i>you should suffer.</i>
Ellos sufrierán, or sufriesen, - - -	<i>they should suffer.</i>

*First conditional past.*

Yó habría, or hubiera sufrido, - - -	<i>I should have suffered.</i>
Tú habrías sufrido, - - -	<i>thou wouldst have suffered</i>
El habría sufrido, - - -	<i>he would have suffered.</i>
Nosotros habríamos sufrido, - - -	<i>we should have suffered.</i>
Vosotros habríais sufrido, - - -	<i>you would have suffered.</i>
Ellos habrían sufrido, - - -	<i>they would have suffered.</i>

*Second and third conditionals past.*

Si, or cuándo,	<i>If, or though, I had suffered, or should have suffered, &amp;c.</i>
Yó hubiera, or hubiese sufrido,	
Tú hubieras, or hubieses sufrido,	
El hubiera, or hubiese sufrido,	
Nosotros hubiéramos, or hubiésemos sufrido,	
Vosotros hubieráis, or hubiéseis sufrido,	
Ellos hubieran, or hubiesen sufrido,	

## IMPERATIVE.

*Present or future.*

Súfre tú, - - -	<i>suffer thou.</i>
Súfra él, - - -	<i>let him suffer.</i>
Sufrámos nosotros, - - -	<i>let us suffer.</i>
Sufrid vosotros, - - -	<i>suffer you.</i>
Súfran ellos, - - -	<i>let them suffer.</i>

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

*Present.*

Yó súfra,	-	-	-	<i>I may suffer.</i>
Tú súfras,	-	-	-	<i>thou mayst suffer.</i>
Él súfra,	-	-	-	<i>he may suffer.</i>
Nosotros sufrámos,	-	-	-	<i>we may suffer.</i>
Vosotros sufráis,	-	-	-	<i>you may suffer.</i>
Ellos súfran,	-	-	-	<i>they may suffer.</i>

*Imperfect.*

Yó sufriése,	-	-	-	<i>I might suffer.</i>
Tú sufriéses,	-	-	-	<i>thou mightest suffer.</i>
Él sufriése,	-	-	-	<i>he might suffer.</i>
Nosotros sufriésemos,	-	-	-	<i>we might suffer.</i>
Vosotros sufriéseis,	-	-	-	<i>you might suffer.</i>
Ellos sufriesen,	-	-	-	<i>they might suffer.</i>

*Preterite.*

Yó háya sufrido,	-	-	-	<i>I may have suffered.</i>
Tú háyas sufrido,	-	-	-	<i>thou mayst have suffered.</i>
Él háya sufrido,	-	-	-	<i>he may have suffered.</i>
Nosotros háyamos sufrido,	-	-	-	<i>we may have suffered.</i>
Vosotros háyais sufrido,	-	-	-	<i>you may have suffered.</i>
Ellos háyan sufrido,	-	-	-	<i>they may have suffered.</i>

*Pluperfect.*

Yó hubiése sufrido,	-	-	-	<i>I might have suffered.</i>
Tú hubiéses sufrido,	-	-	-	<i>thou mightest have suffered.</i>
Él hubiése sufrido,	-	-	-	<i>he might have suffered.</i>
Nosotros hubiésemos sufrido,	-	-	-	<i>we might have suffered.</i>
Vosotros hubiéseis sufrido,	-	-	-	<i>you might have suffered.</i>
Ellos hubiesen sufrido,	-	-	-	<i>they might have suffered.</i>

## PARADIGM OF THE PASSIVE VERBS.

*Observation.* The passive verbs are conjugated always and in all their tenses, with the auxiliary *ser*, to be; and with the participle past of the active verb, which takes the gender and number of the subject.

## INFINITIVE.

*Present.*

Ser amád-o ór a, os or as, - - to be loved.

*Preterite.*

Habér sido amád-o or a, os or as, - to have been loved.

*Participle present.*

Siéndo amád-o or a, os or as, - being loved.

*Participle past.*

Habiéndo sido amád-o or a, os or as. having been loved.

## INDICATIVE.

*Present.*

Yó sóy, tú éres, él or élla es I am, thou art, he or she is  
amád-o or amáda, loved.

Nosótr-os or as sómos, vosó- We are, you are, they are  
tr-os or as sóis, éll-os or éllas loved.  
son amád-os or as.

*Imperfect.*

Yú éra, tú éras, él or élla éra I was, thou wast, he or she  
amád-o or amáda. was loved.

Nosótr-os or as éramos, vosó- We were, you were, they  
tr-os or as érais, éll-os or éllas were loved.  
éran amád-os or amádas.

*Preterite definite.*

Yó fuí, tú fuíste, él or élla fué I was, thou wast, he or she  
amád-o or amáda. was loved.

Nosótr-os or as fuímos, vosó- We were, you were, they  
tr-os or as fuísteis, éll-os or éllas were loved.  
fuéron amád-os or amádas.

*Preterite indefinite.*

Yó he, tú has, él or élla ha I have, thou hast, he or she  
sido amád-o or amáda. has been loved.

Nosótr-os or as hém-os, vosó- We have, you have, they  
tr-os or as habeís, éll-os or éllas han sido amád-os or have been loved.  
amádas.

*Preterite anterior.*

Yó hube, tú hubiste él or élla hubo sido amado or amada.	<i>I had, thou hadst, he or she had been loved.</i>
Nosótr-os or as hubimos, vosó- tr-os or as hubisteis, ellos or éllas hubieron sido amados or amadas.	<i>We had, you had, they had been loved.</i>

*Pluperfect.*

Yó había, tú habías, él or élla había sido amad-o or a.	<i>I had, thou hadst, he or she had been loved.</i>
Nosótr-os or as habíamos, vo- sótr-os or as habíais, ellos or éllas habían sido amados or amadas.	<i>We had, you had, they had been loved.</i>

*Future absolute.*

Yó seré, tú serás, él or élla será amad-o or a.	<i>I shall be, thou wilt be, he or she will be loved.</i>
Nosotros seremos, vosotros se- réis, ellos or éllas serán amad-os or as.	<i>We shall be, you will be, they will be loved.</i>

*Future anterior.*

Yó habré, tú habrás, él or élla habrá sido amad-o or a.	<i>I shall have, thou wilt have, he or she will have been loved.</i>
Nosótr-os or as habrémos, vo- sótr-os or as habréis, ellos or éllas habrán sido amad-os or as.	<i>We shall have, you will have, they will have been loved.</i>

*Future conjunctive simple.*

Si, or cuándo, Yó fuere, tú fuéres, él or élla fuere amad-o or a.	} <i>If, or when, I am loved, or I shall be loved, &amp;c.</i>
Nosótr-os or as fuéremos, vosó- tr-os or as fuéreis, ellos or éllas fuéren amad-os or as.	



*Future conjunctive compound.*

Si, or cuándo,	}	<i>If, or when, I have been loved, or I shall have been loved, &amp;c.</i>
Yó hubiere, tu hubiéres, él or élla hubiere sido amád-o or a.		
Nosótr-os or as hubiéremos,		
vosótr-os or as hubiéreis,		
éllos or éllas hubiéren sido amádos or as.		

## CONDITIONALS.

*First conditional present.*

Yó sería or fuéra, tú serías, él sería amád-o or a.	<i>I should be, thou wouldst be, he or she would be loved.</i>
Nosótr-os or as seríamos, vosótr-os or as seríais, éllos or éllas serían amád-os or as.	<i>We should be, you would be, they would be loved.</i>

*Second and third conditionals present.*

Si, or cuándo,	}	<i>If, or though, I were loved, or I should be loved, &amp;c.</i>
Yó fuéra or fuése, tu fuéras or fuéses, él or élla fuéra or fuése amád-o or a.		
Nosótr-os or as fuéramos or fuésemos, vosótr-os or as fuérais or fuéseis, éllos or éllas fuéran or fuésen amád-os or as.		

*First conditional past.*

Yó habría or hubiera, tú habrías, él or élla habría sido amád-o or a.	<i>I should have, thou wouldst have, he or she would have been loved.</i>
Nosótr-os or as habríamos, vosótr-os or as habríais, éllos or éllas habrían sido amád-os or as.	<i>We should have, you would have, they would have been loved.</i>

*Second and third conditionals past.*

Si, or cuándo,	} <i>If, or though, I had been loved, or I should have been loved, &amp;c.</i>
Yó hubiéra or hubiése, tú hubieras or hubiéses, él or élla hubiéra or hubiése sido amád-o or a,	
Nosótr-os or as hubiéramos or hubiésemos, vosótr-os or as hubiérais or hubiéseis, ellos or éllas hubieran or hubiesen sido amád-os or as.	

IMPERATIVE.

Sé amád-o or a,	<i>Be thou loved.</i>
Séa amád-o or a,	<i>Let him be loved.</i>
Seámos amád-os or as,	<i>Let us be loved.</i>
Sed amád-os or as,	<i>Be ye loved.</i>
Séan amád-os or as,	<i>Let them be loved.</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE.

*Present.*

Yó séa, tú séas, él or élla séa amád-o or a,	<i>I may be, thou mayst be, he or she may be loved.</i>
Nosótr-os or as seámos, vosótr-os or as seáis, ellos or éllas séan amád-os or as.	<i>We may be, you may be, they may be loved.</i>

*Imperfect.*

Yó fuése, tu fuéses, él or élla fuése amád-o or a.	<i>I might be, thou mightest be, he or she might be loved.</i>
Nosótr-os or as fuésemos, vosótr-os or as fuéseis, ellos or éllas fuésen amád-os or as.	<i>We might be, you might be, they might be loved.</i>

*Preterite.*

Yó háya, tú háyas, él or élla háya sido amád-o or a,	<i>I may have, thou mayst have, he or she may have been loved.</i>
Nosótr-os or as háyamos, vosótr-os or as háyais, ellos or éllas háyan sido amád-os or as.	<i>We may have, you may have, they may have been loved.</i>

*Pluperfect.*

Yó hubiése, tú hubiéses, él or élla hubiése sido amád-o or a,	<i>I might have, thou mightest have, he or she might have been loved.</i>
Nosótr-os or as hubiésemos, vo- sótr-os or as hubiéseis, ellos or éllas hubiesen sido amád- os or as.	<i>We might have, you might have, they might have been loved.</i>

## PARADIGM OF NEUTER VERBS.

*Observation.* These verbs take in Spanish as an auxiliary in their compound tenses, the verb *habér*, to have, and the participle is indeclinable. In their simple tenses they are conjugated like the verbs of the conjugation to which they belong.

## INFINITIVE.

<i>Present.</i>	Llegár,*	<i>To arrive.</i>
<i>Preterite.</i>	Habér llegado,	<i>To have arrived.</i>
<i>Gerund.</i>	Llegándo,	<i>Arriving.</i>
<i>Participle.</i>	Llegádo,	<i>Arrived.</i>

## INDICATIVE.

*Present.*

Lleg-o, as, a, ámos, áis, an.	<i>I arrive, &amp;c.</i>
-------------------------------	--------------------------

*Imperfect.*

Lleg-ába, ábas, ába, ábamos, ábais, ában.	<i>I did arrive, &amp;c.</i>
--	------------------------------

*Preterite definite.*

Lleg-ué,† áste, ó, ámos, ásteis, áron.	<i>I arrived, &amp;c.</i>
---	---------------------------

\* This verb without being irregular, takes an *u* after the *g* in all the persons in which it is immediately followed by an *e*. This rule applies to all the verbs that end in *gar*. (See N. B. 4th, page 121.)

† We suppress the pronouns, the use of which the Spaniards generally dispense with, in speaking as well as in writing, the preceding conjugations giving examples enough of them.

*Preterite indefinite.*

He llegado,	-	-	-	<i>I have arrived.</i>
Has llegado,	-	-	-	<i>thou hast arrived.</i>
Ha llegado,	-	-	-	<i>he has arrived.</i>
Hémos llegado,	-	-	-	<i>we have arrived.</i>
Habéis llegado,	-	-	-	<i>you have arrived.</i>
Han llegado,	-	-	-	<i>they have arrived.</i>

*Preterite anterior.*

Húbe, hubiste, húbo, hubimos,	<i>I had, thou hadst, he or</i>
hubisteis, hubieron llegado.	<i>she had, we had, you had,</i>
	<i>they had arrived.</i>

*Pluperfect.*

Había, habías, había, habíamos,	<i>I had, thou hadst, he or she</i>
habíais, habían llegado.	<i>had, we had, you had,</i>
	<i>they had arrived.</i>

*Future absolute.*

Lleg-aré, or arás, or ará, aré-	<i>I shall or will arrive, &amp;c.</i>
mos, aréis, arán.	

*Future anterior.*

Habré, habrás, habrá, habré-	<i>I shall have, thou wilt have,</i>
mos, habréis, habrán lle-	<i>he or she will have, we</i>
gado.	<i>shall have, you will have,</i>
	<i>they will have arrived.</i>

*Future conjunctive simple.*

Si, or cuándo,	}	<i>If, or when, I arrive, or</i>
Lleg-äre, äres, äre, äremos,		
äreis, ären.		<i>shall arrive, &amp;c.</i>

*Future conjunctive compound.*

Si, or cuándo,	}	<i>If, or when, I have or shall</i>
Hubiére, hubiéres, hubiére,		
hubiéremos, hubiéreis, hubi-		<i>have arrived, &amp;c. if or</i>
éren llegado.		<i>when we have, or shall</i>
		<i>have arrived, &amp;c.</i>

## CONDITIONALS.

*First conditional present.*

Lleg-aría or lleg-ära, arias,	<i>I should or would arrive, &amp;c.</i>
aría, ariamos, ariais, arian.	

*Second and third conditionals present.*

Si, or cuándo,	<i>If, or though, I arrived or should arrive, &amp;c.</i>
Lleg-ára or áse, áras or áses, ára, or áse.	
Lleg-áramos or ásemos, árais or áseis, áran or ásen.	<i>If, or though, we arrived or should arrive, &amp;c.</i>

*First conditional past.*

Habría, or hubiéra, habrías, habría, habríamos, habríais, habrían llegado.	<i>I should have, thou wouldst have, he or she would have, we should have, you would have, they would have, arrived.</i>
--	--

*Second and third conditionals past.*

Si, or cuándo,	<i>If, or though, I had or should have arrived, &amp;c.</i>
Hubiéra or hubiése, hubieras or hubiéses, hubiéramos or hubiésemos, hubieras or hubiéseis, hubieran or hubiesen llegado.	<i>If, or though, we had or should have arrived, &amp;c.</i>

## IMPERATIVE.

*Present or future.*

Lleg-a tú,	-	-	-	<i>arrive thou.</i>
Lleg-ue él,	-	-	-	<i>let him arrive.</i>
Lleg-uemos nosotros,	-	-	-	<i>let us arrive.</i>
Lleg-ád vosotros,	-	-	-	<i>arrive ye.</i>
Lleg-uén ellos,	-	-	-	<i>let them arrive.</i>

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

*Present.*

Llégu-ue, ues, ve, uémos, uéis, uen.	<i>I may arrive, &amp;c.</i>
--------------------------------------	------------------------------

*Imperfect.*

Lleg-áse, áses, áse, ásemos, áseis, ásen.	<i>I might arrive, &amp;c.</i>
---	--------------------------------

*Preterite.*

Háya, háyas, háya, háyamos, *I may have arrived, &c. we*  
 háyais, háyan llegado. *may have arrived, &c.*

*Pluperfect.*

Hubiése, hubiéses, hubiése, hu- *I might have arrived, &c.*  
 biésemos, hubiéseis, hubié- *we might have arriv-*  
 sen llegado. *ed, &c.*

## PARADIGM OF REFLECTIVE AND RECIPROCAL VERBS.

*Observation.* Reflective and reciprocal verbs have no conjugation peculiar to them. In the simple tenses they are conjugated like the verbs of the conjugation to which they belong; and they form the compound tenses with the auxiliary *habér* and not *ser*; and the participle past is indeclinable. Nevertheless, as the double pronoun, which is found in all the tenses and in each person, might present some difficulties, we shall conjugate some tenses of the verb *congratularse*, to congratulate oneself, which will suffice both for reflective and reciprocal verbs; observing however, that the reciprocal verbs can be such only in the three persons plural, because reciprocity cannot exist but between two persons at least. In these plurals, *yó me congratúlo*, *tú te congratúlas*, *él se congratúla*, I congratulate myself, thou congratulatest thyself, he congratulates himself, the verb is reflective; and in *nosotros nos congratulámos*, *vosotros os congratuláis*, *ellos se congratulan*, the verb can be either reflective or reciprocal; it is reciprocal if these words *unos á otros*, each other, *mútuamente*, mutually, can be joined to the verb: it is reflective if these words are neither expressed nor understood.

## INFINITIVE.

*Present.*

Congratulárse,\* *to congratulate oneself.*

*Preterite.*

Habérse congratulado, *to have congratulated oneself.*

\* All verbs require the regimen or objective pronouns to be placed close after them in the *present* and *gerund*, and after the auxiliary in the compound tenses of the *Infinitive mode*, whether used affirmatively or negatively; Ex. *No alabárse*, not to praise oneself; *no conociéndose*, not knowing himself; *no habérse alabado*, not to have praised oneself; *no habiéndose conocido*, not having known himself.

*Gerund.*

Congratulándose, *congratulating oneself.*

*Compound gerund.*

Habiéndose congratulado, *having congratulated oneself.*

*Participle.*

Congratulado, *congratulated.*

## INDICATIVE.

*Present.*

Yó me congratúlo,	<i>I congratulate myself.</i>
Tú te congratúlas,	<i>thou congratulatest thyself.</i>
Él se congratúla,	<i>he congratulates himself.</i>
Nosotros nos congratulámos,*	<i>we congratulate ourselves.</i>
Vosotros os congratuláis,	<i>you congratulate yourselves.</i>
Ellos se congratulan,	<i>they congratulate themselves.</i>

The other simple tenses follow the same order.

*Preterite indefinite.*

Yó me he congratulado,	<i>I have congratulated myself.</i>
Tú te has congratulado,	<i>thou hast congratulated thyself.</i>
Él se ha congratulado,	<i>he has congratulated himself.</i>
Nosotros nos hemos congratulado,	<i>we have congratulated ourselves.</i>
Vosotros os habéis congratulado,	<i>you have congratulated yourselves.</i>
Ellos se han congratulado.	<i>they have congratulated themselves.</i>

All the compound tenses follow the same order.

## IMPERATIVE.

Congratúlate,	<i>congratulate thyself.</i>
Congratúlese,	<i>let him congratulate himself.</i>
Congratálemos,*	<i>let us congratulate ourselves.</i>
Congratuláos,*	<i>congratulate yourselves.</i>
Congratúlense,	<i>let them congratulate themselves.</i>

---

\* The *s* of the first person plural, and the *d* of the second, when used affirmatively, are *always* suppressed in the imperative, in reflective and reciprocal verbs; and the *s* of the first person plural of the tenses of the *indicative* mode, when the reflective pronoun is placed after it, is also elegantly suppressed. Ex. *Amámonos*, we love ourselves; *divertámonos*, we amused ourselves; *compadecerémonos*, we shall compassionate.

## PARADIGM OF THE IMPERSONAL VERBS.

## INFINITIVE.

<i>Present.</i>	Granizar, - -	<i>to hail.</i>
<i>Preterite.</i>	Habér granizado,	<i>to have hailed.</i>
<i>Gerund.</i>	Granizando, -	<i>hailing.</i>
<i>Participle.</i>	Granizado, - -	<i>hailed.</i>

## INDICATIVE.

<i>Present.</i>	Graniza, - -	<i>it hails.</i>
<i>Imperfect.</i>	Granizaba, - -	<i>it did hail.</i>
<i>Pret. def.</i>	Granizó, - -	<i>it hailed.</i>
<i>Pret. indef.</i>	Ha granizado,	<i>it has hailed.</i>
<i>Pret. ant.</i>	Húbo granizado, -	<i>it had hailed.</i>
<i>Pluperfect.</i>	Había granizado, -	<i>it had hailed.</i>
<i>Fut. abs.</i>	Granizará, - -	<i>it will hail.</i>
<i>Fut. ant.</i>	Habrá granizado, -	<i>it will have hailed.</i>
<i>Fut. conj.</i>	Cuándo granizáre,	<i>when it shall hail.</i>
<i>F. conj. past.</i>	Cuándo hubiere granizado,	<i>when it shall have hailed.</i>

## CONDITIONALS.

<i>Present.</i>	Granizaría or granizára,	<i>it would hail.</i>
<i>Past.</i>	Habría or hubiéra granizado,	<i>it would have hailed.</i>

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

	Que	
<i>Present.</i>	Granice, - -	<i>that it may hail.</i>
<i>Imperfect.</i>	Granizase, - -	<i>that it might hail.</i>
<i>Preterite.</i>	Háya granizado, -	<i>that it may have hailed.</i>
<i>Pluperfect.</i>	Hubiese granizado,	<i>that it might have hailed.</i>

*Conjugation of the impersonal verb* SER MENESTÉR, *to be requisite or necessary.*

## INFINITIVE.

<i>Present.</i>	Ser menestér, -	<i>to be necessary.</i>
<i>Gerund.</i>	Siendo menestér,	<i>being necessary.</i>
<i>Participle.</i>	Sído menestér, -	<i>been necessary.</i>

## INDICATIVE.

<i>Present.</i>	Es menestér, -	<i>it is necessary.</i>
<i>Imperfect.</i>	Era menestér, -	<i>it was necessary.</i>
<i>Pret. def.</i>	Fué menestér, -	<i>it was necessary.</i>
<i>Fut. abs.</i>	Será menestér, -	<i>it will be necessary.</i>
<i>Fut. conj.</i>	Cuándo fuere menestér,	<i>when it shall be necessary.</i>



## CONDITIONAL.

*Sería or fuéra menester,* - *it would be necessary.*

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

*Present. Séa menester,* - *it may be necessary.*

*Imperfect. Fuése menester,* - *it might be necessary.*

The compound tenses of this verb are formed as in English, except that the pronoun *it* is not expressed in Spanish as may be seen throughout the impersonal verbs; Ex. It has been necessary, *ha sido menester*, &c.

*Conjugation of the impersonal verb HABÉR.*

## INDICATIVE.

<i>Present.</i>	<i>Háy,*</i>	- -	<i>there is, there are.</i>
<i>Imperfect.</i>	<i>Había,</i>	- -	<i>there was, there were.</i>
<i>Pret. def.</i>	<i>Húbo,</i>	- -	<i>there was, there were.</i>
<i>Fut. abs.</i>	<i>Habrá,</i>	- -	<i>there shall or will be.</i>
<i>Fut. conj.</i>	<i>Si hubiere,</i>	- -	<i>if there be or shall be.</i>

## CONDITIONAL.

*Habría or hubiera,* - - *there would or should be.*

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

<i>Present.</i>	<i>Háya,</i>	- -	<i>there may be.</i>
<i>Imperfect.</i>	<i>Hubiése,</i>	- -	<i>there might be.</i>

N. B. This impersonal is used thus, that is to say, in the third person singular, even with a substantive in the plural; as, *háy un hombre*, there is a man; *hubo mugéres*, there were women. The compound tenses are formed by adding the participle *habido*, to the simple tenses. Ex. *Ha habido*. there has or there have been; *había habido*, &c.

## LIST OF SOME IMPERSONAL VERBS.

<i>Infinitive.</i>	<i>3d. pers. of the pres. of the Ind.</i>
<i>Amanecer, to begin to be day-light.</i>	<i>Amanece, it begins to be day-light.</i>
<i>Anochecer, to begin to grow dark.</i>	<i>Anochece, it begins to grow dark.</i>

\* *Háy* loses the letter *y* when this word is placed at the end of a phrase. Ex. For *háy un año*, we also say, *un año ha*, it is one year or a year ago. We often use *hacer* for *haber*, as an impersonal verb; as, *hace diez años que murió*, it is ten years since he died, or he has been dead these ten years.

Escarchár, to freeze, to glaze,*	Escárcha, it freezes, it glazes.
Granizar, to hail,	Graníza, it hails.
Helár, to freeze,	Hiéla, it freezes.
Llover, to rain,	Lluéve, it rains.
Lloviznár, to drizzle.	Llovízna, it drizzles.
Nevár, to snow,	Niéva, it snows.
Relampagueár, to lighten,	Relampaguéa, it lightens.
Tronár, to thunder,	Truéna, it thunders.

*Observation.* *Amanecér* and *anochecér* have sometimes the three persons; then they signify to arrive, to be, to find oneself at the dawn of day or at the fall of night in a certain condition. Ex. *Mi pádre amaneció en París: amaneció el campo lléno de rocío*: are, as if I said, *mi pádre llegó á París cuándo amaneció: el campo estaba lléno de rocío cuándo amaneció*, my father arrived at Paris when the day dawned: the fields were covered with dew at the dawn of day. *Mi amigo amaneció pobre, é yó anochecí rico*, that is to say, *mi amigo se halló pobre cuándo amaneció, é yó me hallé rico cuándo anocheció*, my friend was poor when the sun rose, and I was rich when the sun set; *vm. anocheció bueno, y amaneció malo*, you went to bed well and rose sick.

*List and conjugations of the irregular verbs, arranged in alphabetical order.*

#### IMPORTANT OBSERVATIONS.

N. B. 1st. The verbs marked thus† are little used.

2d. The third conditional not differing at all in its terminations from the imperfect of the subjunctive, we have thought it useless to conjugate it in the conditional, and we have contented ourselves with giving it in the subjunctive.

3d. We place in the subjunctive mode the future conjunctive simple for the sake of distinctness and regularity.

4th. There are some verbs which undergo slight alterations, either in their radical letters, or in their terminations; but they are not on that account irregular; they only undergo these changes to preserve in the other tenses the pronunciation analagous to that which they have in the present of the infinitive. Of this number are,—1st,—the verbs ending in *car*, which change the *c* into *qu* when it must be followed by an *e*: as, *buscar*, to seek, *busqué*, I sought; *búsque, búsques, búsque*, &c. that I may seek, that thou mayst seek, that

\* Speaking of dew or rain that glazes what it falls upon by freezing.

he may seek, &c.—2d.—Those ending in *gar* which take an *u* after the *g* before *e* ; as, *llegár*, to arrive ; *llegué*, I arrived : *pagár*, to pay, *pagué*, I paid, &c.—3d.—Several ending in *cer* and *cir* which change the *c* into *z* before *a* and *o* ; as, *vencér*, to conquer ; *vénzo*, I conquer ; *resarcir*, to repair ; *resárzo*, I repair.—4th.—For the same reason *delinquir*, to do wrong, changes *qu* into *c* before *a* and *o*. Ex. *Delinco*, *delínca*, *delincámos* ;—and *escogér*, to choose, changes the *g* into *j* before *a* and *o*. Ex. *Escójo*, *escója*.—5th.—The verbs which terminate in *er*, as, *creér*, to believe ; *leér*, to read ; *poseér*, to possess ; *proveér*, to provide ; in those terminations which contain an *i*, change it into *y* whenever it is to be joined with another vowel ; as, *creí*, *creyó* ; *leí*, *leyéron* ; *poseí*, *poseyére* ; *provetí*, *proveyéremos*, &c.—6th.—We must make the same change in the verbs ending in *uir*, when the *u* and the *i* make a part of two different syllables. Thus, *huir*, to fly, makes in the third person of the preterite definite, *huyó* ; *argüir* makes *arguyó* ; *constituir* makes *constituyó*, &c.

N. B. 1st. The tenses and persons which are irregular are laid down in *italics*, and only the first person of the tenses which are regular or run on uniformly irregular throughout the tense, is expressed.

N. B. 2d. The verbs that are referred to page 71, only, have no other irregularity than is there stated : *p.* will stand for *page* and *pages*.

## A.

Inf. Pres.	Aborrecér,	to hate, to abhor.
Gerund.	Aborreciendo,	hating.
Participle.	Aborrecido,	hated.
Ind. Pres.	Aborrezco, aborrecés, aborrece,	} I hate or abhor.
	aborrecémos, aborrecéis, aborrecen,	
Imperfect.	Aborrecía, &c.	I did abhor.
Pret. def.	Aborreeí, &c.	I hated.
Future.	Aborreceré, &c.	I shall or will hate.
Condition.	Aborrecería or aborreciera, &c.	} I should or would hate.
Imperat.	Aborrece, aborrezca, aborrecámos, aborrecéd, aborrezcan.	
		&c.
Suh. pres.	Que aborrezca, aborrezcas, aborrezca,	} that I hate or may hate.
	aborrezcámos, aborrezcáis, aborrez-	
	can.	

**Imperfect.** Que aborreciese, &c. *that I hated, or might hate.*  
**Future.** Si aborreciere, &c. *If I hate or shall hate.*

N. B. The irregularity of this verb, and of all like it in *ecér*, and of those ending in *ocer*, *acér*, and *ucír*, consists in taking a *z* before *c* in the first person singular of the present indicative, in all those of the present subjunctive, in the first of the plural, and in the third of the singular and plural of the imperative. The verbs *hacer* and *cocer*, and their compounds are the only exceptions to this rule; the first has other irregularities, and both are found conjugated in their alphabetical order.

*Abrir*, to open, is irregular only in the participle *abierto*.

	<i>Infinitive.</i>	<i>Absolver,</i>	<i>to absolve.</i>
	<i>Gerund.</i>	<i>Absolviendo,</i>	<i>absolving.</i>
	<i>Participle.</i>	<i>Absuelto,</i>	<i>absolved.</i>
<b>Ind. pres.</b>	<i>Absuelvo, absuelves, absuelve,</i>	} <i>I absolve, or do absolve.</i>	
	<i>absolvemos, absolvéis, absuelven,</i>		
<b>Imperfect.</b>	<i>Absolvía, &amp;c.</i>	} <i>I did absolve.</i>	
<b>Pret. def.</b>	<i>Absolví, &amp;c.</i>	} <i>I absolved.</i>	
<b>Future.</b>	<i>Absolveré, &amp;c.</i>	} <i>I shall or will absolve.</i>	
<b>Condition.</b>	<i>Absolvería or absolviéra, &amp;c.</i>	} <i>I should or would absolve.</i>	
<b>Imperative.</b>	<i>Absuelve, absuélvate,</i>	} <i>absolve thou, &amp;c.</i>	
	<i>absolvámos, absolvéd, absuélván.</i>		
<b>Subj. Pres.</b>	<i>Que absuélvas, absuélvamos, absuélvate,</i>	} <i>that I ab- solve or may absolve.</i>	
	<i>absolvámos, absolváis, absuélván,</i>		
<b>Imperfect.</b>	<i>Que absolviése, &amp;c.</i>	} <i>that I absolved or might absolve.</i>	
<b>Future.</b>	<i>Cuando absolviere, &amp;c.</i>	} <i>when I absolve or shall absolve.</i>	

*Abstraér*, to abstract, to make an abstraction. See *traér*, p. 149.  
*Acaecér*, to happen, (impersonal.) See *aborrecér*, p. 122.

	<i>Infinitive.</i>	<i>Acertár,</i>	<i>to succeed, to hit the mark.</i>
	<i>Gerund.</i>	<i>Acertando,</i>	<i>succeeding.</i>
	<i>Participle.</i>	<i>Acertado</i>	<i>succeeded.</i>
<b>Ind. pres.</b>	<i>Acierto, aciértas, aciérta,</i>	} <i>I succeed, or hit the mark.</i>	
	<i>Acertámos, acertáis, aciértan.</i>		
<b>Imperf.</b>	<i>Acertaba, &amp;c.</i>	} <i>I did succeed.</i>	
<b>Pret. def.</b>	<i>Acerté, &amp;c.</i>	} <i>I succeeded.</i>	

<i>Future.</i>	Acertaré, &c.	<i>I shall or will succeed.</i>
<i>Condit.</i>	Acertaría or acertára, &c.	<i>I should or would succeed.</i>
<i>Imperat.</i>	Aciérta, aciérte, } acertémos, acertád, aciérten, }	<i>succeed thou, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Sub. pres.</i>	Que aciérte, aciértas, aciérte, } acertémos, acertéis, aciérten, }	<i>that I succeed, or may succeed.</i>
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que acertáse, &c.	<i>that I succeeded, or might succeed.</i>
<i>Future.</i>	Si acertáre, &c.	<i>if I succeed, or shall succeed.</i>

*Inf. pres.* Acordár, *to agree, to resolve.*

*Gerund.* Acordándo, *agreeing.*

*Participle.* Acordádo, *agreed.*

<i>Ind. pres.</i>	Acuérdo, acuérdas, acuérda, } Acordámos, acordáis, acuérdan. }	<i>I agree, or do resolve.</i>
<i>Imperf.</i>	Acordába, &c.	<i>I did agree.</i>
<i>Pret. def.</i>	Acordé, &c.	<i>I agreed.</i>
<i>Future.</i>	Acordaré, &c.	<i>I shall or will agree.</i>
<i>Condit.</i>	Acordaría, acordára, }	<i>I should or would agree.</i>
<i>Imperat.</i>	Acuérda, acuérde, } acordémos, acordád, acuérden, }	<i>agree thou, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Sub. pres.</i>	Que acuérde, acuérdes, acuérde, } acordémos, acordéis, acuérden. }	<i>that I agree, or may agree.</i>
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que acordáse, &c.	<i>that I agreed or might agree.</i>
<i>Future.</i>	Cuándo acordáre, &c.	<i>when I agree or shall agree.</i>

Acordárse, *to remember.* See acordar, p. 124.

Acordár á uno, *to make one remember.* Idem.

Acostárse, *to go to bed.* Idem.

Acrecentár, *to increase.* See acertár, p. 123.

*Inf. pres.* Adherír, *to adhere.*

*Gerund.* Adhiriéndo, *adhering.*

*Participle.* Adherído, *adhered.*

<i>Indic. pres.</i>	Adhiéro, adhiéres, adhiére, } adherimos, adherís, adhiéren, }	<i>I adhere, or do adhere.</i>
<i>Imperf.</i>	Adhería, &c.	<i>I did adhere.</i>
<i>Pret. def.</i>	Adherí, adheriste, adhirió, } adherimos, adheristeis, adhirióron. }	<i>I adhered.</i>
<i>Future.</i>	Adheriré, &c.	<i>I shall or will adhere.</i>

**Condit.** Adheriría, or *adhiriéra*, &c. I should, or would adhere.

**Imperat.** Adhiére, *adhiéra*, } adhere thou, &c.  
*adhirámos*, *adherid*, *adhiéran*, }

**Sub.pres.** Que *adhiéra*, *adhiéras*, *adhiéra*, } that I adhere,  
*adhirámos*, *adhiráis*, *adhiéran*, } or may adhere.

**Imperf.** Que *adhiriése*, &c. that I adhered, or might adhere.

**Futnre.** Si *adhiriére*, &c. if I adhere, or shall adhere.

**Adolecér**, to fall or to be sick. See **aborrecér**, p. 122.

**Adormecér**, to lull asleep. Idem.

**Advertír**, to take heed. See **adherír**, p. 124.

**Adquerír**, or **adquirír**, to acquire. Idem.

† **Agorár**, to augur, to conjecture. See **acordár**, p. 124.

**Agradecér**, to take a thing kindly, to acknowledge a benefit. See **aborrecér**, p. 122.

**Abitár**, to surfeit. See p. 71.

{ **Alentár**, to encourage. See **acertár**, p. 123.

{ **Alentárse**, to take courage. Idem.

**Almorzár**, to breakfast. See **acordár**, p. 124.

**Amanecér**, (verb. imp.) to grow daylight. See **aborrecér**, p. 122.

† **Amentár**, to shoot an arrow. See **acertár**, p. 123.

**Amolár**, to sharpen. See **acordár**, p. 124.

† **Amortecérse**, to faint, to lose courage. See **aborrecér**, p. 122.

**Inf. pres.** Andár, to walk, to go.

**Gerund.** Andádo, walking.

**Participle.** Andádo, walked.

**Ind. pres.** Ando, &c. I walk, or do walk.

**Imperf.** Andaba, &c. I did walk.

**Pret. def.** Andúve, anduviste, andúvo, } I walked.

*anduvimos*, *anduvisteis*, *anduvieron*, }

**Future.** Andaré, &c. I shall or will walk.

**Condit.** Andaría or *anduviéra*, &c. I should or would walk.

**Imperat.** Anda, ánde, andémos, &c. walk thou, &c.

**Sub.pres.** Que ánde, &c. that I walk, or may walk.

**Imperf.** Que *anduviése*, &c. that I walked, or might walk.

**Future.** Cuando *anduviére*, &c. when I walk, or shall walk.

**Anohecér**, to begin to grow dark. See **aborrecér**, p. 122.

- Antepónér, *to prefer.* See ponér, p. 143.  
 Antevér, *to foresee.* See ver, p. 151.  
 Apacentár, *to lead sheep to grass.* See acertár, p. 123.  
 Aparecér, *to appear.* See aborrecér, p. 122.  
 Apercibir, *to prepare, to get ready.* See pedir, p. 142.  
 Apetecér, *to wish, to long for.* See aborrecér, p. 122.  
 Apostár, *to lay a wager.* See acordár, p. 124.  
 Aporcár, *to cover with earth, (celery, &c.)* Idem.  
 Aportár, *to make a harbor.* Idem.  
 Aprobár, *to approve.* Idem.  
 †Arbolecér, *to become a tree.* See aborrecér, p. 122.  
 Arrendár, *to let to a tenant;—to tie (a horse) by the reins.* See acertár, p. 123.  
 Arrepentirse, *to repent. (refl. v.)* See adherír, p. 124.  
 Asentár, *to sit down, to place, to resolve, to register.* See acertár, p. 123.  
 Asentír, *to consent,* See adherír, p. 124.  
 Aserrár, *to saw.* See acertár, p. 123.  
 Asestár, *to aim or point at.* Idem.  
 Asír, *to seize, to take root, (speaking of plants, or figuratively speaking of persons,) has no irregularity but in the following tenses, which are very little used. Indicat. pres. Ásigo, áses, áse, asímos, asís, ásen. Imperat. Áse, ásga, asgámos, asíd, ásgan. Subj. pres. Ásga, ásgas, ásga, asgámos, asgáis, ásgan.*  
 Asolár, *to pull down, to destroy.* See acordar, p. 124.  
 Asoldár, *to furnish one with money.* Idem.  
 Asonár, *to assemble by the sound of bells, to tune.* Idem.  
 Atendér, *to apply oneself; to consider, to regard.* See entendér, p. 135.  
 †Atenér, *to keep pace with another—to keep one's word.* See tenér, p. 86.  
 Atentár, *to attempt—to form an enterprise against the laws in a capital concern.* See acertár, p. 123.  
 †Aterecérse, *to get benumbed, to stiffen with cold.* See aborrecér, p. 122.  
 Aterrár, *to throw down on the ground.* See acertár, p. 123.  
 Atestár, *to fill up.* Idem.  
 Atormecérse, *to get benumbed.* See aborrecér, p. 122.  
 Atraér, *to attract, to draw over to oneself.* See traér, p. 149.  
 Atravesár, *to pierce, or bore.* See acertár, p. 123.  
 †Atronár, *to thunder, (verb. imp.)* See acordár, p. 124.

- { *Avenir, to happen, to come unexpectedly, to reconcile a difference.* See venir, p. 150.  
 { *Avenirse, to agree, to be suitable, agreeable. (refl.v.)* Idem.  
 { *Aventar, to fan, to winnow,* See acertar, p. 123.  
 { *Aventarse, to be frightened, (speaking of a flock.)* Idem.  
 { *Avergonzár, to make one ashamed.* See acordar, p. 124.  
 { *Avergonzarse, to be ashamed. (refl. v.)* Idem.

## B.

- Inf. pres.* Bendecir, to bless.  
*Gerund.* Bendiciendo, blessing.  
*Participle.* Bendito, blessed. See p. 71.  
*Ind. pres.* Bendigo, bendices, bendíce, ben- } I bless, or do  
 decimos, bendecis, bendícen. } bless.  
*Imperf.* Bendecía, &c. I did bless.  
*Pret. def.* Bendíge, bendígtste, bendíjo, bendi- } I blessed.  
 gimos, bendígtsteis, bendigéron, }  
*Future.* Bendeciré, &c. I shall or will bless.  
*Condit.* Bendeciría, or bendigéra, &c. I should or would bless.  
*Imperat.* Bendíce, bendíga, } bless thou, &c.  
 bendigámos, bendecid, bendígan, }  
*Sub. pres.* Que bendíga, &c. that I bless, or may bless.  
*Imperf.* Que bendigése, &c. that I blessed, or might bless.  
*Future.* Si bendigére, &c. if I bless, or shall bless.

## C.

- Inf. pres.* Cabér, to contain, to be contained.  
*Gerund.* Cabiendo, being contained.  
*Participle.* Cabido, been contained.  
*Ind. pres.* Quépo, cábes, &c. I am contained.  
*Imperf.* Cabía, &c. I was contained.  
*Pret. def.* Cúpe, cupíste, cúpo, &c. I was contained.  
*Future.* Cabré, &c. I shall or will be contained.  
*Condit.* Cabría, or cupiéra, &c. I should or would be contained.  
*Imperat.* Cábe, quépa, } be thou contained, &c.  
 quepámos, cabéd, quépan, }  
*Sub. pres.* Que quépa, &c. that I be or may be contained.  
*Imperf.* Que cupiése, &c. that I was or might be contained.  
*Future.* Cuándo cupiére, &c. when I be, or shall be contained.



<i>Inf. pres.</i>	Caér,	<i>to fall.</i>
<i>Gerund.</i>	Cayéndo,	<i>falling.</i>
<i>Participle.</i>	Caído,	<i>fallen.</i>
<i>Ind. pres.</i>	Cáigo, caes, &c.	<i>I fall or do fall.</i>
<i>Imperf.</i>	Caía, &c.	<i>I did fall.</i>
<i>Pret. perf.</i>	Caí, caíste, cayó, caímos, caísteis, cayéron,	<i>I fell.</i>
<i>Future.</i>	Caeré, &c.	<i>I shall or will fall.</i>
<i>Condition.</i>	Caería or cayéra,	<i>I should or would fall.</i>
<i>Imperat.</i>	Cae, cáiga, caigámos, caéd, cáigan.	<i>fall thou, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Sub. pres.</i>	Que cáiga, &c.	<i>that I fall, or may fall.</i>
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que cayése, &c.	<i>that I fell or might fall.</i>
<i>Future.</i>	Si cayére, &c.	<i>if I fall, or shall fall.</i>

Calentár, <i>to warm, to heat.</i>	<i>See</i> acertár, p. 123.
Canecér, <i>to grow greyhaired.</i>	<i>See</i> aborrecér, p. 122.
Carecér, <i>to want, to be in want of.</i>	<i>Idem.</i>
Cegár, <i>to blind, to become blind.</i>	<i>See</i> acertár, p. 123.
{ Ceñír, <i>to girdle, to surround.</i>	<i>See</i> . . . pedír, p. 142.
{ Ceñirse, <i>to girdle oneself; to limit oneself; to restrict oneself. (refl. v.)</i>	<i>Idem.</i>
Cernér, <i>to sift, to pass flour through a sieve—to blossom, (speaking of vines, of grain, &amp;c.)</i>	<i>See</i> entendér, p. 135.
Cerrár, <i>to shut, to lock up.</i>	<i>See</i> acertár, p. 123.
Cimentár, <i>to cement, to lay the foundation.</i>	<i>Idem.</i>

<i>Inf. pres.</i>	Cocer, <i>to cook, to bake.</i>	
<i>Gerund.</i>	Cociendo, <i>cooking.</i>	
<i>Participle.</i>	Cocido, <i>cooked.</i>	
<i>Ind. pres.</i>	Cuézo, cuéces, cuéce, cocé- mos, cocéis, cuécen,	} <i>I bake, or do bake.</i>
<i>Imperf.</i>	Cocía, &c.	<i>I did cook.</i>
<i>Pret. perf.</i>	Cocí, &c.	<i>I baked.</i>
<i>Future.</i>	Coceré, &c.	<i>I shall or will cook.</i>
<i>Condit.</i>	Cocería or cociéra, &c.	<i>I should or would bake.</i>
<i>Imperat.</i>	Cuéce, cuéza, cozámos, cocéd, cuézan,	} <i>bake thou, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Sub. pres.</i>	Que cuéza, cuézas, cuéza, co- zámos, cozáis, cuézan,	} <i>that I bake, or may bake.</i>
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que cociése, &c.	<i>that I baked, or might bake,</i>
<i>Future.</i>	Cuándo cociére, &c.	<i>when I bake, or shall bake.</i>

N. B. This verb has the same irregularities as *Absovérr* ;

but we have conjugated it on account of the *z* which it takes instead of the *c* before *a* and *o*, its regular and part. past; and that we may refer to it for the conjugation of similar verbs.

Colár, *to strain, to filter a liquor.* See acordár, p. 124.

Colegír, *to collect, to conclude, to deduce.* See pedír, p. 142.

N. B. It changes *g* into *j* before *a* and *o*. See p. 122. Obs. 4.

Colgár, *to hang, to suspend.* See acordár, p. 124.

†Comedír, *to reflect, to think, to premeditate.* See pedír, p. 142.

Comedírse, *to become polite, to be ruled by reason.* Idem.

Comenzár, *to begin.* See acertár, p. 123.

Compadecérse, *to have pity. (refl. v.)* See aborrecér, p. 122.

Compelér, *to compel.* See p. 71.

Componér, *to compose.* See ponér, p. 143.

Comparecér, *to appear.* See aborrecér, p. 122.

Competír, *to rival, to compete.* See pedír, p. 142.

Complacér, *to please one.* See aborrecér, p. 122.

Comprobár, *to prove, to confirm.* See acordár, p. 124.

Concebír, *to conceive.* See pedír, p. 142.

Concertár, *to concert.* See acertár, p. 123.

Concluír, *to conclude.* See p. 71.

Concordár, *to adjust, to conciliate, to be conformable, like.*

See acordár, p. 124.

Condescendér, *to condescend.* See entendér, p. 135.

Condolér, *part. past. condolido, to sympathize.* See absol-  
vér, p. 123.

N. B. Some of these irregular verbs have regular part.  
past; in such a case they are noted down.

Inf. pres. Conducír, *to conduct, to lead.*

Gerund. Conduciéndo, *conducting.*

Participle. Conducido, *conducted.*

Ind. pres. Conduzco, conduces, &c. I conduct.

Imperfect. Conducía, &c. I did conduct.

Pret. def. Conduge, condujiste, condujo, condu- } I conducted.  
gimos, condujisteis, condujéron, } ted.

Future. Conduciré, &c. I shall or will conduct.

Condition. Conduciría or condugerá, &c. } I should, or would  
conduct.

Imperative. Conduce, conduzca, } conduct  
conduzcámos, conducid, conduzcan. } thou, &c.



<i>Condition.</i>	Daría or diéra,	<i>I should or would give.</i>
<i>Imperat.</i>	Da, dé, demos, dad, den,	<i>give thou, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Sub. pres.</i>	Que dé, &c.	<i>that I give, or may give.</i>
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que diése, &c.	<i>that I gave, or might give.</i>
<i>Future.</i>	Cuándo diere, &c.	<i>when I give, or shall give.</i>

*Decaér, to decay.* See caer, p. 128.

*Decentár, to cut, to take away a part.* See acertár, p. 123.

	<i>Inf. pres.</i>	Decír,	<i>to tell, to say.</i>
	<i>Gerund.</i>	Diciendo,	<i>saying.</i>
	<i>Participle.</i>	Dicho,	<i>said.</i>
<i>Ind. pres.</i>	Digo, dices, dice,	}	<i>I say or do say.</i>
	decimos, decís, dicen,		
<i>Imperf.</i>	Decía, &c.		<i>I did tell.</i>
<i>Pret. def.</i>	Díge, digiste, dijo, digimos, digisteis, digieron.	}	<i>I said.</i>
<i>Future.</i>	Diré, dirás, &c.		<i>I shall or will tell.</i>
<i>Condition.</i>	Dirta or digéra, &c.		<i>I should or would say.</i>
<i>Imperat.</i>	Dí, díga, digámos, decid, dígan,		<i>tell thou, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Sub. pres.</i>	Que diga, &c.		<i>that I say or may say.</i>
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que digése, &c.		<i>that I told, or might tell.</i>
<i>Future.</i>	Si digere, &c.		<i>if I tell, or shall say.</i>

*Deducír, to deduct.* See conducir, p. 129.

*Defender, to defend.* See entender, p. 135.

*Deferir, to defer, to delay.* See adherir, p. 124.

*Degollar, to decapitate.* See acordár, p. 124.

*Demolér, part. past. demolido, to demolish.* See absolvér, p. 123.

*Demostrar, to demonstrate.* See acordár, p. 124.

*Denegár, to deny; to refuse.* See acertár, p. 124.

*Denostár, to use any one ill.* See acordár, p. 124.

*Deponér, to depose, to resign.* See ponér, p. 143.

*Derrengár, to break the back.* See acertár, p. 124.

*Derretir, to melt.* See pedír, p. 142.

*Desahastecér, (una pláza,) to strip a place of provisions.*

See aborrecér, p. 122.

*Desacertár, to err, to mistake.* See acertár, p. 124.

*Desacordár, to disagree.* See acordár, p. 124.

*Desadormecér, to awake.* See aborrecér, p. 122.

*Desalentár, to discourage.* See acertár, p. 124.

*Desaparecér, to disappear.* See aborrecér, p. 122.

- Desapretár, *to loosen, to unbind.* See acertár, p. 123.  
 Desaprobár, *to disapprove.* See acordár, p. 124.  
 Desasosegár, *to disturb.* See acertár, p. 123.  
 Desatendér, *to be inattentive.* See entendér, p. 135.  
 Desatentár, *to trouble, to act giddily.* See acertár, p. 123.  
 Desatravesár, *† to disentangle.* Idem.  
 Desavenír, *to disagree, to be of a contrary opinion.* See venir, p. 150.  
 Descaecér, *to decay, to lose one's strength.* See aborrecér, p. 122.  
 Descendér, *to descend.* See entendér, p. 135.  
 Descenír, *to ungirdle.* See pedír, p. 142.  
 †Decimentár, *to undermine the foundation.* See acertár, p. 123.  
 Descolgár, *to take down; to slacken.* See acordár, p. 124.  
 Descollar, *to surpass in height, to be taller.* Idem.  
 Descomedírse, *to grow unpolite, to take too much liberty.* See pedír, p. 142.  
 Descomponér, *to disorder, to discompose.* See poner, p. 143.  
 Desconsentír, *to refuse one's consent.* See adherir, p. 124.  
 Desconcertár, *to confound, to derange.* See acertár, p. 123.  
 Desconocer, *to disown.* See aborrecér, p. 122.  
 Descohsolár, *to afflict, to grieve.* See acordár, p. 124.  
 Descontár, *to discount.* Idem.  
 Descubrír, *to discover—is irregular only in the participle past, descubiertó.*  
 Desdecír, *to give the lie.* See decír, p. 131. *except for the second person singular of the imperative, which is desdice and not desdí.*  
 Desempedrár, *to unpave.* See acertár, p. 123.  
 Desencerrár, *to set at liberty.* Idem.  
 Desengrosár, *to diminish, lessen.* See acordár, p. 124.  
 Desentendér, *to pretend ignorance.* See entendér, p. 135.  
 Desenterrár, *to unbury.* See acertár, p. 123.  
 Desentorpecér, *to awaken, to quicken.* See aborrecér, p. 122.  
 Desenvolvér, *to unwrap, to develope.* See absolvér, p. 128.  
 Deservír, *to clear the table, to oblige, to hurt.* See pedír, p. 142.  
 Desfallecér, *to faint away.* See aborrecér, p. 122.  
 Desflaquecér, *to weaken, to languish.* Idem.  
 Desflocár, *to ravel, (cloth.)* See acordár, p. 124.  
 Desfogárse, *to vent one's passion. (refl. v.)* Idem.  
 Desguarnecér, *to unfurnish.* See aborrecér, p. 122.  
 Deshacér, *to undo.* See hacér, p. 138.

- Deshelár, *to thaw.* See acertár, p. 123.  
 Desherrár, *to unfetter, to unshoe (a horse.)* Idem.  
 Desleír, *to dilute, to temper.* See pedir, p. 142.  
*Inf. pres.* Deslucir, *to tarnish, to deface.*—*Gerund.* Desluciendo.—*Part.* Deslucido.—*Indic. pres.* Deslúzco, deslúces &c.—*Imperat.* Deslúce, deslúzca, desluzcámos, deslucíd, deslúzcan.—*Sub. pres.* deslúzca, &c.—See N.B. p. 123.

N. B. All the other tenses are regular and are conjugated like *sufrír*.

- Desmembrár, *to dismember.* See acertár, p. 123.  
 Desmentír, *to contradict.* See adherir, p. 124.  
 Desobedecér, *to disobey.* See aborrecér, p. 122.  
 Desollar, *to skin.* See acordár, p. 124.  
 Desová, *to spawn, (speaking of fishes.)* Idem.  
 Despedír, *to send away.* See pedir, p. 142.  
 Despedirse, *to take leave of.* Idem.  
 Despedrá, *to take away the stones.* See acertár, p. 123.  
 Desperná, *to cut off the legs.* Idem.  
 Despertár, *to awake.* Idem, and p. 71.  
 Desplacér, *to displease.* See aborrecér, p. 122.  
 Desplegár, *to display ; to unplat.* See acertár, p. 123.  
 Despoblár, *to unpeople.* See acordár, p. 124.  
 Desteñír, *to discolour.* See pedir, p. 142.  
 Desterrár, *to exile, to banish.* See acertár, p. 123.  
 Destorcér, *to untwist, to straighten.* See cocér, p. 128.  
 Destrocár, *to exchange back again.* See acordár, p. 124.  
 Desvanecerse, *to faint away.* See aborrecér, p. 122.  
 Desvergonzarse, *to lose all shame ; to want respect.* See acordár, p. 124.  
 Detenér, *to stop.* See tenér, p. 86.  
 †Detraér, *to remove, to detract.* See traér, p. 149.  
 Devolvér, *to return, to send back.* See absolvér, p. 123.  
 Dezmár, *to decimate or tithe.* See acertár, p. 123.  
 Diferír, *to differ.* See adherir, p. 124.  
 Digerír, *to digest.* Idem.  
 Dissolvér, *to dissolve.* See absolvér, p. 123.  
 Disponér, *to dispose.* See ponér, p. 143.  
 Distraér, *to distract, to divert the attention.* See traér, p. 149.  
 Divertír, *to divert.* See adherir, p. 124.

{ *Doler*, to feel pain, part. past. *dolido*. See *absolver*, p. 123.  
 { *Dolerse*, to be sorry, to repent; to feel for others' pain; to compassionate. part. past. *dolido*. Idem.

<i>Inf. pres.</i>	<i>Dormir</i> ,	<i>to sleep.</i>
<i>Gerund.</i>	<i>Durmiendo</i> ,	<i>sleeping.</i>
<i>Participle.</i>	<i>Doñmido</i> .	<i>slept.</i>
<i>Ind. pres.</i>	<i>Duérmo, duérmes, duérme,</i> <i>dormimos, dormís, duérmes,</i>	{ <i>I sleep, or do sleep.</i>
<i>Imperf.</i>	<i>Dormía, &amp;c.</i>	<i>I did sleep.</i>
<i>Pret. def.</i>	<i>Dormí, dormiste, durmió,</i> <i>dormimos, dormisteis, durmieron.</i>	{ <i>I slept.</i>
<i>Future.</i>	<i>Dormiré, &amp;c.</i>	<i>I shall or will sleep.</i>
<i>Condit.</i>	<i>Dormiría or durmiéa, &amp;c.</i>	<i>I should or would sleep.</i>
<i>Imperat.</i>	<i>Duérme, duérma,</i> <i>durmámos, dormid, duérman,</i>	{ <i>sleep thou, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Sub. pres.</i>	<i>Que duérma, duérmas, duérma,</i> <i>durmámos, durmáis, duérman,</i>	{ <i>that I sleep or may sleep.</i>
<i>Imperf.</i>	<i>Que durmiese, &amp;c.</i>	<i>that I slept or might sleep.</i>
<i>Future.</i>	<i>Cuándo durmiere, &amp;c.</i>	<i>when I sleep or shall sleep.</i>

## E.

*Elegir*, to choose, to elect. See *pedir*, p. 142 and 71.

N. B. This verb changes *g* into *j* before *a* and *o* to preserve the guttural pronunciation of the infinitive.

*Embestir*, to attack, to assail. See *pedir*, Idem.

*Embravecerse*, to become furious. See *abhorrecer*, p. 122.

*Embrutecerse*, to become brutish. Idem.

*Empedrar*, to pave. See *acertar*, p. 123.

*Empezár*, to begin. Idem.

*Emplumecér*, to begin to have feathers. See *abhorrecer*, p. 122.

*Empobrecér*, to grow poor. Idem.

*Emporcár*, to dirt. See *acordár*, p. 124.

*Encabellécér*, to begin to have hair. See *abhorrecer*, p. 122.

*Eucallecér*, to form a callus. Idem.

*Encalvecér*, to become bald. Idem.

*Encanecér*, to be greyhaired by old age. Idem.

*Ençarecér*, to raise the price, to exaggerate. Idem.

*Encendér*, to light a fire. See *acertár*, p. 123.

*Encensár*, to perfume with incense. Idem.

Encerrár, <i>to shut in.</i>	See acertár, p. 123.
Encomendár, <i>to recommend.</i>	Idem.
Encrudecérse, <i>to become cruel.</i>	See aborrecér, p. 122.
Encruelecér, <i>to irritate, to render cruel.</i>	Idem.
Encontrár, <i>to meet, to find.</i>	See acordár, p. 124.
Encordár, <i>to put strings and cords (to an instrument.)</i>	Idem.
Encubertár, <i>to cover with a blanket.</i>	See acertár, p. 123.
Endentecér, <i>to breed teeth.</i>	See aborrecér, p. 122.
Endurecér, <i>to grow hard.</i>	Idem.
Enflaquecér, <i>to grow lean.</i>	Idem.
Enfurecérse, <i>to become furious.</i>	Idem.
Engrandecér, <i>to grow, to enlarge.</i>	Idem.
Engreírse, <i>to adorn oneself.</i>	See pedír, p. 142.
Engrosár, <i>to grow big.</i>	See acordár, p. 124.
Enjugár, <i>to wipe.</i>	See p. 71.
Enloquecér, <i>to become mad.</i>	See aborrecér, p. 122.
Enlucír, <i>to whiten, to do over with plaster.</i>	See deslucír, p. 133.
Enmendár, <i>to correct.</i>	See acertár, p. 123.
Enmocecér, <i>to grow young again.</i>	See aborrecér, p. 122.
Enmohecérse, <i>to grow mouldy.</i>	Idem.
Enmudecér, <i>to grow dumb, to be silent.</i>	Idem.
Ennegrecér, <i>to grow black, to blacken.</i>	Idem.
Ennoblecér, <i>to ennoble.</i>	Idem.
†Ennudecér, <i>to set or to knit, (speaking of grain, &amp;c.)</i>	Idem.
Enrarecér, <i>to rarefy, to become thin.</i>	Idem.
Enriquecér, <i>to enrich.</i>	Idem.
Enrodár, <i>to break upon the wheel.</i>	See acordár, p. 124.
Ensangrentár, <i>to make bloody.</i>	See acertár p. 123.
Ensoberbecérse, <i>to grow proud.</i>	See aborrecér, p. 122.
Entallecér, <i>to shoot or bud.</i>	Idem.

Inf. pres. Entendér, *to understand.*

Gerund. Entendiéndo, *understanding.*

Participle. Entendido, *understood.*

Ind. pres. Entiéndo, entiéndes, entiénde, { *I understand, or*  
entendemos, entendéis, entiénden, { *do understand.*

Imperf. Entendía, &c. *I did understand.*

Pret. def. Entendí, &c. *I understood.*

Future. Entenderé, &c. *I shall or will understand.*

Condit. Entendería or entendiése, &c. { *I should or would*  
understand.



<i>Imperat.</i>	<i>Entiende, entiénda,</i>	} <i>understand</i>
	<i>entendámos, entendéd, entiéndan,</i>	
<i>Sub. pres.</i>	<i>Que entiénda, entiéndas, entiénda,</i>	} <i>thou, &amp;c.</i>
	<i>entendámos, entendáis, entiéndan.</i>	
		} <i>that I under-</i>
		} <i>stand or may</i>
		} <i>understand.</i>
<i>Imperf.</i>	<i>Que entendiése, &amp;c.</i>	} <i>that I understood or</i>
		} <i>might understand.</i>
<i>Future.</i>	<i>Si entendiére, &amp;c.</i>	} <i>if I understand or</i>
		} <i>shall understand.</i>

*Enternecér, to soften, to touch, to move.* See *aborrecér*, p. 122.

*Enterrár, to bury.* See *acertár*, p. 123.

*Entomecér or entumecér, to swell, to stupify.* See *aborrecér*, p. 122.

*Entontecérse, to become dull, foolish.* Idem.

*Entorpecérse, to become heavy, lazy.* Idem.

*Entrelucir, to glimmer.* See *deslucir*, p. 135.

*Entreoir, to hear imperfectly.* See *oir*, p. 141.

*Entretener, to entertain.* See *tenér*, p. 86.

*Entristecér, to vex, to make sad.* See *aborrecér*, p. 122.

*Entullecér, to lose the use of one's limbs.* Idem.

*Entumecérse, to swell, to grow angry (speaking of the sea.)*

Idem.

*Envanecér, to make vain, proud.* Idem.

*Envejecér, to grow old.* Idem.

*Enverdecér, to paint in green.* Idem.

*Envestir, to invest.* See *pedir*, p. 142.

*Envolvér, to wrap up.* See *absolvér*, p. 123.

*Equivalér, to be of equal value.* See *valér*, p. 150.

*Inf. pres.* Erguir, to erect, to raise.

*Gerund.* Irguiendo, erecting.

*Participle.* Erguido, erected.

*Ind. pres.* Yérgo, yérgues, yérgue, } I erect, or do erect.  
erguimos, erguís, yérguen.

*Imperf.* Erguia, &c. I did erect.

*Pret. def.* Erguí, erguíste, irguió, } I erected.  
erguimos, erguísteis, irguiéron,

*Future.* Erguiré, &c. I shall or will erect.

*Condit.* Erguiría or irguiéra, &c. I should or would erect.

<i>Imperat.</i>	<i>Yérgue, yérga, }</i>	<i>erect thou, &amp;c.</i>
	<i>irgámos, erguid, yérgan, }</i>	
<i>Sub. pres.</i>	<i>Que yérga, yérgas, yérga, }</i>	<i>that I erect, or</i>
	<i>irgámos, irgáis, yérgan, }</i>	<i>may erect.</i>
<i>Imperf.</i>	<i>Que irguiése, &amp;c. that I erected or might erect.</i>	
<i>Future.</i>	<i>Cuándo irguiére, &amp;c. when I erect or shall erect.</i>	

	<i>Inf. pres.</i>	<i>Errár,</i>	<i>to err.</i>
<i>Indic. pres.</i>	<i>Yérro, yérras, yérra, }</i>		
	<i>errámos, erráis, yérran, }</i>		<i>I err or do err.</i>
<i>Imperat.</i>	<i>Yérra, yérre, }</i>		
	<i>errémos, errád, yérren, }</i>		<i>err thou, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Sub. pres.</i>	<i>Que yérre, yérres, yérre, }</i>		
	<i>errémos, erreís, yérren, }</i>		<i>that I err or may err.</i>

N. B. All the other tenses are regular.

†Escalentár, to warm.	<i>See acertár, p. 123.</i>
Escarmentár, to correct oneself by experience.	<i>Idem.</i>
Escardecér to mock one.	<i>See aborrecér, p. 122.</i>
†Esclarecér, to clear up, to light.	<i>Idem.</i>
Escluir, to exclude.	<i>See p. 71.</i>
Escocér, to smart, to itch painfully.	<i>See cocér, p. 128.</i>
Escribir, to write. (It has no irregularity but in the participle past, escrito.)	
Esforzár, to animate, to encourage.	<i>See acordár, p. 124.</i>
Espelér, to expel.	<i>See p. 71.</i>
Espresár, to express.	<i>Idem.</i>
Estinguír, to extinguish.	<i>Idem.</i>
Establecér, to establish.	<i>See aborrecér, p. 122.</i>
Estregár, to scour, rub.	<i>See acertár, p. 124.</i>
Estremecérse, to shudder.	<i>See aborrecér, p. 122.</i>
Estreñír, to bind, to press close, to squeeze.	<i>See pedír, p. 142.</i>
Espedír, to dispatch.	<i>Idem.</i>
Esponér, to expose.	<i>See poner, p. 143.</i>
Estendér, to spread.	<i>See entender, p. 135.</i>
Estraér, to export, to extract.	<i>See traér, p. 149.</i>

## F.

Fallecér, to die.	<i>See aborrecér, p. 122.</i>
Favorecér, to favour.	<i>Idem.</i>
Fechár, to date; part. fecháo, fêcho. the 2d part. only irr.	
Fenecér, to finish, to die, to settle.	<i>See aborrecér, p. 122.</i>

- Fijár, *to fix.* See p. 71.  
 Fortalecér, *to fortify.* See aborrecér, p. 122.  
 Forzár, *to force.* See acordár, p. 124.  
 Fregár, *to wash, to clean, to furbish (plate.)* See acertár, p. 123.  
 Freír, *to fry.* Part. Fríto. The rest like pedir, p. 142.

## G.

- Gemír, *to groan.* See pedir, p. 142.  
 Gobernár, *to govern.* See acertár, p. 123.  
 Guarnecér, *to furnish.* See aborrecér, p. 122.

## H.

Habér, (*Impersonal.*)—*Indic. pres.* Háy and Ha, *there is, there are.* The rest like the auxiliary verb haber, with this difference, that the former has only the third person singular. (See the impersonal verbs, p. 120.)

N. B. The adverb *there* is never expressed in this impersonal verb in Spanish.

<i>Inf. pres.</i>	Hacér,	<i>to do, to make.</i>
<i>Gerund.</i>	Haciendo,	<i>making.</i>
<i>Participle.</i>	Hécho,	<i>done.</i>
<i>Ind. pres.</i>	Hágo, háces, &c.	<i>I do or make.</i>
<i>Imperf.</i>	Hacia, &c.	<i>I did do or make.</i>
<i>Pret. def.</i>	Híce, hiciste, hizo, hicimos, hicisteis, hicieron,	<i>I did or made.</i>
<i>Future.</i>	Haré, harás, hará, harémos, haréis, harán,	<i>I shall or will do or make.</i>
<i>Condition.</i>	Huría or hiciéra, &c.	<i>I should or would do.</i>
<i>Imperat.</i>	Haz, hága, hagámos, hacéd, hágan,	<i>do thou, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Sub. pres.</i>	Que hága, hagas, haga, hagámos, hagáis, hagan,	<i>that I do or may do.</i>
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que hiciése,	<i>that I made, or might make.</i>
<i>Future.</i>	Si hiciére, &c.	<i>If I do or shall do.</i>

- Hacérse, *to make oneself, to become.* See Idem.  
 Hartár, *to satiate.* See p. 71.  
 Hedér, *to stink.* See entendér, p. 135.  
 Helár, *to freeze (impersonal.)* See acertár, p. 123.  
 Hendér, *to cleave, or split.* See entendér, p. 135.  
 Herír, *to wound.* See adherír, p. 124.  
 Herrár, *to shoe or to bind with iron work.* See acertár, p. 123.

Hervir, *to boil.* See adherir, p. 124.  
 Holgár, *to repose, to do nothing.* See acordár, p. 124.  
 Hollár, *to trample under feet, to tread.* Idem.  
 Humedecér, *to moisten.* See aborrecér, p. 122.

## I.

Impedir, *to prevent.* See pedir, p. 142.  
 Imponér, *to impose.* See poner, p. 143.  
 Incluir, *to include.* See p. 71.  
 Incurrir, *to incur.* Idem.  
 Indisponér, *to indispose, to vex,—to render incapable.* See poner, p. 143.  
 Incensar, See encensár, p. 134.  
 Inducir, *to induce.* See conducir, p. 129.  
 Inferir, *to infer.* See adherir, p. 124.  
 Insertár, *to insert.* See p. 71.  
 Intervenir, *to intervene.* See venir, p. 150.  
 Introducir, *to introduce.* See conducir, p. 129.  
 Invernár, *to winter.* See acertár, p. 123.  
 Invertir, *to transpose, to subvert the order.* See adherir, p. 124 and 71.  
 Investir, *to invest.* See pedir, p. 142.  
 Ingerir, *or engerir, to graft a tree.* Part. ingérto *or* engérto.  
 See adherir, p. 124 and 71.

Inf. pres.	Ir,	to go.
Gerund.	Yéndo,	going.
Participle.	Ído,	gone.

Ind. Pres.	Vóy, vas, va, vámos, váis, van,	I go or do go.
Imperf.	íba, &c.	I did go.
Prët. def.	Fuí, fuíste, fué, fuímos, fuísteis, fuéron,	I went.
Future.	Iré, &c.	I shall or will go.
Condition.	Iría, or fuéra, &c.	I should or would go
Imperat.	Vé, váya, } vámos, id, váyan, }	go thou, &c.
Subj. Pres.	Que váya, váyas, váya, } váyamos, váyais, váyan, }	that I go or may go.
Imperfect.	Que fuése, fuéses, fuése, } fuésemos, fuéseis, fuésen, }	that I went or might go.
Future.	Cuándo fuére, &c.	when I go or shall go.

N. B. All the compound tenses of this verb are conjugated with the verb *habér* and not *ser*. We translate then, I have or am gone, I had or was gone, &c. by *he ído, había ído, and not by Sóy ído, éra ído, as in times of yore.*

## J.

<i>Inf. Pres.</i>	Jugar,	<i>to play.</i>
<i>Ind. pres.</i>	Juego, juegas, juega, } jugamos, jugáis, juegan, }	<i>I play.</i>
<i>Imperat.</i>	juega, juegue, } juguemos, jugad, jueguen, }	<i>play thou, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Sub. pres.</i>	Que juegue, juegues, juegue, } juguemos, juguéis, jueguen, }	<i>that I play or may play.</i>

N. B. All the other tenses are regular.

Juntár, *to join.*

*See p. 71.*

## L.

Lucír, *to shine.*

*See deslucír, p. 133.*

## LL.

Llover, *to rain, (impers.) Part. Llovido. See absolvér, p. 123.*

## M.

†Magrecér, <i>to grow lean. Part. Magrecido. See absolvér, p. 123.</i>	
Maldecír, <i>to curse. See bendecír, p. 127 and 71.</i>	
Manifestár, <i>to manifest. See acertár, p. 123 and 71.</i>	
Mantenér, <i>to maintain. See tener, p. 86.</i>	
Marchitár, <i>to wither. See p. 71.</i>	
Medír, <i>to measure. See pedír, p. 142.</i>	
Mentár, <i>to mention, to name. See acertár, p. 123.</i>	
Mentír, <i>to lie. See adherír, p. 124.</i>	
Merecér, <i>to merit. See aborrecér, p. 122.</i>	
Merendár, <i>to eat a collation between dinner and supper. See acertár, p. 123.</i>	
Mohecérse, <i>to make mouldy. See aborrecér, p. 122.</i>	
Molér, <i>to grind. Part. molido. See absolvér, p. 123.</i>	
Mordér, <i>to bite. Part. mordido. Idem.</i>	
Morír, <i>to die. Part. muerto. See dormir, p. 134.</i>	
Mostrár, <i>to show. See acordár, p. 124.</i>	
Movér, <i>to move, to affect. Part. movido. See absolvér, p. 123.</i>	

## N.

Nacér, <i>to be born. See aborrecér, p. 122.</i>	
Negár, <i>to deny, to refuse. See acertár, p. 123.</i>	
Negrecér, <i>to blacken, to become black. See aborrecér, p. 122.</i>	
Nevár, <i>to snow, (impers.) See acertár, p. 123.</i>	

## O.

Obedecér, <i>to obey.</i>	See aborrecér, p. 122.
Oscurecér, or obscurecér, <i>to obscure, darken.</i>	Idem.
Obtenér, <i>to obtain.</i>	See tenér, p. 86.
Ofrecér, <i>to offer.</i>	See aborrecér, p. 122.

<i>Inf. pres.</i>	Oír,	<i>to hear.</i>
<i>Gerund.</i>	Oyendo,	<i>hearing.</i>
<i>Participle.</i>	Oído,	<i>heard.</i>
<i>Ind. pres.</i>	Óigo, óyes, óye, } oímos, oís, óyen, }	<i>I hear or do hear.</i>
<i>Imperfect.</i>	Oía, &c.	<i>I did hear.</i>
<i>Pret. def.</i>	Oí, oíste, oyó, } oímos, oísteis, oyéron, }	<i>I heard.</i>
<i>Future.</i>	Oiré, &c.	<i>I shall or will hear.</i>
<i>Condition.</i>	Oiría or oyéra, &c.	<i>I should or would hear.</i>
<i>Imperat.</i>	Óye, óiga, } oigámos, oíd, óigan, }	<i>hear thou, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Sub. pres.</i>	Que óiga, &c.	<i>that I hear, or may hear.</i>
<i>Imperfect.</i>	Que oyése, &c.	<i>that I heard, or might hear.</i>
<i>Future.</i>	Si oyere, &c.	<i>If I hear or shall hear.</i>

<i>Inf. pres.</i>	Olér,	<i>to smell, or scent.</i>
<i>Gerund.</i>	Oliendo,	<i>smelling.</i>
<i>Participle.</i>	Olído,	<i>smelt.</i>
<i>Ind. pres.</i>	Huélo, huéles, huéle, } olêmos, oléis, huélen, }	<i>I smell or do smell.</i>
<i>Imperat.</i>	Huéle, huéla, } olámos, oléd, huélan, }	<i>smell thou, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Sub. pres.</i>	Que huéla, huélas, huéla, } olámos, oláis, huélan, }	<i>that I smell or may smell.</i>

N. B. All the other tenses are regular.

Omitír, <i>to omit.</i>	See p. 71.
Oponér, <i>to oppose.</i>	See ponér, p. 143.
Oprimír, <i>to oppress.</i>	See p. 71.

## P.

Pacér, <i>to feed, to graze.</i>	See aborrecér, p. 122.
Padecér, <i>so suffer, to endure.</i>	Idem.
{ Parecér, <i>to appear.</i>	Idem.
{ Parecérse, (refl. v.) <i>to resemble.</i>	Idem.

<i>Inf. pres.</i>	Pedir,	to ask, to beg.
<i>Gerund.</i>	Pidiendo,	asking.
<i>Participle.</i>	Pedido,	asked.
<i>Ind. pres.</i>	Pido, pides, pide, pedimos, pedis, piden,	I ask, or do ask.
<i>Imperfect.</i>	Pedía, &c.	I did ask.
<i>Pret. def.</i>	Pedí, pediste, pidió, pedimos, pedisteis, pidiéron,	I asked.
<i>Future.</i>	Pediré, &c.	I shall or will ask.
<i>Condit.</i>	Pediría or pidiéra, &c.	I should or would ask.
<i>Imperat.</i>	Pide, pida, pidámos, pedid, pidan,	ask thou, &c.
<i>Sub. pres.</i>	Que pida, &c.	that I ask or may ask.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que pidiere, &c.	that I asked or might ask.
<i>Future.</i>	Cuándo pidiere, &c.	when I ask or shall ask.

---

Pensár, to think.	See acertár, p. 124.
Perdér, to lose.	See entender, p. 135.
Perecer, to perish.	See aborrecér, p. 122.
Perfeccionár, to perfect.	See p. 71.
Perniquebrár, to break the legs.	See acertár, p. 124.
Perseguir, to persecute, to pursue.	See pedir, p. 142.
Pertenecér, to belong.	See aborrecér, p. 122.
Pervertir, to pervert.	See adherir, p. 124.

---

<i>Inf. pres.</i>	Placer,	to please.
<i>Ind. pres.</i>	Me pláce,	it pleases me.
<i>Imperfect.</i>	Placia,	it did please.
<i>Pret. def.</i>	Plúgo,	it pleased.
<i>Sub. pres.</i>	Que plégue,	that it may please.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que pluguiése or pluguiéra,	that it might please.
<i>Future.</i>	Si pluguiere,	if it shall please.

N. B. *Placer* is only used in the above tenses and persons, and as an Interject.: Ex. *Plégue á Díos!* May it please God!

---

Plegár, to plait or fold.	See acertár, p. 124.
Poblár, to people.	See acordár, p. 124.

<i>Inf. pres.</i>	Podér,	to be able, can, may.
<i>Gerund.</i>	Pudiendo,	being able.
<i>Participle.</i>	Podido,	been able.
<i>Ind. pres.</i>	Puedo, puedes, puede, podémos, podéis, pueden,	} I am ablè, or I can.
<i>Imperf.</i>	podía, &c.	
<i>Pret. def.</i>	Púde, pudiste, pudo, pudímos, pudisteis, pudieron,	} I was able, or could.
<i>Future.</i>	Podré, &c.	
<i>Condition.</i>	Podría, or pudiera, &c.	I shall, or will be able.
<i>Imperat.</i>	(wanting.)	
<i>Sub. pres.</i>	Que pueda, puedas, pueda, podámos, podáis, puedan,	} that I can, or may be able.
<i>Imperfect.</i>	Que pudiese, &c.	
<i>Future.</i>	Cuándo pudiere, &c.	when I can or shall be able.

<i>Inf. pres.</i>	Podrír,	to rot.
<i>Gerund.</i>	Pudriendo,	rotting.
<i>Participle.</i>	Podrido,	rotten.
<i>Ind. pres.</i>	Púdro, púdes, púdre, podrímos, podrís, púdrén,	} I rot or do rot.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Podría, &c.	
<i>Pret. def.</i>	Podrí, podríste, pudrió, podrímos, podrísteis, pudriéron,	} I did rot.
<i>Future.</i>	Pudriré, &c.	
<i>Condit.</i>	Podría or pudriera, &c.	I shall or will rot.
<i>Imperat.</i>	Púdre, púdra, pudrámos, podríd, púdrán.	} I should or would rot.
<i>Sub. pres.</i>	Que púdra, &c.	
<i>Imperfect.</i>	Que pudriese, &c.	that I rot or may rot.
<i>Future.</i>	Si pudriere, &c.	that I rotted or might rot.
		if I rot or shall rot.

N. B. Most tenses and persons of the above verb can only be used figuratively.

<i>Inf. pres.</i>	Poner,	to put, to place.
<i>Gerund.</i>	Poniendo,	putting.
<i>Participle.</i>	Puesto.	put, or placed.
<i>Ind. pres.</i>	Pongo, pones, &c.	} I put or do put.
<i>Impe. j.</i>	Ponia, &c.	



Pret. def.	Púse, pusiste, puso, pusimos, pusisteis, pusieron,	} I put, or placed.
Future.	Pondré, &c.	I shall or will put.
Condit.	Pondría, or pusiera, &c.	I should or would put.
Imperat.	Pon, póngase, pongámos, ponéd, póngan,	} put thou, &c.
Sub. pres.	Que póngase, &c.	that I put or may put,
Imperf.	Que pusiese, &c.	that I put, or might put.
Puture.	Cuándo pusiere, &c.	when I put or shall put.

Predecir, to predict.	See decir, p. 131.
Preferir, to prefer.	See adherir, p. 124.
Prender, to capture, to arrest.	See p. 71.
Proponer, to propose.	See poner, p. 143.
Proscribir, to proscribe.	See p. 71.
Presentir, to have a forecast.	See adherir, p. 124.
Presuponer, to presuppose.	See poner, p. 143.
Prevalecer, to prevail.	See aborrecer, p. 122.
Prevenir, to anticipate, to prepare.	See venir, p. 150.
Prever, to foresee.	See ver, p. 151.
Producir, to produce.	See conducir, p. 129.
Proferir, to utter.	See adherir, p. 124.
Promover, to promote, to elevate.	Part. promovido. See absolver, p. 123.
Proponer, to propose.	See poner, p. 143.
Proscribir, to banish, is irregular only in the participle past, proscrito.	
Proseguir, to pursue, to continue.	See pedir, p. 142.
Probar, to prove, to experience, to taste, to try.	See acordar, p. 124.
Provenir, to proceed, to issue,	See venir, p. 150.
Proveer, to provide,	See N. B. 5th, p. 121, and 71.

## Q.

Quebrar, to break, to dash in pieces ; to fail, to be a bank- rupt.	See acertar, p. 123.
--	----------------------

Inf. pres.	Querér,	to will, love, wish or want.
Gerund.	Queriendo,	willing.
Participle.	Querido,	willed.
Ind. pres.	Quiero, quíeres, quiere, queremos, queréis, quíeren,	} I will, love, wish, or want.

<i>Imperf.</i>	Quería, &c.	<i>I did wish.</i>
<i>Pret. def.</i>	Quise, quisiste, quiso, quisimos, quisisteis, quisieron,	<i>I willed or wished, or loved.</i>
<i>Future.</i>	Querré, &c.	<i>I shall or will wish.</i>
<i>Condition.</i>	Querría, or quisiera, &c.	<i>I should or would wish.</i>
<i>Imperat.</i>	Quiere, quiera, queramos, queréd, quieran,	<i>love thou, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Sub. pres.</i>	Que quiera, quieras, quiera, queramos, queráis, quieran,	<i>that I love, or may love.</i>
<i>Imperfect.</i>	Que quisiese, &c.	<i>that I wished or might wish.</i>
<i>Future.</i>	Si quisiere, &c.	<i>if I wish or shall wish.</i>

R.

Rebolcár, or revolcár,	<i>to tumble, to weller.</i>	<i>See acordár, p. 124.</i>
Recaér, to fall again.		<i>See caer, p. 128.</i>
Recluír, to confine.		<i>See Obs. 6th, p. 122, and p. 71.</i>
Recocer, to bake again.		<i>See cocér, p. 128.</i>
Recomendár, to recommend.		<i>See acertár, p. 123.</i>
Reconocer, to acknowledge.		<i>See aborrecér, p. 122.</i>
Reconvalecér, to recover from an illness.		<i>Idem.</i>
Recordár, to remember, to call to mind.		<i>See acordár, p. 124.</i>
Recostárse, to lie or lean on one side.		<i>Idem.</i>
Recordárse, to remember.		<i>Idem.</i>
Recrecér, to grow again.		<i>See aborrecér, p. 122.</i>
Reducír, to reduce.		<i>See conducír, p. 129.</i>
Referír, to refer.		<i>See adherír, p. 124.</i>
Refloreceér, to blossom again.		<i>See aborrecér, p. 122.</i>
Reforzár, to strengthen, to reinforce.		<i>See acordár, p. 124.</i>
Regár, to water.		<i>See acertár, p. 123.</i>
Regír, to govern.		<i>See pedir, p. 142.</i>
Regoldár, to belch.		<i>See acordár, p. 124.</i>
Rehacér, to do again.		<i>See hacér, p. 138.</i>

<i>Inf. pres.</i>	Reír,	<i>to laugh.</i>
<i>Gerund.</i>	Riénd,	<i>laughing.</i>
<i>Participle.</i>	Reído,	<i>laughed.</i>
<i>Ind. pres.</i>	Río, ríes, rie, reimos, reis, rien,	<i>I laugh or do laugh.</i>
<i>Imperf.</i>	Reía, &c.	<i>I did laugh.</i>
<i>Pret. def.</i>	Reí, reisto, rió, reimos, reisteis, rieron,	<i>I laughed.</i>
<i>Future.</i>	Reiré, &c.	<i>I shall or will laugh.</i>
<i>Condit.</i>	Reiría, or riéra, &c.	<i>I should or would laugh.</i>

<i>Imperat.</i>	<i>Ríe, ría, }</i> <i>riámos, reíd, rían, }</i>	<i>laugh thou, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Sub. pres.</i>	<i>Que ría, &amp;c.</i>	<i>that I may laugh.</i>
<i>Imperfect.</i>	<i>Que riése, &amp;c.</i>	<i>that I might laugh.</i>
<i>Future.</i>	<i>Cuándo riére, &amp;c.</i>	<i>when I laugh, or shall laugh.</i>

<i>Relucír, to shine.</i>	<i>See deslucír, p. 133.</i>
<i>Remanecér, to appear, to come in suddenly, to remain.</i>	<i>See aboirrecér, p. 122.</i>
<i>Remendár, to mend, to patch.</i>	<i>See acertár, p. 123.</i>
<i>Remordér, to bite again, to cause remorse. Part. remordido.</i>	<i>See absolvér, p. 123.</i>
<i>Remover, to remove, to change place. Part. removido. Idem.</i>	
<i>Renacér, to be born again, to revive. See aborreccér, p. 122.</i>	
<i>{ Rendír, to return, to subject, to enslave. See pedír, p. 142.</i>	
<i>{ Rendirse, to surrender oneself. Idem.</i>	
<i>Repegár, to deny or disown. See acertár, p. 123.</i>	
<i>Renovár, to renew. See acordár, p. 124.</i>	
<i>Reñír, to scold, to quarrel. See pedír, p. 142.</i>	
<i>Repetír, to repeat. Idem.</i>	
<i>Reponér, to put again. See poner, p. 143.</i>	
<i>Reprobár, to reprove. See acordár, p. 124.</i>	
<i>Requebrár, to cajole or wheedle. See acertár, p. 123.</i>	
<i>Requerír, to require. See adherír, p. 124.</i>	
<i>Resentirse, to resent, to be sensible of. Idem.</i>	
<i>Rescontár, to balance one part of an account with another. See acordár, p. 124.</i>	
<i>Resollár, to breathe. Idem.</i>	
<i>Resolvér, to resolve. See absolvér, p. 123.</i>	
<i>Resonar, to resound. See acordár, p. 124.</i>	
<i>Restableccér, to repair, or restore. See aborreccér, p. 122.</i>	
<i>Retemblár, to have continual tremblings. See acertár, p. 123.</i>	
<i>Retenér, to detain. See tenér, p. 86.</i>	
<i>Retentár, to be threatened with a relapse, (speaking of sickness.) See acertár, p. 123.</i>	
<i>Reteñír, to dye again. See pedír, p. 142.</i>	
<i>Retorcér, to twist again, to retort. See cocér, p. 128.</i>	
<i>{ Retraerse, to take refuge. See traér, p. 149.</i>	
<i>{ Retraér, to withdraw, to draw towards oneself. Idem.</i>	
<i>Retrotraér, to antedate, to trace back a thing to a time previous to its existence. Idem.</i>	
<i>Reventár, to burst. See acertár, p. 123.</i>	
<i>Revér, to see again. See vér, p. 150.</i>	

Reverdecer, to grow green again.	See aborrecer, p. 122.
Revertér, to return, to overflow.	See entender, p. 135.
Revestír, to invest.	See pedir, p. 142.
Revolár, to fly again.	See acordár, p. 124.
Revolcárse, to wallow.	Idem.
Revolvér, to stir, to disturb, to overthrow, to turn over.	See absolver, p. 123.
Rodár, to roll.	See acordár, p. 124.
Rogár, to pray.	Idem.
Rompér, to break.	See p. 71.

S.

Inf. pres.	Sabér,	to know things.
Gerund.	Sabiendo,	knowing.
Participle.	Sabido,	known.
Ind. Pres.	Sé, sabes, &c.	I know or do know.
Imperf.	Sabia, &c.	I did know.
Pret. def.	Súpe, supiste, supo, } supimos, supisteis, supieron, }	I knew.
Future.	Sabré, &c.	I shall or will know.
Condition.	Sabría or supiera, &c.	I should or would know.
Imperat.	Sábe, sépa, } sepámos, sabéd, sépan, }	know thou, &c.
Subj. Pres.	Que sépa, &c.	that I know or may know.
Imperfect.	Que supiése, &c.	that I knew or might know.
Future.	Si supiere, &c.	if I know or shall know.

Sabér bien, to relish, (speaking of meat, fruit, &c.) See saber.

Inf. pres.	Salir,	to go out, to walk out.
Gerund.	Saliendo,	going out.
Participle.	Salido,	gone out.
Ind. pres.	Sálgo, sales, &c.	I go or do go out.
Imperf.	Salía, &c.	I did go out.
Pret. def.	Salí, &c.	I went out.
Future.	Saldré, &c.	I shall or will go out.
Condition.	Saldría or saliera, &c.	I should or would go out.
Imperat.	Sal, sálga, } salgámos, salid, sálgan, }	go thou out, &c.
Sub. pres.	Que sálga, sálgas, sálga, } salgámos, salgáis, sálgan, }	that I go out, or may go out.
Imperf.	Que saliese, &c.	that I went out or might go out.
Future.	Cuándo saliere, &c.	when I go out or shall go out.

*Segár, to reap, to mow.*

*See acertár, p. 123.*

*Seguír, to follow.*

*See pedir, p. 142.*

N. B. This verb and its compounds lose the *u* before *a* and *o*: we say consequently *sígo* and *síga* and not *síguo* and *sígua*.

*Sembrár, to sow, to strew.*

*See acertár, p. 123.*

*Sentárse, to sit down. (refl. v.)*

*Idem.*

*Sentír, to feel, to perceive, to regret.*

*See adherír, p. 124.*

*Serrár, to saw.*

*See acertár, p. 123.*

*Servir, to serve.*

*See pedir, p. 142.*

*Sobreponér, to place above.*

*See ponér, p. 143.*

*Sobresalír, to surpass in height, to excel, &c. See salir, p. 147.*

*Sobrevenir, to come in unlooked for.*

*See venir, p. 150.*

*Soldár, to solder.*

*See acordár, p. 124.*

*Inf. pres. Solér, to be wont or accustomed to.*

*Gerund. Soliéndo, being wont to.*

*Participle. Solido, accustomed to.*

*Indic. pres. Suélo, suéles, suéle, }  
solémos, soléis, suélen, }*

*I am wont to.*

*Imperat. Suéle, suéla, }  
solámos, soléd, suétan, }*

*be accustomed to.*

*Sub. pres. Que suéla, suélas, suéla, }  
solámos, soláis, suélan, }*

*that I be or may be  
wont to.*

N. B. This verb is seldom used except in the *Ind. pres.* and *Imperfect*, which last tense is regular.

*Soltár, to loosen, to release. See acordár, p. 124. and 71.*

*†Solvér, to solve, to resolve. Part. Solvido. See absolver, p. 122.*

*{ Sonár, to sound, to ring, to appear. See acordár, p. 124.*

*{ Sonárse, (las naríces,) to blow one's nose. Idem.*

*Sonár, to dream. Idem.*

*Sonreír, to smile. See reír, p. 145.*

*{ Sosegár, to repose. See acertár, p. 123.*

*{ Sosegarse, to allay one's passion, to tranquillize oneself. Idem.*

*Sostener, to support. See tener, p. 86.*

*Soterrar, to inter, to bury. See acertár, p. 123.*

*Sustraér, to subtract. See traér, p. 149.*

*Suponer, to suppose. See ponér, p. 143.*

Suprimír, *to suppress.* See p. 71.  
 Suspendér, *to suspend*; suspendído, *suspénso.*  
 Sustituir, *to substitute*; sustituido, *sustitúto.*

T.

Temblár, *to tremble.* See acertár, p. 123.  
 Tendér, *to spread, to extend.* See entendér, p. 135.  
 Tenér, *to have, to possess, to hold.* See p. 86.  
 Teñír, *to dye.* See pedír, p. 142.  
 Tentár, *to tempt, to feel.* See acertár, p. 123.  
 Torcér, *to twist.* See cocér, p. 128.  
 Tostár, *to roast.* See acordár, p. 124.  
 Traducír, *to translate.* See conducír, p. 129.

Inf. pres.	Traér,	<i>to bring.</i>
Gerund.	Trayendo,	<i>bringing.</i>
Participle.	Traído,	<i>brought.</i>

Ind. pres.	Tráigo, tráes, &c.	<i>I bring or do bring.</i>
Imperf.	Traía, &c.	<i>I did bring.</i>
Pret. def.	Tráge, tragíste, trájo. Tragímos, tragísteis, tragéron,	<i>I brought.</i>
Future.	Traeré, &c.	<i>I shall or will bring.</i>
Condit.	Traería, or tragéa, &c.	<i>I should or would bring.</i>
Imperat.	Trae, tráiga, traigámos, traéd, tráigan,	<i>bring thou, &amp;c.</i>
Sub. pres.	Que tráiga, &c.	<i>that I bring or may bring.</i>
Imperf.	Que tragése, &c.	<i>that I brought or might bring.</i>
Future.	Si tragere, &c.	<i>if I bring or shall bring.</i>

N. B. Formerly *traér* had *trúge*, and *tragése* instead of those laid down in *pret. def.* and *imp. subj.*

Trascendér, *to go, to pass beyond.* See entendér, p. 135.  
 Trascendér, *to discover, to penetrate, to comprehend.* Idem.  
 Trascolar, *to strain, to filter.* See acordar, p. 124.  
 Trascordarse de, *to forget.* Idem.  
 Trasegár, *to put topsy turvy, to turn up.* See acertár, p. 123.  
 Trasonár, *to dream, to be out of one's mind.* See acordár, p. 124.

Trasponér, *to transpose.* See poner, p. 143.  
 Trocár, *to etchange.* See acordár, p. 124.

N. B. This verb changes *c* into *qu* before *e*. See p. 121 & 122.

Tronár, *to thunder.* See acordár, p. 124.  
 Tropezár, *to stumble, to make a false step.* See acertár, p. 123.

## V.

<i>Inf. pres.</i>	Valér,	to be worth.
<i>Gerund.</i>	Valiendo,	being worth.
<i>Participle.</i>	Valido,	been worth.
<i>Ind. pres.</i>	Válgo, válea, &c.	I am worth.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Valia, &c.	I was worth.
<i>Pret. def.</i>	Valí, &c.	I was worth.
<i>Future.</i>	Valdré, &c.	I shall be worth.
<i>Condit.</i>	Valdría or valiéra, &c.	I should or would be worth.
<i>Imperat.</i>	Vále, válga, valgámos, valéd, valgan,	be thou worth, &c.
<i>Sub. pres.</i>	Que válga, &c.	that I be or may be worth.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que vallése, &c.	that I was or might be worth.
<i>Future.</i>	Cuándo valiére,	when I be or shall be worth.

<i>Inf. pres.</i>	Venir,	to come.
<i>Gerund.</i>	Viniendo,	coming.
<i>Participle.</i>	Venido,	come.
<i>Ind. pres.</i>	Véngo, vienes, viene, venimos, venís, viénen,	I come or do come.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Venia, &c.	I did come.
<i>Pret. def.</i>	Vine, viniste, vino, vinimos, vinisteis, vinieron,	I came.
<i>Future.</i>	Vendré, &c.	I shall or will come.
<i>Condit.</i>	Vendría, or viniéra, &c.	I should or would come.
<i>Imperat.</i>	Ven, vénga, vengámos, venid, véngan,	come thou, &c.
<i>Sub. pres.</i>	Que vénga, &c.	that I come or may come.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que viniése, &c.	that I came or might come.
<i>Future.</i>	Si viniére, &c.	if I come or shall come.

Venirse, (refl. v.) to come away. See venir, above.

<i>Inf. pres.</i>	Ver,	to see.
<i>Gerund.</i>	Viendo,	seeing.
<i>Participle.</i>	Visto,	seen.
<i>Ind. pres.</i>	Véo, ves, &c.	I see or do see.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Veía, &c.	I did see.
<i>Pret. def.</i>	Ví, &c.	I saw.
<i>Future.</i>	Veré, &c.	I shall or will see.
<i>Condit.</i>	Vería or viéra, &c.	I should or would see.

<i>Imperat.</i>	Ve, véa, } véamos, ved, véan, }	see thou, &c.
<i>Sub. pres.</i>	Que véa, véas, &c.	that I see or may see.
<i>Imperf.</i>	Que viése, &c.	that I saw or might see.
<i>Future.</i>	Cuando viere, &c.	when I see or shall see.

N. B. In the above verb the *v* is the only radical letter.  
See *Temér* second regular conjugation.

<i>Vertér, to pour, to shed.</i>	See <i>entender</i> , p. 135.
{ <i>Vestír, to dress, to clothe.</i>	See <i>pedír</i> , p. 142.
{ <i>Vestírse, to dress oneself.</i>	Idem.
<i>Volár, to fly, (with wings.)</i>	See <i>acordár</i> , p. 124.
<i>Volcár, to turn, to overthrow.</i>	Idem.
{ <i>Volvér, to come back, to return; to turn, to send back.</i>	See <i>absolvér</i> , p. 123.
{ <i>Volvérsé, to become, to change oneself, to return, to go back.</i>	Idem.

#### AGREEMENT OF VERBS WITH THEIR SUBJECT.

We call that the *subject* of which we affirm some thing, and that the *attribute* which is affirmed of it. When we say; *el réy es benéfico*, the king is beneficent; the word *réy* is the subject of which we affirm the quality of *benéfico*, which is the attribute.

**RULE LI.** The subject is always either a noun or pronoun. When it is a pronoun, it is almost always suppressed in Spanish, both when the phrase is affirmative and negative, as we have already stated in the N. B. upon the *persons* and *numbers* of verbs, page 82. If I have to translate in Spanish the words *I love, thou lovest, they love*, I suppress the pronouns, and say, *ámo, ámas, áman*; the termination of each of these persons sufficiently indicates the pronoun that belongs to it, and which is implied.

**EXCEPTION.** We often express the pronoun to give more energy to the phrase. We must also express it whenever its suppression would leave an ambiguity in speech. Ex. *Yó lo digo, tú lo has hecho!* I say it, thou hast done it! *Pédro me quiere, é yo le aborrezco, &c.* Peter loves me, and I hate him, &c.

**RULE LII.** The subject, whether a noun or pronoun, is commonly placed before the verb. Ex. *Tu padre llora y tú ríes*, thy father weeps and thou laughest.

**1st EXCEPTION.** In interrogative and imperative phrases, the subject is always placed after the verb. Ex. *¿Que pre-*



*túnden* pues los nuevos reformatóres con su soñada igualdad? What then do the new reformers pretend with their chimerical equality? *Háblen las naciones dónde se víeron tales trastórns*; *hábale la misma Francia*,...let the nations where were seen such overturnings, let France herself speak.

2d EXCEPTION. The subject is also placed after the verb, in the incidental phrase denoting that we quote the words of some one. Ex. *Si tenéis, decía Luis XI á su hijo, si tenéis la desdicha de llegar á ser rey, acordáos de que os debéis todo entero á la felicidad de vuestros conciudadáns*; if you have, said Louis XI to his son, if you have the misfortune to be a king, remember that you owe yourself entirely to the happiness of your fellow citizens.

3d EXCEPTION. This inversion is also made with great advantage whenever it gives elegance, energy, sweetness or harmony to speech. Ex. *¡Dichósos los pádres que tienen buénos hijos!* Happy the fathers who have good children! *¡Feliz el réino dónde viven los hombres en paz!* Happy the kingdom where men live in peace! These phrases are much more energetic than if we said, *los pádres que tienen buénos hijos son dichósos*; *el réino dónde los hombres viven en paz es feliz*.

RULE LIII. Every verb must be of the same number and person as its subject. Ex. *Yó no sé lo que, digo, lo que hágo, &c.* I do not know what I say, what I do, &c. *Tu hermano no estudia*; *tus hermanos no estudian*; thy brother does not study; thy brothers do not study. In the first example, *sé, digo* and *hágo* are in the singular number and in the first person, because the pronoun *yó*, expressed before the first verb, and understood before the others, is in the singular and first person. In the second, *estudia* is in the third person of the singular, because its subject *hermano* is of that person and number, &c.

### *Of the regimen of verbs.*

The regimen of a verb is a word that immediately depends on it, and which restrains or determines its signification.

A verb may have for its regimen three kinds of words, another verb, a substantive or a pronoun.

### *Of the verb as a regimen.*

A verb governs another in the infinitive either with or without a preposition; as, *quiero estudiár*, I wish to study;

*las lenguas deben aprenderse por principios*, languages must be learned by principles; *vengo de comer*, I come from dinner; *voy á pasear*, I am going to walk; *estudia para instruírse*, he studies to instruct himself, &c.

**RULE LIV.** In Spanish, the verb *temer*, to fear, when we do not wish the thing expressed by the second verb; the verbs *dudar*, to doubt; *negar*, to deny, forming a negative member of a phrase; and the verb *impedir*, to prevent; *prohibir*, to forbid; require the verb, which they govern, to be in the subjunctive mood, with the conjunction *que*. *Temo que venga*, I fear he will come. *No niego que tenga razón*, I do not deny that he is right. *Impidió que saliessen*, he prevented their going out. (See Rule XLVII. p. 81.)

**RULE LV.** In Spanish, a verb governs another in the infinitive by the aid of the following prepositions; *á, de, con, en, hasta, por, para, entre, tras, sobre, sin*, to, of or from, with, in or into, till or even, by, for, between, after, on or upon, without. Ex. *Irémos á pasear después de comer*, we shall go to walk after dinner; *vengo de almorzar*, I come from breakfast; *gasto la mayor parte del tiempo en jugar y divertirme*, I spend the greatest part of my time in playing and amusing myself.

**N. B.** It often happens that we elegantly use in Spanish the infinitive with the article *el*, when governed by another verb: Ex. *Me gusta el leer novelas*, I like to read novels.

The Spanish verb *acabár*, to finish, followed by the preposition *de*, and governing the following verb in the infinitive, means that a thing has just been done or happened. Ex. *Acabo de oír buenas noticias*, I have just heard good news, *Pédro acababa de salir*, Peter had just gone out.

*Andár* and *ir*, to go, govern the verb that follows them, in the following phrases and others like them, in the gerund, without a preposition. Ex. *Van or andan cantando por las calles*, they go singing in the streets. *Lo irán diciendo á todos*, they will go telling it to every one. *Andaré paseando*, I shall be walking.

*Of the noun substantive as regimen of the verb.*

**RULE LVI.** All active verbs govern in Spanish the noun substantive, which is the immediate object of the action that is expressed, in the accusative with the preposition *á*, if this noun expresses a rational being or personified object; and without a preposition in all other cases. Ex. *amar á Dios*,

to love God ; *el rey quiere á su primér ministro*, the king loves his prime minister. *Amár la virtud*, to love virtue ; *aborreced el vicio*, to hate vice.

N. B. Sometimes the hármoney of the sentence requires the particle *á* to be suppressed. Ex. *¡dichósos los pádres que tiénen buénos híjos!* happy the parents who have good children ! And sometimes *á* is used before an inanimate object for the sake of clearness and euphony. Ex. *Fernándo sitió y tomó á Granáda*, Ferdinand besieged and took Granada.

There are some active verbs which govern two nouns at the same time, but under different relations. One of these nouns is the immediate object of the action expressed by the verb, and the other is the end to which it tends. That which is the end of it, is always governed by the preposition *á*. Ex. *Daré un libro á Pédro*, I shall give a book to Peter. The word *libro* is the object of the action expressed by the verb *daré*, and *Pédro* is the end to which it tends.

Neuter verbs in general have no regimen, because their signification does not extend beyond themselves ; as, *nacér*, to be born ; *vivir*, to live ; *crecer*, to grow ; *dormir*, to sleep.

Reflective and reciprocal verbs govern the personal pronouns which they have for their regimen in the accusative and dative, and these pronouns are placed before or after the verb, according to the rules of objective pronouns. See pages 55 and 56. Ex. *Arrepentírse* to repent ; *se arrepiente* or *arrepíentese*, he repents ; *se dá* or *dáse*, he gives himself.

*Of objective pronouns, or those which are the regimen of verbs.*

As we already have given all the rules respecting pronouns, we refer the reader to pages 54, 55, 56.

#### *Observations upon verbs.*

1st. The adverbs *but* or *only*, used with a verb are rendered in Spanish by *sólo* or *solaménte*, or by the adverb *no* placed before the verb, and *sinó* after the same verb. Ex. I have *but* one thousand dollars, *sólo tengo mil pésos*, or, *no tengo sino mil pésos*.

2d. The Spaniards, in order to express the repetition of an action, generally make use of the verb *volvér*, (which is equivalent to the English word *again*,) always followed by the preposition *á*, which governs the following verb in the infinitive ; and *volvér* is put in the tense and person in which the English verb is, which expresses the repetition of the ac-

tion. Ex. I shall read again this book, *volveré á leer éste libro* ; I saw him again, *volví á vérlle*.

3d. The pronoun *it*, placed in English before the verb *to be*, is most always suppressed in Spanish ; and sometimes it is translated by the pronouns *él, élla, éllo*, for clearness sake.

It is often suppressed,—1st.—in these modes of speaking ; *it is enough, it is little, it is too much, it is dear ; is it enough ? is it little ?* &c. *es bastante, es poco, es demasiado, es caro ; es bastante ? es poco ?* &c.—2d.—In answers. Ex. Who has said that ? it is I, it is you, it is Peter, it is he, &c. *Quién ha dicho eso ?* *yó soy, es vm., es Pedro, es él, &c.* Or, by suppressing the verb and the pronoun *it*, we may say : *yó, vm., Pedro, él, &c.*—3d.—When the verb *to be* is followed by a noun substantive having after it the pronoun relative *who* or *that*, *quién, que*, then these pronouns are translated by *él que, la que, los que, las que*, according to the gender and number of the noun to which they refer. Ex. It was the Spaniards who conquered Mexico, *fuéron los Españóles los que conquistáron á Méjico*.

In the following phrase, and others of the same nature, in which the verb becomes the nominative of the verb *to be*, we elegantly use the article *el* before the verb, and suppress the pronoun *it*. Ex. It is not an easy thing to know men, *no es cosa fácil el conocer á los hombres*. To know how to be silent is a great virtue, *el saber callár es una gránde virtud*. To despise the sciences is not to know their value, *el despreciár las ciéncias no es conocer su valór*.

In these modes of speaking : *it is I who, it is thou who, it is he who, &c. have, hast, or has done it or said it*, we suppress the pronoun *it*, and place the pronoun personal before the verb, which is put in the same person as the pronoun that precedes it, and *who* is translated by the relative pronoun *quién*. *Yó soy, tú eres, él, élla es, quién lo ha hécho, quién lo ha dicho, it is I, thou, he, she, who has done it, &c.*

4th. *To have like, to come very near*, are translated by *estár á pique de, estár en púnto de, estár pára or faltár poco pára que*. Ex. I had like to have been killed, *estúve á pique, or á púnto de matárme*. Thy brother came very near falling, *poco faltó pára que tu hermano cayése*. I came very near writing to thee this morning, *estúve pára escribirte ésta mañana*.

N. B. The *que* after *faltár* governs the following verb in the subjunctive, as may be seen in the above example.

*Of the agreement of the participle past with the subject and with its regimen.*

The participle past may be constructed with *habér*, *tenér*, *ser*, *llevar* or *ir*.

**RULE LVII.**—Whenever the participle past is constructed with the verb *habér*, it neither takes gender nor number. Therefore we say ; *ellos* or *ellas han comprado libros*, they have bought books. *Los libros que hemos leído*, the books we have read.

**N. B.** *Habér de*, *tenér de*, *tenér que*, and *deber*, are in English to *have to*, *to be to*, *to be obliged to*, and are often rendered by the defective verbs *must* and *ought to*. Ex. *He de, tengo de, debo trabajar*, I have to, I am to, I must, &c. work. *Tengo que hablar*, I have to speak ; and so on through all the tenses and persons.

**RULE LVIII.**—When the participle past is constructed with the verb *tenér* used as *auxiliary*, which is done to give more precision and energy to the sentence, then it takes neither gender nor number. Ex. *Tengo hablado á su madre*, I have spoken to his mother. *Tenia olvidado mis trabajos*, I had forgotten my troubles. *Me tuvieron abochornado*, they had put me to the blush.

**RULE LIX.**—If the verb *tenér*, when it serves to construct the participle past, is used as an *active* verb, that participle agrees in gender and number with its direct regimen. Ex. *Tengo escrita una carta á mi hijo*, I have written a letter to my son. *La casa que mi tío tiene comprada*, the house that my uncle has bought. *¿Tentan empezadas las obras?* had they begun the works ?

**N. B. 1st.** This last rule is applicable to the verb *llevar* when used for the auxiliary *habér*, this last expresses only a simple action, but the former expresses the state of a thing. Ex. *Yá llevaba gastados muchos pesos*, he had already spent many dollars. *Llevará puesta la espada*, he will have on the sword. *Yá lleváis entendidas las órdenes*, you are acquainted with the orders.

**N. B. 2d.** *Andar* and *ir* are also used in the same manner for the auxiliary *ser*. Ex. *Muchos andan ocupados en frioleras*, many are occupied with trifles. *Íbamos casi muertos de cansancio*, we were almost dead with fatigue.

**N. B. 3d.** *Andar* and *ir* are also used for *estar*, to denote precision and force before a gerund or participle active. Ex. *Los maestros me andaban enseñando á esgrimir y á montar á caballo*, the masters were teaching me to fence and ride a horse. *La primavera fué acercándose* or *se fué acercando*, the spring was drawing near or went on approaching. *Andan requiebrando*, they are making love.

**RULE LX.**—When the participle past is constructed with the verb *ser* or *estar*, it always takes the gender and number of

its subject. Ex. *Las riquezas son apetecidas*, riches are sought after. *Los malos serán castigados*, the wicked shall be punished. *Ella está sentada*, she is seated.

RULE LXI.—The *neuter, reflective* and *reciprocal* verbs form their compound tenses with the auxiliary verb *haber*, to have; and the participle past is always invariable when used with said auxiliary; therefore we say, *han salido*, they have or are gone out; *nos hemos alabado*, we have praised ourselves; *Pédro y Juán se han amado siémpre*, Peter and John have always loved one another.

N. B. *Morir* and *morirse*, to die, to be dying, is conjugated in the compound tenses, either with *haber*, preceded by two pronouns of the same person, one the subject and the other the direct regimen, or with *estar* or *ser*; in the first case the participle is invariable; in the second, it takes the gender and number of the subject. Ex. *Ella se ha muerto*, she has died. *Ellos son*, or *están muertos*; they are dead; *mi madre es muerta*, or *está muerta*, or *se ha muerto*, my mother is dead, or has died.

## CHAPTER VII.

### OF ADVERBS.

The *adverb* is an indeclinable part of speech, which serves to modify the signification of another word, or express a circumstance of it; its collocation depends generally in speech like the adjective in relation to the substantive, on force and euphony.

N. B. *Simple adverbs* are generally placed after the verbs. See N. B. page 256.

Adverbs are simple or compound. They are simple, when they are expressed in one single word, and compound, when they are expressed in several. They are distinguished as adverbs of *place*, *time*, *order*, *quantity*, *comparison*, *manner*, *doubt*, *affirmation* and *negation*.

Adverbs of *place* serve to denote distances and the situations of persons or things; as *aquí*, or *acá*, here where I am; *ahí*, there where you are; *allí* or *allá*, there where he is, where she is, where they are; *acullá*, there, on the other side, on the side opposite to where you are; *cérca*, near; *lèjos*, far; *dónde*, where, (without motion); *adónde*, where, (with motion); *dentro*, in, within; *fuera*, out, without; *arriba*,

up, up stairs ; *abajo*, down, down stairs ; *delante*, before ; *detrás*, behind ; *encima*, over, above ; *debajo*, under, below.

Adverbs of *time* are those which express some relation to time, as *hoy*, to day ; *ayer*, yesterday ; *mañana*, to-morrow ; *ahora*, now ; *luego*, soon ; *tarde*, late ; *temprano*, early ; *présto*, quick ; *prónto*, quickly ; *siempre*, always, ever ; *jamás*, or *nunca*, never ; *yá*, already ; *mientras*, in the mean time.

Adverbs of *order* express the manner in which things are arranged, in regard to one another, as *primeramente*, firstly ; *antes*, before ; *después*, afterwards : *en lugar*, in lieu, &c.

Adverbs of *quantity* serve to denote the quantity of objects, or their value ; as, *múcho*, much ; *poco*, little ; *algo*, somewhat ; *muy*, very ; *háрто*, *bastante*, enough, sufficiently ; *tan*, so-as. N. B. *Tan* is always used for *tánto* before a *participle passive*. Ex. ; *Quién es TAN amado cómo él ?* Who is so or as much beloved as he ? *tánto*, so much ; *cuánto*, how much.

Adverbs of *comparison* serve to compare objects together ; as, *mas*, more ; *ménos*, less ; *mejór*, better ; *peór*, worse ; *muy*, very.

N. B. This last adverb *muy* placed before a *participle past* stands for *much*, *very much*, in English. Ex. *Estóy muy conténto*, or *satisfécho*, I am much or very much pleased. He was much esteemed, *era muy estimado*.

Adverbs of *manner* express how and in what manner things are done ; they commonly hold the place of a preposition and a noun ; as, *prudentemente*, prudently ; *elegantemente*, elegantly ; which are put for *con prudéncia*, *con elegáncia*, with prudence, with elegance, &c. They are also called adverbs of *quality*, because they are almost all formed from adjectives, the property of which is to qualify ; the adverbs formed from adjectives are terminated in *mente* which is added to the feminine of those that terminate in *o*, and to the masculine of those that have another termination, without altering any thing in it ; as, *constánte*, constant ; *constánte-mente*, constantly ; *sutil*, subtle ; *sutil-mente*, artfully ; *rico*, rich ; *rica-mente*, richly ; *álto*, high ; *álta-mente*, highly, &c.

There are others, which, not being derived from adjectives, cannot follow this rule, such as, *bién*, well ; *mal*, ill ; *así*, thus ; *callandico*, silently ; *pasito á páso*, softly, &c.

There are in Spanish only two adverbs of *doubt*, these are, *acáso*, *quizá*, perhaps.

Adverbs of *affirmation* are ; *sí*, yes ; *ciertamente*, *cierto*,

certainly, to be sure ; *por ventúra, tal vez*, per chance ; *verdaderamente*, truly ; *indubitavelmente*, undoubtedly, &c.

Adverbs of negation are ; *ninguno*, no one ; *nadie*, nobody ; *no*, no, not ; *nada*, nothing, &c., and are always placed in Spanish in simple tenses before the verb, and in compound tenses before the auxiliary.

*Observations upon jamás, nunca, no, mas, ménos, and muy.*

1st. *Jamás* is used in the same sense as *nunca* ; thus, we say ; *jamás le hablaré*, I never shall speak to him ; *jamás ví tal cosa*, I never saw any thing like. It is often joined to *nunca*, *por siempre*, or *pára siempre*, to give more strength and energy to the phrase ; as, *nunca jamás lo haré*, I never shall do it ; *por siempre* or *pára siempre jamás me acordaré de tí*, I shall forever remember thee. We see by these examples that, when it is joined to *nunca*, it signifies *never* ; and that on the contrary, it has the signification of *eternally*, when it is joined to *por siempre*, or *pára siempre*. N.B. *Jamás* is *EVER*, in English, in interrogations. Ex. Do you ever read ? *¿Lee vm. jamás ?* Has he ever seen ? *¿Ha jamás visto ?*

2d. *No* does not always serve to deny ; this word serves sometimes on the contrary to give more force to the affirmation and to make the opposition that exists between the two objects compared more striking ; as, *mejór es la virtud que no las riquezas*, virtue is preferable to riches.

REMARK. Two *negative* adverbs do not always destroy each other in Spanish ; on the contrary, they often serve in familiar conversation to add to the strength of the negation. Consequently we say ; *no he visto á nadie*, I have seen nobody. *No háy ninguno*, there is nobody ; and not *no he visto algúno* ; *no háy algúno* ; but care must be taken to observe that, in order to make use in the same phrase of this double negation, *no* must precede the verb, and the other negative must follow it, as in the above examples. If any other negative than *no* precede the verb, *no* is not expressed. We say, and very properly ; *jamás oí voz mas harmóniosa*, I never heard a more harmonious voice ; *nada quiero*, I wish for nothing ; but we cannot say, *jamás no oí voz mas harmóniosa* ; *no nada quiero*. Finally, it is necessary to suppress the negative *no*, and place the negative adverb before the verb, or separate the two negatives in such a manner that *no* should precede the verb, and the other negative word should follow it ; as, *jamás te hablaré*, or, *no te hablaré jamás*,



I never shall speak to thee ; *nádie te quiere*, or, no *te quiere* *nádie*, nobody loves thee ; the first construction is the most elegant. *Ningúno*, no body, not any body, none, not any one. *Ningúno me gusta*, none pleases me.

3d. When several adverbs terminating in *mente*, are found in the same phrase, all of them except the last, lose the termination *mente*. The object of this rule is to avoid repetitions disagreeable to the ear. Instead therefore of saying ; *háblan sábiamente y elocuenteménte* ; *escribe claraménte, concisaménte y eleganteménte*, we say, *háblan sábia y elocuentemente* ; *escribe clára, concisa y eleganteménte* ; they speak wisely and eloquently ; he writes clearly, concisely and elegantly.

4th. *Mas*, more ; *ménos*, less ; are also used to qualify substantives. Ex. *El es mas hombre*, or, *ménos hombre que su hermano*, he is more a man or less a man than his brother.

5th. *Muy* serves also to qualify substantives. Ex. *Muy amigo mío*, very much my friend ; *muy señor mío*, dear sir ; *muy caballero*, very much a gentleman ; *muy señora mía*, dearest madam, lady.

## CHAPTER VIII.

### OF PREPOSITIONS.

*Prepositions* serve to express or denote the different relations which persons or things have with each other ; they are fixed and invariable ; and have neither gender nor number. Alone, they make no sense ; and in order that they may signify something, it is necessary that they be followed by a regimen expressed or understood.

The prepositions most used in the Spanish language are the following ; *á, ante, con, contra, de, desde, en, entre, hacia, hásta, para, por, según, sin, sobre, tras* ; to or at, before, with, against, of or from, since, in, between or among, towards, till or until, for, by or for, according to, without, upon, behind or after. They have in Spanish the same use as in English, except the prepositions *para, por, sobre* and *tras*, which require some observations.

*Observations upon para and por, for, by.*

The English preposition *by* presents no difficulty, it is always rendered in Spanish by *por*. Ex. The world has been created by God ; *el mundo fué criado por Dios*.

But it is not the same with the English preposition *for*, it is sometimes rendered by the preposition *pára*, and sometimes by the preposition *por*; and we cannot use indifferently one for the other. The following rules will direct the learner respecting the use to be made of the words *pára* and *por*, according to the different cases.

RULE LXII.—The preposition *for* is translated by *pára* when it denotes,—1st.—that an action is directed towards a person or thing. Ex. This letter is *for* John, *ésta carta es pára Juan*.—2d.—Motion towards a place. Ex. I set out *for* Italy, *sálgo pára Itália*.—3d.—A particular time, or fixed term, to which an action is referred. Ex. We shall leave it *for* to-morrow, *lo dejáremos pára mañana*.—4th.—The relation that a person or thing has with another. Ex. He has not done it ill *for* a beginner; *pára un principiante no lo ha hécho mal*.

N. B. 1st. When the preposition *for* serves to express the end that we propose, it may be translated, either by *pára* or *por*, we say; I work *to* gain, *trabájo por or pára ganár*.

2d. *To be about*—is translated by *estár pára*, and the following verb is put in the present of the infinitive. Ex. I am about setting out, *estóy pára partir*.—*In respect to*—*in comparison with*—are translated by *pára con*.—Ex. What is the creature *in comparison with*, or *in respect to* his creator? *Quién es la criatura pára con su criadór?*—*Among* is elegantly rendered in the following phrase, and others like it, by *pára éntre*. Ex. *Among* friends compliments are always useless, *pára éntre amigos los cumplimíentos son siémpre escusádos*.—*Pára* is also used before some adverbs, for we say, *pára ahora lo quíero*, I wish *for* it *now*; *pára cuándo vénga*, *when* he shall come; *pára dentro de un mes*, *within* a month; *pára entónces lo verémos*, we shall *then* see him.

RULE LXIII.—The preposition *for* is translated by *por* when it serves to express,—1st.—the time that a thing has lasted or will last. Ex. I leave Madrid *for* one month, *sálgo de Madrid por un mes*.—2d.—When it is equivalent to *in favor of*. Ex. I shall speak *for* thy brother, *hablaré por tu hermano*.—3d.—When it signifies *in the place of*, as *substitute of*. Ex. I attend *for* my friend, *asisto por mi amigo*.—4th.—When it serves to express an exchange. I would give my coat *for* thine, *daría mi vestido por el tuyo*.

We also use the preposition *por* in the following modes of speaking; in the morning, *por la mañana*; in the afternoon, *por la tarde*; such a thing is not yet done, *tal cosa está por hacer*; to go for, *ir por*; he goes for wine, *va por vino*; to pass for, *estar tenido por*;—he passes for a wicked man, *está tenido por malo*; to come for, *venir por*; he came for them, *vinó por ellos*.

*Observations upon sobre and tras.*

These prepositions *sobre* and *tras* are frequently used before verbs, which they govern in the infinitive. Ex. *Sobre ser réo convicto, quiere que le premien*, he has been found guilty, and yet he wishes to be rewarded. *Tras ser culpado, es él que mas levanta el gríto*, he is guilty and yet raises his voice the loudest. *Ir tras*, to go after.

*Prepositions which, in Spanish, govern the following noun in the genitive.*

Before, *antes*—Before the time, *antes del tiempo*.

After, *después*—After you, *después de vm*.

Within, *dentro*—Within two years, *dentro de dos años*.

Except, *fuera*—Except my father, *fuera de mi padre*.

Besides, *además*—Besides the money, *además del dinero*.

Near, *cerca*—Near the door, *cerca de la puerta*.

Across, *por el medio*—Across the fields, *por el medio de los campos*.

At, in the, *en casa*—At my brother's, *en casa de mi hermano*; at home, *en mi casa*; in thy house, *en tu casa*; at our home, *en nuestra casa*.

Notwithstanding, in spite of, *á pesar*—In spite of you, *á pesar de vm*.

Opposite, *frente á*, *en frente de*—Opposite his house, *en frente de su casa*.

By the side of, *al lado*—By the side of the king, *al lado del rey*.

Behind, *detrás*—Behind the chest of drawers, *detrás del armario*.

Upon, *encima*—Upon the bed, *encima de la cama*.

Under, *debájo*—Under the bridge, *debájo del puente*.

*The following prepositions govern the dative.*

As respects, *en órden á*—As respects what you say, *en órden á lo que vm. dice*.

Adjoining, *junto*—Adjoining the garden, *junto al jardín*.  
Concerning, *tocante*—Concerning this affair, *tocante á esta pendencia*.

Almost all the other prepositions govern the noun in Spanish in the same case as in English.

In addition to the preceding directions for the use of prepositions, we ought not to omit the following table taken from the Grammar of the Spanish Academy, which teaches at once how the prepositions govern and are governed. We advise students to commit this table to memory.

## TABLE.

## A.

Abalanzarse á los peligros	to rush <i>on</i> dangers
abandonarse á la suerte	to abandon oneself <i>to</i> chance
abocarse con alguno	to confer <i>with</i> any one
abochornarse de algo,	to be chagrined <i>with</i> any thing
abogar por alguno	to plead <i>for</i> any one
abordar (una nave) á, con otra	to board (one ship) another
abhorrecible á las gentes	hateful <i>to</i> the people
abhorrecido de todos	detested <i>by</i> all
abrasarse en deseos	to be inflamed <i>with</i> desires
abrirse á, con los amigos	to open oneself <i>to</i> one's friends
abstenerse de la fruta	to abstain <i>from</i> fruit
abundar de, en riquezas	to abound <i>with</i> or <i>in</i> riches
aburrido de las desgracias	weary <i>with</i> one's ill fortune
abusar de la amistad	to abuse friendship
acabar de venir	to be just come
acaecer á alguno	to happen <i>to</i> any one
acaecer en tal tiempo	to happen <i>at</i> such a time
acalorarse en, con la disputa	to grow warm <i>in</i> a dispute
acceder á la opinión de otro	to accede <i>to</i> another's opinion
accesible á todos	accessible <i>to</i> all
acertar á, con la casa	to find out the house
acogerse á sagrado	to have recourse <i>to</i> a church
acomodarse á, con otro dictamen	to conform oneself <i>to</i> another opinion
acompañarse con otros	to keep company <i>with</i> others
aconsejarse con, de sabios	to be advised <i>by</i> wise men
acontecer á los incautos	to happen <i>to</i> the unwary
acordarse de lo pasado	to remember the past
acordarse con los contrarios	to agree <i>with</i> the opponents
acostumbrarse á trabajos	to accustom oneself <i>to</i> works
ácre de genio	austere <i>in</i> temper, disposition
acreditarse de necio	to prove oneself a fool
acreditarse con, para alguno	to get credit <i>with</i> one

acredóór á la confianza  
 acreeóór *de* algúno  
 actuáirse *de*, *en* los negóciós  
 acusár (á algúno) *de* algúno delito  
 acusáirse *de* las cúlpas  
 adelantáirse á ótros

adheríirse á ótro dictámen  
 adolecér *de* algúna enfermedad  
 aferráirse *en*, *con* su opinión  
 aferráirse (una náve) *con* ótra  
 aficionáirse á, *de* algúna cosa  
 afirmáirse *en* lo dicho  
 agéno *de* verdad  
 agradáble *al* paladár  
 agradecido á los beneficios  
 agraviáirse *de* algúno  
 agraviáirse *de* la senténcia  
 agregáirse á ótros  
 ágrio *al* gústo  
 agúdo *de* ingénio  
 ahitáirse *de* manjáres  
 ahogáirse *en* el mar  
 ahorrajáirse *en* las espáldas  
 ahorrár *de* razones  
 ahorráirse (no) *con* ningúno  
 airáirse *con* algúno  
 ajustáirse á la razón  
 ajustáirse *con* algúno  
 alabáirse *de* valiente  
 alargáirse á la ciudad  
 alegráirse *de* algo  
 alejáirse *de* su tiérra  
 alimentáirse *de*, *con* yérbas  
 alimentáirse *de* esperánzas  
 alindár *con* ótra heredád  
 allanáirse á lo jústo  
 álto *de* cuérpo  
 amáble á todos  
 amancebáirse *con* los libros  
 amante *de* algúno  
 amañáirse á escribír  
 amoroso *con* los súyos  
 amparáirse *de* algo, *de* algúna cosa  
 áncho *de* boca  
 andár *con* el tiempo  
 andár *de* cápa  
 andár *en* pleitos  
 andár á gátas  
 andár *por* tiérra  
 angósto *de* mánga  
 anhelár á, *por* mayor fortuna  
 anticipáirse á ótro

worthy *of* confidence  
 any one's creditor  
 to acquaint oneself *with* business  
 to accuse (any one) *of* any crime  
 to accuse oneself *of* faults  
 to be in advance of others, to take  
 the lead of others  
 to adhere *to* another opinion  
 to be ill *of* some disorder  
 to be positive *in* one's own opinion  
 to grapple (one ship) another  
 to be fond *of* any thing  
 to affirm what has been said  
 foreign *to* truth  
 agreeable *to* the palate  
 grateful *for* benefits  
 to be affronted *with* any one  
 to appeal *from* the sentence  
 to unite oneself *to* others  
 sour *to* the taste  
 witty or sharp  
 to surfeit oneself *with* food  
 to be drowned *in* the sea  
 to get astride *upon* one's back  
 to spare words  
 not to spare any one  
 to be angry *with* any body  
 to be right inclined  
 to make it up *with* any one  
 to boast *of* bravery  
 to hasten *to* the city  
 to be rejoiced *at* any thing  
 to leave one's country  
 to subsist *upon* herbs  
 to feed oneself *with* hopes  
 to be contiguous *to* another's estate  
 to submit *to* what is just  
 tall *in* stature  
 amiable *to* all  
 to be fond *of* books  
 a lover *of* some one  
 to be clever *in* writing  
 kind *with* one's relations  
 to take possession *of* anything  
 wide mouthed  
 to accommodate oneself *to* time  
 to walk *with* a cloak on  
 to be litigious  
 to go all fours  
 to be humbled *to* the ground  
 tight sleeved  
 to covet better fortune  
 to anticipate another

aovar *en* la ribera  
 aparar *en* la mano  
 aparecerse *á* algúno

aparecerse *en* el camino

aparejarse *pára* el trabájo  
 apartarse *de* la ocasión

apartarse *á* un lado  
 apasionarse *á, de, por* algúno  
 apearse *de* su opinión  
 apechugar *con* alguna cosa  
 apechugar *por* los peligros  
 apedrear *con* las palabras  
 apagar *á* alguna cosa  
 apelar *de* la senténcia  
 apelar *á* otro médio  
 aperebirse *de* armas  
 aperebirse *á, para* la batálla  
 apetecible *al* gusto  
 apeteído *de, por* todos  
 apiadarse *de* los pobres  
 aplicarse *á* los estudios  
 apoderarse *de* la hacienda  
 apostar *á* correr  
 apresurarse *á* venir  
 apresurarse *por* alguna cosa  
 apretar *por* la cintura  
 aprobarse *en* alguna facultad  
 aprobado *de* cirujano  
 apropiado *pára* el oficio  
 apropiarse *á* sí  
 aprompuarse *á* algúno  
 aprovechar *en* la virtud  
 aprovecharse *de* la ocasión  
 ápto *pára* el empleo  
 apurado *de* medios  
 aquietarse *en* la disputa  
 arder *en* deseos  
 ardérse *en* quimeras  
 armarse *de* paciencia  
 arbozarse *con* algo  
 arrecirse *de* frío  
 arreglarse *á* las leyes  
 arregotarse *á* alguna cosa  
 arremeter *á, con, contra* el muro  
 arrepentirse *de* las culpas  
 arrestarse *á* todo  
 arribar *á* tierra  
 arrimarse *á* la pared  
 arrinconarse *en* casa

to lay eggs *on* the sea-shore  
 to receive *with* the hand  
 to present oneself suddenly *before*  
 any one  
 to present oneself suddenly *on* the  
 road  
 to prepare *for* work  
 to separate oneself *from* the occa-  
 sion  
 to retire *on* one side  
 to be enamoured *with* any one  
 to change one's opinion  
 to undertake anything *with* spirit  
 to brave dangers  
 to abuse any one *with* words  
 to adhere *to* anything  
 to appeal *from* the sentence  
 to have recourse *to* another measure  
 to provide oneself *with* arms  
 to get ready *for* battle  
 desirable *to* the palate  
 desired *by* all  
 to have compassion *on* the poor  
 to apply oneself *to* study  
 to take possession *of* the property  
 to lay a wager *on* a race  
 to make haste *to* come  
 to make haste *for* something  
 to take fast hold *by* the waist  
 to be approved *in* any faculty  
 approved *as* a surgeon  
 adapted *to* the office  
 to appropriate *to* oneself  
 to approach any one  
 to improve *in* virtue  
 to seize the opportunity  
 fit *for* the employment  
 exhausted *of* means  
 to grow quiet *in* the dispute  
 to burn *with* desires  
 to be full *of* quarrels  
 to arm oneself *with* patience  
 to muffle oneself up *in* anything  
 to be benumbed *with* cold  
 to conform *to* the laws  
 to be inclined *to* anything  
 to assault the wall  
 to repent *of* sins, faults  
 to be enterprizing *in* everything  
 to arrive *at* land, *on* shore  
 to lean *against* the wall  
 to keep oneself immured

arrogarse (algo) á sí mismo  
 arrojarse á pelear  
 arroparse con la capa  
 arrostrear *d*, con los peligros  
 asarse de calor  
 ascender á otro empleo  
 asegurarse de su contrario  
 asentir á otro dictamen  
 asesorarse con letrados  
 asistir á los enfermos  
 asistir en tal casa  
 asociarse *d*, con otro  
 asomarse *d*, por la ventana  
 asparse á gritos  
 asparse por alguna cosa  
 áspero al gusto  
 áspero en las palabras  
 aspirar á mayor fortuna  
 atarse á una sola cosa  
 atemorizarse *de*, por algo  
 atender á la conversacion  
 atenderse á lo seguro  
 atento con sus mayores  
 atestiguar con otro  
 atinar *d*, con la casa  
 atollarse en los caminos  
 atraer á sí  
 atreverse á cosas grandes  
 atreverse con todos  
 atribuir á otro  
 atribularse en, con los trabajos  
 atropellarse en las acciones  
 atufarse en la conversacion  
 atufarse por poco  
 aunarse con otro  
 ausentarse de Madrid  
 avacindarse en algún pueblo  
 avenirse con todos  
 aventajarse á otros  
 avergonzarse á pedir  
 avergonzarse de algo  
 averiguarse con alguno  
 aviarse de ropa  
 avocar (alguna cosa) á sí

to appropriate (any thing) to oneself  
 to rush on to fight  
 to cover oneself with a cloak  
 to face danger  
 to be scorched with heat  
 to ascend to another office  
 to shelter oneself from one's enemy  
 to assent to another's opinion  
 to seek council from learned men  
 to assist the sick  
 to attend such a house  
 to associate oneself with another  
 to look out at the window  
 to be exhausted with roaring  
 to torment oneself for anything  
 rough to the taste  
 rude in conversation  
 to aspire to better fortune  
 to tie oneself to one thing alone  
 to be afraid of something  
 to attend to the conversation  
 to keep to the side of safety  
 respectful to one's superiors  
 to testify with another  
 to hit upon the house  
 to stick fast in the road  
 to attract to oneself  
 to animate oneself to great things  
 to dare every body  
 to attribute to another  
 to be afflicted with labour, troubles  
 to overhasten actions  
 to take part in conversation  
 to be affronted at a trifle  
 to unite oneself with another.  
 to absent oneself from Madrid  
 to take one's abode in any town  
 to agree with all-  
 to gain the advantage over others  
 to be ashamed at asking  
 to be ashamed of anything  
 to agree with any one  
 to furnish oneself with clothes  
 to call a cause from an inferior  
 court to his own

## B.

Balancear á tal parte,  
 balancear en la duda  
 bailar por dinero  
 bambolear en la maroma  
 bañarse en agua

to vibrate on such a side  
 to fluctuate in doubt  
 to clamour for money  
 to dance on the rope  
 to bathe oneself in water

barár *en* tierra  
 barbear *con* la pared  
 bastardeár *de* su naturaleza  
 bastardeár *en* sus acciones  
 batallar *con* los enemigos  
 bajar *á* la cuéva  
 bajar *de* la torre  
 bajar *de* la autoridad  
 bajar *hacia* el valle  
 bájo *de* cuerpo  
 benéfico *á*, *para* la salud  
 blanco *de* cutis  
 blándo *de* cortéza  
 blasfemar *de* la virtud  
 blasonár *de* valiente  
 bordár (algo) *de*, *con* pláta

bordár (algo) *al* tambór  
 bordár *de* pasádos  
 bostezár *de* hambre  
 bóto *de* punto  
 boyánte *en* la fortuna  
 bramár *de* coráge  
 breár *á* chasco  
 bregár *con* algúno  
 brindár *con* regalos  
 brindár *á* la salud *de* algúno  
 buéno *de*, *para* comer  
 bufár *de* ira  
 bullir *en*, *por* todas partes  
 burlárse *de* algo

to run aground  
 to reach a wall *with* one's chin  
 to degenerate *from* his nature  
 to be degenerated *in* one's actions  
 to fight *with* the enemy  
 to go down *to* the cellar  
 to descend *from* the tower  
 to recede *from* authority  
 to descend *towards* the valley  
 low *in* stature  
 beneficial *to* the health  
 of a white complexion  
 of a soft skin, bark  
 to blaspheme *against* virtue  
 to boast *of* bravery  
 to embroider (any thing) *in* or *with* silver  
 to embroider *on* a tambour frame  
 to embroider *with* a needle  
 to gape *through* hunger  
 blunt *at* the point  
 to be very fortunate  
 to roar *with* anger  
 to vex *with* tricks  
 to struggle *with* any one  
 to offer presents  
 to toast *to* any one's health  
 good *to* eat  
 to swell *with* anger  
 to move *in* all parts  
 to make a jest *of* anything

## C.

Cabér *de* piés  
 cabér *en* la máno

caer *á*, *hacia* tal parte  
 caer *de* lo álto  
 caer *en* tierra, *en* cuenta, *en* errór,  
*en* tal tiémpo, *en* lo que se dice

caer *por* páscua  
 caer *sobre* los enemigos  
 calárse *de* água  
 calentárse *á* la lúmbre  
 calificar *de* dócto

callár (la verdad) *á* ótro  
 callár *de*, *por* miédo  
 calumniár (á algúno) *de* injusto

to be able to stand *in* on one's feet  
 to be able to be contained *in* the hand  
 to fall *on* such a side  
 to fall *from* on high  
 to fall *upon* the earth, to comprehend, to fall *into* a mistake, to fall out at such a time, to understand what is said  
 to fall *at* Easter  
 to fall *upon* the enemy  
 to wet oneself through *with* water  
 to warm oneself *at* the fire  
 to qualify any one *as* a learned man  
 to conceal (the truth) *from* another  
 to be silent *from* fear  
 to calumniate (any one) *as* unjust



calzarse <i>á</i> alguno	to lead another <i>by</i> the nose
cambiar (alguna cosa) <i>con</i> , <i>por</i> otra	to exchange (one thing) <i>for</i> another
caminar <i>á</i> , <i>pára</i> Sevilla	to travel <i>to</i> Seville
caminar <i>á</i> pié	to travel <i>on</i> foot
caminar <i>por</i> el monte	to walk <i>along</i> the mountain
cansarse <i>de</i> , <i>con</i> el trabajo	to fatigue oneself <i>with</i> the labour
cansarse <i>de</i> pretender	to be tired <i>of</i> pretending
cansarse <i>en</i> el camino	to be tired <i>on</i> the road
capáz <i>de</i> cien arrobas	capable <i>of</i> holding a hundred arrobas*
capáz <i>de</i> , <i>pára</i> el empleo	capable <i>for</i> the employment
capitular <i>con</i> el enemigo	to capitulate <i>with</i> the enemy
capitulár (á alguno) <i>de</i> mal jués	to reproach (any one) <i>as</i> a bad judge
cargarse <i>de</i> razón	to insist <i>upon</i> one's opinion
casar (una persona ó cosa) <i>con</i> otra	to couple (one person or thing) <i>with</i> another
catequizar (á alguno) <i>pára</i> alguna cosa	to persuade (any one) <i>to</i> any thing
causar (perjuicio) <i>á</i> alguno	to cause (prejudice) <i>to</i> any one
cautivar (á alguno) <i>con</i> , <i>por</i> beneficios	to overcome (any one) <i>with</i> favours
cavár (la imaginación) <i>en</i> alguno	to think (seriously) <i>on</i> any one
cavár (con la imaginación) <i>en</i> alguna cosa	to think (deeply) <i>on</i> any thing
cazaleár <i>de</i> una parte á otra	to go lounging <i>about</i>
ceder á otro, á la autoridad	to yield <i>to</i> another, <i>to</i> authority
ceder <i>en</i> beneficio de alguno	to resign <i>in</i> another's favour
censurar (alguna cosa) <i>de</i> mala	to blame (anything) <i>as</i> bad
ceñirse á lo posible	to keep <i>within</i> bounds
chancearse <i>con</i> alguno	to joke <i>with</i> any one
chapuzár (algo) <i>en</i> el agua	to sink (anything) <i>in</i> the water
chico <i>de</i> cuerpo	small <i>in</i> person
chocar á alguno	to provoke any one
chocar <i>con</i> otro	to strike one <i>against</i> another
circunscribirse á una cosa	to confine oneself <i>to</i> one thing
clamar á Dios	to call <i>on</i> God
clamar <i>por</i> dinero	to cry out <i>for</i> money
clamorear <i>por</i> los muertos	to ring a peal <i>for</i> the dead
coartar (la facultad) á alguno	to restrict (the power) <i>of</i> any one
cobrar (dinero) <i>de</i> los deudores	to recover (money) <i>from</i> debtors
colegir <i>de</i> , <i>por</i> los antecedentes	to infer <i>from</i> the antecedents
coligarse <i>con</i> alguno	to make an alliance <i>with</i> any one
columpiarse <i>en</i> el aire	to swing <i>in</i> the air
combatir <i>con</i> , <i>contra</i> el enemigo	to fight <i>against</i> the enemy
combinar (una cosa) <i>con</i> otra	to combine one thing <i>with</i> another
comedirse <i>en</i> las palabras	to be civil <i>in</i> words
comenzar á decir	to begin <i>to</i> say
comerse <i>de</i> envidia	to pine <i>with</i> envy
compatible <i>con</i> la justicia	compatible <i>with</i> justice
compensar (una cosa) <i>con</i> otra	to compensate (one thing) <i>with</i> another

---

\* Four arrobas make a quintal.

competir <i>con</i> alguno	to vie <i>with</i> any one
complacerse <i>de, en</i> alguna cosa	to be pleased <i>with</i> anything
componerse <i>con</i> los deudores	to compound <i>with</i> debtors
componerse <i>de</i> bueno y malo	to be made <i>of</i> good and bad
comprar (alguno) <i>al, del</i> vendedor	to buy (any one) <i>from</i> the seller
compreensible <i>al</i> entendimiento	compreensible <i>to</i> the understanding
comprobar (algo) <i>con</i> instrumentos	to prove anything <i>with</i> instruments
comprometérse <i>con</i> alguno	to render oneself answerable <i>to</i> any one
comprometérse <i>en</i> juéces árbitros	to compromise <i>by</i> arbitration
comunicar (luz) <i>a</i> alguna parte	to communicate light <i>to</i> any part
comunicar (uno) <i>con</i> otro	to commune one <i>with</i> another
concebir (alguna cosa) <i>en</i> el ánimo	to comprehend something
concebir (una cosa) <i>por</i> buena	to conceive anything <i>as</i> good
conceder (algo) <i>a</i> otro	to yield anything <i>to</i> another
conceptuar (a alguno) <i>de, por</i> sabio	to look upon any one <i>as</i> a wise man
concertar (una cosa) <i>con</i> otra	to concert <i>with</i> one another
concordar (la copia) <i>con</i> el original	to make the copy agree <i>with</i> the original
concurrir <i>a</i> algún fin	to contribute <i>to</i> some end
concurrir <i>a</i> alguna parte	to meet <i>at</i> some place
concurrir <i>con</i> otros	to concur <i>with</i> others
concurrir (muchos) <i>en</i> un dictámen	(many) to agree <i>in</i> one opinion
condenar (a uno) <i>a</i> galéras	to condemn <i>to</i> the galleys
condenar (a uno) <i>en</i> las costas	to condemn (one) <i>in</i> the costs
condescender <i>a</i> los ruegos	to condescend <i>to</i> entreaties
condescender <i>con</i> la instancia	to condescend <i>to</i> the instance
condolerse <i>de</i> los trabajos	to be grieved <i>with</i> troubles
conducir (algo) <i>a</i> tal parte	to conduct any thing <i>to</i> such a place
conducir (una cosa) <i>al</i> bien de otro	(something) to conduce <i>to</i> another's good
confabularse <i>con</i> los contrarios	to converse <i>with</i> one's enemies
confederarse <i>con</i> alguno	to ally oneself <i>to</i> any one
conferir (una cosa) <i>con</i> otra	to compare one thing <i>with</i> another
conferir (un negocio) <i>con, entre</i> los amigos	to confer on any business <i>with</i> friends
confesar (el delito) <i>al</i> juéz	to confess one's crime <i>to</i> the judge
confesarse <i>a</i> Dios	to confess <i>to</i> God
confesarse <i>con</i> alguno	to acknowledge <i>to</i> any one
confesarse <i>de</i> sus culpas	to confess one's sins
confiar (una cosa) <i>a</i> una persona	to entrust anything <i>to</i> any one
confiar <i>en, de</i> alguno	to rely upon any one
confinar (a alguno) <i>a</i> tal parte	to confine any one <i>to</i> such a place
confinar (España) <i>con</i> Francia	(Spain) to lie adjacent <i>to</i> France
confirmarse <i>en</i> su dictámen	to be confirmed <i>in</i> one's opinion
conformarse <i>con</i> el tiempo	to conform <i>to</i> the times
conforme <i>a, con</i> su opinión	conformable <i>to</i> his opinion
confrontar <i>con</i> alguno	to confront <i>with</i> any one
confrontar (una cosa) <i>con</i> otra	to confront (one thing) <i>with</i> another
confundirse <i>de</i> lo que se ve	to be confounded <i>with</i> what one sees
confundirse <i>en</i> sus juicios	to be thrown <i>into</i> confusion

congeniár <i>con</i> alguno	to be congenial <i>to</i> any one
congraciárse <i>con</i> otro	to ingratiate oneself <i>into</i> another's favour
congratularse <i>con</i> los suyos	to congratulate oneself <i>with</i> one's own friends
congratularse <i>de</i> alguna cosa	to rejoice <i>in</i> any thing
congeturar (algo) <i>de</i> , <i>por</i> señales	to conjecture (any thing) <i>by</i> signs
conmutar (algo) <i>con</i> otra cosa	to barter (one thing) <i>for</i> another
conmutar (un voto) <i>en</i> otra cosa	to exchange (a vow) <i>into</i> another thing
consagrarse <i>á</i> Dios	to consecrate oneself <i>to</i> God
consentir <i>en</i> algo	to agree <i>to</i> any thing
consolarse <i>con</i> sus parientes	to be comforted <i>with</i> one's friends
conspirar <i>á</i> alguna cosa	to aspire <i>to</i> any thing
conspirar <i>contra</i> alguno	to conspire <i>against</i> any one
conspirar <i>en</i> un intento	to enter <i>into</i> a conspiracy
constar (el todo) <i>de</i> partes	(the whole) to be composed <i>of</i> parts
constar <i>por</i> escrito	to appear <i>in</i> writing
consultar <i>á</i> alguno para un empleo	to propose any one <i>for</i> an employment, office
consultar <i>con</i> letrados	to consult <i>with</i> learned men
consumado <i>en</i> una facultad	to be consummate <i>in</i> a faculty
contaminarse <i>con</i> los viciados	to pervert oneself <i>with</i> the vicious
contaminarse <i>de</i> heregías	to contaminate oneself <i>with</i> heresies
contemporizar <i>con</i> alguno	to temporize <i>with</i> any one
contender <i>con</i> alguno	to contend <i>with</i> any one
contender <i>sobre</i> alguna cosa	to dispute <i>upon</i> any thing
contenerse <i>en</i> su obligación	to hold <i>to</i> one's contract, duty
contestar <i>á</i> la pregunta	to answer one's question
contraer (algo) <i>á</i> un asunto	to apply (something) <i>to</i> a subject
contrapesar (una cosa) <i>con</i> otra	to counterpoise (one thing) <i>with</i> another
contraponer (una cosa) <i>á</i> otra	to put (one thing) <i>against</i> another
contrapuntarse <i>con</i> alguno	to compare oneself <i>with</i> any one
contrapuntarse <i>de</i> palabras	to scold <i>at</i> one another
contravenir <i>á</i> la ley	to transgress <i>against</i> the law
contribuir <i>á</i> tal cosa	to contribute <i>to</i> such a thing
contribuir <i>con</i> dinero	to contribute money
convalecer <i>de</i> la enfermedad	to recover <i>from</i> illness
convencerse <i>de</i> la razón	to be convinced <i>by</i> reason
convenir <i>con</i> otro	to agree <i>with</i> another
convenir <i>en</i> alguna cosa	to agree <i>upon</i> any thing
conversar <i>con</i> alguno	to converse <i>with</i> any one
conversar <i>en</i> materias de estado	to converse <i>on</i> affairs of state
convertir (la hacienda) <i>en</i> dinero	to convert (goods) <i>into</i> money
convertirse <i>á</i> Dios	to be converted <i>to</i> God
convidar ( <i>á</i> alguno) <i>á</i> comer	to invite (any one) <i>to</i> dine
convidar ( <i>á</i> alguno) <i>con</i> dinero	to offer money <i>to</i> anybody
convidarse <i>á</i> los trabáos	to be ready <i>to</i> work
convocar <i>á</i> junta	to convene a meeting
cooperar (con otro) <i>á</i> alguna cosa	to cooperate <i>in</i> any thing
correrse <i>de</i> vergüenza	to be ashamed

correspondér á los beneficios	to be grateful
correspondérse <i>con</i> los amigos	to correspond <i>with</i> friends
cotejár (la cópia) <i>con</i> el originál	to compare (the copy) <i>with</i> the original
crecér <i>en</i> virtúdes	to increase <i>in</i> virtues
crecido <i>de</i> cuérpo	tall <i>in</i> stature
creér <i>en</i> Díos	to believe <i>in</i> God
creérse <i>de</i> algúna cósa	to be convinced <i>of</i> any thing
cuchareteár <i>en</i> tódo	to intermeddle <i>in</i> every thing
cuidár <i>de</i> algo, <i>de</i> algúno	to take care <i>of</i> something, <i>of</i> some one
culpár (á uno) <i>de</i> omiso	to blame (any one) <i>for</i> negligence
cumplir <i>con</i> algúno	to discharge one's obligation <i>to</i> anybody
cumplir <i>con</i> su obligación	to perform one's duty
curárse <i>de</i> algúna enfermedad	to be cured <i>of</i> any disorder
curárse <i>en</i> salud	to take care <i>of</i> oneself
curtirse <i>al</i> aire	to tan <i>by</i> the air
curtido <i>del</i> sol	tanned <i>by</i> the sun

D.

dar (algo) á algúno	to give (something) <i>to</i> anybody
dar (á algúno) <i>de</i> pálos	to beat (any one) <i>with</i> a stick
dar <i>de</i> bláncó	to hit the mark
dar <i>en</i> manías	to be foolish
dar <i>por</i> visto	to suppose anything <i>as</i> seen
dárse á estudiár	to give oneself <i>to</i> study
dárse <i>al</i> diántre	to despair
dárse <i>por</i> vencido	to surrender
deber (dinéro) á algúno	to be indebted <i>to</i> anybody
decaér <i>de</i> su autoridad	to fall <i>from</i> one's authority
decir (algo) á ótro	to say anything <i>to</i> another
decir (bién) <i>con</i> una cósa	to agree (one thing) <i>with</i> another
decir (bién) <i>de</i> algúno	to speak (well) <i>of</i> any one
declarárse á algúno	to declare oneself <i>to</i> anybody
declarárse <i>por</i> un partido	to declare oneself <i>for</i> such a party
declinár á, hácia tal párté	to approach <i>towards</i> such a side
declinár <i>en</i> bageza	to degenerate
dedicár (tiempo) <i>al</i> estudio	to employ (one's time) <i>in</i> study
dedicárse á la virtúd	to devote oneself <i>to</i> virtue
defendér (á uno) <i>de</i> sus contrários	to defend any body <i>from</i> his enemies
deferir (al parecer) <i>de</i> ótro	to adopt another's opinion
defraudár (algo) <i>de</i> la autoridad	to usurp (a little) another's authority
de ótro	
degenerár <i>de</i> su nacimiento	to degenerate <i>from</i> one's ancestors
delánte <i>de</i> algúno	before anybody
delatárse <i>al</i> juéz	to accuse oneself <i>to</i> a judge
deleitárse <i>con</i> la vista	to please oneself <i>with</i> seeing
deleitárse <i>en</i> oír	to please oneself <i>with</i> hearing
deliberár <i>sobre</i> tal cósa	to deliberate <i>upon</i> anything

dentro de casa	within the house
dependér de algúno	to depend upon any body
deponér (á algúno) de su empleo	to depose (any body) from his employment
depositár (algo) en algúna parte	to deposit (any thing) in any place
derivár de otro autoridad	to derive authority from another
derrenegar de algúna cosa	to detest any thing
desahírse con algúno	to have a difference with any body
desabrochárse con algúno	to divulge one's own secret to another
desagradecido á algún beneficio	ungrateful for any benefit
desahogárse (con algúno) de su pena	to communicate one's trouble to another
desapropiárse de algo	to alienate any thing
desavenirse con algúno	to disagree with any one
desavenirse (unos) de otros	(some) to disagree with others
desayunárse de algúna noticia	to take notice of any thing
descabezárse en, con algúna cosa	to labour hard in vain
descalabazárse en algúna cosa	to puzzle one's wits to find out any thing
descansár de la fatiga	to relieve oneself from fatigue
descantillár (algo) de algúna cosa	to break off the corner of any thing
descargárse de algúna cosa	to clear oneself from any thing
descartárse de algún encargo,	to excuse oneself from any charge
descender á los valles	to descend to the vallies
descender de buen linage	to come of a good family
descolgárse de, por la muralla	to creep down the wall
descolgár sobre otros	to surpass others
descomponérse con algúno	to disagree with any one
desconfiár de algúno	to mistrust any one
desconocido á los beneficios	ungrateful for benefits
descontár (algo) de algúna cosa	to discount one sum from another
descubrirse con algúno	to disclose oneself to any one
descuidárse de, en su obligación	to neglect one's obligation, duty
desdecir de su carácter	to deviate from one's character
desdecir de lo dicho	to retract what one has said
desdenárse de algúna cosa	to disdain any thing
desembarazárse de estórbos	to get rid of obstacles
desembarcár de la náve	to unship, unload
desembarcár en el puerto	to land in the harbour
desenfrenárse en vicios	to abandon oneself to vices
desertár de las bandéras	to desert the standard
desesperár de la pretensión	to despair of one's pretension
desfalcár (algo) de algúna cosa	to take away from another thing
desgajárse de los montes	to fall from the mountains
desahacérse á trabajar	to work with anxiety
desahacérse de algúna cosa	to get rid of any thing
desahacérse en llanto	to burst into tears
desmentir á algúno	to give any one the lie
desmentir (una cosa) de otra	(one thing) to contradict another
desnudárse de pasiones	to conquer one's passions
despedirse de algúna cosa	to take leave of any thing

despeñarse <i>de</i> un monte	to fall headlong <i>from</i> a mountain
despertar á alguno	to awake any one
despertar <i>del</i> sueño	to awake <i>from</i> sleep
despicarse <i>de</i> la ofensa	to be revenged <i>of</i> an affront
despoblarse <i>de</i> gente	to become unpeopled
desposarse <i>con</i> alguno	to marry any one
desprenderse <i>de</i> algo	to get rid <i>of</i> something
después <i>de</i> llegar, <i>de</i> alguno, <i>de</i> alguna cosa	after arriving, after any one, after any thing
desquiciar (á alguno) <i>de</i> su poder	to deprive (any one) <i>of</i> his authority
desquitarse <i>de</i> la pérdida	to make up for one's loss
desterrar (á uno) <i>de</i> su patria	to banish (any one) <i>from</i> his country
destrizarse á llorar	to consume oneself <i>with</i> weeping
destrizarse <i>de</i> enfado	to consume oneself <i>with</i> anger
desvergonzarse <i>con</i> alguno	to take liberties <i>with</i> any body
desviarse <i>del</i> camino	to lose one's way
desvivirse <i>por</i> algo	to be anxious <i>for</i> something
detenérse <i>en</i> dificultades	to be stopped by difficulties
determinarse á partir	to take a resolution <i>to</i> set out
detrás <i>de</i> la iglesia	behind the church
devolver (la causa) <i>al</i> juez	to let the cause devolve <i>to</i> the judge
dejar (una manda) á alguno	to bequeath <i>to</i> any one
dejar <i>de</i> escribir	to leave off writing
dejar (algo) <i>en</i> mano <i>de</i> otro	to deposit something <i>in</i> the hands of another
diferir (algo) á, <i>para</i> otro tiempo	to defer (any thing) <i>to</i> another time
dignarse <i>de</i> conceder algo	to condescend <i>to</i> grant any thing
emanar (una cosa) <i>de</i> otra	to emanate (one thing) <i>from</i> another
discernir, (una cosa) <i>de</i> otra	to discern (one thing) <i>from</i> another
disgustarse <i>de</i> , <i>con</i> alguna cosa	to be disgusted <i>with</i> any thing
disponer <i>de</i> los bienes	to dispose <i>of</i> goods
disponerse á caminar	to prepare oneself <i>to</i> travel
disputar <i>de</i> , <i>sobre</i> alguna cosa	to dispute <i>on</i> any thing
disentir <i>de</i> otro dictamen	to dissent <i>from</i> another's opinion
distar (un pueblo) <i>de</i> otro	to be distant (one town) <i>from</i> another
distinguir (una cosa) <i>de</i> otra	to distinguish one thing <i>from</i> another
distraerse <i>de</i> , <i>en</i> la conversacion	to wander <i>in</i> conversation
disuadir (á alguno) <i>de</i> alguna cosa	to dissuade (any one) <i>from</i> any thing
dividir (una cosa) <i>de</i> otra	to divide (one thing) <i>from</i> another
dividir <i>en</i> partes	to divide <i>in</i> parts
dividir <i>entre</i> muchos	to divide <i>between</i> several
dividir <i>por</i> mitad	to divide <i>into</i> halves
dolerse <i>de</i> los pecados	to repent <i>of</i> sins
dotado <i>de</i> ciencia	endowed <i>with</i> learning
dudar <i>de</i> alguna cosa	to doubt any thing
durar <i>hasta</i> el invierno	to last till winter
durar <i>por</i> mucho tiempo	to last a long time
duro <i>de</i> corteza	of a rough skin, bark

## E.

echár (algo) <i>de, en, por</i> tierra	to throw (any thing) <i>on</i> the earth
echár (olór) <i>de</i> si	to exhale an odour
elevárse <i>á, hasta</i> el cielo	to be exalted <i>to</i> the skies
elevárse <i>de</i> la tierra	to be elevated <i>from</i> the earth
embarcárse <i>en</i> negocios	to be involved <i>in</i> business
embocárse <i>con, de, en</i> alguna cosa	to be stupefied <i>with</i> any thing
emboscárse <i>en</i> el monte	to lie in ambush <i>on</i> a hill
embutir (alguna cosa) <i>de</i> algodón	to inlay (any thing) <i>with</i> cotton
embutir (una cosa) <i>en</i> otra	to inlay (one thing) <i>with</i> another
enmendárse <i>con</i> la corrección	to be amended <i>by</i> correction
enmendárse <i>de, en</i> alguna cosa	to correct oneself <i>in</i> any thing
empapárse <i>en</i> agua	to be soaked <i>with</i> water
emparejár <i>con</i> alguno	to put one on a level <i>with</i> any one
emparentár <i>con</i> alguno	to be related <i>to</i> any one
empeñárse <i>en</i> una cosa	to pledge oneself <i>to</i> a thing
empeñárse <i>por</i> alguno	to take part <i>for</i> another
empleárse <i>de</i> alguna cosa	to employ oneself <i>about</i> a thing
enagenárse <i>de</i> alguna cosa	to alienate any thing
enamorárse <i>de</i> alguno	to be enamoured <i>with</i> any one
enamorícárse <i>de</i> alguno	to fall in love <i>with</i> any one
encallár (la náve) <i>en</i> arena	to run (a ship) <i>on</i> shore, or <i>on</i> the sand
encaminárse <i>á</i> alguna parte	to direct one's course <i>to</i> any part
encaramárse <i>en, por, sobre</i> la pared	to climb up the wall
encarárse <i>á, con</i> alguno	to face another
encargárse <i>de</i> algún negocio	to charge oneself <i>with</i> any business
encasquetárse (algo) <i>en</i> la cabeza	to be obstinate <i>in</i> maintaining an idea
encastillárse <i>en</i> alguna parte	to fortify oneself <i>in</i> any place
encajárse <i>en, por</i> alguna parte	to busy oneself <i>in</i> any thing
encenagárse <i>en</i> vicios	to become vicious
encenderse <i>en</i> ira	to kindle <i>with</i> anger
encerrárse <i>en</i> su casa	to shut oneself up <i>in</i> one's house
encharcárse <i>en</i> agua	to drink too much water
encomendárse <i>á</i> Dios	to commend oneself <i>to</i> God
enconárse <i>con</i> alguno	to be irritated <i>against</i> any one
enfermár <i>del</i> pecho	to have a pain <i>in</i> the breast
enfrascárse <i>en</i> la disputa	to entangle oneself <i>in</i> a dispute
engolfárse <i>en</i> cosas graves	to be absorbed <i>in</i> important things
engreírse <i>con</i> la fortuna	to become vain <i>with</i> fortune
enlazar (alguna cosa) <i>con</i> otra	to tie (one thing) close <i>to</i> another
enredárse (una cosa) <i>con, en</i> otra	to interweave one thing <i>with</i> another
ensayárse <i>á, para</i> alguna cosa	to try <i>to</i> do any thing
ensayárse <i>en</i> alguna cosa	to become expert <i>in</i> any thing
entendér <i>de</i> alguna cosa	to understand any thing
entendér <i>en</i> sus negocios	to understand one's business
enterárse <i>de</i> alguna cosa	to be well informed <i>of</i> any thing
enterárse <i>en</i> algún negocio	to be well acquainted <i>with</i> any business

entrar en alguna parte  
entregar (algo) á alguno  
entremetérse en cosas de otro  
enviar (algo) á alguno  
equivocarse (una cosa) con otra  
equivocarse en algo  
escapérse de la prisión  
escapérse por la ventána  
escarmentár de, con alguna cosa  
escarmentár en cabeza agéna

escondérse en alguna parte  
escondérse de alguno  
escaso de medios  
escribir (cartas) á alguno  
esculpir en bronce  
esmerárse en alguna cosa  
espantárse de algo  
estampár en papél  
estár á la órden de otro  
estár de viáge  
estár en alguna parte  
estár en ánimo de  
estár en lo que se háce  
estár para salir  
estár por alguno  
estár (alguna cosa) por sucedér  
estrechárse con alguno  
estrechárse en los gastos  
estrellárse con alguno  
estrellárse en, contra alguna cosa  
estribár en alguna cosa  
excedér (una cosa) á otra  
excedér (una cantidad) en mil  
reales  
exceptuar (á alguno) de alguna cosa  
escluir (á alguno) de alguna parte  
ó cosa  
excusárse con alguno  
excusárse de hácer alguna cosa  
exhortár (á alguno) á tal cosa  
eximir (á alguno) de alguna cosa  
exonerár (á alguno) de su empleo  
espelér (á alguno) de alguna parte  
espérto en las artes  
extraér (una cosa) de otra  
estraviárse de la carréra

to enter into any part  
to deliver something to some one  
to meddle with another's affairs  
to send something to some one  
to mistake one thing for another  
to be mistaken in any thing  
to escape from prison  
to escape through the window  
to take warning at any thing  
to take warning at another's ex-  
pense  
to hide oneself in any place  
to hide from any one  
limited in means  
to write letters to any one  
to engrave on brass  
to exert oneself in any thing  
to be terrified at any thing  
to print on paper  
to be under another's direction  
to be on a journey  
to be in some place  
to have a mind to  
to know what is doing  
to be ready to go out  
to be in favour of any one  
(something) to be near happening  
to become intimate with any one  
to restrain oneself in one's expenses  
to fall out with any one  
to dash oneself against any thing  
to be supported in any thing  
(one thing) to excel another  
(a sum) to exceed one thousand  
rials  
to except any one from any thing  
to exclude any one from any place  
or thing  
to apologize to any one  
to excuse oneself from doing any  
thing  
to exhort any one to such a thing  
to exempt any one from any thing  
to dismiss any one from his place  
to expel any one from any place  
skilled in the arts  
to extract one thing from another  
to deviate from one's purpose

F.

fácil de digerir  
faltár á la palabra  
faltár de alguna parte

easy to digest  
to fail in one's promise  
to be missing, wanting.



fáto de juicio	wanting sense
fastidiarse de manjares	to be disgusted <i>with</i> victuals
fatigarse de, en, por alguna cosa	to long <i>for</i> something
favorable, á, para alguno	favourable <i>to</i> some one
favorecerse de alguno	to avail oneself <i>of</i> any one
fiarse de, en alguno	to confide <i>in</i> any one
fiar (algo) á alguno	to trust (any thing) <i>to</i> any one
fiel á, con sus amigos	faithful <i>to</i> one's friends
fijar (algo) en la pared	to fix (any thing) <i>in</i> the wall
flexible á la razón	pliant <i>to</i> reason
fluctuar en, entre dudas	to fluctuate <i>in</i> doubt
fortificarse en alguna parte	to strengthen oneself <i>in</i> any place
franquearse á, con alguno	to open oneself <i>to</i> any one
frisar (una persona ó cosa) con otra	to be of the same genius <i>with</i> another
fuera de casa	out <i>of</i> the house
fuerte de condición	of a high temper
fundarse en razón	to be founded <i>in</i> reason

## G.

girar (una letra) á cargo de otro	to value <i>upon</i> another
girar de una parte á otra	to reel <i>from</i> one side to another
girar por tal parte	to reel <i>on</i> such a side
girar sobre una casa de comercio	to draw <i>upon</i> a commercial house
gloriarse de alguna cosa	to boast <i>of</i> any thing
gordo de talte	fat or lusty
gozár de alguna cosa	to relish any thing
graduár, (una cosa) de, por buena	to pronounce (any thing) <i>as</i> good
grangear (la voluntad) á, de alguno	to gain (the affection) <i>of</i> any one
guardarse de alguno, de alguna cosa	to guard oneself <i>from</i> any one, <i>from</i> any thing
guarecerse de alguna persona ó cosa	to take shelter <i>from</i> any person or thing
guarecerse en alguna parte	to take shelter <i>in</i> any place
guarnecer (una cosa) con, de otra	to garnish (one thing) <i>with</i> another
guiado de alguno	guided <i>by</i> any one
guiarse por alguno	to guide oneself <i>by</i> any one
guiñarse por la pared	to descend <i>by</i> the wall
gustár de alguna cosa	to like any thing

## H.

hábil en papéles	skilful <i>in</i> documents
hábil para el empleo	qualified <i>for</i> the employment
habilitar (á uno) en, para alguna cosa	to enable (any body) <i>to</i> do any thing
habitar con alguno	to dwell <i>with</i> any one
habitar en tal parte	to dwell <i>in</i> such a place
habituarse á, en alguna cosa	to accustom oneself <i>to</i> something
hablar con, por alguno	to speak <i>with</i> , or <i>for</i> any one
hablar de, en, sobre alguna cosa	to speak <i>of</i> any thing
hablar en griego	to talk gibberish or Greek
hacer á todo	to be ready <i>at</i> any thing

hacer <i>de valiente</i>	to pretend <i>to</i> courage
hacer <i>para sí</i>	to provide <i>for</i> oneself
hacer <i>por</i> alguno	to do <i>for</i> any one
hacerse <i>con</i> buenos libros	to furnish oneself <i>with</i> good books
hallar (alguna cosa) <i>en</i> tal parte	to find (any thing) <i>in</i> such a place
hallarse <i>á</i> , <i>en</i> la festa	to be present <i>at</i> the feast
hartarse <i>de</i> comida	to gorge oneself <i>with</i> food
henchir (el cántaro) <i>de</i> agua	to fill (the pitcher) <i>with</i> water
herir (á alguno) <i>en</i> la estimación	to hurt (any one) <i>in</i> his reputation
herido <i>de</i> la injuria	wounded <i>by</i> injury
hermanar (una cosa) <i>con</i> otra	to make one thing agree <i>with</i> another
hervir (un lugar) <i>de</i> , <i>en</i> gente	to be (a place) very populous
hincarse <i>de</i> rodillas	to kneel down
hociar <i>en</i> alguna cosa	to stumble <i>at</i> any inconvenience
holgarse <i>con</i> , <i>de</i> alguna cosa	to rejoice <i>at</i> any thing
huir <i>de</i> alguna persona ó cosa	to fly <i>from</i> any person or thing
humanarse <i>á</i> alguna cosa	to familiarise oneself <i>to</i> any thing
humanarse <i>con</i> los inferiores	to be condescending <i>to</i> inferiors
humillarse <i>á</i> alguna persona ó cosa	to humble oneself <i>to</i> any person or thing
hundir (alguna cosa) <i>en</i> el agua	to plunge (any thing) <i>into</i> the water
hundirse <i>en</i> un pantano	to sink <i>in</i> a bog

I.

idóneo <i>para</i> alguna cosa	fit <i>for</i> anything
igual <i>á</i> , <i>con</i> otro	equal <i>to</i> another
igual <i>en</i> fuerzas	equal <i>in</i> forces
igualar (una cosa) <i>á</i> , <i>con</i> otra	to make (one thing) equal <i>with</i> another
imbuir (á alguno) <i>de</i> , <i>en</i> alguna cosa	to instruct (any one) <i>in</i> anything
impelér (á alguno) <i>á</i> alguna cosa	to compel (any one) <i>to</i> any thing
impelido <i>de</i> la necesidad	impelled <i>by</i> necessity
impenetrable <i>á</i> los mas perspicaces	impenetrable <i>to</i> the most penetrating
impenetrable <i>en</i> el secreto	impenetrable <i>in</i> secrecy
impetrar (algo) <i>de</i> alguno	to obtain (anything) <i>of</i> any one
implicarse <i>con</i> , <i>en</i> alguna cosa	to intermeddle <i>in</i> anything
imponer (péna) <i>á</i> alguna	to impose (penalties) <i>on</i> any one
imponerse <i>en</i> alguna cosa	to instruct oneself <i>in</i> anything
importar <i>á</i> alguno	to be of importance <i>to</i> any one
importunado <i>de</i> , <i>por</i> otro	importuned <i>by</i> another
importunar (á alguno) <i>con</i> pretensiones	to importune (any one) <i>with</i> pretensions
impresionar (á alguno) <i>contra</i> otro	to impress (any one) <i>against</i> another
imprimir (alguna cosa) <i>en</i> el ánimo	to imprint (any thing) <i>on</i> the mind
impropio <i>de</i> , <i>en</i> , <i>para</i> su edad	unbecoming <i>his</i> age
impugnar (alguna cosa) <i>á</i> alguno	to impugn anything <i>in</i> (any one)
impugnado <i>de</i> , <i>por</i> muchos	impugned <i>by</i> many
imputar (la culpa) <i>á</i> otro	to impute (the fault) <i>to</i> any one

inaccesible á los pretendientes	inaccessible to pretenders
inapéable de su opinión	obstinate in one's opinion
incansable en el trabajo	unwearied with work
incapaz de remedio	irremediable
incesante en sus tareas	indefatigable in one's labours
incidir en culpa	to fall again into a fault
incitar (á alguno) á su defensa	to incite (any one) to one's defence
incitar (á alguno) contra otro	to incite any one against another
inclinár (á alguno) á la virtud	to incline (any one) to virtue
incluir en el número	to include in the number
incompatible con el mando	incompatible with the command
incomprehensible á los hombres	incomprehensible to men
inconsecuente en alguna cosa	to be inconsistent
inconstante en su proceder	inconstant in one's proceedings
incorporar (una cosa) á, con en otra	to incorporate (one thing) with another
increible á, para muchos	incredible to many
incumbir (una cosa) á alguno	(any thing) to be incumbent on any one
incurrir en delitos	to incur crimes
indeciso en resolver	undecided in resolving
indignarse con, contra alguno	to be angry with any one
indisponer (á uno) con otro	to indispose (one) with another
inducir (á alguno) á pecar	to induce (one) to sin
inductivo de error	leading to error
indultar (á alguno) de la pena	to pardon (any one) the punishment
insatigable en el trabajo	indefatigable in labour
infecto de heregias	infected with heresies
inferior á otro	inferior to another
inferior en alguna cosa	inferior in anything
inferir (una cosa) de, por otra	to infer (one thing) from another
inficionado de peste	infected with the plague
infiel á su amigo	unfaithful to one's friend
inflexible á la razón	inflexible to reason
inflexible en su dictámen	inflexible in one's opinion
influir en alguna cosa	to have an influence over anything
informar (á alguno) de, sobre alguna cosa	to inform (any one) of anything
infundir (ánimo) á, en alguno	to encourage any one
ingrato á los beneficios	ungrateful for favours
ingrato con los amigos	ungrateful to friends
inhábil para el empleo	unfit for the employment
inhabilitar (á alguno) para alguna cosa	to disable any one for anything
inhibir (al juez) de, en el conocimiento	to inhibit any judge from taking cognizance
insensible á las injurias	insensible to injuries
inseparable de la virtud	inseparable from virtue
insertar (una cosa) en otra	to ingraft (one thing) on another
insinuar (una cosa) á alguno	to insinuate (anything) to any one
insinuarse con los poderosos	to insinuate oneself into the favour of the great

insípido <i>al</i> gusto	insipid <i>to</i> the taste
insistir, <i>en</i> , <i>sobre</i> alguna cosa	to insist <i>on</i> any thing
inspirar (alguna cosa) <i>a</i> alguno	to inspire (anything) <i>to</i> another
instruir (a alguno) <i>de</i> , <i>en</i> , <i>sobre</i> alguna cosa	to instruct (any one) <i>in</i> anything
interceder <i>con</i> alguno por otro	to intercede <i>with</i> any one for another
interceder <i>por</i> otro con alguno	to intercede <i>for</i> another with any one
interesarse <i>con</i> alguno por otro	to interest oneself <i>with</i> any one for another
interesarse <i>en</i> alguna cosa	to interest oneself <i>in</i> anything
internarse <i>con</i> alguno	to creep <i>into</i> another's favours
internarse <i>en</i> alguna cosa ó lugar	to look <i>into</i> anything
interpolár (unas cosas) <i>con</i> otras	to mingle one thing <i>with</i> another
interponer (su autoridad) <i>con</i> alguno	to interpose one's authority <i>with</i> any one
intervenir <i>en</i> las cosas	to intervene <i>in</i> things
intervenir <i>por</i> alguno	to intervene <i>for</i> any one
introducírse <i>con</i> los que mandan	to introduce oneself <i>to</i> the commanders
introducírse <i>en</i> , <i>por</i> alguna parte	to intrude oneself <i>into</i> any place
invadido <i>de</i> , <i>por</i> los contrarios	invaded <i>by</i> the enemies
invertir <i>en</i> tal parte	to pass the winter <i>in</i> such a place
invertir (el caudal) <i>en</i> otro uso	to invest money <i>into</i> another use
ingerir (un árbol) <i>en</i> otro	to ingraft one tree <i>on</i> another
ir <i>de</i> (Madrid) <i>a</i> , <i>hacia</i> Cádiz	to go from Madrid <i>to</i> Cadiz
ir <i>contra</i> alguno	to go <i>against</i> any body
ir <i>por</i> el camino	to go <i>in</i> the way, road
ir <i>por</i> pan	to go <i>for</i> bread
ir <i>tras</i> alguno	to go <i>after</i> one

## J.

jactarse <i>de</i> alguna cosa	to boast <i>of</i> anything
jugár <i>a</i> tal juego	to play <i>at</i> such a game
jugár (unos) <i>con</i> otros	to play one <i>with</i> another
jugár (alguna cosa) <i>con</i> otra	to move one thing <i>with</i> another
junár (una cosa) <i>a</i> , <i>con</i> otra	to join (one thing) <i>to</i> another
justificárse <i>de</i> algún cargo	to clear oneself <i>from</i> any charge
juzgár <i>de</i> alguna cosa	to judge <i>of</i> anything

## L.

ladeár (una cosa) <i>a</i> tal parte	to turn (anything) <i>on</i> such a side
ladeárse (alguno) <i>a</i> otro partido	to become a turncoat
lamentárse <i>de</i> la desgracia	to lament the misfortune
lanzár (algo) <i>a</i> , <i>contra</i> alguno	to throw (something) <i>at</i> any one
largo <i>de</i> cuerpo	tall <i>in</i> stature
largo <i>de</i> manos	fruitful, liberal
lastimárse <i>con</i> , <i>en</i> una piedra	to hurt oneself <i>against</i> a stone
lastimárse <i>de</i> alguno	to take pity <i>on</i> any one

leer (los pensamientos) <i>á</i> alguno	to read (the thoughts) <i>of</i> any one
lejos <i>de</i> la tierra	far <i>from</i> land
levantar (las manos) <i>al</i> cielo	to raise (the hands) <i>to</i> heaven
levantar (alguna cosa) <i>del</i> suelo	to raise (any thing <i>up</i> ) <i>from</i> the ground
levantar (alguna cosa) <i>en</i> alto	to raise (any thing) <i>en</i> high
libertar (á alguno) <i>de</i> peligro	to deliver (any one) <i>from</i> danger
librar (á alguno) <i>de</i> riesgos	to free (any one) <i>from</i> risk
lidiar <i>con</i> alguno	to dispute <i>with</i> any one
ligar (una cosa) <i>con</i> otra	to tie (one thing) <i>with</i> another
ligero <i>de</i> pies	lightfooted
limitar (las facultades) <i>á</i> alguno	to limit any one's powers
limitado <i>de</i> talentos	of slender talents
lindar (una posesión) <i>con</i> otra	(a possession) to be adjoining <i>to</i> another
llevar (algo) <i>á</i> alguna parte	to carry (something) <i>to</i> any place
llevarse <i>de</i> alguna pasión	to be carried away <i>by</i> some passion
luchar <i>con</i> alguno	to wrestle <i>with</i> any one
ludir (una cosa) <i>con</i> otra	to rub (one thing) <i>against</i> another

## M.

malquistarse <i>con</i> alguno	to make oneself hated <i>by</i> any one
manar (agua) <i>de</i> una fuente	(water) springing <i>from</i> a fountain
máncó <i>de</i> una mano	maimed <i>of</i> one hand
mancomunarse <i>con</i> otros	to unite oneself <i>with</i> others in the execution of anything
mandar (alguna cosa) <i>á</i> alguno	to send any thing <i>to</i> any one
manifestar (alguna cosa) <i>á</i> alguno	to discover (anything) <i>to</i> any one
mantener (conversación) <i>á</i> alguno	to maintain conversation <i>with</i> one
mantenerse <i>de</i> yerbas	to live <i>upon</i> herbs
mantenerse <i>en</i> paz	to live <i>in</i> peace
maquinar <i>contra</i> alguno	to plot <i>against</i> any one
maquinar <i>en</i> , <i>sobre</i> alguna cosa	to think hard <i>about</i> any thing
maravillarse <i>de</i> alguna cosa	to wonder <i>at</i> any thing
mas <i>de</i> cien ducados	more <i>than</i> a hundred ducats
matarse <i>en</i> trabajar	to kill oneself <i>with</i> labour
matarse <i>por</i> conseguir alguna cosa	to tire oneself to death <i>for</i> anything
matizar <i>con</i> , <i>de</i> colores	to shade <i>with</i> colours
mediano <i>de</i> cuerpo	of a middling stature
mediar <i>con</i> , <i>por</i> alguno	to intercede <i>for</i> any one
mediar <i>entre</i> los contrarios	to mediate <i>between</i> enemies
medirse <i>con</i> sus fuerzas	to act according <i>to</i> one's abilities
medirse <i>en</i> las palabras	to weigh one's words
medrar <i>en</i> la hacienda	to increase in riches
mejorar <i>de</i> empleo	to better one's employment
mejorar (á alguno) <i>en</i> tercio y quinto	to meliorate (any one's fortune) <i>in</i> a third and fifth part
menor <i>de</i> edad	under age
ménos <i>de</i> cien ducados	less <i>than</i> a thousand ducats
merecer <i>á</i> , <i>de</i> , <i>con</i> alguno	to merit <i>from</i> any one
mesurarse <i>en</i> las acciones	to be cautious <i>in</i> one's actions
meter (dinero) <i>en</i> el cofre	to put (money) <i>into</i> the chest

meter (á alguno) en empeño	to put (one) <i>under</i> the necessity of doing a thing
meter (una cosa) entre otras cosas	to put (one thing) <i>among</i> others
meterse á gobernár	to assume government
meterse á caballero	to affect the character and dignity of a knight, a gentleman
meterse con los que mandan	to meddle <i>with</i> the commanders
meterse en los peligros	to expose oneself <i>to</i> dangers
mezclár (una cosa) con otra	to mix (one thing) <i>with</i> another
mezclarse en negocios	to meddle <i>in</i> business
mirár (la ciudad) á oriente	(the city) to face the east
mirár por alguno	to look <i>for</i> any one's interest
mirarse en alguna cosa	to be careful <i>in</i> anything.
moderarse en las palabras	to be moderate <i>in</i> words
mojarse de alguno	to make game <i>of</i> any one
mojar (alguna cosa) en agua	to wet (something) <i>in</i> water
molerse á trabajar	to fatigue oneself <i>with</i> working
molido de andar	fatigued <i>with</i> walking
molestar (á uno) con visitas	to trouble (any one) <i>with</i> visits
molesito á todos	troublesome <i>to</i> all
montár á caballo	to get <i>on</i> horseback
montár en mula	to mount a mule
montár en cólera	to get <i>into</i> a passion
morár en poblado	to dwell <i>in</i> a settled place
morrir de poca edad	to die young
morrir de enfermedad	to die <i>of</i> a sickness
morrirse de frío	to be chilled <i>with</i> cold
morrirse por lograr alguna cosa	to long <i>for</i> obtaining any end
motejar (á alguno) de ignorante	to stigmatise any one <i>as</i> ignorant
motivar (la providencia) con razones.	to persuade (a measure) <i>by</i> reasons
moverse de una parte á otra	to move <i>from</i> one side to another
muchos de los presentes	many <i>of</i> those present
mudár (alguna cosa) á otra parte	to remove (any thing) <i>to</i> another place
mudár de intento	to change one's intention
mudarse de casa	to remove <i>from</i> a house
murmurar de alguno	to murmur <i>against</i> any one

## N.

nacer con fortuna	to be born <i>to</i> a fortune
nacer (alguna cosa) de alguna parte	(any thing) to spring <i>from</i> any part
nacer en las malas	to be born <i>of</i> low parents
nacer para trabajos	to be born <i>to</i> labour, trouble.
nadar en el rio	to swim <i>in</i> the river
navegar á Indias,	to sail <i>to</i> the Indies
negarse á la comunicacion	to deny oneself <i>to</i> company
nimio en su proceder	over-nice <i>in</i> one's conduct
ninguno de los presentes	none <i>of</i> the present
nivelarse á lo justo	to direct oneself <i>by</i> justice.

nombra(r) (á alguno) para el em- pleo	to appoint (any one) to the em- ployment, office.
notar (á alguno) de hablador	to note (any one) as a talker
notificar (alguna cosa) á alguno	to notify (any thing) to any one

## O.

obligar (á alguno) á alguna cosa	to oblige any one to anything
obstar (una cosa) á otra	(one thing) to hinder another
obstinarse en alguna cosa	to be obstinate in anything
obtener (alguna gracia) de alguno	to obtain (a favour) from any one
ocultar (alguna cosa) á, de alguno	to conceal (any thing) from any one
ocuparse en trabajar,	to be occupied with work
ofenderse con, de alguna cosa	to be offended at anything
ofrecer (alguna cosa) á alguno	to offer any thing to any one
ofrecerse á los peligros	to offer oneself to dangers
oler (una cosa) á otra	(one thing) to have the smell of an- other
olvidarse de lo pasado	to forget the past
opinar en, sobre alguna cosa	to hold an opinion on anything
oprimir (á alguno) con el poder	to oppress (another) by power
optar á los empleos	to be a candidate
ordenarse de sacerdote	to be ordained as a priest
orillar á alguna parte	to draw to any side

## P.

pagar (alguna cosa) con otro	to make a bargain, agreement
pagar con palabras	to pay with words
pagar en dinero	to pay in cash
pagarse de buenas razones	to be satisfied with good reasons
paladearse con alguna cosa	to please one's palate with anything
paliar (alguna cosa) con otra	to palliate one thing with another
pálido de semblante	pale-faced
palmeár á alguno	to cheer any one with the hands
parar á la puerta	to stop at the door
parar en casa	to stay at home
pararse á descansar	to stop to rest oneself
pararse con alguno	to stop with any one
pararse en alguna cosa	to stop at anything
parco en la comida	sparing in eating
parecer en alguna parte	to appear anywhere
parecerse á otro	to, resemble another
participar (algo) á alguno	to communicate (anything) to any one
participar de alguna cosa	to partake of any thing
particularizarse con alguno	to be singular with any one
particularizarse en alguna cosa	to signalize oneself in any thing
partir á Italia	to set off to Italy
partir (algo) con otro	to share (any thing) with another
partir en pedazos	to break into pieces
partir entre amigos	to share between friends

partir <i>por</i> mitad	to divide <i>in</i> halves
partir <i>por</i> entéro	to divide <i>by</i> tens
partirse <i>de</i> España	to set <i>off from</i> Spain
pasar <i>á</i> Madrid	to go <i>to</i> Madrid
pasar <i>de</i> Sevilla	to go <i>beyond</i> Seville
pasar <i>entre</i> montes	to pass <i>between</i> mountains.
pasar <i>por</i> el camino	to pass <i>by</i> the road
pasár, <i>por</i> entre árboles	to pass <i>between</i> trees
pasar <i>por</i> cobarde	to pass <i>for</i> a coward
pasarse (alguna cosa) <i>de</i> la memoria	to forget any thing
pasarse (la fruta) <i>de</i> madura	(fruit) to begin to decay
pasarse (alguno) <i>de</i> letras	(some one) to be a scholar,
pasearse <i>con</i> otro	to take a walk <i>with</i> another
pasearse <i>por</i> el campo	to walk <i>in</i> the country
pecar <i>contra</i> la ley	to transgress the law
pecar <i>de</i> ignorante,	to sin <i>through</i> ignorance
pecar <i>en</i> alguna cosa	to be faulty <i>in</i> any thing
pecar <i>por</i> demasia	to sin <i>through</i> excess
pedir (alguna cosa) <i>á</i> alguno	to ask any thing <i>of</i> any one
pedir <i>con</i> justicia	to ask <i>with</i> justice
pedir <i>contra</i> alguno	to bring an action <i>against</i> any one
pedir <i>de</i> justicia	to claim <i>in</i> law
pedir <i>en</i> justicia	to sue <i>by</i> law
pedir <i>por</i> Dios	to beg <i>for</i> God
pedir <i>por</i> alguno	to ask <i>for</i> any one
pegar (una cosa) <i>á</i> otra	to apply (one thing) <i>to</i> another
pegar (una cosa) <i>con</i> otra	to join (one thing) <i>with</i> another
pegar <i>contra</i> , en la pared	to fasten <i>against</i> the wall
pelarse <i>por</i> alguna cosa	to be anxious <i>for</i> any thing
peligrar <i>en</i> alguna cosa	to endanger <i>in</i> any thing
pelotearse <i>con</i> alguno	to scuffle <i>with</i> any one
penar <i>en</i> la otra vida	to be punished <i>in</i> the other life
penar <i>por</i> alguna persona ó cosa	to suffer <i>for</i> any person or thing
pendér <i>de</i> alguna cosa	to depend <i>upon</i> any thing
penetrar <i>hacia</i> las entrañas	to penetrate <i>to</i> the entrails
penetrado <i>de</i> dolor	penetrated <i>with</i> grief
pensar <i>en</i> , sobre alguna cosa	to think <i>of</i> , <i>upon</i> anything
perder (algo) <i>de</i> vista	to lose sight <i>of</i> any thing
perderse (alguno) <i>de</i> vista	to excel <i>in</i> an eminent degree
perderse <i>en</i> el camino	to lose one's way
perecer <i>de</i> hambre	to perish <i>with</i> hunger
perecerse <i>de</i> risa	to die <i>with</i> laughing
perecerse <i>por</i> alguna cosa	to die <i>for</i> anything
peregrinar <i>por</i> el mundo	to wander <i>through</i> the world
perfumar <i>con</i> incienso	to perfume <i>with</i> incense
permanecer <i>en</i> alguna parte	to remain <i>in</i> any place
permitir (alguna cosa) <i>á</i> alguno	to permit any thing <i>to</i> any one
permutar (una cosa) <i>con</i> , <i>por</i> otra	to exchange one thing <i>for</i> another
perseguido <i>de</i> enemigos	pursued <i>by</i> enemies
perseverar <i>en</i> algún intento,	to persevere <i>in</i> any design
persuadir (alguna cosa) <i>á</i> alguno	to persuade any one <i>of</i> (anything)
persuadirse <i>á</i> alguna cosa	to be persuaded <i>of</i> anything



persuadirse <i>de, por</i> las razones de otro	to be persuaded by another's reasons
pertenecer (una cosa) á alguno	any thing to belong <i>to</i> any one
pertrecharse <i>de</i> lo necesario	to be furnished <i>with</i> necessaries
pesarle (á alguno) <i>de</i> lo que ha hecho	(any one) to regret what he has done
pesado <i>en</i> la conversación	dull <i>in</i> conversation
pescar <i>con</i> red	to fish <i>with</i> a net
piar <i>por</i> alguna cosa	to long <i>for</i> anything
picar <i>de, en</i> todo	to excel <i>in</i> every thing
picarse <i>de</i> alguna cosa	to pique oneself <i>upon</i> anything
pintiparado á alguno	like <i>to</i> any one exactly
plagarse <i>de</i> granos	to be plagued <i>with</i> pimples
plantar (á alguno) <i>en</i> alguna parte	to set (any one) <i>in</i> any place
plantarse <i>en</i> Cádiz	to be settled <i>in</i> Cadiz
poblar <i>de</i> árboles	to fill <i>with</i> trees
poblar <i>en</i> buen parage	to settle <i>in</i> a good situation
poblarse <i>de</i> gente	to be peopled <i>with</i> persons
ponderar (una cosa) <i>de</i> grande	to exaggerate any thing <i>as</i> great
poner (á uno) á oficio	to put (any one) <i>in</i> business
poner (alguna cosa) <i>en</i> alguna parte	to put anything somewhere
poner (á alguno) <i>por</i> corregidor	to appoint (any one) corregidor
ponerse á escribir	to set oneself <i>to</i> writing
porfiar <i>con</i> alguno	to be positive <i>with</i> any one
portarse <i>con</i> decencia	to conduct oneself <i>with</i> decency
posar <i>en</i> alguna parte	to lodge <i>in</i> any place
poseido <i>de</i> temor	possessed <i>by</i> fear
postrado <i>de</i> la enfermedad	prostrated <i>by</i> sickness
postrarse á los pies de alguno	to prostrate oneself <i>at</i> another's feet
postrarse <i>en</i> cama	to be confined <i>to</i> one's bed
postrarse <i>en</i> tierra	to kneel down <i>on</i> the ground
precedido <i>de</i> otro	preceded <i>by</i> another
preciarse <i>de</i> valiente	to pique oneself <i>upon</i> courage
precipitarse <i>de, por</i> alguna parte	to be precipitated <i>from</i> any place
preferido á otro	preferred <i>to</i> another
preferido <i>de</i> alguno	preferred <i>by</i> any one
preguntar (alguna cosa) á alguno	to ask any one (any thing)
prenderse <i>de</i> alguno	to be taken <i>with</i> any one
prender (las plantas) <i>en</i> la tierra	(plants) to take root <i>in</i> the earth
preocuparse <i>de</i> alguna cosa	to be prepossessed <i>with</i> anything
prepararse á, para alguna cosa	to prepare oneself <i>for</i> anything
preponderar (una cosa) á otra	to preponderate (one thing) <i>over</i> another
prescindir <i>de</i> alguna cosa	to lay aside any thing
presentar (alguna cosa) á alguno	to present (anything) <i>to</i> any one
presentar (á uno) para una prebenda	to present any one <i>for</i> a prebend
preservar (á alguno) <i>de</i> daño	to preserve (any one) <i>from</i> injury
presidir á otros	to preside <i>over</i> others
presidir <i>en</i> un tribunal	to preside <i>in</i> a tribunal

presidido <i>de</i> otro	presided <i>by</i> another
prestár (dinéro) <i>á</i> alguno	to lend (money) <i>to</i> any one
prestár (la diétá) <i>pára</i> la salud	(the diet) <i>to</i> contribute <i>to</i> health
prestár <i>sobre</i> prenda	to lend <i>on</i> security
presumir <i>de</i> dócto	to set up <i>for</i> a man of learning
prevalecér (la verdád) <i>sobre</i> la mentíra	(truth) <i>to</i> prevail <i>over</i> falsehood
prevenír (algúna cosa) <i>á</i> alguno	to advise another <i>of</i> (any thing)
prevenirse <i>de</i> lo necesário	to provide oneself <i>with</i> necessaries
prevenirse <i>pára</i> un viáge	to prepare oneself <i>for</i> a journey
priméro <i>de</i> , <i>entre</i> todos,	first <i>among</i> all
pringáirse <i>en</i> algúna cosa	to intermeddle <i>in</i> any thing
privár (á alguno) <i>de</i> lo suyo	to deprive (any one) of his own
privár <i>con</i> alguno	to be intimate <i>with</i> any one
probár <i>á</i> saltár	to try <i>to</i> jump
probár <i>de</i> todo	to taste <i>of</i> every thing
procedér <i>á</i> la elección	to proceed <i>to</i> the election
procedér <i>con</i> , <i>sin</i> acuérdó	to proceed <i>with</i> or <i>without</i> circum- spection
procedér <i>contra</i> alguno	to proceed <i>against</i> any one
procedér (una cosa) <i>de</i> otra	(one thing) <i>to</i> proceed <i>from</i> another
procesár (á uno) <i>por</i> delitos	to proceed <i>against</i> a man <i>for</i> crimes
procurár <i>por</i> alguno	to procure <i>for</i> any one
proejár <i>contra</i> las olas	to row <i>against</i> the waves
profesár <i>en</i> religión	to profess <i>in</i> religion
prometér (algúna cosa) <i>á</i> alguno	to promise any thing <i>to</i> any one
promovér (á alguno) <i>á</i> algún cárgo	to promote any one <i>to</i> any office
propasárse <i>á</i> , <i>en</i> algúna cosa	to overshoot one's mark <i>in</i> anything
proponér (algúna cosa) <i>á</i> alguno	to propose any thing <i>to</i> any one
proponér (á alguno) <i>en</i> primér lugar	to propose any one <i>in</i> the first place
proporcionár (á alguno) <i>pára</i> algúna cosa	to fit (any one) <i>for</i> any thing
proporcionárse <i>á</i> las fuérzas	to proportion oneself <i>to</i> one's strength
proporcionárse <i>pára</i> algúna cosa	to fit oneself <i>for</i> any thing
prolongár (el plázo) <i>á</i> alguno	to prolong the credit <i>to</i> any one
prorumpir <i>en</i> lágrimas	to burst <i>into</i> tears
proveér (la pláza) <i>de</i> víveres	to furnish (the fortress) <i>with</i> provisions
proveér (el empléo) <i>en</i> alguno	to provide any one <i>with</i> (an employ- ment)
provenir <i>de</i> otra cosa	to proceed <i>from</i> something else
provocár <i>á</i> ira	to provoke <i>to</i> anger
provocár (á alguno,) <i>con</i> málas palabras	to provoke any one <i>by</i> scurrilous language
próximo <i>á</i> morir	at the point <i>of</i> death
pujár <i>por</i> algúna cosa	to strive <i>for</i> any thing
purgárse <i>de</i> sospécha	to clear oneself <i>from</i> suspicion

## Q.

cuadrár *con* el encárgo  
 cuadrár (alguna cosa) *á* algúno  
 cuál *de* los dos  
 quebrantár (los huésos) *á* algúno  
 quebrár (el corazón) *á* algúno  
 quedar *de* asiento  
 quedár *de* piés  
 quedár *en* casa  
 quedár (camino) *por* andár  
 quedár *por* algúno  
 quedár *por* cobárde  
 quedár (una cosa) *por* mía  
 quedárse *en* el sermón  
 quejárse *á* algúno  
 quejárse *de* algúno  
 querellárse *á*, *ante* el juéz

querellárse *de* su vecino  
 quemár *con* malas razones  
 quemárse *de* alguna palabra  
 quemárse *por* alguna cosa  
 querido *de* sus amigos  
 quién *de* ellos  
 quitár (alguna cosa) *á* algúno  
 quitár (alguna cosa) *de* alguna  
 parte  
 quitárse *de* quiméras

to fit *for* the employment  
 to fit (anything) any one  
 which *of* the two  
 to break any one's bones  
 to break any one's heart  
 to remain or reside *in* a place  
 to remain standing  
 to tarry *at* home  
 to have to proceed farther  
 to be bail *for* any one  
 to be reputed a coward  
 (any thing) to fall to my share  
 to stop short *in* a discourse  
 to complain *to* any one  
 to complain *of* any one  
 to lay one's complaint *before* the  
 judge  
 to complain *of* one's neighbour  
 to inflame one *with* invective  
 to be offended *with* any word  
 to heat oneself *for* anything  
 beloved *by* one's friends  
 which *of* them  
 to take anything *from* any one  
 to take anything *from* any place  
 to free oneself *from* whims

## R.

rabiár *de* hambre  
 rabiár *por* comér  
 radicárse *en* la virtud  
 raér *de* alguna cosa  
 rallár (las tripas) *á* cualquiera  
 rayár *con* la virtud  
 razonár *con* algúno  
 rebalsárse (el agua) *en* alguna parte  
 rebatir (una cantidad) *de* otra  
 rebajár (una cantidad) *de* otra  
 recaér *en* la enfermedad  
 recalcarse *en* lo dicho  
 recatárse *de* algúno  
 recavar (alguna cosa) *de*, *con* al-  
 gúno  
 recetar (medicinas) *á*, *pára* algúno  
 recetar *contra* algúno  
 recibir (alguna cosa) *de* algúno  
 recibir *á* cuenta  
 recibir (*á* algúno) *en* casa

to be very hungry  
 to long *to* eat  
 to establish oneself *in* virtue  
 to scrape *from* anything  
 to importune any one  
 to excel *in* virtue  
 to converse *with* any one  
 water to stagnate *in* any place  
 to deduct a sum  
 to abate one sum *from* another  
 to relapse *into* sickness  
 to be firm *in* what has been said  
 to be cautious *of* any one  
 to obtain anything *from* any one  
 to prescribe medicines *for* any one  
 to make a charge *against* any one  
 to receive any thing *from* any one  
 to receive *on* account  
 to receive any one *at* home

recibirse de abogado	to be admitted as a counsellor
recio de cuerpo	of a strong constitution
reclinarse en, sobre alguna cosa	to lean upon any thing
recluir (á alguno) en alguna parte	to shut (any one) up <i>in</i> any place
recobrar de la enfermedad	to recover oneself from sickness
recogerse á casa	to retire home
recomendar (alguna cosa) á alguno	to recommend (anything) <i>to</i> any one
recompensar (agravios) con beneficios	to recompense wrongs <i>with</i> benefits
reconcentrarse (el odio) en el corazón	to concentrate (hatred) <i>in</i> the heart
reconciliar (á uno) con otro	to reconcile (one) <i>with</i> another
reconvenir (á alguno) con, de, sobre alguna cosa	to retort (on any one) <i>with</i> anything
recostarse en, sobre la silla	to recline on a seat
recudir (á alguno) con el sueldo	to pay (any one) his wages
redondearse de deudas	to pay off one's debts
reducir (alguna cosa) á la mitad	to reduce anything <i>to</i> the half
redundar en beneficio	to conduce <i>to</i> the benefit
referirse á alguna cosa	to refer oneself <i>to</i> anything
refocilarse con alguna cosa	to be refreshed <i>with</i> anything
refugiarse á, en sagrado	to take refuge in some sacred place
reglarse á lo justo	to conform <i>to</i> what is right
regodearse en, con alguna cosa	to delight oneself <i>in</i> anything
reirse á carcajadas	to laugh heartily
reirse de alguno	to make a jest <i>of</i> any one
remirarse en alguna cosa	to examine oneself <i>in</i> anything
reemplazar (á alguno) en su empleo	to take the place (of any one) <i>in</i> his employment, office
rendirse á la razón	to yield <i>to</i> reason
renegar de alguna cosa	to apostatize <i>from</i> anything
repartir (alguna cosa) á, entre algunos	to share (any thing) <i>among</i> several
representarse (alguna cosa) á la imaginacion	to represent any thing <i>to</i> one's imagination
resbalar de las manos	to slip away <i>from</i> the hands
resentirse de alguna cosa	to resent any thing
residir de asiento en alguna parte	to be settled <i>in</i> any place
residir en la corte	to reside <i>at</i> court
resolverse á alguna cosa	to resolve upon any thing
responder á la pregunta	to answer the question
restar (una cantidad) de otra	to remain (one sum) <i>from</i> another
restituirse á su casa	to return <i>to</i> one's house
resultar (una cosa) de otra	(one thing) <i>to</i> result <i>from</i> another
retirarse á la soledad	to retire <i>into</i> solitude
retirarse del mundo	to retire <i>from</i> the world
retraerse á alguna parte	to take refuge any where
retraerse de alguna cosa	to escape <i>from</i> anything
retroceder á, hacia tal parte	to recede <i>towards</i> such a place
reventar de risa	to burst <i>with</i> laughter
reventar por hablar	to burst <i>with</i> a desire of speaking
revestirse de autoridad	to be invested <i>with</i> authority
revolcarse en los vicios	to wallow <i>in</i> vice

revolver <i>contra</i> , <i>hacia</i> , <i>sobre</i> el enemigo	to return <i>to</i> the enemy
robar (dinero) <i>á</i> alguno	to rob any one <i>of</i> (money)
rodar (el carro) <i>por</i> tierra	to overset (a cart)
rodear ( <i>á</i> alguno) <i>por</i> todas partes	to encompass (any one) <i>on</i> all sides
rodear (una plaza) <i>con</i> , <i>de</i> murallas	to surround a place <i>with</i> walls
rogar (alguna cosa) <i>á</i> alguno	to beg (any thing) <i>of</i> any one
romper <i>con</i> alguno	to break off <i>with</i> any one
romper <i>por</i> alguna parte	to break in any place
rosarse (una cosa) <i>con</i> otra	to rub (one thing) <i>against</i> another
rozarse <i>en</i> las palabras	to stammer in one's speech

## S.

saber <i>á</i> vino	to taste <i>like</i> wine
saber <i>de</i> trabajos	to be acquainted <i>with</i> trouble
sacar (una cosa) <i>á</i> la plaza	to take (any thing) <i>to</i> the market
sacar <i>de</i> alguna parte	to take any thing <i>from</i> any place
sacar <i>en</i> limpio	to clear up all doubts, to copy fair
sacrificar (alguna cosa) <i>á</i> Dios	to sacrifice any thing <i>to</i> God
sacrificarse <i>por</i> alguno	to sacrifice oneself <i>for</i> any one
salir <i>á</i> alguna cosa	to co-operate <i>in</i> anything
salir <i>con</i> la pretensión	to obtain one's aim
salir <i>contra</i> alguno	to go out <i>against</i> any one
salir <i>de</i> alguna parte	to go out <i>from</i> any place
salir <i>por</i> fiador	to appear <i>as</i> security.
saltar (una cosa) <i>á</i> la imaginación	(anything) to strike the imagination
saltar <i>de</i> el suelo	to leap <i>from</i> the ground
saltar <i>de</i> gozo	to leap <i>with</i> joy
saltar <i>en</i> tierra	to leap <i>on</i> the ground, <i>on</i> shore
salvar ( <i>á</i> alguno) <i>del</i> peligro	to save any one <i>from</i> danger
sanar <i>de</i> la enfermedad	to recover <i>from</i> sickness
satisfacer <i>por</i> las culpas	to atone <i>for</i> one's faults
satisfacerse <i>de</i> la duda	to be satisfied <i>for</i> the doubt
seguir <i>á</i> alguno <i>de</i> alguna parte	to separate (any one) <i>from</i> any place
segregar (una cosa) <i>de</i> otra	to separate one thing <i>from</i> another
seguirse (una cosa) <i>de</i> otra	(one thing) to follow <i>from</i> another
semejár, ó semejárse (una cosa) <i>á</i> otra	to liken (one thing) <i>to</i> another, to resemble
sentarse <i>en</i> la mesa	to sit down <i>to</i> table
sentarse <i>á</i> la silla	to sit down <i>in</i> the chair
sentenciár ( <i>á</i> uno) <i>á</i> destierro	to condemn one <i>to</i> exile
sentirse <i>de</i> algo	to be sensible <i>of</i> anything
separár (una cosa) <i>de</i> otra	to separate one thing <i>from</i> another
ser (una cosa) <i>á</i> gusto de todos	(any thing) to be <i>to</i> the taste of all
ser (una cosa) <i>de</i> , <i>para</i> algunos	(any thing) to be <i>to</i> or <i>for</i> some one
servir <i>de</i> mayordomo	to serve <i>as</i> a steward
servir <i>en</i> palacio	to be a servant <i>in</i> a palace
servirse <i>de</i> alguno	to make use <i>of</i> any one
sincerarse <i>de</i> alguna cosa	to clear one's self <i>from</i> something
sisár <i>de</i> la compra	to lessen the purchase
sitiado <i>de</i> enemigos	besieged <i>by</i> enemies

sitiar <i>por</i> hambre	to lay siege <i>by means of</i> hunger
situarse en alguna parte	to station oneself in any place
sobrellevar (los trabajos) <i>con</i> paciencia	to undergo (labours or troubles) <i>with</i> patience
sobrellevar (á alguno) <i>en</i> sus trabajos	to assist any one in his labours or troubles
sobrepujar (á alguno) <i>en</i> autoridad	to exceed any one in authority
sobresalir <i>en</i> galas	to surpass in dress
sobresalir <i>entre</i> todos	to excel <i>among</i> all
sobresaltarse <i>de</i> alguna cosa	to be started <i>at</i> any thing
sojuzgado <i>de</i> enemigos	subdued <i>by</i> enemies
someterse á alguno	to submit <i>to</i> any one
sonar (alguna cosa) á hueca	(any thing) to sound hollow
sonar (alguna cosa) <i>hacia</i> tal parte	(any thing) to sound <i>towards</i> such a side
sordo á las voces	deaf <i>to</i> the cries
sordo <i>de</i> un oido	deaf <i>with</i> one ear
sorprender (á alguno) <i>con</i> alguna cosa	to surprise (any one) <i>with</i> any thing
sorprenderle <i>en</i> alguna cosa	to surprise him in any thing
sorprendido <i>de</i> la bulla	surprised <i>by</i> the noise
sospechar (alguna cosa) <i>de</i> alguno	to suspect any one <i>of</i> (any thing)
sospechoso á alguno	suspected <i>by</i> any one
subdividir <i>en</i> partes	to subdivide <i>into</i> parts
subir á alguna parte	to go up <i>to</i> any place
subir <i>de</i> alguna parte	to go up <i>from</i> any place
subir <i>sobre</i> la mesa	to get <i>upon</i> the table
subrogar (una cosa) <i>en</i> lugar de otra	to substitute (one thing) <i>instead of</i> another
subsistir <i>del</i> auxilio ajeno	to subsist <i>by</i> others' aid
subsistir <i>en</i> el dictamen	to be firm in an opinion
sustituir á, <i>por</i> alguno	to substitute <i>for</i> any one
sustituir (un poder) <i>en</i> alguno	to substitute a power <i>to</i> any one
sustraerse <i>de</i> la obediencia	to withdraw oneself <i>from</i> subordination
sucedér (á alguno) <i>en</i> el empleo	to succeed (any one) in an employment, office
sufrir (los trabajos) <i>con</i> paciencia	to suffer troubles <i>with</i> patience
sugerir (alguna cosa) á alguno	to suggest any thing <i>to</i> any one
sugetarse á alguno, ó alguna cosa	to subject oneself <i>to</i> any one, or any thing
sumergir (alguna cosa) <i>en</i> el agua	to plunge any thing in the water
sumirse <i>en</i> alguna parte	to sink in any place
sumiso á la voluntad	submissive <i>to</i> the will
supeditado <i>de</i> los contrarios	suppressed <i>by</i> the enemies
superior á sus enemigos	superior <i>to</i> one's enemies
superior <i>en</i> luces	superior in talents
suplicar <i>de</i> la sentencia	to petition <i>against</i> the sentence
suplicar <i>por</i> alguno	to entreat <i>for</i> any one
suplir <i>por</i> alguno	to supply <i>for</i> any one
surgir (la nave) <i>en</i> el puerto	to ride (the vessel) at anchor in the port

surtir *de* viveres  
suspénso *de* oficio

aspirár *por* el mándo  
sustentárse *con* yerbas  
sustentárse *de* esperáncias

to supply *with* victuals  
suspended in the exercise *of* one's  
employment, office  
to aspire *after* command  
to feed *upon* herbs  
to sustain oneself *with* hopes

## T.

tachár (á algúno) *de* ligero  
temblár *de* frío  
temido *de* muchos  
temeroso *de* la muerte  
temible á los contrários  
templárse *en* comer  
tener (á uno) *por* otro  
tenérse *en* pie  
teñir *de* azul  
tirár *á*, *hacia* tal parte  
tirár *por* tal parte  
tiritár *de* frío  
titubeár *en* algúna cosa  
tocár (la heréncia) *á* algúno  
tocár *en* algúna parte  
tocado *de* enfermedad  
tomár *con*, *en* las manos  
tomár (una cosa) *de* tal modo  
tomár (una cosa) *á* uno  
torcido *de* cuerpo  
tornár *á* algúna parte  
tornár *de* algúna parte  
trabajár *en* algúna cosa  
trabajár *por* algúna cosa  
trabajár *por* otro  
trabár *de* algúno  
trabár (una cosa) *con* otra  
trabár *en* algúna cosa  
trabárse *de* palabras  
trabucárse *en* las palabras  
traér (algúna cosa) *á* algúna parte  
traér (algúna cosa) *de* algúna parte  
traficár *en* drogas  
transferir (algúna cosa) *á* otro  
tiempo  
transferirse *á* tal parte  
transfigurárse *en* otra cosa

transformár (una cosa) *en* otra  
transitár *por* algúna parte  
transpirár *por* todas partes  
transportár (algúna cosa) *á* algú-  
na parte  
transportár (algúna cosa) *de* algú-  
na parte

to accuse (any one) *of* levity  
to tremble *with* cold  
feared *by* many  
fearful *of* death  
dreadful *to* his enemies  
to be temperate *in* eating  
to take (one) *for* another  
to keep oneself *on* foot  
to dye *in* blue  
to draw *on* such a side  
to draw *towards* such a side  
to shiver *with* cold  
to waver *in* any thing  
(the inheritance) to fall *to* any one  
to touch, one any where  
touched *with* disease  
to take *with*, or *in* the hands  
to take any thing *in* such a manner  
to take anything *from* any one  
deformed *in* body  
to turn *to* such a side  
to turn *from* such a side  
to work *in* any thing  
to contend *for* anything  
to work *for* another  
to seize any one  
to join one thing *with* another  
to fall *on* any thing  
to quarrel *with* any one  
to mistake one's words  
to draw anything *to* any place  
to draw anything *from* any place  
to deal *in* drugs  
to transfer anything *to* another  
time  
to transport oneself *to* such a place  
to transform oneself *into* another  
thing  
to transform one thing *into* another  
to pass *by* any place  
to transpire *on* all sides  
to transport anything *to* any  
place  
to transport anything *from* any  
place

traspasar (alguna cosa) á alguno	to transfer something to another
traspasado de dolor	transfixed with grief
trasplantar (de una parte) á otra	to transplant from one place to another
tratar con alguno	to treat with any one
tratar de alguna cosa	to treat of any thing
tratar en lanas	to deal in wool
travesar con alguno	to behave improperly towards any one
triunfar de los enemigos	to triumph over the enemy
trocár (una cosa) por otra	to change one thing for another
tropezar en alguna cosa	to stumble on any thing

## U.

último de todos	the last of all
uncir (los buéyes) al carro	to yoke oxen to the cart
uniformar (una cosa) con otra	to make (one thing) uniform with another
unir (una cosa) á, con otra	to unite one thing with another
unirse en comunidad	to unite in a community
unirse entre sí	to be united together
uno de, entre muchos	one among many
útil á la patria	useful to the country
útil para tal cosa	useful for anything
utilizarse en, con alguna cosa	to draw advantage of anything

## V.

vacar al estudio	to attend to study
vaciar de alguna cosa	to be emptied from anything
vaciar por la boca	to tell what ought to be kept secret
vacilar en la elección	to hesitate in one's choice
vacilar entre la esperanza y el temor	to vacillate between hope and fear
vacio de entendimiento	addle-headed
vagar por el mundo	to wander through the world
valerse de alguno, de alguna cosa	to avail oneself of any one, or any thing
valuar (una cosa) en tal precio	to value anything at such a price
vanagloriarse de alguna cosa	to be puffed up with pride for any thing
vecino al trono,	near the throne
vecino de Antonio	near Anthony
velar á los muertos	to watch the dead
velar sobre alguna cosa	to watch over anything
vencerse á alguna cosa	to conquer oneself in anything
vencido de los contrarios	conquered by the enemy
venderse á alguno	to sell oneself to any one
vengarse de otro	to revenge oneself on another
venir á, de, por alguna parte,	to come to, from, or by any place
venir con alguno	to come with another
verse con alguno	to meet any one
verse en altura	to be in such a latitude, or high station



vestir á la moda	to dress in fashion
vestirse de paño	to be dressed in cloth
vigilar sobre sus súbditos	to watch over one's subjects
violentarse á, en alguna cosa	to be violent in anything
visible á, para todos	visible to all
vivir a su gusto	to live to one's taste
vivir con alguno	to live with any one
vivir de limosna	to live by alms
vivir por milagro	to live by a miracle
vivir sobre la haz de la tierra	to live without care
volar al cielo	to fly to heaven
volar por el aire	to fly in the air
volver á, de, hacia, por tal parte	to return to, from, towards, by such a place
volver por la verdad	to defend the truth
votar en el pleito	to vote in the trial
votar por alguno	to vote for any one

## Z.

zabullirse ó zambullirse en el agua	to plunge into the water
zafarse de alguna persona ó cosa	to escape any one or any thing
zambucarse en alguna parte	to hide oneself in any place
zampuzarse en agua	to dive into water
zapatearse con alguno	to scuffle with any one
zozobrar en la tormenta	to sink or founde in the storm

## CHAPTER IX.

## OF CONJUNCTIONS.

Conjunctions serve to join phrases, or parts of phrases together. They are indeclinable like the prepositions and adverbs. They are distinguished into *copulative*, *disjunctive*, *restrictive*, *adversative*, *conditional*, *causative* and *comparative*.

The *copulative* conjunctions serve to bring together several words or several members of a phrase under the same affirmation or negation.

Those denoting affirmative are,

1st. *Y, é, and.* Ex. *El valor y el honor son las dos principales dotes que caracterizan al héroe*, valour and honour are the two principal qualities that characterise a hero. *El señor B. es un hombre cruel é injusto*, Mr. B. is a cruel and unjust man.

2d. *También, also.* Ex. *Yá que vm. lo quiere, lo quiero también*, since you wish it, I also wish it.

3d. *Que*, that ; *Ex. Yá sé que vm. es amigo mío*, I know that you are my friend.

**RULE LXIV.**—*And* is translated in Spanish by *é*, and not by *y*, when the following word begins with an *i* or *y*; as, we shall go out at five o'clock, and go to the play, *saldremos á las cinco, é iremos á la comédia*; right and left, *derécho é izquierdo*.

The conjunctions that denote a negation are ; *ni*, nor ; *tampoco*, neither. *Ex. Ni retr, ni llorar puedo*, I can neither laugh, nor weep. *Yá que no sales, tampoco yó saldre*, since thou dost not go out, I shall not neither.

The *disjunctive* conjunctions denote an alternative, or distinction ; as, *ó*, *ú*, or ; *Ex. Juan ó Francisco*, John or Francis ; *entrár ó salir*, to go in or out ; *úno ú otro*, one or the other ; *Díex ú once*, ten or eleven.

**RULE LXV.**—*Or* is translated in Spanish by *ú*, if the following word begins with an *o*. *Ex. Siéte ú ocho hombres*, seven or eight men ; *Poéta ú orador*, poet or orator.

The *restrictive* conjunctions restrict, in any manner whatever, an idea or a proposition ; as, *sinó*, only, except. *Ex. No tengo náda que decirte, sinó que lo quiero*, I have nothing to tell him, except that I wish it.

The *adversative* conjunctions connect two prepositions, denoting an opposition in the second as respects the first ; as, *mas*, *péro*, but ; *no obstante*, nevertheless, yet, however ; *cuándo*, when ; *aunque*, *bién que*, though. *Ex. Quisiérea salir, mas no puedo*, I should wish to go out, but I cannot. *El dinero hace á los hombres ricos, péro no dichósos*, money makes men rich, but not happy. *Hábla la verdad, no obstante nádie le crée*, he speaks the truth, yet nobody believes him. *No haría una injusticia cuándo le importára un tróno*, he would not commit an injustice, though it might be worth to him a throne. *No es imprudente, bién que, or aunque parézca sérlo*, he is not imprudent, though he appears to be so.

The *conditional* conjunctions connect two members of speech by a supposition, or by denoting a condition : as, *si*, if ; *cómo*, *con tal que*, provided. *Ex. Si aspiras á ser dócto, estudia con perseverancia*, if thou aimest at being learned, study with perseverance. *Subrás ésta fábula á las doce, cómo or con tal que la estudies*, thou wilt know this fable at noon, provided thou study it.

The *causative* conjunctions serve to denote the cause of a

thing, or the reason for which it has been done, as *porqué*, because ; *pués*, *pués que*, since. Ex. *Débe el hombre evitar la ociosidad, porqué es la madre de todos los vicios*, man must shun idleness, because it is the mother of all vices. *Leeré este libro, pués vm. me dice que es bueno*, I shall read this book, since you tell me that it is good.

The *comparative* conjunctions serve to denote a relation or parity between two objects, or two propositions, such as, *cómo*, as ; *así cómo*, just as ; Ex. *La belleza es cómo la flor que se marchita el mismo día que la vió nacer*, beauty is as the flower that withers the same day that saw it bloom.

#### OF THE CONJUNCTIONS THAT GOVERN THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

The conjunctions which govern in the subjunctive the verb that follows them, are, *pára que*, in order that ; *afín de que*, to the end that ; *á no ser que*, *á ménos que*, unless ; *ánte que*, before that ; *cáso que*, *en cáso que*, in case that ; *aunque*, though ; *aún cuándo*, although ; *bién que*, though ; *hasta que*, till, until ; *dádo que*, grant, or suppose that ; *con tal que*, *cómo quitéra que*, provided that ; *por mas que*, *por mucho que*, however, whatever ; *siempre que*, whenever ; *Ojalá*, would to God ; Ex. *Bién que*, or *aunque la ambición sea un vicio, es no obstante la base de muchísimas virtudes*, though ambition be a vice, it is nevertheless the basis of a great many virtues. *Por mas sábios que sean, no conocen la causa de este efecto*, however enlightened they be, they do not know the cause of this effect. *El maestro se afána pára que* or *afín de que adelanten sus discípulos*, the master exerts himself to the end that his scholars may improve.

N. B. As we frequently make use of the second future and of the second and third conditionals, with the above conjunctions, see the rules 39, 40, 42, 43, 44, and 45, page 76 and following.

### CHAPTER X.

#### OF INTERJECTIONS.

INTERJECTIONS serve to express an emotion, or an affection of the mind, or to awake attention. *Ah ! ay ! he ! O ! Hóla ! ta ! chito ! éa ! sus ! táte !* The affections of the mind may be of grief, sadness, contempt, indignation, joy, or astonishment ; to express them we may indifferently make use of the following interjections, *ay ! ah ! O !* for, if we say,—*ay*

*que pena!* oh, what pain! *¡ah, que desgracia!* oh, what misfortune! *¡o desdichado de mí!* alas, unhappy me! we may also say,—*¡áy, que gozo!* ha, what delight! *¡áh, que alegría!* ha, what joy! *¡o, felices de nosotros!* ha, how happy we are! *¡O cielo!* oh heavens! *Ha! he! hola!* and *to!* serve to awaken attention. *He!* is also used to show that we have not understood what has been said. *Hóla* is sometimes an interjection of admiration, and *to* is hardly ever used except to call a dog; it is an abbreviation of *tóma*, take.—*Chíto*, hush, serves to impose silence. *En, vámos*, and *sus*, come, come on, are used to animate and excite courage.—*Táte, guarda!* take care! serves to prevent one's doing or saying something. *Viva!* huzza! *Hóla!* holla! ho ho! *Ótra vez!* encore! *váya!* come! *Quédo!* softly! *Vóto á!* zounds! *héteme aquí!* here I am! *he aquí!* here is, here are! *he allí!* there is! *héle aquí!* here he is! *hela allí!* there she is! *hélo, héla, hélos, hélas.*

NAMES OF COUNTRIES, ISLANDS, CAPES, AND SEAS.

	Nouns.		Adjectives.
Africa,	<i>África.</i>	African,	<i>Africano.</i>
Algiers,	<i>Argél.</i>	Algerine,	<i>Argelino.</i>
America,	<i>América.</i>	American,	<i>Americano.</i>
Anseatic (cities,)	<i>Anseáticas</i> ( <i>ciudades,</i> )	Anseatic,	<i>Anseático.</i>
Antilles, (the)	<i>Antillas, (las)</i>		
Arabia,	<i>Arábia.</i>	Arabian,	<i>Arabe, arabígo.</i>
Andalusia,	<i>Andalucía,</i>	Andalusian,	<i>Andalúz.</i>
Asia,	<i>Asia.</i>	Asiatic,	<i>Asiático.</i>
Austria,	<i>Austria.</i>	Austrian,	<i>Austriaco.</i>
Asturias,	<i>Asturias.</i>	Asturian,	<i>Asturiáno.</i>
The Azores,	<i>Las Azóras.</i>		
The Atlantic,	<i>El Atlántico.</i>		
The Baltic,	<i>El Báltico.</i>		
Barbary,	<i>Berbería, (cós-</i> <i>ta de.)</i>	Berberisk,	<i>Berberisco.</i>
Botany Bay,	<i>Bakta Botánica.</i>		
Bavaria,	<i>Baviéra.</i>	Bavarian,	<i>Bávaro.</i>
Biscay,	<i>Vizcaya.</i>	Biscayan,	<i>Vizcaíno.</i>
Bohemia,	<i>Bohémia.</i>	Bohemian,	<i>Bohémo.</i>
Bolívar, Bo-	<i>Bolivia.</i>	Bolivian,	<i>Boliviáno, Bo-</i>
livia,			<i>livéno.</i>

Brazil,	<i>Brasil.</i>	Brazilian,	<i>Brasilero.</i>
Great Britain,	<i>Gran Bretaña.</i>	British	<i>Británico.</i>
Brittany,	<i>Bretaña.</i>	Briton,	<i>Britón.</i>
Burgundy,	<i>Borgaña.</i>	Burgundian,	<i>Borgoñés.</i>
British Channel (the,) (La)	<i>máncha.</i>		
Canary Islands,	<i>Canárias (Islas.)</i>		
Cape of Good Hope,	<i>Cábo de Buéna Esperanza.</i>		
Cape Horn,	<i>Cábo de Hornos.</i>		
Catalonia,	<i>Cataluña.</i>	Catalonian,	<i>Catalán.</i>
China,	<i>China.</i>	Chinese,	<i>Chino, Chintesco.</i>
Castile (Old and New,)	<i>Castilla (la vieja y nueva.)</i>	Castilian,	<i>Castellano.</i>
Cantabria,			<i>Cántabro.</i>
Chili,	<i>Chile.</i>	Chilian,	<i>Chileno.</i>
Colombia,	<i>Colombia.</i>	Colombian,	<i>Colombiano.</i>
Córdoba,			<i>Cordobés.</i>
Corsica,	<i>Córcega.</i>	Coisican,	<i>Córso.</i>
Dauphiny,	<i>Delfinado.</i>	Dauphin,	<i>Delfino.</i>
Denmark,	<i>Dinamarca.</i>	Dane,	<i>Dinamarqués.</i>
Deux Ponts,	<i>Dos Puétes.</i>		
Egypt,	<i>Egipto.</i>	Egyptian,	<i>Egiptcio.</i>
Estremadura,			<i>Estreméño.</i>
Europe,	<i>Európa.</i>	European,	<i>Européo.</i>
England,	<i>Inglaterra.</i>	English,	<i>Inglés.</i>
Fernandez masafuero, (island,)	<i>Fernández mas á fuera,</i>		
Finland,	<i>Finlândia.</i>	Finlander,	<i>Finlandés.</i>
Finisterre (Cape,)	<i>Finistierra, (Cábo.)</i>		
Flanders,	<i>Flándes.</i>	Flemish,	<i>Flamenco.</i>
France,	<i>Francia.</i>	French,	<i>Francés.</i>
FranchComté,	<i>Fráncó Condádo.</i>		
Georgia,	<i>Jorgia.</i>	Georgian,	<i>Jorgiano.</i>
Galicis,	<i>Galicia.</i>	Galician,	<i>Gallégo.</i>
Germany,	<i>Alemania.</i>	German,	<i>Alemán.</i>
Granada,			<i>Granadino.</i>
Greenland,	<i>Groenlánd.</i>	Greenlander,	<i>Groenlandés.</i>
Greece,	<i>Grécia.</i>	Greek,	<i>Griego.</i>
Guatemala,	<i>Guatemala.</i>	Guatemalan,	<i>Guatemallégo,</i>
Holland,	<i>Holanda.</i>	Hollander or Dutch,	<i>Holandés.</i>
Hungary,	<i>Hungria.</i>	Hungarian,	<i>Húngaro.</i>
Iceland,	<i>Islândia.</i>	Icelandic,	<i>Islandés.</i>
Ireland,	<i>Irlanda.</i>	Irish,	<i>Irlandés.</i>
Indies (East and West,)	<i>Indias (Orientales y Occidentales.)</i>		
Ionian (Islands,)	<i>Iónicas (Islas.)</i>		

Italy,	<i>Itália.</i>	Italian,	<i>Italiáno.</i>
Japan,	<i>Japón.</i>	Japanese,	<i>Japonés.</i>
Leon,			<i>Leonés.</i>
Lombardy,	<i>Lombardía.</i>	Lombard,	<i>Lombardo.</i>
Levant,	<i>Leránte.</i>	Levantine,	<i>Levantino.</i>
Madeira,	<i>Madéra.</i>		
Mauritius,	<i>Maurício.</i>		
Malta,	<i>Málta.</i>	Maltese,	<i>Maltés.</i>
Mediterranean,	<i>Mediterráneo.</i>		
Mexico,	<i>Mégico.</i>	Mexican,	<i>Megicáno.</i>
Montaña,			<i>Montañés.</i>
Morocco,	<i>Marruécós.</i>	Moorish,	<i>Móro, Marruéco.</i>
Murcia			<i>Murciáno.</i>
Navarre,	<i>Navarra.</i>	Navarrese,	<i>Navárro.</i>
Newfoundland,	<i>Térra Nôva.</i>		
Normandy,	<i>Normandia.</i>		
Norway,	<i>Norvéga.</i>	Norwegian,	<i>Norvegiáno.</i>
Naples,	<i>Nápoles.</i>	Neapolitan,	<i>Napolitano.</i>
Netherlands,	<i>Países bájos.</i>	Dutch,	<i>Holandés.</i>
Pacific (Ocean),	<i>Pacífico (Océano.)</i>		
Palatinate,	<i>Palatinádo.</i>	Palatine,	<i>Palatino.</i>
Persia,	<i>Pérsia.</i>	Persian,	<i>Pérsa, Persiáno.</i>
Peru,	<i>Perú.</i>	Peruvian,	<i>Peruáno.</i>
Picardy,	<i>Picardía.</i>		
Piedmont,	<i>Piamónte.</i>	Piedmontése,	<i>Piamontés.</i>
Poland,	<i>Polónia.</i>	Pole,	<i>Poláco.</i>
Portugal,	<i>Portugál.</i>	Portuguése,	<i>Portugués.</i>
Provinces (United,)	<i>Provincias (Unidas.)</i>		
Provinces (of River la Plate,)	<i>Provincias (del río de la Pláta.)</i>		
Prussia,	<i>Prúsia.</i>	Argentine,	<i>Argentino.</i>
Porto Rico,	<i>Puértó Ríco.</i>	Prussian,	<i>Prusiáno.</i>
		Porto Rican,	<i>Puértó Riqué- ño, Portéño.</i>
Rhodes,	<i>Ródas.</i>	Rhodian,	<i>Rodiáno.</i>
Ragusa,	<i>Ragúsa.</i>	Ragusian,	<i>Ragusés.</i>
Red (Sea,)	<i>Rájo, Berméjo (mar.)</i>		
Russia,	<i>Rúsia.</i>	Russian,	<i>Rúso.</i>
Salvador,			<i>Salvadoréno.</i>
St. Vincent (Cape,)	<i>San Vicénte, (Cábo.)</i>		
St. Domingo,	<i>Santo Domíngo.</i>		
Sardinia,	<i>Cerdéna.</i>	Sardinian,	<i>Sárdo.</i>
Savoy,	<i>Savóya.</i>	Savoyard,	<i>Savoyárdo.</i>

Saxony,	<i>Sajónia.</i>	Saxon,	<i>Sajón.</i>
Scotland,	<i>Escócia.</i>	Scotch,	<i>Escotés.</i>
Sicily,	<i>Sicília.</i>	Sicilian,	<i>Siciliáno.</i>
Sweden,	<i>Suécia.</i>	Swede,	<i>Suéco.</i>
Switzerland,	<i>Suíza.</i>	Swiss,	<i>Suízo.</i>
Sound (the),	<i>Súnda (la.)</i>		
Spain,	<i>España.</i>	Spanish, Span-	<i>Español.</i>
		iard,	
Tartary,	<i>Tartária.</i>	Tartar,	<i>Tártara.</i>
Table Bay,	<i>Bahía de Tábla.</i>		
Turkey,	<i>Turquia.</i>	Turk,	<i>Túrco.</i>
United States,	<i>Estados Unidos.</i>	American,	<i>Americána.</i>
Valencia,	<i>Valéncia.</i>	Valencian	<i>Valenciáno.</i>
Venezuela,	<i>Venezuela.</i>	Venezuelian,	<i>Venezoláno.</i>
Zealand,	<i>Celanda.</i>	Zealander,	<i>Celandés.</i>

---

NAMES OF CITIES, MOUNTAINS AND RIVERS.

Aix-la-Chap-	<i>Aquiegrána.</i>	Cherbourg,	<i>Cherbúrgo.</i>
elle,		Cologne,	<i>Colónia.</i>
Alicant,	<i>Alicánte.</i>	Coblentz,	<i>Coblénza.</i>
Alps (the),	<i>Alpes (los.)</i>	Constantino-	<i>Constantinó-</i>
Antwerp,	<i>Ambrés.</i>	ple,	<i>pla.</i>
Antioch,	<i>Antióquia.</i>	Copenhagen,	<i>Copenháguo.</i>
Andes (the),	<i>Andes (los.)</i>	Corunna,	<i>Corúña.</i>
Amazon (the),	<i>Amazónas (las.)</i>	Chimborazo,	<i>Chimborázo.</i>
Appenines	<i>Apenínas (los.)</i>	Dover,	<i>Dúvre.</i>
(the),		Dresden,	<i>Drésde.</i>
Basle,	<i>Basiléa.</i>	Downs (the),	<i>Dúnas (las.)</i>
Bayonne,	<i>Bayóna.</i>	Danube (the),	<i>Danúbio (el.)</i>
Berne,	<i>Bërna.</i>	Edinburgh,	<i>Edinburgo.</i>
Bordeaux,	<i>Burdós.</i>	Florence,	<i>Floréncia.</i>
Bilboa,	<i>Bilbáa.</i>	Genoa,	<i>Génova.</i>
Boulogne,	<i>Bolóna.</i>	Geneva,	<i>Ginébra.</i>
Breslaw,	<i>Bresláa.</i>	Gibraltar	<i>Gibraltár, (Es-</i>
Bruges,	<i>Brújas.</i>	(Straits of),	<i>trécha de.)</i>
Brussels,	<i>Brusélas.</i>	Hague (the),	<i>Háya (la.)</i>
Buenos Ayres,	<i>Buénos Aires.</i>	Hamburg,	<i>Hambúrga.</i>
Cairo,	<i>Cáiro (el.)</i>	Havana,	<i>Habána.</i>
Calais,	<i>Calés.</i>	Leipzig,	<i>Lípsia.</i>
Cape François,	<i>Guatíco (el.)</i>	Liege,	<i>Léja.</i>

Leghorn,	<i>Liorna,</i>	Pyrenees(the,)	<i>Pirinéos (los.)</i>
Lille,	<i>Lila.</i>	Providence,	<i>Providéncia.</i>
London,	<i>Lóndres.</i>	Prague,	<i>Prága.</i>
Lyons,	<i>León (deFrán-</i>	Roncesvauz,	<i>Roncesváles.</i>
	<i>cia.</i>	Rome,	<i>Róma.</i>
Lisbon,	<i>Lisboa.</i>	Rhone (the)	<i>Rhódano (el)</i>
Marseilles,	<i>Marsélla.</i>	Saragóssa,	<i>Zaragóza.</i>
Mountain	<i>Sierra (Moré-</i>	Stockholm,	<i>Stocólm.</i>
(Brown)	<i>na.)</i>	Seville,	<i>Sevilla.</i>
Mentz,	<i>Magúncia.</i>	St. Andero,	<i>Santander.</i>
Meuse,	<i>Mósa.</i>	Seine (the,)	<i>Séna, (la.)</i>
Nile (the,)	<i>Nílo, (el.)</i>	Scheld (the,)	<i>Escáldo (el)</i>
New York,	<i>Núeva York.</i>	Trent,	<i>Trénta.</i>
New Orleans,	<i>Núeva Orleáns.</i>	Thames (the,)	<i>Tamisa (la.)</i>
Petersburgh	<i>Petersbúrgo</i>	Venice,	<i>Venécia.</i>
(St.)	<i>(San.)</i>	Vienna,	<i>Viéna.</i>
Philadelphia,	<i>Filadélfia.</i>	Warsaw,	<i>Vareóvia.</i>

CHRISTIAN NAMES, MOST USED.

Albert,	<i>Albéto.</i>	Candid,	<i>Cándido.</i>
Alexander,	<i>Alejandro.</i>	Casimir,	<i>Casimiro.</i>
Alexis,	<i>Aléjo.</i>	Catherine,	<i>Catalina.</i>
Alphonso,	<i>Alfonso.</i>	Charles,	<i>Cárlas.</i>
Ambrose,	<i>Ambrósio.</i>	Charlotte,	<i>Carlóta.</i>
Andrew,	<i>Andrés.</i>	Christopher,	<i>Cristóbal.</i>
Ann,	<i>Ana.*</i>	Clement,	<i>Clemente.</i>
Antony,	<i>António.</i>	Cornelius,	<i>Cornélio.</i>
Athanasius,	<i>Atanásio.</i>	Dyonisius,	<i>Dionísio.</i>
Augustin,	<i>Agustín.</i>	Dominico,	<i>Domíngo.</i>
Augustus,	<i>Agústio.</i>	Dorothy,	<i>Dorotéa.</i>
Bartholomew,	<i>Bartolomé.</i>	Edward,	<i>Eduardo.</i>
Basil,	<i>Basilio.</i>	Elisha,	<i>Eliséo.</i>
Baptist,	<i>Bautista.</i>	Eugene,	<i>Eugénio.</i>
Benedict,	<i>Benito.</i>	Eusebius,	<i>Eusébio.</i>
Bernard,	<i>Bernardo.</i>	Eustach,	<i>Eustáquio.</i>
Blaise,	<i>Blas.</i>	Eleonor,	<i>Leonór.</i>
Boniface,	<i>Bonifácio.</i>	Faustus,	<i>Fáusto.</i>
Camillus,	<i>Camilo.</i>	Ferdinand,	<i>Fernando.</i>

\* N.B. Though the last syllable of *Santo* before a christian name is generally suppressed, this is only in the masculine, for it is not in the feminine, the letter *o* is only changed into a *a* in adjectives. See page 48. Ex. *Santa Ana, Santa Catalina, &c.*



Florent,	<i>Floréncio.</i>	Matthew,	<i>Matéo.</i>
Francis,	<i>Francisco.</i>	Maurice,	<i>Maurício.</i>
Frederic,	<i>Federico.</i>	Michael,	<i>Miguél.</i>
Fulgence,	<i>Fulgéncio.</i>	Moses,	<i>Moisés.</i>
Gaetan,	<i>Cayetano.</i>	Narcissus,	<i>Narciso.</i>
George,	<i>Jorge.</i>	Nathan,	<i>Natán.</i>
Godfrey,	<i>Godefrédo.</i>	Nicasius,	<i>Nicásio.</i>
Gregory,	<i>Gregório.</i>	Oliver,	<i>Olivério.</i>
Grace,	<i>Grácia.</i>	Patrick,	<i>Patrício.</i>
Helen,	<i>Eléna.</i>	Paul,	<i>Páblo.</i>
Henry,	<i>Enrique.</i>	Philip,	<i>Felipe.</i>
Hugh,	<i>Hugo.</i>	Peter,	<i>Pédro.</i>
Hyacinthus,	<i>Jacinto.</i>	Pius,	<i>Pío.</i>
Ignatius,	<i>Ignácio.</i>	Rachael,	<i>Raquél.</i>
Isabel,	<i>Isabel.</i>	Raphael,	<i>Rafaél.</i>
Isidorus,	<i>Isidro.</i>	Raymond,	<i>Raimundo.</i>
James,	<i>Jáime, Jacobo,</i>	Remy,	<i>Remigio.</i>
	<i>Diégo, San-</i>	Reynold,	<i>Reinaldo.</i>
	<i>tiágo.</i>	Roch,	<i>Róque.</i>
Janarius,	<i>Genáro.</i>	Richard,	<i>Ricardo.</i>
Jeremy,	<i>Geremías.</i>	Robert,	<i>Roberto.</i>
Jonathan,	<i>Jonatás.</i>	Roger,	<i>Rogério.</i>
John,	<i>Juán.</i>	Sarah,	<i>Sára.</i>
Jane,	<i>Juána.</i>	Sophia,	<i>Sofía.</i>
Jerome,	<i>Gerónimo.</i>	Susan,	<i>Susána.</i>
Joachim,	<i>Joaquín.</i>	Stephen,	<i>Estéban.</i>
Joseph,	<i>José.</i>	Sixtus,	<i>Sésto.</i>
Josephine,	<i>Josefina.</i>	St. Telmo,	<i>San Télmo.</i>
Joshua,	<i>Josué.</i>	Thaddeus,	<i>Tadéo.</i>
Lawrence,	<i>Lorénzo.</i>	Theodore,	<i>Teodóro.</i>
Lazarus,	<i>Lázaro.</i>	Theresa,	<i>Terésa.</i>
Leander,	<i>Leandro.</i>	Thomas,	<i>Tomás.</i>
Lucy,	<i>Lucía.</i>	Theophilus,	<i>Teófilo.</i>
Luke,	<i>Lúcas.</i>	Timothy,	<i>Timotéo.</i>
Lewis,	<i>Luis.</i>	Victoria,	<i>Victória.</i>
Mark,	<i>Márcos.</i>	Victorianus,	<i>Victoriáno.</i>
Marcellus,	<i>Marcéle.</i>	Vincent,	<i>Vicénte.</i>
Margaret,	<i>Margaríta.</i>	William,	<i>Guillermo.</i>
Mary & Maria,	<i>Maria.</i>	Walter,	<i>Gualtéro.</i>

A

**GRAMMAR**  
OF THE  
**SPANISH LANGUAGE,**  
WITH  
**PRACTICAL EXERCISES.**

**The First Part**

Containing a List of the Abbreviations which are frequently found in writing and books; A Treatise on Pronunciation and Alterations in Orthography, founded upon the latest Rules established by the Academy of Madrid; Comparative Rules of the Spanish and English Languages; A general Scheme of the Terminations of Regular Verbs; An alphabetical List of the Irregular Verbs, conjugated in their order; A Table, illustrating the use of Prepositions in Spanish; Lists of the Names of different Countries, Islands, Capes, Seas, Rivers, Cities, and Christian Names.

**The Second Part**

Containing a Collection of Exercises interlined; a Vocabulary; Familiar Phrases and Dialogues; a Treatise on Spanish Versification; Spanish Extracts, &c. the whole carefully accented.

—◆—  
BY M. JOSSE.

—◆—  
REVISED, AMENDED, IMPROVED, AND ENLARGED,  
BY F. SALES.

*Instructor of French and Spanish at Harvard University, Cambridge.*

—◆—  
**THIRD AMERICAN EDITION.**  
—◆—

“*PEU DE PRÉCEPTES, ET BEAUCOUP DE PRATIQUE.*”

---

**SECOND PART.**

---

**BOSTON:**  
**MUNROE AND FRANCIS, 128 WASHINGTON-STREET,**  
**CORNER OF WATER-STREET.**

—◆—  
1827.

DISTRICT OF MASSACHUSETTS, TO WIT :

*District Clerk's Office.*

BE it remembered, that on the eighteenth day of August, A. D. 1827, and in the fifty second year of the Independence of the United States of America, F. SALES, of the said District, has deposited in this office the title of a book, the right whereof he claims as Proprietor, in the words following, to wit :

"A GRAMMAR of the SPANISH LANGUAGE, with Practical EXERCISES. The First Part containing a list of the Abbreviations which are frequently found in writing and books; A Treatise on pronunciation and alterations in Orthography, founded upon the latest rules established by the Academy of Madrid; Comparative rules of the Spanish and English Languages; A general scheme of the terminations of Regular Verbs; An Alphabetical List of the Irregular Verbs, conjugated in their order; A Table, illustrating the use of Prepositions in Spanish; Lists of the names of different Countries, Islands, Capes, Seas, Rivers, Cities, and Christian Names. The Second Part containing a Collection of Exercises interlined; A Vocabulary; Familiar Phrases and Dialogues; a Treatise on Spanish Versification; Spanish Extracts, &c. *the whole* carefully accented. By M. JOSSE. Revised, amended, improved, and enlarged, by F. SALES, Instructor of French and Spanish at Harvard University, Cambridge. Third American Edition. '*Peu de préceptes, et beaucoup de pratique.*'"

In conformity to the act of the Congress of the United States, entitled, "An act for the encouragement of learning, by securing the copies of maps, charts and books, to the authors and proprietors of such copies, during the times therein mentioned;" and also to an act, entitled, "An act supplementary to an act, entitled an act for the encouragement of learning, by securing the copies of maps, charts, and books, to the authors and proprietors of such copies during the times therein mentioned; and extending the benefits thereof to the arts of designing, engraving, and etching, historical and other prints."

JOHN W. DAVIS, *Clerk of the District of Massachusetts.*

# SPANISH EXERCISES,

ADAPTED

TO THE FUNDAMENTAL PRINCIPLES ESTABLISHED BY  
THE ACADEMY OF MADRID.

WITH

*References to the rules which are to serve for their translation; notes explanatory of the idiomatic differences between the two languages, and of all the important difficulties.*

---

## EXPLANATION of the SIGNS which are found in the Spanish Exercises.

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| m. Masculine.  | Spanish under them between parentheses, thus ( )   |
| f. Feminine.   | Two or more English words put within a parenthesis, thus ( ) are expressed by the Spanish placed under them.   |
| n. Neuter.   |  |
| p. Plural.   | The gender of nouns is not laid down when the article definite is not required; but is, however, put down, whenever there is an adjective or a pronoun agreeing with the noun, independently of any article. |
| irr. Irregular.  |  |
| * The star denotes that the word, under which it is found, must not be translated.   |  |
| 1-2-3-4 &c. The numbers indicate the order in which words must be placed in Spanish.   |  |
| Two or three English words, having the same number, are expressed by the   |  |
| N. B. Having made known, in all the Exercises, the rules to which they relate, we advise the scholar never to translate before he has read over carefully the rules and examples referred to. If he consults them with attention, we feel confident that he will easily overcome any difficulties the translating may present. |  |
- 

## EXERCISE I.

*See Rules I. and II. and the gender of nouns, p. 27, 28, of the Grammar.*

The man, the woman, the child, the husband,  
*hombre, m. muger, f. niño, m. marido, m.*  
the wife and the maid. The book, the paper,  
*esposa y criada, f. libro, m. papel, m.*  
the pen, the ink and the penknife. The table,  
*pluma, f. tinta, f. cortaplumas, m. (1) mesa, f.*  
the chair, the chamber, the door and the window,  
*silla, f. cuarto, m. puerta, f. ventana, f.*

---

(1) The noun *cortaplumas* is the same in both numbers; we say *el* and *los cortaplumas*.

The city, the house, the palace and the shop,  
*ciudad, f. casa, f. palacio, m. tienda, f.*  
 The country, the husbandman and the shepherd.  
*campo, m. labrador, m. y pastor, m.*  
 The grass, the hay, the straw and the corn.  
*yerva, f. heno, m. paja, f. trigo, m.*  
 The sheep, the fleece, the cow, the milk and the butter.  
*ovéja, f. tusón, m. vaca, f. leche, f. manteca, f.*  
 The heifer, the calf and the bull. The oak, the elm,  
*becerra, f. ternero, m. toro, m. encina, f. olmo, m.*  
 the poplar and the willow. The chesnut, the apple and  
*álamo, m. sauce, m. castaño, m. manzano, m.*  
 the pear-trees. The chesnut, the apple and the pear.  
*peral, m. castaña, f. manzana, f. pera, f.*  
 The cock, the hen, and the chicken. The horse,  
*gallo, m. gallina, f. pollo, m. caballo, m.*  
 the mare and the jack. The loaf, the meat, the fish,  
*yégua, f. asno, m. pan, m. carne, f. pescado, m.*  
 the wine, the cider and the beer. The chocolate,  
*vino, m. cidra, f. cerveza, f. chocolate, m.*  
 the tea and coffee. The sugar, the salt, and the pepper.  
*té, m. café, m. azúcar, m. sal, f. pimienta, f.*  
 France; Germany, Russia, Navarre, Biscay and  
*Francia, f. Alemania, f. Rusia, f. Navarra, f. Vizcaya, f.*  
 Andalusia. The master, (1) the mistress, the soul,  
*Andalucía, f. amo, m. ama, f. alma, f.*  
 the bird, the wing, the eagle and the water;  
*ave, f. ala, f. águila, f. agua, f.*  
 hunger, Africa, Asia. (2)  
*hambre, f.*

## EXERCISE II.

See Rule II. page 27; Rules III. and IV. page 28; the two N. B. following, and Rules V. and VI. page 29.

The kingdom of France, the king of England, the  
*reino, m. rey, m. Inglaterra,*

(1) The following are nearly all the nouns that take the article *el* for *la* before a vowel or an *h*. See 1st Rule, p. 27.

(2) See names of countries, &c. page 196 and following.

queen of Portugal. The province of Navarre. The  
*reina, f. Portugal. provincia, f. Navarra.*  
 bay of Biscay. I (shall go) to Italy. Thou (wilt come) to  
*bahía, f. Yó iré Tú vendrás*  
 England. He (will return) to Spain. I (shall send) to  
*Él volverá Yó enviaré*  
 Catalonia. I am in the garden. He (will be) at home. (1)  
*Cataluña. Yó estoy jardín, m. Él estará*  
 We (shall be) in the cellar. Mr. de Campo, Madam  
*Nosotros estaremos bodega, f. Señor Señora*  
 Solis and Miss Rosas. The servant of the Count de  
*Señorita criado, m. Conde, m.*  
 Noroña, and the chambermaid of the marchioness de  
*Noroña camarera, f. marquesa, f.*  
 Montehermoso. Sir, the Countess is in the garden. Miss  
*Condesa, f. está*  
 Frances Pedreras. The bishop of Saint Andero. (2) Mr.  
*Francisca obispo, m.*  
 Francis Peredo, secretary of the consulate of the city of  
*Francisco secretario consulado, m.*  
 Saint Andero. Mr. Velasco, knight of the royal order of  
*caballero real orden, f.*  
 Charles Third, member of the supreme (3) council of  
*Cárlos Tercero, miembro supremo consejo, m.*  
 Castille and of the royal academy of history. The good,  
*Castilla academia, f. historia, f. bueno, n.*  
 the useful and the agreeable. The sweet, the sour and  
*útil, n. agradable, n. dulce, n. ácido, n.*  
 the bitter.  
*amargo, n.*

## EXERCISE III.

*See Rule VIII. page 31, and the gender of nouns considered in regard to their terminations, page 37.*

The men, the women, the children, the husbands, the wives and the servants. The books, the pens and the pen-

(1) In this phrase and others similar, the word *casa* never takes an article. Consequently, we say : *estar en casa* , *ir á casa* ; to be at home, to go home, and not *estar en la casa* ; *ir á la casa*.

(2) See names of Cities, &c. page 198.

(3) Adjectives generally follow substantives. See p. 39.

knives. The chambers, the tables, the chairs, the doors and the windows. The towns, the houses, the palaces and the shops. The fields, the husbandmen and the shepherds. The sheep and the cows. The heifers, the calves and the bulls. The oaks, the elms, the poplars and the willows. The chestnut trees, the apple trees and the pear trees. The cocks, the hens and the chickens. The horses, the mares and the asses. The roses and the gilliflowers.

*rosa, f. alelí, m.*

The maravedis, the sous and the louis. The rubies  
*maravedí, m. suélda, m. luís, m. rubí, m.*

are precious<sup>2</sup> stones<sup>1</sup> of a red<sup>1</sup> colour.<sup>2</sup> The kingdoms

*\* encendido*

of France and Spain, the provinces of Normandy and Picardy. (1) Messrs. Peter and John Pineda. My ladies de

*Pédro Juan*

Isla. The young ladies Mary and Frances de Villatorre.

*María*

The sisters of the young ladies Floridablanca. The  
*hermana, f.*

brothers of the Count de Meléndez Valdés. The poem  
*hermano, m.*

of the Araucana, by Alonzo de Ercilla. The climates.

*f. Alónso clima, m.*

The dogmas of religion. The epigrams of Messrs.

*dógma, m. religión, f. epigrama, m.*

John de Iriarte and Joseph Iglesias. Truth is

*José verdad, f. es*

a celestial<sup>2</sup> manna.<sup>1</sup> An action worthy of praise. The

*un (2) celéste maná, m. acción, f. digno alabanza.*

ambition of men. The observations. The humanity

*ambición, f. observación, f. humanidad, f.*

and generosity of <sup>2</sup>sensible souls.<sup>1</sup> The purity of the

*generosidad, f. sensible álma, f. pureza, f.*

heart. Constancy in adversity. The amiability,

*corazón, m. constancia, f. en adversidad, f. amabilidad, f.*

the simplicity and the goodness of Mrs. Wilson.

*simplicidad, f. bondad, f.*

(1) See page 195, and following.

(2) *Uno* always drops the *o*, when it is followed by a masculine substantive. *Una*, feminine of *uno* never drops any letter. (See Rule XXV, page 48.)

## EXERCISE IV.

See the formation of the feminine of nouns adjective, their collocation, and their agreement with the substantive, page 38 and 39.

The climate of Spain is (1) warm. The houses  
*es caliente. casa, f.*  
 of Paris are high. The English women are handsome.  
*Paris son alto. Inglés mugér, f. hermoso*  
 Emulation is a passion worthy of a noble soul. Virtue is  
*emulación, f. pasión, f. digno noble alma, f. virtud, f.*  
 amiable. Idleness is despicable. Bread is dear: Man  
*amable. pereza, f. despreciable. pan, m. caro.*  
 is mortal. Prudence is a precious virtue. Madam Vial is  
*mortal. prudencia, f. precioso*  
 a charming woman. Miss Peredó is sensible, charitable,  
*agradable sensible caritativo*  
 pretty and well educated. Holland is a rich country.  
*lindo bien criado. Holanda, f. es rico país, m.*  
 The sister of the corregidor is happy and his brother is  
*corregidor, m. es feliz su*  
 unhappy. The cousin of Peter is slothful, and the niece  
*infeliz. prima, f. haragán sobrina, f.*  
 of Andrew is idle. My Lord (2) the prince of Peace is  
*Andrés holgazán. príncipe, m. Paz, f.*  
 a Biscayan, and my lady the duchess of Almariva is an  
*\* Viscaino, duquesa, f. \**  
 Andalusian. The wife of Mr. Charles Ponteverde is an  
*Andalúz. esposa, f. Don \**  
 Aragonese. The servant of the Spanish consul is an  
*Aragonés. criada, f. Español cónsul, m.*  
 English woman. The father, the mother and the  
*Inglés padre, m. madre, f.*  
 children are sick. The brother and sister are idle.  
*niño, m. están ser*  
 The ink, the pens and the paper are dear. The window  
 and the door are shut. The house is high, large and well  
*cerrado. es alto, grande bien*

(1) See Rule XLIX page 95, when we ought to translate the verb to be by *ser*, and when by *estar*; and the Appendix page 459.

(2) See Rule V. page 29.



adorned. The (vegetable and fruit garden) and the parterre  
*adornado. huerto, f. huerto, m. jardín, m.*  
 of the duke de Alcudia are well cultivated. The country (1)  
*son cultivado.*  
 house of the father of Miss Louisa Alameda, is pretty but  
*Louisa es lindo pero*  
 small.  
*pequeño.*

## EXERCISE V.

See Rules IX. X. and XI. page 35.

The English drink beer, good wine, excellent tea, and  
*bében cerveza, bueno vino, m. excelente*  
 eat potatoes. I have (2) sugar, coffee, and cream, Bread,  
*comen patata. Yo tengo azúcar, café. nata*  
 meat and water are things necessary to man. We have  
*cosa, f. necesario tenemos*  
 pens, paper and ink. Take of the bread and butter of  
*pluma, papel, tinta. Toma manteca, f.*  
 Nicolas. I will give<sup>a</sup> you<sup>a</sup> some cherries that I have bought.  
*Nicolás. dare te guinda, f. que he comprado.*  
 To-morrow I (shall make) visits: I (shall go) to see some  
*manana haré visita ire á ver á*  
 friends. Mr. Augustin Vial has<sup>a</sup> lent<sup>a</sup> me<sup>a</sup> some books.  
*amigo, m. Don Agustín ha prestado me libro, m.*  
 The father of Miss Puente has good friends and  
*Señorita amigo, m.*  
 excellent protectors. The friend of Madam Torres  
*excelente protector. amiga, f.*  
 gives wise and prudent advice to your sister. I have  
*da sabio prudente consejo tu tengo*  
 white stockings, blue shoes, and a grey hat.  
*blanco media, f. azul zapato, m. pardo sombrero, m.*

(1) The word country is *pais, región*; and is rendered by *campaña* only when we speak of a great extent of level, open country, and when it relates to troops and armies; in the other cases, it is rendered by *campo*. We say then a country house, *una casa de campo*. The fields are rich, *son ricos los campos*.

(2) The verb to have is rendered by *tener* whenever it denotes the possession of an object, and by *haber* when it is an auxiliary. See the notes to the conjugation of these two verbs, pages 82 and 86, and the Appendix page 459.

## EXERCISE VI.

*See Rules XII, XIII, XIV, XV, XVI and XVII,  
pages 39, 40, 41, 42;*

The brother of Charles Martinez de Irujo, Secretary  
*Cárlos* *Secretario*  
of the embassy to London has a pretty little country  
*embajáda, f. en* *tiéne*  
house, and the son of his Excellency (1) my lord the  
Marquis del Campo has a little parrot and a pretty little  
*papagáyo, m.*  
cage. This young gentleman is well educated. I have  
*jáula, f.* *criádo, tengo*  
some little birds and a pretty little squirrel. Mr. D. is  
an ugly little man and his wife is an ugly little woman.  
*su esposa*

Peter is more wise and more prudent than John ; but less ingenious than he. Mr. de Casa Nueva is richer than his

cousin, but his cousin is not so proud as (2) he. The  
city of London is more populous than that of Paris.  
*Londres* *primo, m.* *orgulloso* *noblido* *la*

The streets of London are wider than those of Madrid.

He is more lazy than his brother. I am more tranquil  
*perezoso* *Estoy tranquilo*  
 here than in the garden. She is not so happy as her  
*aquí*  
 sister. Madam Costillas is not so old as Madam Delpuente.

What a large woman ! what a large, ugly man ! The  
que,

(1) *His excellency my lord* cannot be translated literally in Spanish: translate as if it was *the most excellent lord* and say *el excelentísimo señor*—and add *Don* when the christian name of the person is expressed.

(2) See, in the grammar, after Rule XIV, page 40, the note relative to the manner of translating *as* in the different degrees of comparison.

Spanish soldier is not less brave than the Turk. The  
 Biscayans and the Catalonians are brave and (1) intrepid.  
*Vizcaínos Catalán, m. valiente intrépido*  
 You are as lively as he. He is as learned as his eldest  
*Tú eres vivo él docto mayor*  
 brother.

## EXERCISE VII.

*Upon the preceding Rules.*

Mary is as amiable as her sister. We are as poor as  
*somos pobre*  
 they. They are as rich as thy father. I have as many  
*éllas Ellos son tengo*  
 friends as thou. (2) She has as many admirers as  
*tú. Élla adorador, m.*  
 formerly. Thy brother has as many books as I. Thy  
*ánles.*  
 brother has more children than thou. We have more  
 pleasures than labour. They have more than ten  
*diversión trabajo. tienen diez*  
 guineas. (3) I have written more than ten letters (to-day.)  
*guinea. he escrito carta hoy*  
 My brother is more than twenty years old. I am not  
*tenér veinte año tenér*  
 more than twelve years old. Thou hast less pride than  
*dóce orgullo*  
 they. Thou art not so (4) tall as I. Peter is not so old as  
*ellos. alto viejo*  
 his friend. He does not eat less meat than bread. He  
*cóme*  
 drinks less water than wine. Red wine is less agreeable  
*bébe tinto agradable*  
 to the taste than white. This little chamber is prettier  
*gusto, m. blanco, m. Este cuarto*  
 than mine. This small apple is better than the others.  
*manzana, f. otro.*

(1) See Rule LXIV, page 193.

(2) *As many*, before a substantive, is rendered by the adjective  
*tanto-a, os-as*. See Rule XVII, page 42.

(3) See the N. B. of Rule XV, page 41.

(4) See the collocation of the negation, page 159.

We have not so much fruit in our garden this year as  
*tenémos* *fruta, f.* *este año*  
 last year. Mr. B. has not so much wit as the Countess de  
*último* *ingénio. m.*  
 la Puebla. I have less money than the Marquis of D.;  
*dinéro* *Marqués*  
 but I have as much honour and not less religion than he.  
*honór, m.* *religión* *él.*  
 The garden and parterre of the Marquis de Mondéjar,  
 knight of the royal order of Charles Third, are larger  
*caballéro* *real órden, f.* *Tercero son*  
 than ours. (1) The wine of Mr. V. is bad, but that of  
*nuéstro.* *málo* *él*  
 Mrs. P. is worse. Peter studies as much as his brother,  
*estudia*  
 and makes greater progress than he. Miss Sophia Mar-  
*háce* *progrésó* *Sofía*  
 tinez talks much more than her sister Frances, but her  
*habla mucho* *Francisca*  
 sister talks better than she.  
*élla.*

## EXERCISE VIII.

*Continuation of the degrees of Comparison.—See Rules XIV, XV, XVI, XVII, XVIII and XIX, and the N. B. of Rule XVIII, pages 40, 41, 42, 43.*

The lazy sleep more and do not work as much as the  
*duérmen* \* *trabájan*  
 diligent. I translate better English into French than  
*diligente.* *tradúzco* *el* *en*  
 French into English. (2) The French dance better than  
*el* *báilan*  
 the Spaniards. The Biscayans, the Andalusians, and the  
*Andalúz, m.*  
 Catalonians are excellent soldiers, and pass for the best,  
*soldádo* *pásan por*

(1) See the N. B. of Rule XIV, page 41.

(2) In this phrase the adjectives *English* and *French*, used as substantives, take the masculine article which agrees with the word *idíoma* understood, after the preposition *en* the article is not repeated. (See the remark following the declension of the neuter article. page 34.)

the most courageous and the most faithful in the kingdom.  
*valeroso* *leal* de (1)

The Spanish mountaineers are very strong and almost all  
*montañés, m.* *fuerte* *casi todo*

very tall. Lille, capital of French Flanders, is a very  
*alto. Léla capital* *Flándes, f. sing.*

handsome city. The new house of the Spanish consul is  
*nuévo* *cónsul*

very large and very well ornamented. The youngest  
*adornádo.* *menór*

sister of Mr. Henry Milbourne is very pretty and very  
*Don Enríque*

amiable. John's cousin speaks very correctly, and writes  
*primo, m. habla* *correctaménte(2)* *escribe*

very elegantly. Lying is the most abject of all vices.  
*eleganteménte. Mentira, f.* *bájo* *vicio, m.*

The marquis de la Roja is my best friend and your most  
*mi* *vuestro*

cruel enemy. The Luxembourg was not the least pleas-  
*cruél enemigo.* *Luxemburgo*

ant of the walks in (1) Paris. The wise man will 'always' act  
*paséo, m.* *\* siémpre obrará*

very prudently. My brother studies the history of Eng-  
*estúdia* *história, f.*

land as often as he can. The dog is a very faithful (3)  
*puéde.*

animal, and perhaps the most faithful of all animals.  
*animál, m.* *quizá*

Your sister is very amiable, and a very good woman (4)  
*Vuéstro*

The servant of my (brother-in-law) is very strong. (4)  
*criádo, m.* *cuñádo*

### EXERCISE IX.

See Rules XX, XXI, XXII, XXIII, XXIV, and the  
*preceding, page 44.*

The good employment of time is one of the things that  
*empléo, m.* *tiémpo, m.*

(1) In after the superlative is translated by the article *de, del, de la, &c.*

(2) See note 3d. page 160.

(3) The superlative absolute of *fiel* is irregular, it is *fidélisimo*.

(4) See the N. B. 2d. of Rule XVIII, page 43.

contribute most (1) to the happiness of man. The  
*contribúyen* *dicha. f.*  
 amateurs say that Mr. de la Motte is one of those who  
*aficionado, m. dicen* *los que*  
 have laboured most for the academy of Music. Francis  
*han trabajado para academia, f. música, f.*  
 is the most learned man in the city, and Philip the most  
*instruido de*  
 (2) ignorant man in the kingdom. Temperance renders  
*ignorante de* *Sobriedad, f. hace*  
 the most simple food very agreeable. The most innocent  
*simple alimento, m. agradable. inocente*  
 pleasures are always the most pure and the most constant.  
*placer, m. son siempre puro \* constante.*  
 The daughter of the Count de Colomera is the hand-  
*hija*  
 somest woman in Madrid. The most barbarous nations.  
*de Madrid. bárbaro pueblo, m.*  
 The most just commandment. Charles is one of the most  
*justo mandamiento, m. Carlos es*  
 learned men in Paris. He is my best friend. Socrates  
 was one of the most enlightened philosophers of his  
*era esclarecido filósofo, m. su*  
 century. Peter, Paul and Antony are three good children,  
*siglo. Pablo Antonio son tres muchacho, m.*  
 but Antony is the best of all. Mr. B. is the most prudent  
 man that I have seen. (3) The cousin of the Cardinal  
*visto Cardenal*  
 de Lorenzana is the most learned man that has appeared  
*dócto parecido*  
 at Rome. Miss Villegas is more amiable than I thought.  
*en Róma. de lo que creía*  
 (4) The flatterer is always more dangerous than he  
*adulador, m. peligroso de lo que*  
 appears. Ingratitude will always be the vice the most  
*parece. Ingratitud, f. \* será*  
 unworthy of a well-bred and sensible man. The Count  
*indigno bien nacido sensible*

(1) See Rule XXIII, page 44.

(2) See Rule XXI, page 44.

(3) See Rule XXII, page 44.

(4) See Rule XX, page 44.

de Fernan-Núñez is the man whom I esteem the most,  
*Núñez* *estimo* \*  
 and Mrs. A. is the woman whom I respect the least.  
*respéto,* \*  
 The richer a man is, the more he desires to be so. The  
*deséa* \* *sérlo*  
 lazier he (shall be,) the more ignorant will he be. The  
*perezoso* *será* *ignorante* \* *será*  
 shorter time is, the more precious it is. The more  
*bréve* *precioso*  
 scarce a thing is, the dearer it is. The more just and  
*ráro* *jústo*  
 beneficent a prince is, the more faithful are the subjects;  
*benéfico* *vasállo,* m.  
 and the more faithful the subject is, the more constant  
*constante*  
 and secure is the happiness of the kingdom. The less  
*segúro es* *dícha,* f.  
 laborious man is, the less he enriches himself.  
*trabajadór* *se enriquece.*

## EXERCISE X.

See the numeral adjectives, and Rule XXV, as well as the N. B. which relates to it, from page 48 to 50.

I have only one sister, four brothers, one uncle, five aunts  
*téngo* *tío,* m. *tía*  
 and eight nieces. France was, before the revolution,  
*sobrina* *éa* *antes de* *revolucion,* f.  
 (that is) before the new division decreed by the  
*ésto es* *nuévo división,* f. *decretado* *por*  
 national assembly, divided, in regard to religion,  
*nacional asamblea,* f. *dividido en* *cuánto* *religión,* f.  
 into eighteen archbishoprics, and subdivided into one hun-  
*en* *arzobispado* *subdividido* \*  
 dred and twelve bishoprics. In regard to the civil  
*obispado.* *civil*  
 administration, it was divided into thirty-two governments  
*administración,* f. \*(1) *éa* *gobiérno*  
 or provinces. In regard to justice, it was divided into four  
*ó provincia* *justicia,* f.

(1) It, the subject of a verb, is generally suppressed.

great councils and thirteen parliaments. (There were) then  
*consejo parlamento había entonces*  
 in France thirty-nine academies and literary societies;  
*y academia literario*  
 fifteen in the north, eight in the middle, and sixteen in the  
*norte, m. centro, m.*  
 south. The academies of Paris, which were the principal  
*mediodía, m. principal*  
 ones, were seven (in number,) (1) the French academy,  
 \* \*  
 the academy of Inscriptions and Belles-Lettres, the academy  
*inscripción, f. Bellas Letras,*  
 of Sciences, the academy of Painting and Sculpture, the  
*ciencia, f. pintura, escultura,*  
 academy of Architecture, the academy of Surgery, and the  
*arquitectura, cirugía*  
 academy of Writing. The French revolution commenced in  
*escritura, principio*  
 one thousand seven hundred and eighty-nine. The king-  
 \* \* y  
 dom of France was the most ancient of all the modern  
*era antiguo moderno*  
 States. It commenced in the year four hundred and  
*estado, m. \**  
 twenty, and (there are reckoned in it) sixty-seven kings:  
 \* se cuenta en él rey, m.  
 the first was Pharamond, and the last Louis the Sixteenth.  
 The large house next mine, is not new. Saint Ignatius,<sup>2</sup>  
*vecino mío Ignacio.*  
 founder of the Jesuits, was a Spaniard.  
*fundador Jesuita, m. era \**

## EXERCISE XI.

*Continuation of the preceding rules and of the N. B.  
 which relates to them.*

Louis the fourteenth was one of the greatest kings of  
*fué*  
 France, and merited the epithet of Great. Peter the  
*mereció epíteto, m.*

(1) Instead of expressing *in number*, translate this phrase as if it was seven only : and say, *eran siete*.

(2) The capital *Y* is always used for the capital *I* in manuscripts ; but not in print.



first, czar or emperor of Russia, was a mathematician,  
*czar      emperador      Rusia      \*      matemático,*  
 a philosopher, a great general, an excellent admiral, a  
 \* *filósofo      \*      \*      almirante, \**  
 profound politician, an historian, pilot, architect;  
*insigne político,      \*      historiador,      piloto,      arquitecto,*  
 in a word, he was a rare genius, a wonderful genius.  
*en una palabra      ingenio, m.      portentoso*

Clovis first, fifth king of France, and the first christian  
*cristiano*

king, began to reign towards the end of the year four  
*principió á reinar cerca del fin,*

hundred and eighty one: he reigned thirty years. Of  
 all the reigns of the kings of France, the longest has  
*reinado, m.      largo*

been that of Louis fourteenth, the sixty fifth king: it  
*él      \*      \**

lasted seventy two years. Charles fifth was  
*duró*

contemporary of Francis first, king of France, and the pope  
*contemporáneo Francisco      papa, m.*

Sixtus fifth was that of the great Henry fourth. George  
*Sisto      era<sup>2</sup> lo<sup>2</sup>      Jorge*

third, king of England, was crowned in<sup>2</sup> Westminster abbey<sup>2</sup>  
*fué coronado      abadía, f.*

the twenty-second of September one thousand seven hun-  
 \*      \*

dred and sixty one. James second, banished to France,  
 \*      *Santiago      desterrado*

died the sixth of August one thousand seven hundred and one.  
*murió      Agosto      \**

I received on Monday last (1) a letter from my friend Mr.  
*el lunes      carta, f.*

Abel: it was delayed fifteen days, see the date of it: (2)  
 \*      *atrasado de      ved*

Paris, twenty-second of June one thousand eight hundred and  
*Júnio      \**

three. What o'clock is it? (3) Sir, it is eleven, or three  
*Que*

(1) The names of the week take the article, then we must say: *el lunes último*, or *pasado*; *on* is not expressed in Spanish.

(2) *Of it* must not be translated, or we must turn it by *su*, which corresponds to *its* in English; its date, *su fecha*.

(3) See the *N. B.* 4th and 5th of Rule XXV, page 49.

quarters-past eleven. (Give me) my watch, it is twelve  
*cuarto* \* *Dáme* (1)  
 o'clock and you said it was but (2) eleven. Where wast  
*tú decías* *En dónde estabas*  
 thou at ten o'clock? I was at home. (3) Well, return  
*Bien vuelve*  
 at one o'clock. Sir, it is one o'clock. I know it: go to  
*Yó sé<sup>2</sup> lo<sup>1</sup> véte* (4)  
 Mr. Arco's and (tell him) that I expect him here at nine  
*díle* *espéro<sup>2</sup> lo<sup>1</sup> aquí á*  
 o'clock in the morning, or at four o'clock in the afternoon.  
*de mañana, f.* *de tarde.*  
 He (will tell) thee (no doubt) whether he can come in the  
*dirá<sup>2</sup> te<sup>1</sup> sin duda si puede venir*  
 morning or in the evening. (5)

## EXERCISE XII.

*On the pronouns personal and possessive, and on the auxiliary verbs ser and estar, to be; haber and tener, to have.*

See in the Grammar the declension of these pronouns, page 51 and following, 57 and following; the conjugation of the auxiliary verbs, page 82 and following; the observations on *haber* and *tener* at the beginning of their conjugation, and Rule XLIX relative to the different uses which must be made of *ser* and *estar*, to be, page 95; and the Appendix, page, 459, &c.

(1) *Dáme* is the compound of the verb and pronoun; it is the same with *véte* and *díle*. Custom has willed, that whenever the pronoun governed by the verb, is put after it, it should be joined to the verb. Instead then of writing, *da me, dí le*, we write *dáme, díle*, it happens even very frequently that two pronouns are joined to the same verb as in these phrases: send it to me, *envíamelo*; I wish to tell it to you, *quiérote*.

(2) Translate *that it was but*, as if it was, *that it was only*, *que eran sólo*.

(3) See Rule III. page 28.

(4) To Mr. Arco's, *is, á la casa del Señor Arco*.

(5) *Por la mañana, ó por la tarde*.

N. B. We place the objective pronouns after the exercises on the three regular conjugations, persuaded that the scholar will find less difficulty in them after having familiarised himself with the auxiliaries and regular verbs.

*Infinitive.*

To have a new coat. To be tall, short, fat, lean.  
*vestido, m. álto, pequeño, gordo, flaco.*  
 Having good friends, good patronage (1). Having been out  
*protección, f. fuera*  
 of temper. To be sick or well (2). To have been  
*humór*  
 indisposed. To be occupied. To have genius. To be  
*indispuesto. ocupado. ingenio.*  
 wise, prudent, amiable. Having had patience. Having been  
*paciencia.*  
 Consul of the French republic. To have been a Senator.  
*\* Senador.*  
 To be Corregidor of the City of Cadiz. To be in the  
*Corregidor*  
 country. To have been all day at home.  
*cámpo, m.*

*Indicative present.*

I have a book of geography and one of mathematics, (3.)  
*geografía matemática, sing.*  
 I am very happy, and my brother is very unhappy. We  
 have excellent wine and they have no beer. You were  
*cervéza.*  
 diligent last year and now you are lazy. They have a large  
*ahóra*  
 garden (4) and many flowers; they are very well cultivated.  
*jardín, m. flor, f. cultivado.*  
 Thou hast more money than I, but I have more goods  
*dinéro pero mercaderías*  
 than thou. Thou art more learned than thy brother, but thy  
 brother is less proud than thou.

(1) See Rule XI. page 35.

(2) See Rule XLIX. page 95.

(3) See Rule XXV. page 48.

(4) See Rule XXV. note 3, page 48.

## EXERCISE XIII.

*Imperfect.*

I had and I have still the works of the best Spanish  
*todavía obra, f.*  
 authors. Thou hadst the grammar and dictionary of the  
*autor, m. gramática, f. diccionario, m.*  
 academy; thou was well pleased. We had also the  
*academia, f. contento. también*  
 (poetical works) of the Count de Noroña and Mr. John Me-  
*poesía, f. Noroña Don*  
 lendez Valdés, the two best modern<sup>2</sup> Spanish<sup>3</sup> poets.<sup>2</sup> That  
 work was a history and was very well written  
*ser estar*

*Preterite definite.*

Thou wast very well satisfied with the poem of the Count  
*satisfecho de poema, m.*  
 de Noroña on death, and with the odes of Anacreon by  
*sobre muerte, f. de oda, f. Anacreón por*  
 Melendez Valdés: they are truly excellent poetry. We  
 had fine weather yesterday. Thy cousin had a rich  
*bello ayer, m. primo, m.*  
 present. My brothers and sisters were charitable; they  
*presente, m. caritativo;*  
 had compassion on the unfortunate. My mother (was in  
*compasión de tener*  
 trouble) last week, she was very sad; we pitied her.  
*pesadumbre tener lástima de*

*Preterite indefinite.*

I have had much vexation, and I have been very sick.  
 Thou hast had three masters, (1) and thou hast been well  
 instructed. They have had (a great deal of) money. They  
*instruido mucho dinero.*  
 have been prodigal. My neighbour has been very sick.  
*pródigo vecino*

---

(1) *Master*, when used to signify a man who has people dependent upon him, a landlord, owner or master of a house or an estate, must be translated by *amo* or *dueño*; but when it expresses the idea of a man who teaches some art or science, then it is rendered by *maestro*.

*Preterite anterior.*

When I had been fifteen days in the town of Bilboa.

*Bilbao.*

When we had had our passport. When the wine had been an  
*pasaporte, m.*

hour in the bottle. (As soon as) you had been a month  
*botella, m. Luego que* *mes, m.*

at Paris. (As soon as) he had had his money.  
*en Luego que*

## EXERCISE XIV.

*Pluperfect.*

I had had a reward for diligence, and thy brother had  
*prémio, m. de diligéncia*  
had the first reward for memory. My master (1) had been  
*de memória.*

satisfied with me ; I had been diligent and attentive. Thy  
*satisfécho de* *aténto*  
brothers and thy sisters had been studious, they had had  
*estudioso*

*praise.* We had been rash. Thou hadst had much bold-  
*elogio.* *temerario*

ness. They had been timid. We had had good motives.  
*tímido.* *motivo.*

*Future absolute.*

Our cousins will have to-morrow pens and good paper,  
they will be occupied. My sister and I will be diligent. We  
shall have friends. The English will always be good  
*siempre*

seamen. The French will perhaps never be as powerful as  
*marinero* *quizá jamás* *poderoso*  
they on the sea ; but they will<sup>2</sup> always<sup>3</sup> be<sup>4</sup> more<sup>5</sup> so<sup>1</sup> on land.  
*por \* mar ;* *mas lo por tierra.*

Thou wilt be taller than thy friend Francis, but thy friend  
*alto*  
will be more fleshy than thou.  
*gordo*

(1) See the note in the preceding page.

*Future anterior.*

I shall have had my books. Thou wilt have been happy.  
 We shall have been more civil. The enemies will not  
 have been victorious; they will not have had any success;  
 they will have been conquered. General B. will have been  
 victorious. You will have had generals, commanders, in a  
 world, courageous and intrepid chiefs, and you will have  
 been yourselves valorous and invincible.

## EXERCISE XV.

See Rule XXXIX. and XL. p. 76. *Future conjunctive simple and future conjunctive compound.*

If I have money, they (will rob me of it.) (1) I am sure  
 that if I have patience, I shall have success. Thou wilt be  
 rewarded if thou art attentive. If the war is long, many  
 towns will be destroyed. If the enemy has the imprudence  
 to put his threats in execution he will be vanquished, if  
 you are all, in the moment of attack, faithful to your  
 prince, to your country, to the laws of honour. I (shall obtain)  
 the pardon of my fault, (as soon as) my uncle shall have  
 solicited it.

(1) In this phrase and others similar, we put in the second future only the verb governed by the conjunction.

*First, second, and third conditionals present. See Rules XLI. XLII. XLIII. XLIV. and XLV. pages 77 and 78.*

I should have better patronage than thy friend. You  
 would have more scholars if you <sup>protección</sup> were more learned.  
 Their father would be happier if he was less avaricious. <sup>discípulo</sup> <sup>instruido.</sup>  
 Man would be less unhappy if he was less ambitious. Thou <sup>avaro.</sup>  
 wouldst not be sick if thou wast more prudent. Who <sup>ambicioso.</sup>  
 would have believed that the war would have lasted ten <sup>quien</sup>  
 years? It would be just that he should be severely <sup>creído</sup> <sup>durado</sup>  
 punished. \* <sup>justo</sup> <sup>severamente</sup> Your children would not be so ignorant if they  
 were more studious. Although we should have peace, I <sup>castigado.</sup> <sup>ignorante</sup>  
 (should not go) to England. I should be better (1) if I <sup>no iría</sup>  
 was in the country. They would be more active if they <sup>activo</sup>  
 were younger.  
 joven.

### EXERCISE XVI.

*On the first, second, and third conditionals present and past. See Rules XLI. XLII. XLIII. XLIV. and XLV. pages 77 and 78.*

The day would have been much finer, if the sun had not  
 been so hot. The writings of Voltaire would have been <sup>sol, m.</sup>  
 ardiénste. obra. f.

---

(1) To be well or ill, is translated as if it was to be good or bad, *estar bueno, estar malo*; and to be better, *estar mejor*; to be worse, *estar peor*.

generally admired if they had contained a wiser and  
*generalmente admirado si contenido*  
 more religious philosophy. If the works of Rousseau were  
*religioso filosofía, f. obra, f.*  
 more moral, they would be less dangerous, and would not  
*peligroso,*  
 have done (so much) harm. If your husband was less  
*causado tanto mal.*  
 violent and less jealous, you would be happier. If men  
*violento celoso,*  
 were not so unjust, the number of the unfortunate would not  
*injusto, número*  
 be so great. The effects of the revolution would not have  
*grande.*  
 been so cruel, if the depravity of manners had not been  
*depravación, f. costumbres, f.*  
 so great in England, if licentiousness had not been (so much)  
*licencia, f. tan (1)*  
 countenanced, if irreligion had not been so general (2). If  
*favorecido, irreligión, f. general.*  
 the Spanish language, if its beauties, its riches, were more  
*lengua, f. belleza, riqueza,*  
 known, the literature of this country would have more  
*conocido, literatura, f. país, m.*  
 amateurs. If your brother was better informed than you  
*aficionado. fué*  
 last year (3), it was your fault (4). The miser would  
*avaro, m.*  
 never be contented if he had not in his coffers treasures to  
*cófre tesoro para*  
 feed his insatiable cupidity.  
*alimentar insaciable codicia.*

---

(1) See Adverbs of quantity, page 158.

(2) See Rule XLV. p. 78

(3) See the N. B. 1st, Rule of XLV. p. 79. and remember it.

(4) It cannot be translated in this phrase; therefore say, *era culpa vuestra.*



## EXERCISE XVII.

*Imperative. (1)*

Have, my friends (2), patience and perseverance. Let  
 him have a good dictionary and a grammar better than yours.  
*paciencia perseverancia.*  
*diccionario, m. gramática, f.*  
 Let them be less lazy. Let the virtuous man be rewarded,  
*virtuoso recompensado*  
 let the wicked man be punished. (3) Let me have prudence  
*castigado. prudencia*  
 and wisdom. Let your brother be more discreet, and let  
*sabiduría. discreto*  
 them have more prudence. Have pity on the poor and  
*lástima de pobre, m. pl.*  
 unfortunate. Be good, charitable, and beneficent.  
*caritativo benéfico.*

*Subjunctive present.*

That I may have riches. (4) That I may be generous. That  
*Que*  
 I may not be ambitious. Although we may not be avaricious.  
*ambicioso. aunque*  
 (In order that) he may have servants, and that he may not  
*para que*  
 be unhappy. In order that our enemies may not have  
 any partizans in this country, and that we may be victorious.  
*\* partidario éste*  
 Although our troops may have excellent officers. In order  
*trópus, f. oficial.*  
 that we may all be friends of our king and of our country.  
*patria, f.*

(1) See the note to the conjugation of the auxiliary verb *haber*.  
 p. 82 of the grammar.

(2) See Rule XXXI, p. 60.

(3) In English, when the verb is in the third person of the imperative, and has a noun for its nominative, this noun always precedes it; on the contrary in Spanish, it is always placed after the verb;  
 Ex. write; *sea el hombre virtuoso, &c*

(4) See Rule XLVII, p. 81; and Conjunctions, p. 194.

Be not so negligent. (1) Be not a slanderer. Have no  
 \* *maldiciénte.*  
 pride. Be not impious.  
*orgullo. impto.*

*Imperfect.*

That I might have friends. Although the Count de Naranja might not be prodigal. That their children might not  
*ser pródigo.*  
 be libertine. Before your father and your uncle had a  
*disoluto. ántes que*  
 garden. Before thou wast at Madrid. That the kingdom  
 of England might not be in danger. Before the traitors  
*estár peligro. traidór, m.*  
 were arrested ; before they were in prison. (2)  
*cárcel, f.*

EXERCISE XVIII.

*Preterite.*

Although I *have* had the pleasure of . . . Before your father  
*gusto, m.*  
*has* had news from your mother. Before he *has* been ill treated.  
*noticia, maltratado.*  
 I *do* not believe that the marchioness de Angosse *has* ever been  
*creo que marquesa*  
 pretty, nor that her daughter *has* ever been ugly. Your sister  
*feo*  
 is very gay, although she *has* been sick (so long.) Miss de  
*alégre tanto tiempo.*  
 Costillas *has* been very amiable, before she *has* had (so many)  
*antes que*  
 admirers. The number of wise and virtuous men is very  
*adorador. número, m. sabio virtuoso*  
 small, although they *have* always been esteemed.  
*reducido, estimado.*

*Pluperfect.*

If I had had good wine, I should not have been so sick.  
 Although the war had been very long, the peace lasted but  
*aunque largo paz, f. duró*

(1) See Rule XLVI. p. 80.

(2) *In prison* must be translated as if it was in the prison.

one year. (1) Your children were not very good yesterday,  
 although they had been punished the day preceding. <sup>ayer</sup> Your  
 nephew was very ignorant before he had been at the  
<sup>castigár día, m. precedente.</sup>  
<sup>sobrino, m. éra</sup> <sup>antes que</sup> <sup>en</sup>  
 university.  
 universidad, f.

## EXERCISE XIX.

## ON THE REGULAR VERBS.

*Indicative present, imperfect, preterite definite, preterite indefinite, preterite anterior and pluperfect.*

I speak to men of my country. Thou answerest thy father.  
<sup>hablár</sup> <sup>pais, m.</sup> <sup>respondér á</sup>  
 He (comes up) to (2) speak to his master. (3) We did  
<sup>subír</sup>  
 speak of the revolution of Constantinople. We did answer  
 the Marquis de las Rojas. You call my son and my daughter  
<sup>llamár</sup>  
 ter; (4) but they refuse to come up. I fasted, last year,  
<sup>rehusár de</sup> <sup>ayunár</sup>  
 every Friday. I drank nothing but water, and thou fearedst  
<sup>tódos los viernes. bebér</sup> <sup>temér</sup>  
 that I should be sick. (5) He allowed his children games  
<sup>permitir á</sup> <sup>juégo</sup>  
 of exercise and dexterity. The governor of the City of  
<sup>ejercicio</sup> <sup>destréza.</sup> <sup>gobernador, m.</sup>  
 Cadiz supped yesterday with the Commissary of the Navy. (6)  
<sup>cenár</sup> <sup>Comisário, m.</sup> \*  
 We pretended that the Corregidor was sick; but to-day I  
<sup>pretendér</sup> <sup>hoy</sup>

(1) But, taken in the sense of *only*, is translated into Spanish *sólo* or *solamente*, or by *no* placed before the verb and *sino* placed after this same verb. See p. 155 of the grammar, what relates to it.

(2) See on the prepositions the rules which relate to *por* and *para*, page 160 and following of the grammar.

(3) See exercise XIII, page 219, note 1.

(4) See Rule LVI, page 164.

(5) See Rule LIV, page 153.

(6) The article *the* cannot be translated in this phrase; we say, *el comisário de marina, de guerra*, and not *de la marina, de la guerra*.

am sure that he is well, (1) that he judged yesterday a  
*estár seguro* criminal and sentenced him to be whipped. I bought  
*juzgár* *reó, m.* *condenár* *á* *azotár.* *comprár*  
 yesterday two dozen of pears, and we have eaten them  
*docéna* *péra,* *comér*  
 already. John, why hast thou breakfasted so late? Sir,  
*yá* *porqué,* *almorzar* *tárde?*  
 (it was) eight o'clock when I took my cup of chocolate. (2)  
*éran* *tomár* *chocoláte.*  
 Thou frightenedst me when thou knockedst at my door. (3)  
*espantár* *cuándo*  
 My father was very well satisfied with me when he had  
*de*  
 spoken to my masters, and he rewarded me. We had dined,  
*recompensár* *comér,*  
 sung and danced when Miss Peredo arrived. We had  
*cantár* *bailár* *llegár.*  
 promised to write to my aunt. Messrs. Isla and Valdés had  
*prometér de escribír* *tía.*  
 procured an excellent place for a son of Madam de Legarra.  
*procurár* *empléo* *Madáma*

## EXERCISE XX.

## Rule XXXIX. and XL. page 76.

*Future absolute, future anterior, future conjunctive simple,  
 and future conjunctive compound.*

If the next winter is as cold as the last, the poor will  
*inviérno, m.* *frio* *último,* *pl.*  
 suffer very much. We will remedy the evil if it is possible.  
*padecér* *remediár mal, m.* \* *posible.*  
 Shalt thou not sell (4) thy wine this year? He will shear  
*vendér* *esquilár*

(1) See exercise XV, page 222, note 1.

(2) *Cup*, speaking of chocolate, is translated by *gicara* and not by *taza*.

(3) *To knock at the door* is translated by *llamar á la puerta* and not by *pegar á la puerta*.

(4) In interrogative phrases, when the nominative of the verb is one of the personal pronouns, the pronoun is suppressed in Spanish; and in conversation the interrogation is caused to be understood by the inflexion of the voice.

his sheep (in the) beginning of the spring. Thy father  
*ovéja*, pl. *al principio*, *primavera*, f.  
 has assured me that if thou art diligent and studi<sup>est</sup> with  
*asegurar* *estudiár con*  
 attention, thou shalt have the gold watch (1) that he has prom-  
*atención* *óro reloj*, m.  
 ised thee. The physician has advised me not to go out  
*médico*, m. *aconsejár* *no<sup>2</sup> de<sup>2</sup> salir*  
 to-morrow, if the sun is as hot as it has been to-day. I shall  
*mañana*, *sol*, m. *ardiente* *hoy*  
 speak to your sister, when she shall have received the visit  
*recibir visita*, f.  
 and the good advice of her aunt. We shall not omit, in this  
*consejo*, m. *omitir*  
 critical circumstance, (any thing) that prudence, duty and  
*crítico circunstancia*, f. *nada de lo que obligación*, f.  
 honour shall prescribe (to us) for the safety of our country.  
*honór*, m. *prescribir nos para seguridad*, f.  
 They will write (to me) all that shall happen (to them)  
*escribir me todo lo que acontecer les*  
 while I shall be absent. Thou wilt do, my child, all that  
*mientras ausente*. *harás*  
 thy masters shall command thee: thou wilt (be silent) when  
*mandár* *callár*  
 they shall speak (2) and thou wilt answer when they shall  
 question thee. If thou breakfastest to-morrow with the  
*interrogár*  
 Marquis de las Estrellas, thou wilt not forget, I hope, to  
*olvidár, lo esperar de*  
 speak of my law-suit. Tell Mr. Joseph Mor de Fuentes  
*pleito*, m. *Dí á Don*  
 when thou shalt meet him, that I wish to write to his son,  
*encontrár* *deseár \* escribir*  
 but I (don't know) where he lives.  
*ignorar* *dónde vivér*.

(1) Turn it *watch of gold*, and so all similar dictions.

(2) See Rule XL. page 76.

## EXERCISE XXI.

*See Rules XLI, XLII, XLIII, XLIV and XLV. and the N. B. 1st. and 2d. pages 77, 78, 79, 80.*

**First, second and third conditionals present and past.**

If man occupied himself (1) a little more with his own  
ocuparse un poco de propio  
affairs, and meddled a little less with those (of others), he  
negocio, m. meterse (2) ageno (3)  
would live happier. If men (gave themselves up) less to  
vivir entregarse  
their passions, if they would (suffer themselves to be  
pasión, dejarse  
persuaded) more by the counsels of reason and of virtue, if  
persuadir mas consejo, m. razón, f.  
they respected, as they ought, the sacred rights of  
respetar cómo lo debér sagrado derecho, m.  
innocence, in a word, if they respected themselves, the  
inocencia, f. en una palabra respetarse á sí mismos  
manners would not be so corrupted, the victims of crime  
costumbre, f. corrompér víctima, f. crimen, m.  
would not be in so great a number, and the most cutting  
en \* número agudo  
remorse would not torment their souls. (4) The archbishop  
of Toledo permitted yesterday the Countess de Almariva  
Toledo  
and her children to take in his garden whatever they pleas-  
hijo de tomar  
ed. (5) If I wrote the revolution of Algiers, if I painted its  
pintar  
injustices, its cruelties and its horrors under the reign of  
injusticia crueldad horror en reinado  
the cannibal Roland, I should use colours as black  
antropófago, m. Rolando usar (6) color negro

(1) Rule XLII, p. 77

(2) *To meddle with* is translated as if it was *to put oneself in*, consequently *with those* must be rendered by *en los*.

(3) *Others* is rendered in Spanish by *agénio,-a,-os,-as*, which, as an adjective, agrees with the substantive to which it relates. (See pronouns indefinite, p. 65 of the grammar.)

(4) Rule XLII, p. 77

(5) Rule XLV, p. 78, to please, *gustár*.

(6) *Usár* takes the preposition *de* ; say then, *de colores*.

as was his soul. I should esteem Mr. B. if he loved more  
 lo estimár (1)  
 his wife, if he treated her with more attention and kindness,  
 tratar la con atención bondad  
 and if he loved himself (2) a little less. Who would ever  
 si amarse á sí mismo Quién  
 have imagined, before having seen it, that Cæsar would  
 pensar, ántes de habérlo visto César  
 have perished by the hand of Brutus. (3) It would be  
 muerto de Bruto. \*  
 good and useful (4) that all governments should protect  
 útil gobiérno, m. proteger  
 the arts and sciences. If I was rich, if I was powerful,  
 arte, f. ciencia. poderoso  
 I would fly to the assistance of all those who implored my  
 volar socorro, m. los que implorár  
 assistance. (5) He promised to lend me all the books  
 asistencia. de prestárme (6)  
 that he should buy. If the French were brave before the  
 comprar. éran ántes de  
 revolution (7) they are not less so now.  
 lo

## EXERCISE XXII.

See Rule XLVII. XLVIII. page 81.

Imperative ; present, imperfect, preterite and pluperfect of  
 the subjunctive.

My friends, the enemy threaten you ; show who you  
 amenazar os ; mostrár

(1) See Rule LVI, page 154.

(2) Himself, a personal pronoun, being directly governed by the active verb to love, and the pronoun after the verb being a forcible repetition of *se*, placed before, a turn often used in Spanish, it must be preceded by the preposition *á* ; say then *se amara á sí mismo*. (See Rule LVI, p. 154.)

(3) See Rule XLIII, p. 78.

(4) Rule XLV, page 78, and observe that placing *good* and *useful* before the verb, the phrase is infinitely better in Spanish.

(5) See Rule XLIV, p. 78.

(6) The verb to lend, being in the infinitive, the pronoun *me* must be placed after *prestár* and be joined to it ; *prestárme* is then a compound of the verb and the pronoun. (See Rule XXVI, p. 55.)

(7) See the N. B. 1st of the Ru

are : (take up) arms, fly to meet him, attack him with  
*tomár arma, volár le atacár*  
 courage, fight with intrepidity, and the victory is yours. (1)  
*valór, combatir intrepidez, victória, f.*  
 Let us prove to our neighbours, that, if they have valour, we  
*probár vecino, m.*  
 have (at least) as much as they. Let them fear the  
*á lo ménos*

patriotism of a nation ready to shed even the last  
*patriotismo, m. nación, f. pronto derramár hásta*  
 drop of its blood for its government and its liberty. God  
*góta, f. sangre pára gobiérno libertád. Díós*  
 grant that the war may not last long. Speak more softly,  
*quíera durár mucho. bájo,*  
 thou has already interrupted me twice. Let us promise to  
*yá interrumpír dos véces. prometéer de*  
 study, and let us study with more attention, and our master  
*estudiár maéstro*  
 will be pleased. Eat some cherries, they are very good.

*conténto. comér guínda, f.*  
 Open the door for my father, he has already knocked  
*Abrír puérta, f. llamár*  
 twice. I hope the physician will cure our poor patient. I  
*deseár médico, m. curár enfermo, m.*  
 fear that my father and mother will not pardon my sister the  
*perdonár*

fault that she has committed. I hoped that you would have  
*cúlpa, f. que cometér. esperár*  
 permitted your son to come and dine with me. (2) They  
*de venir á comér*  
 sang and danced, although I was speaking to you. He  
*cantár bailar aunque*  
 would have (been offended) (3) if we had revealed his secret.  
*enfadárse*

(1) See Rule XXXII, page 60.

(2) The verbs to come, to go, to return, venir, ir, volvér, followed by another verb, require in Spanish to be followed by the preposition *á*, which is placed immediately before the verb which it governs. See for the manner of translating *with me, with thee, with oneself*, the N.B. 3d, following the personal pronouns, p. 64 of the Grammar.

(3) The verb to be offended being reflexive is conjugated in Spanish in the compound tenses with the verb *haber* and not *ser*. (See Rule LXI. page 167.)



Let us never speak ill of (any body.) Let us always respect  
*mal* *nádie* *siempre respetár*  
 the reputation of (every body.) My son continued to study,  
*todos,* *continúar*  
 although he *had* dismissed his master. I shall sup with  
*despedir* *cenár*  
 appetite, although I *have* dined well. He is always in good  
*apetito* *de*  
 humour, provided he *drinks* and *eats* well. Though you  
*humór, m. con tal que* *bebér* *comér bien.*  
 (full in a passion) very often without reason, I remain cool.  
*enfadárse* *mantenérse sereno.*

## OBSERVATIONS.

In all the preceding exercises, we have made it our duty, in order to render the labour easier to the scholar, to follow all the rules in their order, to cite them even in almost all the phrases and to refer to them as often as possible, persuaded that there can be no better way of familiarising the scholar with the principles of a language, than by obliging him to have recourse to them, to study them and to reflect on them at the very moment he makes the application of them. Now that we have already been over the greatest part of these rules, we think it will not be useless to exercise oneself anew on the same rules by the translation of some exercises which will embrace them all. We shall not cite them, in order to render it necessary to consult with a more considerate and deeper attention the grammar and notes of the preceding exercises. We shall pass afterwards to the other rules.

## EXERCISE XXIII.

*On the preceding Rules.*

A state is not flourishing but by the purity of its laws,  
*estado, m. no* *florecente* *sinó* *pureza, f.* *ley,*  
 the security of its commerce, the holiness of its religion,  
*comércio,* *santidad, f.*  
 and the respect and love which the sovereign inspires in  
*respeto, m.* *amor* *soberano, m* *inspirar á*  
 his subjects. The intimacy of two virtuous hearts is the  
*vasallo.* *intimidad, f.* *corazón*  
 gordian knot which nobody can untie. — The unhappy  
*gordiano nudo, m. que* *nádie* *infeliz*

person in not wholly (to be pitied,) if virtue remains to  
*entièrement de compadecérse,* *quedár*  
 him in his misfortune. Romances are a poison for the  
*infortunio novela, f. veneno, m. para*  
 heart, they corrupt it (by degrees,) and finish by  
*corrompér poco á poco acabar por*  
 destroying entirely all its sensibility. Maternal tenderness  
*destruir del todo sensibilidad, f. matérnal*  
 is a debt that all mothers ought to pay to nature. Let  
*déuda, f. madre, f. déber \* pagar naturaléza, f.*  
 us regulate our gifts by prudence, and our desires by  
*reglár don, m, confórme á*  
 wisdom. Esteem is durable only when it is founded on  
*sabiduría, f. duráble cuándo fundár sobre*  
 virtue. A sensible heart receives, (soon or late,) even in  
*sensible recibir tarde ó temprano aun*  
 this world its reward. To speak little, to observe much, to  
*mundo, m, recompénsa. \* poco, \* observar mucho,\**  
 think maturely, and act prudently, are almost certain  
*pensár madúrameute, obrár prudentemente, casi cierto*  
 proofs of innocency of soul, rectitude of mind and purity of  
*prueba, f. inocéncia, f. álma, f. rectitud, f. ingénio, m. puréza, f.*  
 manners.  
*costúmbres, f.*

## EXERCISE XXIV.

*On the preceding Rules.*

M. de la Rochefoucault says with much reason that  
*dice con razón, f.*  
 self-love is the greatest of all flatterers. Silence is the  
*amór propio, mayór adulador, m. silencio, m.*  
 safest part for him who mistrusts himself. The world  
*según parte, f. él que desconfiár de*  
 rewards more frequently the appearances of merit than  
*recompénsar frecuentemente apariéncia, f. mérito, m.*  
 merit itself. Avarice is more opposed to economy than to  
*mismo. opuesto economía, f.*  
 liberality. Envy is more irreconcilable than hatred.  
*liberalidad, f. envidia, f. irreconciliáble odio, m.*  
 The soul is an emanation of the Divinity. The soul,  
*emanación, f. divinidad, f.*

thought and the faculty of speaking, says the Count de  
*pensamiento, m. facultad, f.*  
 Buffon, do not depend on the form, nor organisation of  
*dependér de forma, f. organización, f.*  
 the body, they are gifts which the Creator has granted  
*cuérpo, m. \* don, m. concedér*  
 solely to man, and not to other animals. The clearest  
*únicamente ótro animal, m. claro*  
 proof of this truth, is that although the ourang-outang has  
*prueba, f. aunque orang-utángo*  
 the body, the limbs, the senses, the brain and the tongue  
*miémbro, m. sentido, m. lengua, f.*  
 entirely similar to those of man, nevertheless he  
*entéramente semejante los sin embargo*  
 speaks not, he thinks not. The empire of man over ani-  
*piensa império sobre*  
 mals is a lawful empire that no revolution (1) can  
*legítimo que ninguno puede*  
 destroy; it is the empire of mind over matter, and it is not  
*destruir \* espíritu, f. materia, f. \**  
 only a right given by nature, and a power  
*sólamente derécho, m. dado por naturaleza, f. poder, m.*  
 founded on its unalterable laws, but a gift of God, by  
*fundár inalterable ley, sinó también Díos,*  
 which man can at every moment perceive the excellence of  
*el cuál puede cada instante reconocer exceléncia, f.*  
 his being. (There are) many Jews in Asia and in Africa.  
*ser Háy Judío, m.*  
 The catholic religion reigned alone before the French revo-  
*católico dominár sólo ántes de*  
 lution, in Italy, in France, in Spain, in several States of  
*Itália, mucho estado*  
 Germany and in the greatest part of Poland. France is the  
*mayór parte Polónia.*  
 most ancient of the kingdoms of Europe. Germany was  
*antíguo réino, m. Európa.*  
 formerly called<sup>1</sup> Germania from these Teutonic words, *ger*  
*ántes llamárse Germánia teutónico voz, f.*  
 and man, which signify man of courage, (warlike.)  
*que significár valór, guerréro*

(1) See Rule XXXVIII, page 66.

## EXERCISE XXV.

*On the preceding Rules.*

Mr. Benedict Jerome Feijóo of the order of Saint Ben-  
*Don Benito Gerónimo* *orden, m. San*  
 edict, and member of the council of his Majesty, was the  
*miembro, conséjo, m. magestad,*  
 first of all the Spanish writers who dared (1) to attack  
*escribór, m. atrevérse atacár*  
 openly the prejudices of his nation. Mr. Thomas de  
*abiértamente preocupación, f. Don Tomás*  
 Iriarte is a Spanish poet justly celebrated; his translations  
 of Virgil and Horace are excellent, and his literary fables  
*Virgilio Horacio* *literario fábula*  
 are productions of the most subtle genius and of the most  
*producción sutil ingenio, m.*  
 delicate taste. The Spanish language is very rich; it is  
*esquisito gusto, m. lengua, f.* \*  
 much more noble, much more majestic and much more  
*múcho majestuoso*  
 expressive than the Italian language. The Don Quixote of  
*esprestvo Italiáno Quijote*  
 Michael Cervantes is the best romance that has ever been  
*Miguél novela, f. jamás*  
 written. All those who have read the poem of the Araucana  
*escribo los que leído poema, m. f.*  
 by Ercilla, make a pompous panegyrick of this work,  
*por hacen pompóso elógio, m. obra, f.*  
 particularly of the speech of Colocolo so much (2) extolled  
*particularmènte arénga, f. celebrádo*  
 by Voltaire; it (is found) (3) in the second Canto. The more  
 \* *hallárse Cánto, m.*  
 foreigners cultivate the Spanish language, the more beautiful  
*extrangéro, m. cultivár*  
 they find it. Lope de Vega is a very great poet, and without  
*dúda* *sin*  
 doubt the best that Spain has produced. Charles fourth,  
*producir. Carlos*

(1) If we translate to *dare* by *atreverse*, a reflexive verb, we must place the pronoun as usual before the verb and say; *se atrevió á*.

(2) See Adverbs of quantity, p. 168.

(3) See Passive verbs, p. 56, Rule XXIX.

Catholic king of Spain, (was born) at Naples, the twelfth  
*Católico* *nacér* *en Nápoles*,

(1) of November of the year one thousand seven hundred

and forty-eight, and began to reign the fourteenth of

December of the year one thousand seven hundred and  
*diciembre*

eighty-eight : he was proclaimed king at Madrid the seven-

teenth of February of the following year. What day of the

month is it ? To day is the 19th of June. I have received  
*febrero* *siguiente* *A cuántos*  
*estámos*

a letter dated Cadiz the 9th April, 1827.

*con fécha de de de de*

#### EXERCISE XXVI.

On the preceding Rules and on Rules XXXI, XXXII.  
 and XXXIII. page 60.

At what hour did<sup>s</sup> my mother dine<sup>s</sup> yesterday ? At one  
*comió*

o'clock. At what hour did she (take a collation ?) (2) At  
*merendár*

six o'clock and she supped at nine. When dost thou expect,

my friend, to receive news from thy son ? I desire very  
*cenár* *esperár*

much to know how he does ; he is a good child. One of  
*\* recibir noticia* *deseár*

my friends, who arrived (the day before yesterday) from  
*múcho \* saber cómo* *estár* *muchácho, m.*

Madrid, has assured me that he was very well last week.  
*llegár* *ánte ayér*

Here are very handsome houses. Yes, my friend, they are  
*asegurár me que* *semana, .*

He aquí truly very handsome ; the first belongs to the Marquis de  
*si*

*ciertaménte* *Marqués, m.*

(1) The twelfth may be translated by *en doce* or by *el día doct.*

(2) We have said in the N. B. on the persons and numbers of the verbs, page 82, that the nominative personal pronouns are almost always suppressed in Spanish : this rule must be observed, whether the phrase be interrogative or not.

Blanco, the second is mine, the third is my brother's, and the fourth the Count de Isla's; this large garden is also his, and the other is mine. Let us (go into) mine, we will gather some flowers. Who would have thought that the weather *algúno flor, f. Quién* *entrár en* *cogér* *creér* *tiempo* would have been so fine to-day? If thy brother had more patience, he would have more success in his undertakings.

If (any one) asks for me, (take care) to answer that I am not at home. If the Irish - - instead of attacking the *preguntár por* *cuidádo de* *Irlandés, m. en lugar de atacár*

city of Dublin by day, had attacked it by night, Ireland would have run great perils; for, it appears, that the malcontents were well provided with arms and ammunition. *de día,* *de noche, Irlanda, f.* *corrér* *pelígro; pués* *parecér* *malcontento, m. proveér de arma munición*

I speak of the insurrection of the end of July of the year one thousand eight hundred and three. Book the eighth, *insurrección, f. fin, m. Júlío*

Chaper the twelfth, page 82d. On the 15th of July next. *próximo.*

### EXERCISE XXVII.

#### *On the preceding Rules.*

Study, be diligent and docile, and your masters will reward *estudiár* *dócil* you; but, if you are lazy, they will punish you. I do not understand what the countess has said, although she has *comprendér lo que* *dicho,* repeated it thrice. We should have invited thy friend to *repetir lo* *convidár* dine with thee, if he had come (1) yesterday to the party. If you consoled the afflicted, if you assisted the unfortunate, *venir* *terlúcia, f.* *afligido, m. socorrér* *póbre, m.*

(1) The verb to come, *venir*, being a neuter verb, is not conjugated in Spanish in the compound tenses with the auxiliary *ser* but with *haber*. (See Rule LXI, page 157.)

if you *shared* with them your *superfluity*, you would thus  
*repartir entre* *superfluo, m.* *así*  
 acquire treasures of benedictions. M. Luis de la Plata  
*tesoro* *bendición* *Don*  
 pretends, (to be) very poor, although he is the richest man in  
*ser* *pobre* *de*  
 the city. I shall dine (to-morrow) with my friend the count  
*mañana*  
 de Isla, (there will be) (a great many) people and after din-  
*habrá* *mucha* *gente* *después de co-*  
 ner we shall play cards and we shall dance all night; we  
*mer* *jugár á los naipes* *bailár* *noche, f.*  
 shall sing also; and I wish very much (1) that the Marquis  
*también* *deseár*  
 de Mondejar and the duchess de Almodóvar would sing the  
 duet of Zemire and Azor. Mr. Charles Tuerto bought a  
*dúo, m.* *Don*  
 house last week, and he sold it at ten o'clock in the  
*semana, f.* *vendér la* *de*  
 morning. Where didst thou dine yesterday? At thy  
*mañana, f.* *Dónde* *en casa de*  
 brother's, and I shall dine to-morrow with the Duke de  
 Alcudia, at his country house. Hast thou breakfasted? yes,  
*en* *almorzar* *sí*  
 my friend; I breakfasted at eight o'clock, or half past  
 eight. (2) Francis the first, died the 31st of March 1547,  
*falleció*  
 (at the age) of 52 years.  
*de edad*

## EXERCISE XXVIII.

*On the preceding Rules.*

The Swiss are very strong, very courageous and very faithful men. A band of robbers attacked the Count de  
*trópa, f.* *ladrón* *atacar*  
 Fernan Nuñez and the Marchioness de Ariza, and obliged  
*Núñez* *obligar*  
 them to give all their money and their jewels. (3) I lost  
*les á dar* *jóya.* *perdér*

(1) *Mucho* is indeclinable when joined to a verb, and is declined thus *múcho-a-os-as* when joined to a substantive.

(2) Say, at eight and a half struck, *á las ocho y media dadas*.

(3) See Rule VII, page 30.

yesterday my little dog, hast thou found him? No: if I had  
 found him, I should have sent him (to thee) immediately.  
*hallár lo*  
*enviár lo te inmediateaménte.*  
 Hast thou seen the little country house that my mother has  
*visto*  
 bought? It is very pretty, we shall always have in the yard  
*comprár \** *pátio, m.*  
 a large dog capable of terrifying the most daring robbers.  
*pérro, m. capáz de amedrentár osádo*  
 A mother said one day to her children: practise virtue,  
*decía* *hijo practicar*  
 detest vice, love study, be generous without prodigality,  
*aborreçér* *estúdio* *sin prodigalidad*  
 wise and religious without affectation, and you will be happy,  
*religioso sin afectación;*  
 not only in this life, but also in the life (to come.) The  
*solaménte en* *mas también* *futúro.*  
 miser is a martyr of the devil or an anchorite who,  
*aváro mártir demónio, m. ó anacoréta, m. que*  
 by his abstinence and his continual inquietudes, acquires  
*abstinéncia* *contínuo angústia, f. adquirir*  
 rights to hell; his heart is always divided between the  
*derécho infierno, m.* *partír*  
 desire of preserving and that of accumulating. He is  
*deséo, m. conservár él amontonár tenér*  
 hungry and eats not, he is thirsty and drinks not, he  
*hámbré comér tenér sed beber*  
 (has need) of repose and takes none, he is never free (1)  
*necesítar \** *descánso no lo tomár libre*  
 from alarms. Before the revelation, the whole universe was  
*sobresálto. ántes de revelación, f. unívérso, m.*  
 a temple of idols: each vice was a divinity. Your  
*témplo, m. ídolo cáda vicio deidad, f.*  
 garden is well cultivated, its walks are delightful It is not  
*huérta, f. calle, f. \* son*  
 riches which make us happy, but the use we make of them.  
*se háce*

---

(1) See the observations, p. 159 of the grammar.



## EXERCISE XXIX.

## ON PRONOUNS.

See Rules XXVI. XXVII. XXVIII. XXIX. and XXX. pages 55 and 56.

I will send thee (to-morrow morning) the books I promised  
*enviár mañana por la mañana*  
 thee ; if they please thee, I advise thee to buy them ; thou  
*gustár aconsejár de comprar*  
 wilt find them at the Book-Store of Messrs. Munroe and Fran-  
*hallár en la librería de*  
 cis. Mr. Luis de Villa Real has assured us that Miss Sophia  
*Don asegurár Sofía*  
 Hermosa is at Cadiz : write to her, and invite her to come  
*escribír convidár de venir*  
 and pass some time with us. I have received two letters for  
*pasár algúno recibír pára*  
 my brother. I will send (1) *them to him* at his country  
 house without opening them. I will write to him myself  
*abrír yó mismo*  
 to-morrow, and I will enclose these two letters in mine.  
*éstas*

Let us defend ourselves, (2) *my friends*, (3) let us defend  
*defendér*  
 ourselves with courage against the enemy who attacks us  
*con coráge cóntra que acometér*  
 and pretends to conquer us ; let us repulse him with vigour,  
*pretendér \* vencér rechazár*  
 and let us force him to confess that our valour and our  
*obligár (4) confesár*  
 attachment to our country, and to the religion of our fathers  
*apégom. antepasádos*

(1) See the very important, Rule XXVII, p. 56.

(2) See Rule XXX, page 56.

(3) In the apostrophes : *my friend, my friends, my father, my mother, my brother, my sister, &c.*—the possessive pronoun may be suppressed, excepting when they are accompanied with a sentiment of joy or sorrow ; in these cases the pronoun is expressed with advantage, and is placed after the nouns ; and instead of the pronoun *mi*, we make use of *mío* without an article. (See Rule XXXI, p. 60.)

(4) See the N. B. 4th which precedes the list of the irregular verbs, p. 121 of the Grammar.

render us invincible. Thy brothers are very unjust and very  
*háce invencible. muy injusto*  
 ungrateful. A thousand times I have succoured them in  
*ingrato. \* vez socorrér*  
 their misfortunes, never has Madam Vial assisted them,  
*infortunio, asistir*  
 nevertheless, they love her, they see her, and it appears that  
*no obstante tratár \* parecer*  
 they detest me. (1) I have received letters for her, and I  
*detestár*  
 will send them to her, without opening them.  
*enviár abrír*

## EXERCISE XXX.

*On the preceding Rules.*

Somebody advised Philip, the father of Alexander,  
*Algúno aconsejár á Felipe \* Alejandro*  
 to banish from his dominions a man who had spoken ill of  
*de echár estado que*  
 him; I shall (take good care not) to do it, answered he,  
*guardárse bien de hacér respondér*  
 he would go every where and speak ill of me. When a  
*ir (por todas partes) á decír mal cuándo*  
 Roman general triumphed, a herald said to him from  
*románo general, m. triunfár, heráldo, m, decír de*  
 time to time, remember that thou art mortal. Let us  
*cuándo en cuándo, acuérdate mortál.*  
 always submit with resignation to the decrees of  
*siémpre sometérse resignación decréto, m.*  
 providence. Lend me thy book, I will return it to thee  
*providéncia, f. Prestár volvér*  
 to-morrow; do not refuse it to me. (2) No, I cannot refuse  
*mañána rehusár puédo*  
 it to thee. Lend thy fan to thy sister, and present it to  
*abaníco presentár*  
 her politely. Thou knowest Mrs. D. T. S.; the count and  
*cortésmente conocér*  
 I were speaking (3) of her; and we said that she is well  
*decír*

(1) See the N. B. of Rule XXX. page 56.

(2) See Rule XLVI. page 80.

(3) See Rule L. page 96.

informed, that she speaks several languages and that she is  
*instruído, mucho léngua, f.*

very amiable. All those who know her say (the same)  
*Todos los que ótro tanto*  
 of her. Where is Mr. de A.? Do not speak to me of him,  
*Dónde.*

I detest him. Here are pears and apples, eat some, they  
*detestár He aquí péra manzana, alguno,*  
 are excellent. I shall buy some more to-morrow and I will  
*comprar*  
 send you some. (Idle men) are a burthen to themselves.  
*perezoso \* molesto*

### EXERCISE XXXI.

*On the preceding Rules.*

If they carry thy brother's servant to prison, he will not  
*Si llevar criado, m. cárcel, f.*

(come out) of it to-morrow. He is already there. I assure  
*saldrá yá allí. asegurar*  
 you that I shall not go to see him there. The viscount de  
*iré ver allá. vizconde*

Isla has bought a country house. I shall dine with him  
*comprar*

to-morrow: he will speak (to me) of it; it is new,  
 large, and well ornamented; it is a palace. My son learned  
*adornádo \* palácio, m. aprender*  
 last year all the fables of La Fontaine, but he has already  
*yá*

forgotten the greatest part of them. Twelve robbers were  
*olvidár mayor ladrón*

stopped last month in the wood of V.... they were tried  
*arrestár bosque, m. juzgar*

(the day before yesterday) by the criminal tribunal, which  
*anteayer por criminal tribunal, m. que*

condemned six of them to be hanged. (How many) children  
*ahorcár cuánto hijo*

has your sister? she has two, one son and one daughter.  
 Thy (pocket handkerchiefs) are very handsome, but I have  
*pañuelo, m. mas*

some that are at least as handsome and as good.  
*que á lo ménos*

(Shall we go) to the garden to-day? go *there* now if you  
*Irémos* *id* *ahóra*  
*wish*: (as for me,) I shall not go; for, I come from it.  
*querér* *yó* \* *pués* *é*  
 John, open my chest, thou wilt find in it ten louis, take  
*abrír* *armárió,m.* *hallár* *luis,m.* *tomár*  
 them, I give them to thee. (There were) yesterday fifty  
*dóy* *había*  
 persons at the party at Madam Vial's. I wished to write  
*en* *en casa de* *quería* \*  
 to them.

## EXERCISE XXXII.

*On the pronouns demonstrative, relative, interrogative and indefinite, and on the preceding Rules.*

*Whose garden is this?* (1) *Whose houses are these?*  
*Whose palace is this?* This garden is *mine*, (2) *these houses*  
 are the *prime minister's*, (3) and the palace is the *king's*.  
*primér ministro*

*Who is there?* (4) *Some one* knocks at the door; John,  
*llamár á*

open it. Give me this book and take that, I shall send to  
*abrír* *dar* *tomár* *enviár*  
 them this cage and this bird. This man is (looking for) thee.  
*jáula, f.* *pájaro,m.* *buscár*

He who was speaking to thee is one of my best friends, and  
 she who is with him is the friend of thy sister. Has thy son  
 paid too dear for his hat? Yes, he paid twenty-five  
*pagár* *por* *sombrero,m.* *sí*

pounds for it. The (young man) *whose* talents (5) we ad-  
*por* *jóven* *talentos,m.*  
 mire is hardly twenty-five years old: he will be without  
*tenér* \*

doubt one of the first painters in Europe. Of all vices, that  
*dúda* *pintór,m.* *de* *vicio,m.*  
 which degrades man most is intemperance. Who<sup>2</sup> are<sup>3</sup>  
*degradár* *borrachéra, f.*

(1) See Rule XXXIV. page 63.

(2) See Rule XXXII. page 60.

(3) See Rule XXXII. N. B. 2d. page 60.

(4) *There*, is not translated in this phrase.

(5) See Rule XXXIV. page 63.



whose power equals almost that of the king. He who  
*podér, m. igualár* *él* *aquél*  
 was speaking to me yesterday, when my father came into  
*entrár en*  
 my room, is much more learned than thou thinkest. (1)  
*cuárto, m.* *instruído* *piensas*  
 What seekest thou? Whom<sup>2</sup> are<sup>3</sup> these<sup>4</sup> ladies<sup>6</sup> looking<sup>4</sup>  
*buscár* *mirár*  
 at? <sup>1</sup> What<sup>2</sup> are<sup>3</sup> they<sup>4</sup> talking<sup>5</sup> about? <sup>2</sup> (Here are) two  
*que* *acérca de* *He aquí*  
 pinks: which of the two (2) shall I give thee? This pleases  
*clavél, m.* *dar* *gustár*  
 me more than that. And what sayest thou of these tulips?  
*dices* *tulipán, m.*  
 They are superb: I shall take some (of them.) Take, my  
*magnífico* *tomár alguno\**  
 friend, as many as you wish (of them.) (3) I am very glad  
*quíeras\**  
 that they please thee. (4) Those ladies dance elegantly.  
*gustár* *primorosamente.*

## EXERCISE XXXIV.

*On the preceding pronouns.*

At what hour shall we dine? (5) At<sup>1</sup> half<sup>4</sup> after<sup>3</sup> two.<sup>2</sup>  
*média y*  
 Shall we play after dinner? Yes.—At what game?  
*jugár después de* *Sí* *juégo*  
 At chess. Somebody asking one day a (witty man) if he  
*agédrez, m.* *preguntár* *ingénio*  
 was a nobleman, the latter answered: Noah had three sons,  
*\* noble* *respondér: Noé*

(1) See Rule XX. page 44.

(2) See after the declension of the interrogative pronouns, page 64 of the grammar, the manner of translating *which* in Spanish.

(3) *As many as*, instead of being translated by *tánto-a-os-as cómo* is rendered much better in this phrase and others similar by *cuánto-a-os-as*.

(4) *I am very glad that* must be translated as if it was *I rejoice very much that* . . . *me alegro mucho de que* . . . and the following verb must be put in the present of the subjunctive.

(5) See after pronouns interrogative (page 64 of the grammar) how we must translate *what*, &c.

I do not know *from which* I have descended. Knowest thou any of these gentlemen, any of these ladies? Have you

any of these works? Replace all these portraits, each in its place. (We must) give to each one what belongs to him.

Alexander wished that the<sup>s</sup> beasts<sup>1</sup> even<sup>2</sup> and the walls of the cities should testify each in their way, their grief for the death of Hephestion. Each country has its customs.

(Let us put) every thing in its place. I doubt if any one has ever known men better than La Bruyère. Has any one

ever spoken more ingenuously than La Fontaine? His house (would suit) him better than any body. Do not unto others, what you would not that they (should do) (unto you.)

(Some people) do not open their mouths but at the expense of others. He who has no education resembles a body without a soul. We always love those who admire us.

### EXERCISE XXXV.

#### *On the preceding Rules.*

The people always suffer from the wars which princes make against each other. They have killed each other. Many are deceived (1) in wishing to deceive others. It is said the Greeks have beaten the Turks.

(1) Instead of *are deceived*, say; *see themselves deceived*, *se ven engañados*.

However rich you be, be polite with every body.  
*por mas que cortés*  
 Whatever you write (1) avoid useless repetitions.  
*Cualquiera cosa que evitar inútil repetición.*  
 To whomsoever we speak, we ought to be civil. We ought  
*quienquiera que deber \**  
 never to speak ill of (any body) in their absence. In  
*\* nadie auséncia. á*  
 whatever he employs himself (2) he always works with  
*dedicarse trabajar*  
 taste. Those who do not occupy themselves in any thing  
*gusto. . ocuparse. nada de*  
 good and useful, appear to me very despicable. Customs  
*útil, parecér despreciable. costumbre, f.*  
 are not the same in all countries. We ought not to associate  
*país, m. \* frecuentár*  
 with the impious, we ought even to avoid them as public  
*\* evitar público*  
 pests. (No one) knows if he is worthy of love or hatred. (3)  
*péste, f. nadie saber digno amor odio.*  
 None of these ladies (will go) to the play. The treaties  
*irá comédia, f.*  
 are null. The good man has<sup>2</sup> (no where)<sup>3</sup> a more tranquil  
*nulo. (en ninguna parte)*  
 retreat, where he can be more at liberty than in his soul.  
*retiro, m. dónde puede en*  
 No reverse (ought to) disturb true friendship. One is not  
*contratiempo alterár uno*  
 always master of his passions. (There are) defects that  
*dueño pasión. Háy defecto*  
 we conceal carefully. When we have had the misfortune  
*ocultár cuidadosamente. desdicha, f.*  
 to offend any body, we ought to labour to make him  
*de ofender á alguien, trabajar hacer*  
 forget the displeasure that we have caused him. What do  
*olvidár disgusto, m. causar \**  
 they say of the negotiations? They affirm that peace is made.  
*se dice negociación, f. asegurar hecho.*

(1) See the pronouns indefinite, pages 65 and 66 of the grammar.

(2) See the N. B. 4th, relative to verbs ending in *car* and *gar*, which precedes the irregular verbs. Grammar pages 121 and 122.

(3) See Rule XXXVIII, page 66.



## OBSERVATIONS.

The second person singular, as well as that of the plural, being very little used in good society, and as they cannot be made use of but in speaking to a friend or to a person over whom we have authority (*see the observation on the pronoun of the second person, after its declension, page 52,*) it will be proper to begin in the following exercise to substitute the words *vm.* and *vms.* for the pronouns of the second persons, which is not difficult.

When the pronoun *you* is addressed to one person only, it is changed into *your favour*, *vuestra merced*, which is pronounced *ustéd* and is written *vm.*, (See page 12) and when it is addressed to more than one person, it is changed into *your favours*, *vuestras mercedes*, which is pronounced *ustédes*, and written *vms.* In the first case the verb is put in the third person singular, and in the second, in the third of the plural.

*vm.* and *vms.* are of both genders, that is to say, they are used equally in speaking to men and women.

It is well to observe that the words *vm.* and *vms.* are not repeated in Spanish as often as *you* in English; we do not repeat them excepting when they are so distant that it would be difficult to know them as nominatives to the verb. Ex. You say that *you* know and that *you* love Miss Villegas, that is, *your favour* says that he knows and loves Miss Villegas; *vm. dice que conoce y ama á la Señorita Villégas.* And if the pronoun *you* is followed by this possessive pronoun *your*, it must be rendered by the pronouns of the third person *his*, *her* and *their*, *su* or *sus*. Ex. You have sold all *your* gold and silver plate, that is, *your favour* has sold all *his* or *her* gold and silver plate; *vm. ha vendido toda su vajilla de oro y de plata.* Your when not preceded by *you* is changed into these words of *your favour*, which are preceded by the substantive to which *your* refers, and this substantive takes the masculine or feminine, singular or plural article, according to its gender and number. Ex. Your brother came to see me, *su hermano* DE *vm. vino á verme*, that is, *the brother of your favour*, &c. I have received *your* letters, *he recibido LA carta DE vm.*, that is, I have received *the letter of your favour or worship.*

In addressing God and speaking to crowned heads, and Grantees, we make use of the second person plural in Spanish. Ex. O *Díos*, *vos sois mi verdadero padre.*—ADMITID,

*O Gran Carlos, con benigno rostro, con oídos propicios, y cómo prenda de nuestro afecto, de nuestra veneración, lealtad y rendimiento á la Magestad, éste escrito, que con tanta mayor confianza dedicamos á vueſtro nombre, cuánto conocemos que náda os es mas gráto y decoróſo, náda parece mas real y mas digno de un Borbón que los pensamientos capaces de fomentár y ennoblecér las artes y la ſubiduría.*—Academical discourse.

In the first part of the exercises we have enabled the scholar to exercise himself on all the parts of speech, from the article, to the auxiliary verbs and the three regular conjugations inclusively. We have introduced in it very few neuter, reflective and reciprocal verbs, because our intention has always been to begin this second part with exercises on the rules that belong to them. We have also avoided, as much as possible, introducing irregular verbs in the first part in order to give the scholar time to study them. Their great number is enough to frighten one at the first glance ; but we are soon encouraged, if we reflect,—1st.—that the four hundred and eighty-three or eighty-four irregular verbs are reduced, in a manner, to thirty-five, by which all the others are conjugated :—2d.—that they are almost all regular in their irregularities. Indeed, if we examine one or two of these verbs, we shall find that a little reflection renders the difficulty very trifling. *Acordár*, to remind, to accord, to resolve, is irregular ; the irregularity consists in changing the *o* into *ué* in the three persons singular and the third plural of the three present tenses, that is, of the present of the indicative, of the present of the imperative, and of the present of the subjunctive. All the other persons and all the other tenses are regular. The irregularity of the verb *aborreçér* to abhor, consists in placing a *z* before the *c* whenever the latter is to be followed by an *o* or an *a* : the *o* and *a* are found only in the three present tenses as above stated ; there is then no irregularity but in these three tenses, and all the others are regular. Let the scholar study these verbs attentively and judiciously, and they will not present any serious difficulty.—In the following exercises, we shall make known the irregular verbs by these letters, *irr*, whenever they are in a person subject to irregularity, and they will be found in their places in the Alphabetical List, beginning at page 122, which cannot be too often consulted by students, and which, it is presumed, will be found more complete than in any other Grammar.

## EXERCISE XXXVI.

*On the neuter, reflective, reciprocal, and impersonal verbs. See Rule LXI. page 157.*

I have walked all day. My brother and sister have  
*paseárase* (1)  
 amused themselves very much in the garden of the English  
*divertirse, irr*  
 Consul. My uncle has assured me that you (were vexed)  
*enfadárase*  
 yesterday with the prime minister. The Germans have  
*primer* *Alemán, m.*  
 defended themselves well against the English. The French  
*defendérse*  
 had fought like desperadoes. Your mother will be  
*peleár cómo desesperádo.* *habér*  
 (gone out) when we arrive. The dancing<sup>a</sup> master<sup>a</sup> of Mr.  
*salír* *llegár.* *báile* *Don*  
 Luis Angelo had arrived when we entered. I should  
*Luis* *entrár.*  
 have repented very much having spoken to Messrs.  
*arrepentírse* *de*  
 de Callenuéva if they had been pronounced guilty. Rejoice,  
*declarár culpáble. alegrárse,* (2)  
 my children, your father is much better, (3) he is out of  
*fuera*  
 danger. My nephew does not cease to torment and afflict  
*sobrino* *dejár de atormentárse*  
 himself. It rained, hailed, lightened and thundered  
 \* *llover, granizár, relampagueár* *tronár*  
 yesterday almost all day. (There were) yesterday more than  
*cási* *día, m.*  
 sixty persons at the party at the Countess de Terillo's, and  
*en* *en casa de*  
 to-morrow (there will be) at least two hundred at Madam  
*á lo ménos* *Madáma*  
 Terranueva's. I have met neither of them.

(1) The pronoun *se* which is found joined to the verb in the infinitive, always denotes that it is reflective, or reciprocal. See page 117.

(2) See Note page 118.

(3) See the N. B. of Rule XLIX. page 95.

## EXERCISE XXXVII.

*On the neuter, reflected, reciprocal, impersonal and irregular verbs.*

Messrs. Cojo and Giboso disputed on Monday last (1) for  
*disputárse* \*  
 about an hour. Your cousin told me yesterday that his  
*cérca de* *primo* *decir, irr.*  
 mother would not return from her country seat till  
*volver* *antes de*  
 next week, although she had already arrived. I abhor  
*próximo* *aborrecer, irr.*  
 and my sister abhors like me false philosophy. I desire that  
*cómo yo* *filosofía, f.* *deseár*  
 you would abhor (2) it also. Can you, Sir, do me the  
*Podér, irr.* *hacér*  
 pleasure to lend me ten louis? I cannot: if I could I  
*favór, m. de prestar* *hús*  
 would do it willingly. - - The servant of Mr. Cañas  
*hacér, irr. de muy buena gana.*  
 has been judged and declared innocent. What do you  
*juzgár* *declarár*  
 think of what I have told you? At what hour do you  
*pensár, irr.* *decir, irr.* *A*  
 wish that your children should - - breakfast,? (2) I  
*querér, irr.* *almorzar, irr.*  
 breakfast at seven o'clock, and I wish that they should break-  
 fast, and that you should all<sup>s</sup> breakfast<sup>s</sup> at eight. Go, my  
*ir, irr.*  
 children, go and study till breakfast is ready. I  
*á* *hasta que almuérzo, m.* *esté pronto.*  
 know that it will not be so before half an hour. (3) None  
*sabér, irr.* \* *estár lo* \*  
 can - recollect without horror the bloody<sup>s</sup> scenes<sup>s</sup>  
*podér, irr. acordárse* *sin horror de sangriento escena, f.*  
 which the revolution of Morocco produced in the years one  
*producir, irr.* *de*

(1) The days of the week take the article, say therefore; *el lunes último*, or *pasado*: *on* is not expressed in such cases in Spanish.

(2) See Rule XLVII. page 81.

(3) *Before* is here translated by *antes de*.....say *antes de media hora*; *on* is suppressed.

thousand five hundred and eighty-two and eighty-three.

I say and I repeat it every day that our posterity will  
*decír,irr. repetír,irr. niéto,pl. m.*  
 scarcely believe such atrocities. I bring you, gentlemen, a  
*apénas creér atrocidad traér,irr.*  
 book that you will read with pleasure ; I desire that you  
*leér gústo ; deseár*  
 would bring me also, or that you would send me that  
*también, enviár él*  
 which you have promised me. I (go out) every day about  
*prometér salir,irr. hácia*  
 one o'clock : do me the favour to send it to me before that  
*hacér,irr. de ántes de*  
 hour. It is not right that many should suffer for a few.  
*razón, padecér,irr. unos pocos.*

### EXERCISE XXXVIII.

#### *Continuation of the preceding Rules.*

The truly christian man blesses the hand of  
*verdadéramente cristiano bendecír,irr.*  
 God, even when it chastens him : let us follow his example,  
*aún cuándo \* castigár seguir,irr. egémplo,m.*  
 and let us bless, (in the midst) of our misfortunes the God of  
*en médio infortunio,m.*  
 goodness who has given us being and who preserves it to us.  
*dar ser,m. conservár*  
 I fear this child will fall, (1) tell him to stop. (2) Your  
*caér,irr. decír,irr. detenérse,irr.*  
 father wishes that you should conduct your sister to  
*querér,irr. conducir,irr.*  
 school by the same road that you conducted her  
*escuela,f.por mismo camino,m.*  
 yesterday. I say and I repeat every day that nothing is (3)  
*repetír,irr. náda*  
 so rare, as a true friend. In summer, almost all Spaniards  
*veráno, casi*  
 sleep (after dinner ; ) it is the heat which requires that  
*dormír,irr. después de comér \* exigir*

(1) Put *caér* in the subj. pres. See Rule XLVII. page 81.

(2) Translate the phrase as if it was, tell him that he stop, pres. sub.

(3) See Rule XXXVIII. page 66 and 159.

they should *do* it. It lightens and *thunders* often in  
*hacer, irr.* \* *tronar, irr.*  
 Spain; it rains there very rarely in the southern  
 \* *rara vez* *mediodía, m.*  
 provinces, and in the northern provinces the rain is almost  
*provincia, f.* *norte, m.* *lluvia, f.*  
 continual from the month of October till the end of April.  
*continuo desde mes, m. octubre hasta fin, m. abril.*  
 Where are<sup>a</sup> you<sup>a</sup> going,<sup>a</sup> Margaret? I (am going) into the  
*Adónde ir, irr. Margarita? en*  
 garden, I shall gather some flowers, and I shall go and carry  
*coger flor, f. á llevar*  
 them to the Countess de Dupuy; I should desire you  
*deseár*  
 would come with me, but I fear that your mother (1) does  
*venir, irr.*  
 not wish you (2) to (go out).—I (am going) to ask her.—  
*que vm. salir, irr. preguntárselo.*  
 Well, go and return quickly. My mother consents  
*Bien, volver, irr. pronto, consentir, irr.*  
 that (2) I should go with you, provided that (2) I bring her  
*en que con tal que traer, irr.*  
 some flowers, and that (2) we do not (go out) before (2) I  
*salir, irr. antes que*  
 know my lesson in geography. Is it possible that so many  
*saber, irr. lección de geografía.*  
 honourable people should say it? (2)  
*honrado gente, f. decir, irr.*

## EXERCISE XXXIX.

See Rules LI. LII. LIII. and LIV. pages 151, 152, 153.

I (have just heard) that the countess de Villegas has lost a  
*acábo de oír*  
 son, it is the queen's surgeon who has killed him. The Mar-  
 \* *reína, f. cirujano, m. morir, irr.*  
 chioness de Costillas is also dead, and she (is to be buried)  
*se ha de enterrar*

(1) Your mother, is politely translated in Spanish, *su señora madre*:  
 your father, *su señor padre*, &c.

(2) See conjunct. that govern the subj. page 81, and 194.

the day after to-morrow at her country seat. I am very poor  
*en casa de campo.*

and thou art very rich. (1) I am not more indebted (2) to  
 Philip my father, said often Alexander, than to Aristotle,  
*Felipe decía Alejandro, Aristóteles,*  
 my preceptor; if I owe my life to one, I owe virtue to the  
*preceptor; debér al*

other. Do you believe what (was told you) this morning?  
*creér le decían*

What? that Mr. Peredo is dead? I believe and I know<sup>a</sup>  
*muerto saber, irr.*

even<sup>a</sup> that he is very well. (3) What is my son doing? He is  
*uún hacer?*

writing. (3)—Where is he? He is in his room.—And this  
*escribír. dónde*

morning what was he doing when you was with him? He  
 was studying geography. I thought that he was drawing.—  
*geografía, f. creér, irr. dibujár.*

No, sir, but he will do it while you are breakfasting. I fear  
*miéntras almorzár. temér*

that you deceive me. Let us go and write the letters of  
*engañár ir, irr. á escribír*

which I spoke (to thee.) Sir, I have written them. (4)  
*escribír, irr.*

(There are) some men who repeat (5) (everywhere) all that  
*habér, impers. repetír, irr. (por todas partes) lo que*

they hear. We will go and dine, when you please. (6) Let  
*oír, irr. á gustár.*

us go and walk first, we shall dine with more appetite. My  
*á ántes, apetito.*

son (has just arrived) from the wharf, where he has been  
*acába de llegar muélla, m, dónde*

walking an hour and a half. Do not forget, Francis, that I  
*\* olvidár, Francisco,*

have ordered thee to return to-morrow. (7) He (is just gone out.)  
*mandár de volvér mañana. salir.*

(1) See the exception to Rule LI. p. 152 at the top.

(2) Say: I do not owe more . . . . *No debo mas.*

(3) See Rule L. p. 95.

(4) See Rule LIX. p. 156.

(5) Say; *que ándan repitiendo, or que van repitiendo, for, who repeat.*

(6) See Rule XL. p. 76.

(7) See Rule LVIII. p. 156.

## EXERCISE XL.

*On the preceding Rules and on Rules LVII. LVIII.  
LIX: LX. and LXI. pages 156, 157.*

The Spaniards were conquered but never subdued.  
*vencer á sojuzgar.*  
 I have all the works of Mr. Thomas de Iriarte, I have  
*obra, f. Don Tomás*  
 read them, and they please me very much. (I like) also  
*gustar Me gustan*  
 very much (1) the writings of Calderon and Lope de  
*obra, f.*  
 Vega : I bought them fifteen days ago, and I paid very  
*comprar ha, pagar*  
 dear for them. Spanish books were so scarce in Boston  
*por escaso,*  
 that the lovers of that language could hardly procure any.  
*aficionado á poder encontrar*  
 I should wish to read the poem of la Araucana by Alonzo  
*querer, irr. Alonso*  
 de Ercilla ; but I do not know if I shall (be able)  
*saber, irr. poder, irr.*  
 to find it in this city. I do not believe that you can find  
*\* encontrar crear*  
 it at the bookstores ; but one of my friends, who has in his  
 library ten or twelve thousand volumes of the best French,  
*biblioteca cómo*  
 English, Spanish, German and Italian works, has often  
*obra, f.*  
 spoken to me of this poem : I will ask (him for it,) telling  
*pedir se lo decir, irr.*  
 him that you wish to read it ; and I am persuaded that, if  
*desear \* estar persuadido*  
 he has it, he will not refuse it to me. (How much) do you  
*rehusar cuánto*  
 think I have paid for the two hundred bottles of Burgundy  
*pagar por botella, f.*  
 wine that I have bought ? One hundred and twenty pounds  
*\* libra*

(1) The verb *to like, gustar*, is used impersonally ; as, *le gusta la música italiana*, he likes Italian music. *Nos gusta el Español*, we like the Spanish. *Les gusta el vino*, they like wine.



sterling ? They did not cost me but one hundred pounds,  
*esterlina?* *costár* \*

they are not dear. The wine being so old and so good, I  
*rancio*

would<sup>2</sup> willingly<sup>2</sup> have<sup>1</sup> paid a hundred and fifty pounds.  
*de buena gana* \*

The letter which I have written to your mother to announce  
*carta, f. escribir, irr. para anunciar*

to her that Miss Sydney is dead, will be delivered to-morrow  
*entregar*

to Mr. Montague, who (is going) to see her at her country  
*ir, irr. en*

house, and has offered to carry it to her. You live and you  
*ofrecer de llevar*

have killed your friend ! The supper finished, the guests  
*morir, irr. cena, f. acabar, convidado, m.*

(took leave.)  
*despedirse, irr.*

### EXERCISE XLI.

*On the Adverbs, the Prepositions, and the preceding Rules. See page 157 and the following observations on adverbs.*

N. B. In Spanish the adverbs are generally placed after the verb ; except the *negative* and *interrogative* adverbs, which are placed before the verbs, and before the auxiliaries in compound tenses.

The arts and sciences have *never* been more cultivated  
*arte, f. ser cultivar*

than they are now : but never also have they been more  
*lo ahora :*

encouraged that they are. (There is) *no* country where  
*proteger lo. hay*

the laws are more just and wise, and where justice is  
*séan. sea*

administered with less partiality than in France. The vir-  
*administrar parcialidad*

tuous man is more estimable reduced even to the most  
*reducido aún*

extreme misery than the man without honour and without  
*estrémo miseria, f. sin*

religion, living in the greatest opulence. It is not riches  
*vivir mayor opulencia, f. \* No son*

that command esteem, but honour and virtue. Indigence  
*grangeár estimación, f. mas si* *indigencia, f.*  
 was never, and never can be criminal, but by being the  
*crimínal, con ser*  
 effect of crime. There is nothing so common as the name  
*efecto, m. crimen, m.* *común*  
 of friend; nothing however so rare as true friendship.  
*sin embargo* *amistad, f.*  
 (It is said) that the Hon. Mr. W. speaks learnedly, prudently  
*se dice* *doctamente,*  
 and eloquently. (1) Professor H. writes and speaks correctly  
*elocuentemente.*  
 and elegantly. Modesty, candour and virtue are, in a  
*elegantemente.* *candór, m.*  
 woman, preferable to beauty. (2) When we hear men say  
*mejór* *hermosura, f.* *oír, irr.* *decir*  
 to us every day: gentlemen, we are wholly yours; we are  
*cáda* *de vm.*  
 entirely devoted to your service: let us believe that it is  
*adicto* *creér* \*  
 almost always as if they said: we might (be useful) to you,  
*cási* *decir, irr.* *podér, irr.* *servir*  
 but (we will do nothing about it.)  
*no lo hurémos*

## EXERCISE XLII.

*On the Conjunctions and preceding Rules. See Rules  
 LXII.LXIII.LXIV and LXV. pages 161, 162, 193.*

William second, king of England, was killed while  
*matár estando*  
 hunting, with an arrow, by Walter, his favourite, in the  
*en cáza, de saetázo* *Gualtéro,* *valído*  
 year eleven hundred and one. Now united, now separate;  
*de mil ciéto* *Yá júnτος* *apartádos,*  
 now they extend their bodies, now they contract them The  
*ahóra* *tendér, irr.* *encogér*

(1) See p. 160 of the grammar, 3d observ.

(2) Translate this phrase as if it was: modesty, &c. are better in a woman than beauty.

battle of Masura, in Egypt (was fought) in the year twelve  
*batalla, f. Masúra, dársé, irr. mil dos*  
 hundred and fifty. Saint Louis, king of France, after hav-  
*ciénlos después de*  
 ing fought with a heroic courage, was made prisoner by the  
*peleár vulór, m. hacér, irr*  
 army of the Saracens commanded by Malec Sala. Having  
*egército, m. Sarrucéno mandár*  
 been ransomed, he resumed the conquest of the Holy<sup>a</sup> Land ;  
*rescatár, volvér á conquista, f. Santo Tiérra, f.*  
 but the plague having introduced itself into his army, the  
*pésle, f. introducirse*  
 greatest part of his troops perished with it, and he perished  
*mayór perefér de*  
 (with. it) himself. Punishments (ought to) be for the  
*\* castígo, m. debér*  
 wicked, the rewards, for the good. I shall (be absent)  
*málo, m. recompénsa, f. ausentárse*  
 next week for some days, and on my return my son can  
*á vuélla podrá*  
 depart for Madrid, or if he prefers it, delay his journey till  
*salír preferir, irr. dejar viáge pára*  
 Spring. (1) (Every body) says that, for a (young man) of  
*la todos, pl. decír, irr. jóven, m.*  
 fourteen, your nephew is prodigiously learned. Your father  
*años, sobríno instruído.*  
 is on the point of (2) (setting out) for the capital : he  
*partír*  
 intends to speak to the minister for your brother and to  
*tenér ánimo de ministro, m.*  
 endeavour to obtain a place for him. Mr. D. speaks Latin,  
*procurár \* lograr émpléo, m.*  
 French, Spanish, and English. (3) Charles and Ignatius, his  
*Ignácio,*  
 brothers, are also very learned. Do you know where Mr.  
*también dócto. sabér, irr.*  
 Francis Ordoñez is now ? No, sir ; I know that he is no  
*ahóra*

(1) See pages 160 and 161 of the grammar, the different modes of using *por* and *pára*.

(2) See the N. B. 2d of Rule LXII. page 161.

(3) See Rule LXIV. page 193.

longer a canon of the Cathedral of Saint Andero; and I  
*mas* \* *canónigo* *catedral*,f.  
 believe that he is archbishop or bishop.(1) As rapid for-  
*creér* *arzobispo* *obispo.* *Cuál*  
 rents, &c. so those brave warriors, &c. As two hungry  
*así* *Cuál*  
 lions &c. so the battalions, &c.  
*tal*

## EXERCISE XLIII.

*On the Conjunctions, the Interjections, and the preceding Rules.*

I shall not (go out) to day unless it ceases raining. *Al-*  
*salir*,irr. \* *dejar* de llover.  
 though beauty is much (sought for) in women, yet it is very  
*muy* *deseado*  
 often dangerous and productive of very great  
*peligroso* *productivo*  
 evils. This war will be very long, unless the powers of the  
 north coalesce. The Spanish Academy has established for  
*norte*.m.*ligarse*. (2) *establecer*  
 pronunciation clear and precise rules, that there might  
*pronunciación*,f. *claro* *preciso* *regla*,f. *afin* que \*  
 not remain the least doubt on so essential a point. *Woe*  
*quedar*. *duda*,f. *Ay*  
 to those who suffer themselves (to be dragged away) by the  
*de* *dejarse* *arrastrar* *de*  
 torrent of passions! *Alas!* I am ruined. (How unfortunate  
*torrente*,m. *pasión*,f. *estar* *perder*. *desdichado*  
 I am!) courage! courage! after the combat, victory.  
*de mí!* *espíritu!* *combate*,m. *victoria*,f.  
 Passing (last evening) in the street of Saint Charles, I heard  
*Pasar* *ayer* *noche* *calle*,f. *Carlos*, *oir*,irr.  
 repeated on all sides these cries: fire! fire! I hastened my  
*repetir* *por* *parte*,f. *grito*,m. *adelantar* *el*  
 steps, and on entering the neighbouring street, I met a  
*páso*, *al entrar* *en* *vecino* *encontrar*  
 poor woman, who melted into tears and did not cease to  
*deshacerse* *en lágrimas* *de*  
 repeat these words: My God, how unfortunate I am! *Ah!*  
*voz*,f.

(1) See Rule LXV. page 193.

(2) See Grammar, page 121, N. B. 4.

my child, my poor child ! where art thou ? the house of this woman was then almost reduced to ashes, and the child  
*entonces casi reducir ceniza,*  
 whom she lamented had been a victim to the flames, it was  
*llorar \* víctima de lláma, f.\* tener*  
 only three years old. (Poor little one !) exclaimed I, what  
*\* Pobrecito ! exclamar*  
 sorrow, what a misfortune for a mother ! I endeavoured to  
*dolór, \* desdicha procurar \**  
 console her, I gave her some money ; but all was useless :  
*consolar dar, irr. dinero, m.*  
 she was inconsolable ; ah ! said she to me, thanking me,  
*inconsolable ; decír, irr. dar gracias*  
 (God grant) you may never experience a similar  
*Dios quiera que experimentar \* semejante*  
 misfortune. One obtains by arms (if not) more riches,  
*desdicha alcanzar. sinó*  
 at least more honour than by Letters.  
*lo ménos létras, f.*

## EXERCISE XLIV.

*On the preceding Rules.*

Madam Luisa de Legarra arrived yesterday from Madrid, and brought me letters from some of my friends. I  
*traér, irr. alguno*  
 shall go and walk, after dinner, and Mary will come with  
*ir á venir, irr.*  
 me. For whom is that ribbon ? for me or for thee ? it is for  
*cinta, f.*  
 thee, I shall buy another for me, dost thou know Miss M.... ?  
*conocer*  
 do I know her ! certainly ; and I assure thee that I love her  
*si ciertamente ; asegurar querer, irr.*  
 and esteem her very much. And dost thou love me also ? (1)  
 Yes, I love thee (very much) and shall never forget thee.  
*muchísimo*  
 What did the Marquis de Rojas want ? He asked me how  
*querér ? preguntár*  
 you did, and then he (went away.) I received last week  
*estár, después írse, irr. recibir*  
 a letter from Mr. John Roca ; it ended thus : and do me the  
*Don \* acabar hacer, irr.*

(1) See the N. B. of Rule XXX. page 56.

favour to believe that I am *forever* (1) your sincere friend,  
*favór, m. de creér*

&c. You know him, (as well as) his brother Augustus.  
*cómo también* *Augusto.*

Well, tell me if you have ever known men more worthy of the  
*bién, decír, irr* *jamás*

esteem and affliction of those who associate with them.—

*estimación, f. afécto, m.* *frecuentár \**

Never; and I assure you that I love them both with all my  
*Nunca;* *asegúrar* *á ámbos*

heart. I say as much of them and I say it with pleasure.  
*ótro tanto*

The man who has passed his youth in *amusing himself*, (2)

repents of it (sooner)<sup>3</sup> or<sup>2</sup> (later.)<sup>1</sup> My children spend  
*pasár* *juventud* *élla tempráno* *tárde.* *empleár*

two or three hours every day in studying history. (2) Playing  
*á* *jugár*

and walking, you will not inform yourself. A man of  
*instruírse*

genius (ought to) cultivate his talents to (render himself)  
*ingénio debér* *talento, m. pára* *hacérse*

useful to society. I like reading and study. (3) I do not  
*sociedad, f. me gústa*

like the company of Miss B., I fear she will come. (4)  
*que* *vení.*

## EXERCISE XLV.

### *On the preceding Rules.*

My husband solicits the place of officer in the queen's  
*solicítar* *empleó, m.* *oficial*

regiment; but I fear that the king will refuse it to him. (4)  
*regimíento, m.* *rehusár*

The Governor promised us yesterday to come to-day to the  
*prometér* *de*

party, but we fear that his occupations will prevent (4)  
*tertulia, f.* *ocupación* *impedír, irr.*

(1) See these words, page 159, Note 1st.

(2) See Rule LV. page 153.

(3) See Sole LV. and the N. B. that follows it, page 153.

(4) See Rule XLVII. page 81.

our having the pleasure to see him. (Is there) any news ?  
*que tengámos gusto, m. de ver* *Háy noticia, f.*

No, there is none. (1) (How many) persons are there below ?  
*abajo ?*

(How many) ladies and (how many) gentlemen ? There  
*caballéro ?*

are ten ladies and nineteen gentlemen ; and there were  
 yesterday forty-two persons at the Marchioness de  
*en casa de*

Torillo's ; the assembly was very brilliant. (It is) a great  
*brillante. es*

misfortune for a man not<sup>3</sup> to<sup>1</sup> have<sup>3</sup> friends.<sup>4</sup> (2) Who  
*desdicha, f. el*

has done that ? It is I. (2) Who has written this letter ?  
*hacer, irr. carta, f.*

It is you, I believe. Read, my child, and read again (3)  
*creer. Leer,*

the maxims of La Rochefoucault, they are fine and suitable  
*máxima, f. hermoso propio*

to give a very great knowledge of the human heart. I  
*á dar conocimiento, m.*

cannot (go out) to-day, I have too bad a headache. (4)  
*podér, irr. salir*

Sir, your father (has but just) gone out, (5) he will return  
*acabar de volver*

in two hours. The archbishop of Toledo was like to  
*dentro de estar para*

die (6) (last evening) of an indigestion. (It is) only an hour  
*morir anoche indigestión, f. háy*

since the Marchioness de Costillas told me of it. I have  
*que decir, irr. \**

(1) See Rule XXXVIII. page 66.

(2) See page 155 and 156 of the grammar, 3d observation.

(3) See page 155 of the grammar, 2d observation.

(4) To translate these words, we must render them in this manner, *the head pains me too much ; me duele demasiado la cabeza.* These modes of speaking ; to have a pain in the eyes, in the teeth, &c. are rendered in the same manner ; as, *me dolía un ojo, un diente, &c.* I had a pain in an eye, a tooth, &c.

(5) To have or to be but just, is *acabar de*, governing the next verb in the present of the infinitive. Ex. *Acabo de salir*, I have just gone out.

(6) See page 156 ; 4th observation.

written two lines to him to express to him (how much)  
*escribí, irr. renglón pára expresar*

I am grieved by this accident. (1) I am very much grieved  
*me pesa \**

(by it) myself; I shall go and see him after dinner. Do me  
*\* á después de. Hacer, irr.*

then the favour to tell him that this evening we will go,  
*pués favor, m. de noche, f.*

seven or eight friends (of us) and keep him company. Do  
*\* á hacer*

you give credit to what he says? This coat suits him well.  
*dar fê á caer*

I shall go and meet him. We are attached to you.  
*á recibir tener cariño*

(Be so good as to) introduce me. We (enjoy the good graces)  
*Servirse gozár del favor*

of the king. I (shall be much indebted) to you for that fa-  
*debér mucho*

vour. (It is in vain for) you to say so. Let us forbear speak-  
*Por mas que subj. pres. dejar de*

ing of that. They have learnt that lesson by heart. You  
*de memoria.*

tire my patience. Let us take a draught. He has (resigned)  
*apurár echár trágó. hacer dejación de*

his office. You (murder the language.) He understood  
*empléo. hablar chapurrado entender*

about that (of course.) She was well pleased with herself.  
*de yá se sabe. estar muy pagado de sí*

Let us take a walk. I have bespoken a pair of shoes. I  
*dar vuelta, f. mandár hacer*

have missed my aim. Look out of the window. I  
*no salir bien con su intento. asomarse á*

had like to die. For whom do you take me? I regret the  
*estar á pique de. por tener sentir*

time lost. This dish has no taste. I will extricate them.  
*guisado, m. saber á náda. sacar de aprieto.*

There does not grow coffee in Europe.  
*\* criarse*

(1) Say : how much grieves me this accident ; and so, in all the tenses used as impersonal verbs ; as, *le pesaba*, he was grieved ; *nos pesará*, we shall be grieved ; *me ha pesado*, I have been grieved ; *nos gustó*, we liked ; *les ha gustado*, they have liked ; *te habría gustado*, thou wouldst have liked, &c. I am in a hurry, *estoy de prisa*.



## A VOCABULARY,

*Containing such words as most frequently occur in familiar conversation, and ought therefore to be known by students.*

N. B. In nouns of the same gender and number as the preceding one, the space of the article to be applied is left blank.

<i>The parts of the human body.</i>		La punta de la	<i>tip of</i>
Las partes del cuerpo humano.		nariz,	<i>the nose.</i>
		Las ventanas de la nariz,	<i>nostrils.</i>
La cabeza,	<i>head.</i>	Los caños de la nariz,	<i>gristle</i>
coronilla,	<i>crown of the</i>		<i>of the nose.</i>
	<i>head.</i>	diñtes,	<i>teeth.</i>
mollera,	<i>mould of the head.</i>	colmillos,	<i>eye-teeth.</i>
frénte,	<i>forehead.</i>	Las muélas,	<i>grinders.</i>
Las siénes	<i>temples.</i>	El nervio óptico,	<i>the optic</i>
La oreja	<i>ear.</i>		<i>nerve.</i>
ternilla,	<i>gristle.</i>	labio,	<i>lip.</i>
céja,	<i>eyebrow.</i>	paladar,	<i>palate.</i>
cuénca del ojo,	<i>corner of</i>	La quijáda,	<i>jaws.</i>
El lagrimál,	<i>the eye.</i>	cervíz,	<i>hinder part of</i>
blanco del ojo,	<i>white of</i>		<i>the neck.</i>
	<i>the eye.</i>	núca,	<i>nape of the neck.</i>
celebro, or cerebro,	<i>brain.</i>	garganta,	<i>throat.</i>
cógote,	<i>back of the neck.</i>	barriga,	<i>belly.</i>
huéco de la oreja,	<i>hollow</i>	máno,	<i>hand.</i>
	<i>of the ear.</i>	muñéca,	<i>wrist.</i>
tímpano del oído,	<i>drum of</i>	pálma de la máno,	<i>palm</i>
	<i>the ear.</i>		<i>of the hand.</i>
Los párpados,	<i>eye-lids.</i>	bárba,	<i>chin.</i>
Las pestañas,	<i>eye-lashes.</i>	Las bárbas,	<i>beard.</i>
La niña del ojo,	<i>eye-ball.</i>	costillas,	<i>ribs.</i>
téla del ojo,	<i>film of the eye.</i>	La íngle,	<i>groin.</i>
megílla,	<i>check.</i>	Las coyuntúras de los dedos,	<i>joint of fingers.</i>
bóca,	<i>mouth.</i>	Los dedos de los piés,	<i>toes.</i>
encía,	<i>gum.</i>	El ganzáte,	<i>guilet.</i>
lengua,	<i>tongue.</i>	séno,	<i>bosom.</i>
nariz,	<i>nose.</i>		

El pécho	<i>breast.</i>	The interior parts of the human body.—Partes interiores del cuerpo humano.
estómago,	<i>stomach.</i>	
pélo,	<i>hair.</i>	
véllo,	<i>down.</i>	
cuéllo,	<i>neck.</i>	
brázo,	<i>arm.</i>	
códo,	<i>elbow.</i>	
sobáco,	<i>arm-pit.</i>	
espinázo,	<i>back-bone.</i>	
ombligo,	<i>navel.</i>	
La yéma del dedo,	<i>brawn of the finger.</i>	
uña,	<i>nail.</i>	
rodilla,	<i>knee.</i>	
pierna,	<i>leg.</i>	
pantorrilla,	<i>calf of the leg.</i>	
espinilla,	<i>skin-bone.</i>	
plánta del pié,	<i>sole of the foot.</i>	
gargánta del pié,	<i>instep.</i>	
piel,	<i>skin.</i>	
El pulgár,	<i>thumb.</i>	
dédo índice,	<i>fore-finger.</i>	
dédo del corazón,	<i>middle finger.</i>	
dédo anulár,	<i>fourth finger.</i>	
dédo meñíque,	<i>little finger.</i>	
or auriculár,	<i>finger.</i>	
múslo,	<i>thigh.</i>	
jarréte,	<i>ham.</i>	
tobillo,	<i>ankle.</i>	
pié,	<i>foot.</i>	
talón,	<i>heel.</i>	
Las espáldas,	<i>back.</i>	
Los hombros,	<i>shoulders.</i>	
ládos,	<i>sides.</i>	
El cútis, cuéro,	<i>skin, hide.</i>	
pelléjo,		
El murecillo,	<i>muscle.</i>	
músculo,	<i>muscle.</i>	
nérvio,	<i>nerve.</i>	
tendón,	<i>tendon, sinew.</i>	
La grása, or gordúra,	<i>fat.</i>	
membrána,	<i>membrane.</i>	
véna,	<i>vein.</i>	
artéria,	<i>artery.</i>	
ternilla,	<i>gristle.</i>	
El huéso,	<i>bone.</i>	
meólló,	<i>marrow.</i>	
La medúla,	<i>marrow.</i>	
El tuétano,	<i>marrow.</i>	
cásko, la calavéra,	<i>skull.</i>	
Las espinillas,	<i>skin bones.</i>	
La espaldilla,	<i>shoulder-bone.</i>	
canilla del brázo,	<i>arm-bone.</i>	
El huéso sácro, or	<i>rump bone.</i>	
La rabadilla,	<i>bone.</i>	
El esqueleto,	<i>skeleton.</i>	
corazón	<i>heart.</i>	
Los bófes,	<i>lungs,</i>	
pulmónes,	<i>lights.</i>	
livianos,	<i>liver.</i>	
El hígado,	<i>liver.</i>	
bázo,	<i>spleen.</i>	
Los riñónes,	<i>kidneys.</i>	
sésos,	<i>brains.</i>	
El estómago,	<i>stomach.</i>	
La boca del estómago,	<i>pit of the stomach.</i>	
Los lómos,	<i>loins.</i>	
Las tripas,	<i>guts.</i>	
Los intestinos,	<i>intestines.</i>	
La mádre, la matríz,	<i>womb.</i>	
El útero,	<i>womb.</i>	

La vegíga,	<i>bladder.</i>	<i>Defects in the human body.—</i>	
sángre,	<i>blood.</i>	Defectos del cuérpo humano.	
cólera,	<i>choler.</i>		
fléma,	<i>phlegm.</i>	La sealdád,	<i>deformity.</i>
El quílo,	<i>chyle.</i>	Las arrúgas,	<i>wrinkles.</i>
La léche,	<i>milk.</i>	pécas,	<i>freckles.</i>
salíva,	<i>spittle.</i>	lagáñas,	<i>blear eyes.</i>
		La verrúga,	<i>wart.</i>
		El lunár,	<i>mole.</i>
		La núbe en el ójo,	<i>a pearl in the eye.</i>

*The five senses.—Los cinco sentidos.*

La vista,	<i>sight.</i>	Las cosquillas,	<i>tickling.</i>
El oído,	<i>hearing.</i>	La cataráta,	<i>cataract.</i>
olfáto,	<i>smell.</i>	ceguedád, or } <i>blindness.</i>	
gústo,	<i>taste.</i>	ceguéra,	
tácto,	<i>feeling.</i>	magrúra,	<i>leanness.</i>
		El ciégo,	<i>blind.</i>
		tuérto,	<i>one-eyed.</i>
		cójo,	<i>lame.</i>
		La cojéz,	<i>lameness.</i>
		El tartamúdo,	<i>stammerer.</i>

*Ages.—Edádes.*

La niñez,	<i>childhood.</i>	La corcóva,	<i>crookedness.</i>
infancia,	<i>infancy.</i>	El cálvó,	<i>bald.</i>
puerícia,	<i>boyishness.</i>	rómo,	<i>flat-nosed.</i>
adolescencia,	<i>adolescence.</i>	estropeádo,	<i>crippled.</i>
juventúd,	<i>youth.</i>	tullído,	<i>lame of the limbs.</i>
virilidad,	<i>manhood.</i>	zúrdo,	<i>left-handed.</i>
senectúd, }		bízco, bisójo,	<i>squinting.</i>
vejéz, }	<i>old age.</i>	máncó, lame of one hand.	
		múdo,	<i>dumb.</i>
		sórdo,	<i>deaf.</i>

*Qualities of the body.—Calidádes del cuérpo.*

La salud,	<i>health.</i>	<i>Virtues and vices, good and bad qualities of men.—</i>	
fuérza,	<i>strength.</i>	Virtúdes y vícios, buénas y málas calidádes de los hombres.	
debilidad,	<i>weakness.</i>		
hermosúra,	<i>beauty.</i>		
sealdád,	<i>ugliness.</i>		
El gárbo,	<i>good presence.</i>	El recatádo,	<i>cautious, modest.</i>
brio,	<i>sprightliness.</i>	diéstro,	<i>dexterous.</i>
ríco tálle,	<i>fine stature.</i>	dócil,	<i>docile.</i>

El galán,	<i>gallant.</i>	El misericordioso,	<i>merciful.</i>
símple,	<i>harmless.</i>	paciente,	<i>patient.</i>
agúdo,	<i>sharp.</i>	religioso,	<i>religious.</i>
vivo,	<i>sprightly.</i>	ambicioso,	<i>ambitious.</i>
sutil,	<i>subtle.</i>	avariento,	{ <i>covetous.</i>
chocarrero,	<i>buffoon.</i>	avaro,	
nécio,	<i>foolish.</i>	sobérbio,	<i>proud.</i>
astúto,	<i>crafty.</i>	hipócrita,	<i>hypocrite.</i>
lôco,	<i>mad.</i>	cobárde,	<i>coward.</i>
malicioso,	<i>malicious.</i>	holgazán,	<i>idle.</i>
temeroso,	<i>fearful.</i>	altivo,	<i>haughty.</i>
espantadizo,	<i>easy to be</i>	chismoso,	<i>tale-bearer.</i>
	<i>frightened, skittish.</i>	adulador,	<i>flatterer.</i>
valiente,	<i>brave.</i>	goloso,	<i>glutton.</i>
tônto,	<i>stupid.</i>	desleál,	<i>treacherous.</i>
fantástico,	<i>fantastical.</i>	desagradecido,	<i>ungrate-</i>
embustero,	<i>deceitful.</i>		<i>ful.</i>
groséro,	<i>clownish.</i>	inhumano,	<i>inhuman.</i>
revoltoso,	<i>mutinous.</i>	insolente,	<i>insolent.</i>
bién criado,	<i>well-bred.</i>	lujurioso,	<i>lewd.</i>
cortés,	<i>courteous.</i>	porfiado,	<i>positive.</i>
gráve,	<i>grave.</i>	perezoso,	<i>slothful.</i>
jústo,	<i>just.</i>	pródigo,	<i>prodigal.</i>
prudénte,	<i>discreet.</i>	váno,	<i>vain.</i>
desvergonzado,	<i>impudent.</i>	mugeriégo,	<i>given to</i>
fogoso,	<i>fiery.</i>		<i>women.</i>
impertinente,	<i>impertinent.</i>	atrevido,	<i>bold.</i>
importúno,	<i>troublesome.</i>	colérico,	<i>passionate.</i>
ligero,	<i>light.</i>	rabioso,	<i>outrageous.</i>
descuidado,	<i>careless.</i>	alégre,	<i>merry.</i>
temerario,	<i>rash.</i>	ufáno,	<i>arrogant.</i>
afáble,	<i>affable.</i>	indeciso,	<i>irresolute.</i>
amigable,	<i>friendly.</i>	celoso,	<i>jealous.</i>
bizárro,	<i>brave.</i>	adúltero,	<i>adulterer.</i>
caritativo,	<i>charitable.</i>	rufián,	<i>ruffian.</i>
cásto,	<i>chaste.</i>	matador,	<i>murderer.</i>
constánte,	<i>constant.</i>	salteador,	<i>highwayman.</i>
devoto,	<i>devout.</i>	jurador,	<i>swearer.</i>
diligénte,	<i>diligent.</i>	calumniador,	<i>slanderer.</i>
fiél,	<i>faithful.</i>	murmurador,	<i>censurer.</i>
generoso,	<i>generous.</i>	hechicéro,	<i>sorcerer.</i>
humilde,	<i>humble.</i>	tramposo,	<i>cheat.</i>

El incestuoso,	<i>incestuous.</i>	El pan de cebáda,	<i>barley</i>
ladrón,	<i>thief.</i>		<i>bread.</i>
ratéro,	<i>pickpocket.</i>	pan de avena,	<i>oaten bread.</i>
mentiróso,	<i>liar.</i>	pan de mijo,	<i>millet bread.</i>
perjúro,	<i>perjurer.</i>	pan de maiz,	<i>indian corn</i>
pérfido,	<i>perfidious.</i>		<i>bread.</i>
profano,	<i>profane.</i>	pan de levadura,	<i>leavened</i>
rebélde,	<i>rebel.</i>		<i>bread.</i>
sacrílego,	<i>sacrilegious.</i>	bizcócho,	<i>biscuit.</i>
traidor,	<i>traitor.</i>	La migája de pan,	<i>crumb of</i>
malváo,	<i>perfidious.</i>		<i>bread.</i>

*Of eating and drinking.—*  
Del comer y beber.

La comida,	<i>dinner.</i>	El buñuelo,	<i>fritter.</i>
céna,	<i>supper.</i>	La empanáda,	<i>tart or pie.</i>
El almuerzo,	<i>breakfast.</i>	cárne,	<i>meat.</i>
La merienda,	<i>luncheon.</i>	El cocido,	<i>boiled meat.</i>
colación,	<i>collation.</i>	asádo,	<i>roasted meat.</i>
El banquete,	<i>entertainment.</i>	estofádo,	<i>stewed meat.</i>
convidádo,	<i>guest.</i>	La cárne frita,	<i>fried meat.</i>
convíte,	<i>feast.</i>	carbonáda,	<i>broiled meat.</i>
La hambre,	<i>hunger.</i>	pepitória,	<i>giblets.</i>
séd,	<i>thirst.</i>	El picadillo,	<i>hash.</i>
El borrácho,	<i>drunkard.</i>	La cecina,	<i>hung meat.</i>
buén hebedór,	<i>hard</i>	El pernil, el jamón,	<i>ham.</i>
	<i>drinker.</i>	carnéro,	<i>mutton.</i>
buén apetito,	} <i>good ap-</i>	La váca,	<i>beef.</i>
Las buenas ganas,		El cordéro,	<i>lamb.</i>
El glotón,	<i>glutton.</i>	La ternera,	<i>veal.</i>
pan,	<i>bread.</i>	El puerco,	<i>pork.</i>
pan blanco,	<i>white bread.</i>	cabrito,	<i>kid.</i>
pan candíal,	<i>the whitest</i>	tocino,	<i>bacon.</i>
	<i>bread.</i>	La pierna de carnéro,	<i>leg of</i>
pan bázo,	<i>brown bread.</i>		<i>mutton.</i>
molléte	<i>hot loaf.</i>	El brazuelo de carnéro,	<i>shoulder of mutton.</i>
pan fresco,	<i>new bread.</i>	lómo,	<i>loin.</i>
pan de todo trigo,	<i>wheat-</i>	pécho,	<i>breast.</i>
	<i>en bread.</i>	Las manos de carnéro,	<i>sheep's</i>
pan de centeno,	<i>rye bread.</i>		<i>trotters.</i>

La ruéda de ternéra	<i>fillet of veal</i>	El huévo empolládo,	<i>egg with a chicken in it.</i>
asadúra,	<i>the pluck.</i>	Los huévos de pescádo,	<i>the spawn of fish.</i>
salchicha,	<i>sausage.</i>	huévos megídos,	<i>yolks of eggs stewed with wine and sugar.</i>
El salchichón,	<i>big sausage.</i>	huévos y torrénos,	<i>collops and eggs.</i>
La morcilla,	<i>blood pudding.</i>	huévos revuélto,	<i>butter-ed eggs.</i>
longaniza,	<i>long sausage.</i>	La tortilla de huévos,	<i>omelet.</i>
El pastel,	<i>pie, pastry.</i>	Los huévos de faltriquera,	<i>yolks of eggs in shells of sugar.</i>
cáldo,	<i>broth.</i>	huévos hiládos,	<i>sweet eggs spun out.</i>
La sópa,	<i>soup.</i>	El sazónamiénto,	<i>seasoning.</i>
El potáge,	<i>pottage.</i>	La salmuéra,	<i>brine.</i>
Las pápas,	<i>} any sort of pap.</i>	Las espécias,	<i>spices.</i>
púches,		La pimienta,	<i>pepper.</i>
El pístó,	<i>jelly-broths.</i>	El gengibre,	<i>ginger.</i>
La cárne fámbré,	<i>cold meat.</i>	Los clavillos,	<i>cloves.</i>
léche,	<i>milk.</i>	La canéla,	<i>cinnamon.</i>
náta,	<i>cream.</i>	nuéz moscáda,	<i>nutmeg.</i>
El suéro,	<i>whew.</i>	flor de espécia,	<i>mace.</i>
La mantéca,	<i>butter.</i>	mostáza,	<i>mustard.</i>
El quéso,	<i>cheese.</i>	El agráz,	<i>verjuice.</i>
quéso frésco,	<i>new cheese.</i>	vinágre,	<i>vinegar.</i>
requesón,	<i>curds.</i>	acéite,	<i>oil.</i>
cuájo,	<i>rennet.</i>	La sal,	<i>salt.</i>
La cuajáda,	<i>milk hardened with rennet.</i>	El azúcar,	<i>sugar.</i>
El huévo,	<i>the egg.</i>	Los escabéches,	<i>pickles.</i>
La yéma de huévo,	<i>the yolk of an egg.</i>	dúlces,	<i>sweetmeats.</i>
clára de huévo,	<i>the white of an egg.</i>	almíbares,	<i>conserves.</i>
El huévo blándó,	<i>soft egg.</i>	almíbar,	<i>sugar boiled.</i>
huévo dúro,	<i>hard egg.</i>	confites,	<i>comfits.</i>
huévo frésco,	<i>new egg.</i>	Las consérvas,	<i>conserves.</i>
huévo en cáscara,	<i>egg in the shell.</i>	mermeláda,	<i>marmelade.</i>
huévo cocído,	<i>boiled egg.</i>	peráda,	<i>pears preserved.</i>
huévo asádo,	<i>roasted egg.</i>		
huévo estrelládo,	<i>fried egg.</i>		
huévo huéro,	<i>addle egg.</i>		

Las alcoreíllas, } <i>amixed su-</i>	El paño tundido, <i>shorts cloth.</i>
pastillas, } <i>gar.</i>	La grána, } <i>scarlet.</i>
La naranjada, <i>candied or</i>	escarláta, } <i>râja,</i>
<i>anges.</i>	<i>rash cloth.</i>
El turrón, <i>sweetmeat.</i>	El sayal, <i>sackcloth.</i>
Los barquillos ó las suplica-	La frisa, <i>frieze.</i>
ciones, <i>sweet wafers.</i>	estameña, <i>serge.</i>
buñuelos, <i>puffs.</i>	estófa, <i>stuff.</i>
La bebida, <i>drink.</i>	El tafetán, <i>taffety.</i>
El vino, <i>wine.</i>	râso, râso liso, <i>satín.</i>
vino puro, <i>pure wine.</i>	tércio pélo, <i>velvet.</i>
vino vuelto, <i>pricked wine.</i>	damasco, <i>damask.</i>
vino moscatél, <i>muscatell</i>	brocado, <i>brocade.</i>
<i>wine.</i>	gorgorán, <i>gogram.</i>
vino tinto, <i>red wine.</i>	La gâsa, <i>gauze.</i>
vino blanco, <i>white wine.</i>	Las laníllas, <i>drugget.</i>
vino alóque, <i>pale wine.</i>	El cendál, <i>crape.</i>
vino claréte, <i>claret wine.</i>	camelóte, <i>camblet.</i>
vino dulce y picante,	La téla de oro, <i>cloth of gold.</i>
<i>sweet and sharp wine.</i>	El tripe, <i>shag.</i>
vino añejo, <i>old wine.</i>	algodón, <i>cotton.</i>
vino ligero, <i>light wine.</i>	fustán, <i>fustian.</i>
vinazo, <i>strong wine.</i>	La muselina, <i>muslin.</i>
malvasía, <i>malmsay.</i>	El lino, <i>flax.</i>
água pié, <i>mixture of must</i>	liénzo, <i>linen.</i>
<i>and water.</i>	cambrái, <i>cambrick.</i>
La hez del vino, <i>wine lees.</i>	La holándá, <i>holland.</i>
El aguardiente, <i>brandy.</i>	El ruán, <i>French linen.</i>
La cervéza, <i>beer.</i>	cañamo, <i>hemp.</i>
sídra, <i>cider.</i>	terlíz, <i>ticken.</i>
alója, <i>mead, metheglin.</i>	calicut, <i>calica.</i>
El chocoláte, <i>chocolate.</i>	fiéltro, <i>felt.</i>
té, <i>tea.</i>	angéo, <i>canvass.</i>
La limonáda, <i>lemonade.</i>	La lóna, <i>sailcloth.</i>
mistéla, <i>anise brandy.</i>	bayéta, <i>baize.</i>
El café, <i>coffee.</i>	lâna, <i>wool.</i>
	El estámbré, <i>worsted.</i>
	La séda, <i>silk.</i>
<i>Of Clothes.</i> —De los vestidos.	El bocací, <i>buckram.</i>
El paño, <i>cloth.</i>	Una jóya, <i>a jewel.</i>
paño fino, <i>fine cloth.</i>	hebilla, <i>a buckle.</i>
	Los alamâres, <i>loops on coats.</i>

Un ojal,	<i>a button-hole.</i>	Una agujeta,	<i>a point.</i>
La bordadura,	<i>embroidery.</i>	Un faltriquera,	<i>a pocket.</i>
Un botón,	<i>a button.</i>	Un bolsillo,	<i>a purse.</i>
Una franja,	} <i>a fringe.</i>	Las medias,	<i>stockings.</i>
Un fleque,		ligas,	<i>garters.</i>
Las puntas,	} <i>lace.</i>	Los zapatos,	<i>shoes.</i>
Los encáges,		escarpines,	<i>pumps, socks.</i>
Una cinta,	<i>a ribbon.</i>	Las chinélas,	<i>slippers.</i>
Un listón,	<i>a broad ribbon.</i>	Un borceguí,	<i>a buskin.</i>
pasamano,	<i>gold or silver</i>	Las botas,	<i>boots.</i>
	<i>lace.</i>	polainas,	<i>spatterdash.</i>
ribete,	<i>an edging.</i>	espuélas,	<i>spurs.</i>
sombrero,	<i>a hat.</i>	Los puños,	} <i>cuffs or ruffles.</i>
La copa del sombrero,	<i>the</i>	Las vueltas,	
	<i>crown of the hat.</i>	Los vueltos,	
ala ó falda del sombrero,	<i>the brim of the hat.</i>	Un tahalí,	<i>a shoulder-belt.</i>
El torzál ó la trencilla,	<i>the</i>	Unos tiros,	<i>a waist-belt.</i>
	<i>hat-band.</i>	Una espada,	<i>a sword.</i>
El plumage,	<i>feathers.</i>	daga,	<i>a dagger.</i>
Un bonete,	<i>a cap.</i>	capa,	<i>a cloak.</i>
gorro de noche,	<i>a night-</i>	casaca,	<i>a coat.</i>
	<i>cap.</i>	Un guante,	<i>a glove.</i>
Una gorra,	<i>an old fashioned</i>	ceñidor,	<i>a girdle.</i>
	<i>cap.</i>	Una peluca,	<i>a round wig.</i>
caperuza,	<i>a sort of cap.</i>	Un peluquín,	<i>a bag wig.</i>
montera,	<i>a hunting cap.</i>	pañuelo,	<i>a pocket hand-</i>
camisa,	<i>a shirt.</i>		<i>kerchief.</i>
almilla, chupa,	<i>a waist-</i>	Una ropa,	} <i>a gown.</i>
	<i>coat.</i>	Un ropón,	
Los calzoncillos,	<i>drawers.</i>	Una bata,	
Un jubón,	<i>a doublet.</i>	ropa de levantar,	<i>a</i>
Una manga,	<i>a sleeve.</i>		<i>morning gown.</i>
manga perdida,	<i>a hang-</i>	Un pellico,	<i>a shepherd's</i>
	<i>ing sleeve.</i>	Una zamarra,	<i>jerkin.</i>
Las faldillas de jubón,	<i>the</i>		
	<i>skirts of a jacket.</i>		
Los calzones,	<i>breeches.</i>		
Una valóna,	<i>a tucker, a band.</i>	Un tocado,	} <i>a head dress,</i>
Un corbatín,	<i>a neckcloth.</i>	Una cofia,	
cuélllo,	<i>a collar.</i>	escófia,	
coléto,	<i>a buff coat.</i>	Un manto,	<i>a veil.</i>

For women.—Para mugeres.



Una saya,	} a black gown	Unos zarcillos,	ear-rings.
basquiña,	} or petticoat.	pendientes,	pendants.
Un guardapiés,	} an upper	La gargantilla,	necklace.
Únas enaguas,	} petticoat.	Únas manillas,	} bracelets.
Un avantál,	} an apron.	Unos brazalétes,	
devantál,		Únas sortijas,	} rings.
guárda sol,	} a parasol.	Unos anillos,	
quita sol,		Las pedrerías,	precious stones.
parágua,	an umbrella.	Un abanico,	a fan.
relój,	a watch.	Las calcéatas,	thread stockings.
Únas tablillas,	tables.	El peinador,	combing cloth.
Un espéjo,	a looking-glass.	Los pañales,	sawdadding
Una bugéta,	a little box.		clouts.
Un manguito,	a muff.	Una faja,	a roller.
Una cotilla,	stays.	Los juguétes,	play-things.
camisa,	a shift.	Una cuna,	a cradle.
mantilla,	a mantle.	áma de léche,	a wet
báta,	a gown.		nurse.
Un chapín,	a clog.	Los díges,	toys.

[The beasts, fowls, fishes, fruits, herbs, roots, &c. that are eatable, will be found under their respective names.—  
Los animales, áves, peces, frútas, yérbas, raíces, &c. comes-  
tibles, se hallarán debájo de sus nombres respectivos.]

*Beasts.*—Béstias.

Una béstia mansa,	a tame	Un corderico,	a lambkin.
	beast.	búrro,	} an ass.
béstia feróz,	a wild	borrico,	
	beast.	ásno,	
El ganado,	cattle.	Una búrra, borrica,	a she ass.
ganado mayór,	large	Un puérco,	} a hog.
	cattle.	marráno,	
Un tóro,	a bull.	lechón, lechoncillo,	a pig.
ternéro ó becerro,	a calf.	jabalí,	a wild boar.
Una ternéra,	a heifer.	Una háca,	} a pony, a
Un buéy,	an ox.	haquilla,	
carnéro,	a sheep.	Un búfalo,	a buffalo.
Una ovéja,	an ewe.	Una yégua,	a mare.
Un cordéro,	a lamb.	yegüecilla,	a young mare.
		Un caballo,	a horse.
		caméllo,	a camel.

Un gáto,	a cat.	Un alazán tostádo,	a dark sorrel.
garañón,	a stallion.		
cabállo castrádo,	a gelding.	ovéro,	a speckled white horse.
cabállo entéro,	a stone-horse.	rubicán,	a grey horse.
cabállo corredór,	a race-horse.	Úna cábra,	a she goat.
cabállo de máno,	a led horse.	Un cabríto,	a kid.
cabállo de pósta,	a post horse.	cabrón,	a he goat.
cabállo de alquiler,	a hackney horse.	pérro,	a dog.
cabállo rebélde,	a restive horse.	pérro de cáza,	a hound.
cabállo desbocádo,	a half-mouthed horse.	pérro de muéstra,	a setter.
cabállo medróso,	a starting horse.	sabuésó,	a blood hound.
cabállo tropezadór,	a stumbling horse.	podénco,	mongrel grey hound.
cabállo que sacúde,	a jolting horse.	perdiguéro,	a pointer.
cabállo asmático,	a broken winded horse.	pérro calládo,	a hound that does not open well.
cabállo indómito,	a horse that cannot be tamed.	pérro bájo,	a terrier.
cabállo saltadór,	a leaping horse.	gálgo,	a greyhound.
cabállo báyo,	a bay horse.	lebrél,	a sort of fierce dogs resembling greyhounds, common in Ireland.
báyo castaño,	a chesnut bay.	pérro ventór,	a finder.
báyo oscúro,	a brown bay.	pérro de águá,	or lamedillo, a water-dog.
báyo dorádo,	a bright bay.	mastín,	a mastiff.
picázo,	a pyed horse.	pérro de pastór,	a shepherd's dog.
rúcio rodádo,	a dapple grey.	pérro veladór,	a house dog.
de colór de gamúza,	cream colour.	perrillo de fálda,	a lap-dog.
alazán,	a sorrel.	aláno ó dógo,	a bull-dog.
		barbadillo,	a spaniel.
		pérro raposéro,	or jatéo, small setting dog for fox hunting.
		gózque,	a little dog, a turnspit.
		gozquéjo,	a rabbit.
		conéjo,	a rabbit.
		Úna hacanéa,	a pad.
		Un muléto,	a young mule.

- Un mulo, *a he-mule.* Un osillo, *a bear's cub.*  
 Una mula, *a she mule.* Una pantera, *a panther.*  
 Un pótro, *a colt.* Un rinoceronte, *a rhinoceros.*  
 pollino, *an ass's colt.* tigre, *a tiger.*  
 ciervo, *a stag.* jabalí, puérco montés, *a*  
 venádo, *a deer.* *wild boar.*  
 gámo, *a fallow deer.* Las navájas ó los colmillos de  
 cachorro de ciervo, *a fawn.* jabalí, *the tusks of a wild*  
*boar.*  
 Las ástas de ciervo, *the horns*  
*of a deer.* El cochinillo de jabalí, *the*  
*pig of a wild boar.*  
 El rástro ó las pisádas de ci-  
 ervo, *the track of a stag.* La jabalina, *a wild sow.*  
 Una comadréja, *a weasel.*  
 Un tejón, *a badger.*  
 Una gamúza, *a wild goat.*  
 cábra montés, *a roebuck.*  
 Ungáto de algália, *a civet-cat.*  
 Una dama, *a doe.*  
 ardilla, *a squirrel.*  
 Un elefante, *an elephant.*  
 Una fuina, *a martin.*  
 gardúña, *a pole-cat.*  
 Un móno, *a monkey.*  
 gímio, *an ape.*  
 armínio ó armíño, *an er-*  
*mine.*  
 erízo, *a hedge-hog.*  
 Una liebre, *a hare.*  
 liebreçilla, *a leveret.*  
 Un lirón, *a dormouse.*  
 Una rata, *a rat.*  
 zorra ó rapósa, *a fox.*  
 Un ratón, *a mouse.*  
 tópo, *a mole.*  
 Una hiéna, *a hyena.*  
 Un leopárdo, *a leopard.*  
 león, *a lion.*  
 Una leóna, *a lioness.*  
 Un leoncillo, *a lion's whelp.*  
 lóbo, *a wolf.*  
 lóbo cervál, *a lynx.*  
 óso, *a bear.*
- Un dragón, *a dragon.*  
 áspid, *an asp.*  
 Una culébra, *a snake.*  
 Un cocodrilo, *a crocodile.*  
 caimán, *an alligator.*  
 Una lagartija, }  
 salamanqués, } *a lizard.*  
 Un lagarto, }  
 Una víbora, *a viper.*  
 Un viborézno, *a young viper.*
- Amphibious creatures.—Ani-*  
*máles anfíbios.*  
 Un bívaro or castór, *a beaver*  
*or castor.*  
 Una nútria, or nútra, *an otter.*  
 Un hipopótamo, *a river-*  
*horse.*  
 Una tortúga, *a tortoise.*

Un galápago, *a land tortoise.*

Una foca marina, *sea calf.*

Una vaquilla de diós, *a lady-bird.*

Un zancúdo, *a gnat.*  
enjambre, *a swarm.*

*Insects.*—Sabandijas.

Una araña, *a spider.*

arañuela, *a little spider.*

carcoma, *a wood worm.*

oruga, *a caterpillar.*

Un arador, *a handworm.*

sápo, *a toad.*

escarabájo, *a beetle.*

caracol, *a snail.*

Una hormiga, *an ant, a pismire.*

rána, *a frog.*

Un grillo, *a cricket.*

revoltón, *an insect that spoils vines.*

piójo, *a louse.*

Una liendre, *a nit.*

púlga, *a flea.*

chínche, *a bug.*

langosta, *a locust.*

Un escorpión, } *a scorpion.*  
alacrán, }

Una tarántula, *a tarantula.*

polilla, *a moth.*

mósca, *a fly.*

avispa, *a wasp.*

Un avispon, *a large wasp.*

Una abeja, *a bee.*

Un moscón, } *an ox-fly.*  
Una moscarda, }

Un zángano, *a drone.*

Una mosca de berro, *gad fly.*

cigarra, *a balm cricket.*

tábano, *a hornet.*

lucérna or luciérnaga, *a glow worm.*

Una mariposa, *a butterfly.*

*Birds.*—Áves.

Una águila, *an eagle.*

Un aguilucho, *an eaglet.*

buitre, *a vulture.*

esmerejón, *a merlin.*

gavilán, *a sparrow-hawk.*

mochuelo, *a horn owl.*

halcón, *a falcon.*

torzuélo, } *a male falcon,*

halcón, } *or hawk.*

girifálte, *a ger-falcon.*

alcotán, *a lanner.*

sácre, *a sacre, a kind of hawk.*

Una gárza, *a heron.*

garzota, *a small heron.*

Un miláno, *a kite.*

cuérvo, *a crow or raven.*

Una cornéja, *a jack-daw.*

calándria, *a lark.*

Un aguzaniéve, *a wagtail.*

canário, *a canary bird.*

gilguéro, *a linnet.*

Un mirlo, } *a blackbird.*  
Una mérla, }

mírla, }

Un pinzón, *a chaffinch.*

ruiseñór, *a nightingale.*

verderón, *a green-bird.*

papagáyo, }

lóro, } *a parrot.*

Una cotórra, }

urráca } *a magpie.*

Un grájo, *a daw.*

Una lechúza, *an owl.*

Una chóva, *a chough.*

Un murciélago,	a bat.	Un pichón,	} a young pig-
Un mochuelo,	horn-owl.	palomino,	} eon.
Una comáya,	a night-crow.	Un alción,	a king-fisher.
Un grájo, a jackdaw or chough.		Una golondrina,	a swallow.
Una chotacabras,	a goat-sucker.	Un avestruz,	an ostrich.
Un ánade,	a wild duck.	Una cigüeña,	a stork.
Una cerceta,	a teal.	Un cuculillo,	a cuckoo.
Un chorlito,	a grey-plover.	cisne,	a swan.
cuervo marino,	a cormorant.	peterójo,	a robin red-breast.
pato,	a duck.	Una grulla,	a crane.
ganso,	} a goose.	pezpita,	a wagtail.
ansar,		Un frailecillo,	a lapwing.
ansaron,	a large goose.	Una oropendola,	a witwall.
cernicalo,	a kestrel, small hawk.	Un vencejo,	a martlett.
Una fúlga,	a moor-hen.	abejaruco,	a bee eater.
Un avión,	a martin.	Una avutarda,	a bustard.
Una gabiota,	a gull.	Un mirlo, black bird, an ousel.	
Un somorgujón,	a diver.	pelicano,	a pelican.
Una chócha,	} a wood-gallinaciega,	fenix,	a phoenix.
gallinaciega,		pica madera, a woodpecker.	
Un tordo,	a sea thrush.	pico verde,	a green beak.
estornino,	a starling.	chorlito,	a plover.
Una codorniz,	a quail.	reyezuélo,	a wren.
Un capón,	a capon.	mérigo,	a puffin.
gálo,	a cock.		
Una gallina,	a hen.	<b>Parts of a bird.—Partes de una Ave.</b>	
Un pollo,	a chicken.	El pico,	the beak.
Una póllo,	a pullet.	Una pluma,	a feather.
Un pávo,	} a turkey.	El plumón,	the down.
Una páva,		ála,	wing.
Un francolin,	a godwit, moor-cock.	Los cañones,	} quills.
faisán,	a pheasant.	Las plumas,	
zorzá,	a thrush.	El pié,	the foot.
hortelano,	an ortolan,	La cola,	the tail.
gorrión,	a sparrow.	El búche,	the craw.
palomo,	a pigeon.	Las gárras,	} claws, or talons.
Una perdiz,	a partridge.	uña,	
paloma,	a dove.	La rabadilla,	the rump.
tórtola,	a turtle dove.	pechuga,	the breast.
		entrepechuga,	the flesh of the bridge.

*Fishes.—Pêces.*

Un albúrno,	<i>a bleak.</i>
sábalo,	<i>a shad.</i>
Úna anchóva,	<i>an anchovy.</i>
anguila,	<i>an eel.</i>
balléna,	<i>a whale.</i>
Un bárbo,	<i>a barbel.</i>
méro,	<i>a halibut.</i>
lúcio,	<i>a pike.</i>
Úna carpa,	<i>a carp.</i>
Un calamár,	<i>a calamary.</i>
talpáire,	<i>a miller's thumb.</i>
cabállo maríno,	<i>a sea-horse.</i>
cóngrio,	<i>a conger.</i>
delfín,	<i>a dolphin.</i>
dorado,	<i>a gilt-back.</i>
La doradilla,	<i>the gold-fish.</i>
Un lenguádo,	<i>a sole.</i>
Úna langósta,	<i>a lobster.</i>
Un esturión,	<i>a sturgeon.</i>
góbíó,	<i>a gudgeon.</i>
arénque,	<i>a herring.</i>
Úna óstra,	<i>an oyster.</i>
óstia,	
lampréa,	<i>a lamprey.</i>
langostín,	<i>a prawn.</i>
lobina,	<i>a bass.</i>
sárda,	<i>a mackerel.</i>
marsópa,	<i>a porpoise.</i>
El abadéjo,	<i>cod-fish.</i>
La merluza,	
El bacalláo,	
Úna alméja,	<i>a muscle.</i>
ortiga pez,	<i>a stinging fish.</i>
pérca,	<i>a perch.</i>
Un púlpo,	<i>a polypus.</i>
Úna ráya,	<i>a thornback.</i>
liza,	<i>a skate.</i>
Úna sardina,	<i>a pilchard.</i>
Un salmón,	<i>salmon.</i>

Úna trúcha,	<i>trout.</i>
gíbia,	<i>cuttle fish.</i>
ténca,	<i>a tench.</i>
Un atún,	<i>a tunny-fish.</i>
Úna tremiélga,	<i>a torpedo.</i>
Un rodabállo,	<i>a turbot.</i>

*Parts of a fish.—Pârtes de un pez.*

El hocíco,	<i>the snout.</i>
Las agállas,	<i>the gills.</i>
álas,	<i>the fins.</i>
escámas,	<i>the scales.</i>
espínas,	<i>the bones.</i>
La cóncha,	<i>the shell.</i>
Los huévos de pez,	<i>the hard roe.</i>
La léche,	<i>the soft roe.</i>

*Trees.—Árboles.*

Un albaricóque,	<i>an apricot-tree.</i>
alméndro,	<i>an almond-tree.</i>
durázno,	<i>a peach-tree.</i>
guíndo,	<i>a cherry-tree.</i>
cerézq,	<i>a heart cherry-tree.</i>
castáño,	<i>a chesnut-tree.</i>
cídro,	<i>a citron-tree.</i>
membrilléro,	<i>a quince-tree.</i>
serbál,	<i>a service-tree.</i>
Úna páлма,	<i>a palm-tree.</i>
higuéra,	<i>a fig-tree.</i>
Un azuféifo,	<i>a jujub-tree.</i>
granádo,	<i>a pomegranate-tree.</i>
limón,	<i>a lemon-tree.</i>
morál,	<i>a mulberry-tree.</i>
níspero,	<i>a medlar-tree.</i>
avelláno,	<i>a hazel-nut-tree.</i>

Un nogál,	a walnut-tree.	La zárza,	the blackberry
olivo,	} an olive-tree.		bush.
aceitúno,		hiniesta,	broom.
acebúche,	a wild olive-tree.	úva espina,	gooseberry-bush.
naránjo,	an orange-tree.	adélsa,	rose bay.
albérchigo,	} a peach-tree.	yéuwa,	ivy.
pérsigo,		El brúsko,	butcher's broom.
ciruélo,	a plum-tree.	La regalia,	liquorice.
perál,	a pear-tree.	El alhocígo,	the pistachio-tree.
manzáno,	an apple-tree.	roméro,	rosemary.
álamo negro,	black poplar-tree.	rosál,	rose-tree.
álamo blanco,	white poplar-tree.	La sabina,	savin.
cédro,	a cedar-tree.	El tamaríz,	amarisk tree.
aliso,	an alder-tree.	La albéña,	privet.
Una encina,	ever-green-oak.	viña,	vine.
Un róble,	an oak-tree.	labrusca,	wild vine.
El córno,	the cornel-tree.	Una párra,	a wall vine.
El ciprés,	the cypress-tree.	El mirto,	myrtle.
ébano,	the ebony-tree.	Una párra de corímo,	currant-tree.
árce,	the maple-tree.		
La háya,	the beech-tree.		
El fréno,	the ash-tree.		
acébo,	the holly-tree.		
téjo,	the yew-tree.		
laurél,	the laurel-tree.		
alcornóque,	the cork-tree.		
ólmo,	the elm-tree.		
píno,	the pine or fir-tree.		
Un plántano,	a plantain-tree.		
saúce, saúz,	a willow-tree.		
tille,	} a linden-tree.		
Una téja,			

---

Fruits.—Frútas.

Un albericóque,	an apricot.
Una alméndra,	an almond.
Un madróño,	a wild strawberry.
durázno,	a peach.
Una guinda,	a cherry.
ceréza,	a heart-cherry.
castaña,	a chestnut.
cídra,	a citron.
Un membrillo,	a quince.
Una sérba,	service-apple.
Un dátíl,	date.
hígo,	a fig.
Una bréva,	early fig.
azufáfa,	a jujub.
granáda,	a pomegranate.
Un limón,	a lemon.
Una móra,	a mulberry.
náspola,	a medlar.
avellána,	a filbert.

---

Shrubs.—Mátas.

El ágno casto,	agnus castus.
alméz,	the lote-tree.
bálsamo,	the balsam.
boj,	the box-tree.
La madreselva,	the honey-suckle.

- Una nuez, *a walnut.*  
 aceituna, *an olive.*  
 naranja, *an orange.*  
 ciruela, *a plum.*  
 ciruela pása, *a prune.*  
 péra, *a pear.*  
 bergamóta, *a bergamot.*  
 manzana, *an apple.*  
 camuesa, *a pippin.*  
 manzana de San Juan, *St. John's apple.*
- Un melón, *a melon.*  
 Una bellóta, *an acorn.*  
 algarroba, *a carob.*  
 alcaparra, *a caper.*  
 zarzamóra, *a black-berry.*
- Un tamarindo, *a tamarind.*  
 piñón, *a nut of pine-trees.*  
 Una úva, *a grape.*  
 cáscara de nuez, &c. *a shell of a nut, &c.*  
 tela de granáda, *film of a pomegranate.*
- Un pimpóllo, *a sucker, or sprout of a vine.*  
 sarmiento, *a twig of a vine.*
- La yéma de viña, *the bud of a vine.*  
 Los zarcillos de la vid, *the tendrils of a vine.*  
 Un pámpano, *a vine branch.*  
 renuevo, *a young shoot of a vine.*  
 racimo de úvas, *a bunch of grapes.*
- Una pepita de la úva, *a grape-stone.*  
 Podar, *to prune a vine.*  
 Cavar, *to lay open the roots.*  
 Rodrigar, *to prop a vine.*  
 El rodrigán, *the prop.*
- Terciar la viña, *to dig a third time about a vine.*  
 Rozar, *to weed.*  
 Una raíz, *a root.*  
 Las hébras de raíz, *the fibres of a root.*  
 arraigar, *to take root.*  
 El tróncó, *the trunk of a tree.*  
 Un renuevo, *a sprig.*  
 La cortéza del árbol, *the bark.*  
 El zúmo, *the sap.*  
 móho, *the moss.*  
 rama, *the branch.*  
 Una hója, *a leaf.*  
 El huéso de frúta, *the stone of fruit.*  
 Las mondadúras de frúta, *the parings of fruit.*  
 El pezón, *the stalk.*  
 ingerir, *to ingraft.*  
 ingerir de cañúto, *to inoculate.*  
 Un ingyerto, *a graft.*  
 La pepita, *the seed of fruit.*
- 
- Corn and its parts.—Trigos y sus partes.  
 El trigo, *wheat.*  
 El candíal, *the best wheat.*  
 trigo rubión, *red wheat.*  
 La escándia, *bearded wheat.*  
 El herrén, *meal.*  
 La espélta, *spell.*  
 El centéno, *rye.*  
 La cobáda, *barley.*  
 avena, *oats.*  
 El arróz, *rice.*  
 mijo, *millet.*  
 maíz, *Indian corn.*  
 Las legúmbres, *pulse.*  
 Un averjón, *a large vetch.*  
 Los garbázos, *Spanish peas.*



Las judías,	<i>kidney-beans.</i>	Un culantro,	<i>coriander.</i>
Los guisantes,	<i>peas.</i>	culantrillo,	<i>capillaire.</i>
Una hába,	<i>a horse-bean.</i>	peregil marino,	<i>samphire.</i>
lentéja,	<i>a lentil.</i>	mastuérzo,	<i>garden cresses.</i>
Un altramúz,	<i>a lupine.</i>	una escalóna,	<i>a scullion.</i>
Un frijól,	<i>French bean.</i>	espináca,	<i>spinage.</i>
Las cicérchas,	<i>wild tares.</i>	Un hinójo,	<i>fennel.</i>
La cáscara,	<i>the shell.</i>	hoblón,	<i>hops.</i>
El holléjo,	<i>the husk.</i>	una lechúga murciána ó ce-	

**Roots, plants, and herbs.—**

Raíces, plantas, é yerbas.

El agénjo,	<i>wormwood.</i>	Un nábo,	<i>a turnip.</i>
ápío,	<i>celery.</i>	nabál,	<i>a turnip field.</i>
ájo,	<i>garlick.</i>	una cebólla,	<i>an onion.</i>
enélido,	<i>dill.</i>	acetósa,	{ <i>sorrel.</i>
anís,	<i>aniseed.</i>	acedéra,	
La alegría,	<i>sesame.</i>	romáza,	<i>long sorrel.</i>
Los armuélles,	<i>orach or gold-</i>	El peregil,	<i>parsley.</i>
en flowers.		Un puérro,	<i>a leek.</i>
Una alcachófa,	<i>an artichoke.</i>	una verdolága,	<i>purslain.</i>
Un espárrago,	<i>asparagus.</i>	unos ruipónces,	<i>rampions.</i>
El abrótno,	<i>southernwood.</i>	una roqueta,	<i>rocket.</i>
La acélga,	<i>white beet.</i>	rúda,	<i>rue.</i>
Un blédo,	<i>a blite.</i>	sálvia,	<i>sage.</i>
La borrája,	<i>boruge.</i>	criadilla de tierra,	<i>a truff-</i>
Las zanahorias,	<i>carrots.</i>	fle.	
El peregil,	{ <i>chervil.</i>	mejorána,	<i>sweet marjo-</i>
perifollo,		ram.	
Un hongo,	{ <i>a mushroom.</i>	Un agarico,	<i>agarick.</i>
Una seta,		una agrimonia,	<i>agrimony.</i>
chirivía,	<i>a parsnip.</i>	El acíbar,	<i>juice from the aloes.</i>
chicória,	{ <i>succory,</i>	La angélica,	<i>angelica.</i>
endivia,		celidónia,	<i>celandine.</i>
escaróla,	<i>endive.</i>	betónica,	<i>betony.</i>
col; bérza,	<i>a cabbage.</i>	bistorta,	<i>snakewort.</i>
Un repólo,	<i>round head cab-</i>	manzanilla,	<i>chamomile.</i>
bage.		El culantrillo de pózo,	<i>maid-</i>
una bérza créspe,	<i>a savoy.</i>	en hair.	
Un brotón,	<i>a sprout.</i>	La centinodia,	<i>centinody.</i>
una coliflor,	<i>a cauliflower.</i>	verbásca,	{ <i>wolf blade, or</i>
calabáza,	<i>a pumpkin.</i>	El gordolobo,	
Un pepino,	<i>a cucumber.</i>	wort.	

La amapóla,	poppy.	La escamonéa,	scammony.
El dictamo,	dittany.	cebolla albarrana,	wild onion.
La coníza pulguera,	fleabane.	séna,	senna.
El eléboro,	hellebore.	yérba cána,	groundsel.
tártago,	spurge.	valeriana,	valerian.
La genciána,	gentian.	verbéna,	vervain.
El camédrio,	germander.	El llantén,	grass plantain.
La gráma,	dog's grass.	siéte en ráma,	sept-foil.
yérba puntéra,	house-leek.	muérdago,	misletoe.
El beléño,	hen bane.	acánto,	} bears-foot.
marrúbio,	hore hound.	La blánca urcína,	
La matricária,	feverfew.	yérba gigánta,	} wolfbane.
Las málvas,	mallows.	El acónito,	
La coróná de réy,	melilot.	Las óvas del mar,	sea weed.
El torongíl,	balm.	La cóla de cabállo,	horse-tail.
mercuriál,	mercury.	El espliégo,	} lavender.
Las milhójas,	} mill-foil.	La alhucéma,	
Un milenráma,		El amor del horteláno,	} bur-
El corazoncillo,	St. John's wort, or grass.	Los lampázos,	
nárdo,	spikenard.	El peregil de águá,	water-parsley.
tabáco,	tobacco.	El tamaríz silvéstre,	tamarisk shrub.
orégano,	wild marjoram.	asarabácara,	asarabacca.
La higuéra,	fig-tree.	calaménto,	calamint.
parietária,	pellitory.	La cáña,	the reed.
cepacabállo,	} ground	doradilla,	spleenswort.
uña de cabállo,		El cañámo,	hemp.
adormidéra,	poppy.	lino,	flax.
rósa montés,	peony.	La cicúta,	hemlock.
El plátano,	plantain.	El comíno,	cummin.
polipodio,	polypody.	La yérba de ciérva,	hart's fodder.
agénúz,	} bishopswort.	El helécho,	fern.
La neguilla,		La palomilla,	fumitory.
cidronéla,	balm mint.	Los amóres sécos,	} clover.
El poléo,	pennyroyal.	El treból,	
La sanguinária,	bloodwort.	El yésgo,	danewort, dwarf elder.
sanícula,	sanicle.	júnco,	rush.
El satirión,	ragwort.		
La saxifrága,	saxifrage.		
escabiósa,	scabwort.		

La cerrája,	<i>sow-thistle.</i>
mandrágora,	<i>mandrake.</i>
yérba móra,	<i>nightshade.</i>
correhuêla,	<i>knot-grass.</i>
ortíga,	<i>nettle.</i>
El ruíbarbo,	<i>rhubarb.</i>
lepidio,	<i>peppermint.</i>
El alazór,	<i>saffron.</i>
azafrán,	
La jabonéra,	<i>soap-wort.</i>
alfálfa,	<i>darnel or cockle.</i>
La albaháca,	<i>sweet basil.</i>
yérba buena,	<i>mint.</i>
El serpól,	<i>wild thyme.</i>
tomillo,	<i>thyme.</i>

### Flowers.—Flores.

El amaránte,	<i>amaranth.</i>
La anémone,	<i>anemone.</i>
El jacinto,	<i>hyacinth.</i>
jazmín,	<i>jessamine.</i>
junquillo,	<i>jonquil.</i>
azucéna,	<i>the lily.</i>
máya,	<i>the daisy.</i>
El narcíso,	<i>daffodil.</i>
clavél, la clavellina,	<i>the plant, also, the pink.</i>
alelí,	<i>gilliflower.</i>
La espadáña,	<i>flag-flower.</i>
campanilla,	<i>blue-bottle.</i>
vellorita,	<i>the cowslip.</i>
El ranúnculo,	<i>ranunculus.</i>
La rosa,	<i>the rose.</i>
cién hojas,	<i>the hundred leaf rose.</i>
taravilla,	<i>marigold.</i>
El girasól,	<i>sun-flower.</i>
tulipán,	<i>the tulip.</i>
La violeta,	<i>the violet.</i>
Un capúllo,	<i>a rose-bud.</i>

### Colours.—Colôres.

Adjectives agree with Substantives.

Morádo,	<i>purple.</i>
Un colór de auróra,	<i>aurora colour.</i>
Bláncó,	<i>white.</i>
Colór de ladrillo,	<i>brick-colour.</i>
Azúl,	<i>blue.</i>
Azúl celéste,	<i>light blue.</i>
Azúl turquí,	<i>dark blue.</i>
Columbino,	<i>dove colour.</i>
Cetrino,	<i>lemon colour.</i>
Colór gamúza,	<i>light yellow.</i>
Colór de ceréza,	<i>filenot.</i>
Colórencendido,	<i>flame colour.</i>
Colór de fuégo,	<i>fire colour.</i>
Carmesí,	<i>crimson.</i>
Párido,	<i>grey.</i>
Ceniciénto,	<i>ash-colour.</i>
Amarillo,	<i>yellow.</i>
Encarnádo,	<i>red.</i>
Colorádo,	
Rójo,	<i>scarlet.</i>
Escarláta, Grána,	
Leonádo,	<i>tawny.</i>
Négro,	<i>black.</i>
Anaranjádo,	<i>orange colour.</i>
Aceitunádo,	<i>olive colour.</i>
Colór de rósa,	<i>rose colour.</i>
Bermejón,	<i>reddish.</i>
Vérde,	<i>green.</i>
El matíz de colôres,	<i>the shade of colours.</i>
Colór de mar,	<i>sea-green.</i>

### Parts of a kingdom.—Partes de un réino.

Una provincia,	<i>a province.</i>
ciudad,	<i>a city.</i>
villa,	<i>a town.</i>
aldéa,	<i>a village.</i>
Un lugár,	<i>a small place.</i>

*Parts of a city.*—*Partes de*  
*una ciudad.*

Una casa, *a house.*  
 tienda, *a shop.*  
 iglesia, *a church.*  
 capilla, *a chapel.*

Un altár, *an altar.*  
 palácio, *a palace.*  
 hospital, *an hospital.*

La casa de la villa, *or del ayuntamiento, the town house.*

Un tribunál, *a court of justice.*  
 arsenal, *an arsenal.*

Una academia, *an academy.*

Un colégio, *a college.*

Una calle, *a street.*

Un callejón, *an alley.*

Una calleja, callejuela, *a lane.*

Un mercado, *a market.*

Una carnicería, *a slaughterhouse.*

encrucijada, *a cross way.*

lónja, bolsa, *an exchange.*

cárcel, *a prison.*

Los muros, las murallas, *walls.*

puertas, *gates.*

fortificaciones, *fortifications.*

Una plaza, *a square.*

plazuéla, *a little square.*

*Of the inhabitants of cities.*—

De los moradores de una ciudad

Un niño, *a child.*

muchácho, *a boy.*

Una muchácha, *a girl.*

Un mózo, mocíto, *a youth.*

hómbre, *a man.*

Una mugér, *a woman.*

Un viejó, *an old man.*

Una vieja, *an old woman.*

Un cójo, *lame of one leg.*

Un máncó, *lame of one hand.*

ciégo, *blind.*

sórdó, *deaf.*

zúrdo, *left-handed.*

magistrádo, *a magistrate.*

nóble, *a nobleman.*

hidálgo, *a nobleman.*

caballéro, *knight, or gentleman.*

tendéro, *a shopkeeper.*

mercader, *a trader.*

comerciánte, *a merchant.*

negociánte, *chant.*

El poblácho, *the populace,*

vulgácho, *the mob.*

La plébe, *the rabble.*

canálla, *the rabble.*

Un artesáno, *a tradesman.*

mecánico, *a mechanic.*

jornaléro, *a journeyman.*

labradór, *a farmer.*

Una labradóra, *a farmer's*

wife, *or daughter.*

Un aldeáno, *a countryman.*

Una aldeána, *a countrywoman.*

Un pícaro, *a rogue.*

esclávo, *a slave.*

platéro, *a goldsmith.*

librero, *a bookseller.*

impresór, *a printer.*

barbéro, *a barber.*

mercader de séda, *a mercer.*

mercader de liénzo, *a linen-drapeer.*

mercader de páño, *a wool-*

len drapeer.

sástre, *a tailor.*

Una costuréra, *a seamstress.*

batéra, *a mantua-maker.*

Un sombreréro, *a hatter.*

calcetéro, *a hosier.*

zapatéro, *a shoemaker.*

- Un remendón, *a patcher, a cobbler.*  
 herrero, *a blacksmith.*  
 albéitar, *a farrier.*  
 corrajero, *a smith.*  
 Una lavandera, *a laundress.*  
 comadre, } *a midwife.*  
 partera, }  
 Un partero, *a man-midwife.*  
 médico, *a physician.*  
 embustero, *a cheat.*  
 charlatán, *a quack.*  
 cirujano, *a surgeon.*  
 sacamuélas, *a dentist.*  
 sillero, *a saddler.*  
 carpintero, *a carpenter.*  
 peón, *a labourer.*  
 albañil, *a bricklayer.*  
 pintor, *a painter.*  
 panadero, *a baker.*  
 carnicero, *a butcher.*  
 frutero, *a fruiterer.*  
 Una verdulera, *an herb, vegetable woman.*  
 Un pastelero, *a pastry-cook.*  
 tabernero, *a vintner.*  
 cervecero, *a brewer.*  
 mesonero, *an innkeeper.*  
 relojero, *a watchmaker.*  
 pregonero, *a crier.*  
 joyero, *a jeweller.*  
 boticario, *an apothecary.*  
 buhonero, *a pedlar.*  
 vidriero, *a glazier.*  
 carbonero, *a collier.*  
 jardinero, *a gardener.*  
 letrado, *a lawyer.*  
 procurador, *a solicitor, an attorney.*  
 abogado, *a counsellor at law.*  
 juez, *a judge.*  
 carcelero, *a jailer.*
- Un verdago, *a hangman.*  
 cerero, *a wax chandler.*  
 ganapán, } *a porter.*  
 esportillero, }  
 mandadero, }  
 remendón de vestidos, *a bootcher.*  
 tatarabuélo, *a grandfather's grandfather.*  
 bisabuélo, *great grandfather.*  
 abuélo, *a grandfather.*  
 pádre, *a father.*  
 Una madre, *a mother.*  
 Un hijo, *a son.*  
 Una hija, *a daughter.*  
 Un nieta, *a grandson.*  
 biznieta, *a great grandson.*  
 hermano, *a brother.*  
 cuñado, *a brother in law.*  
 padastro, *a step-father.*  
 Una madrastra, *a step-mother.*  
 Un suegro, *a father in law.*  
 Una nuera, *a daughter in law.*  
 Un yerno, *a son in law.*  
 primo hermano, *a cousin-german.*  
 tío, *an uncle.*  
 sobrino, *a nephew.*  
 primo segundo, *a second cousin.*  
 marido, *a husband.*  
 Una muger, *a wife.*  
 Un novio, *a bridegroom.*  
 Una novia, *a bride.*  
 Un desposado, *one betrothed.*  
 ahijado, *a godson.*  
 padrino, *a godfather.*  
 Una madrina, *a godmother.*  
 Un compadre, } *a father and*  
 Una comadre, } *mother in God*  
 Un compañero, *a partner.*  
 camarada, *a companion.*

- Un cofrade, *a brother of the same pious society.*  
 mellizo, *a twin.*  
 Una cofradía, *a guild, or society.*  
 tertulia, *a society, a club.*  
 comunidad, *a community.*  
 Un huérfano, *an orphan.*  
 soltero, *a bachelor.*  
 heredero, *an heir.*  
 áyo, *a tutor.*  
 curador, *a guardian.*  
 Una viuda, *a widow.*  
 Un hermano de leche, *a foster brother.*  
 hijo de la piedra, *espósito, ó echadizo, a foundling.*  
 niño supuesto, *a supposititious child.*  
 bastardo, *a bastard.*  
 hijo natural, *ó de ganancia, a natural son.*  
 Una doncella, *a maiden.*  
 muger casada, *a married woman.*  
 parida, *a lying-in woman.*  
 áma de leche, *a wet nurse.*  
 áma de llaves, *a house-keeper.*  
 mancéba, *a concubine.*
- 
- Of a house and all that belongs to it.—* De una casa, *y todo lo pertenciente á ella.*  
 Una casa, *a house.*  
 Un solár, *a ground of a house.*  
 cimiento, *a foundation.*  
 Una pared, *a wall.*  
 Un tabique, *a light wall.*  
 pátio, *a court, or yard.*  
 La fachada, *the front.*  
 Un alto, andar, *a story or floor.*  
 portál, *a porch.*
- Una ventána, *a window.*  
 Un entresuelo, *a low floor.*  
 zaquizamí, *a cockloft, a dirty house.*  
 ciélo, *ceiling.*  
 ciélo de cáma, *cover of a bed.*  
 desván, *a garret.*  
 artesón, *an arched ceiling.*  
 Una bóveda, *a vault.*  
 escaléra, *a stair case.*  
 Un escalón, *a step.*  
 tejado, *a roof.*  
 Las téjas, *tiles.*  
 Los ladrillos, *bricks.*  
 Las pizarras, *slates.*  
 La puérta, *the door.*  
 Un pasadizo, *a passage.*  
 corral, *a court-yard.*  
 trascorrál, *a back-yard.*  
 Una cámara, *a chamber.*  
 Un aposento, *an apartment.*  
 Una piéza, *a room.*  
 Un cuárto, *a chamber.*  
 Una estancia, *a sitting room.*  
 antecámara, *an anti-chamber.*  
 trascuádra, *a backroom.*  
 sala, *a hall.*  
 Un salón, *a large hall.*  
 corredór, *a gallery.*  
 retréte, *a closet.*  
 estudio, *a study.*  
 armáριο, *a press.*  
 Una albacéna, *a cupboard.*  
 Un guarda ropa, *a wardrobe.*  
 Una alcóva, *an alcove.*  
 Un balcón, *mirador, a balcony.*  
 Una azotéa, *the flat roof of a house, a terrace.*  
 Un camaranchón, *a cockloft.*  
 Una torre, *a tower.*  
 bodéga, *a cellar.*  
 sótano, *a vault.*

- Un repostéro, *a larderer.*  
 Una repostería, *a restorator.*  
 despensa, *a pantry.*  
 cocina, *a kitchen.*  
 caballeriza, *a stable.*  
 perrería, *a dog kennel.*  
 Un palomár, *a dove house.*  
 gallinero, *a hen roost.*  
 jardín, *a garden.*  
 párrque, *a park.*  
 La privada, necesaria, *the privy.*  
 coronilla del edificio, *the top of the building.*  
 El rípio, *rubbish.*  
 Una rípiá, *a lath, a shingle.*  
 El aléro de aléro tejádo, *the eaves of the roof.*  
 La canál, *the canal, the gutter.*  
 El umbrál, *the threshold.*  
 Los bastidóres de la puérta, *the frames of the door.*  
 El postigo, *the wicket, the by-door.*  
 Los quícios ó góznas, *hinges.*  
 Una cerradura, *a lock.*  
 Un candádo, *a padlock.*  
 El pestillo, *the bolt of a lock.*  
 Un cerrójo, *a bolt.*  
 Una lláve, *a key.*  
 ventanilla, *a little window.*  
 aldába, *a knocker.*  
 La tránca de una puérta, *the bar of a door.*  
 Las guárdas de la lláve, *the wards of a lock.*  
 El cañúto de una lláve, *the pipe of a key.*  
 La vidriéra, *the glass of a window.*  
 Las réjas de una ventána, *the bars of a window.*  
 Una escaléra de caracól, *a winding stair-case.*  
 Los rellános, ó las mesétas de escaléra, *the landing-places of the stairs.*  
 El descánso de una escaléra, *the resting place of stairs.*  
 Una gráda, un escalón, *a step.*  
 escaléra secréta, *back-stairs.*  
 víga, *a beam.*  
 Un cuartón, *a girder, or large joist.*  
 Una tábla, *a board.*  
 Un crucéro, *a trimmer.*  
 ladrillo, *a brick.*  
 La pared maéstra, *the main wall.*  
 pared de en médio, *the party wall.*  
 Una pared de cal y cánto, *a wall of lime and stone.*  
 Un tabique, *a partition wall.*  
 La cal, *lime or plaster.*  
 argamása, *mortar.*  
 encostradura de una pared, *the plaster of a wall.*  
 El yéso, *fine white lime.*  
 jalbégue, *white wash.*  
 Una mésa, *a table.*  
 Un banco, *a bench.*  
 Una silla, *a chair.*  
 silla de brázos, *an arm-chair.*  
 Un taburéte, *a chair without back or arms to it.*  
 sitiál, *a stool.*  
 banquillo, *a little bench.*  
 Una cája, *a box.*  
 árca, un arcón, *a chest.*  
 Un cajón, *a case of drawers.*  
 tiradór, *a drawer.*  
 escritório, *a scrutoire.*

Una cáma,	a bed.	Una chimenea,	a chimney.
Un lecho,	a couch.	Un respiradero, ó cajón de chimenea,	the flue of a chimney.
Una armadura or un made- ráje de cáma,	a bedstead.	Los morillos,	the andirons.
El ciélo de cáma,	the bed's tester.	El fuélla,	the bellows.
Las cortinas de cáma,	the bed- curtains.	Las tenázass,	the tongs.
El rodapiés,	the fringe of a table, a bed.	Una pála or un badil,	a shovel.
Un tapéte, una alfombra,	a carpet.	Un guardasuégo,	a screen, a fender.
Las sábanas,	the sheets.	biómbo,	a folding screen.
El cobertór,	counterpane.	atizadór,	a poker.
Las almohádas,	pillows.	Una ólla,	a porridge-pot.
La tapicería,	tapestry.	cobertéra,	a pot-lid.
Una pintura,	a picture.	El ása,	the ear of a pot.
Un espéjo,	a looking-glass.	Un puchéro,	a pipkin.
candeléro, a candlestick.		cucharón,	a ladle.
Las despabiladeras,	snuffers.	Una caldera,	a kettle.
Una araña, a branch of crys- tal to hold many candles.		Un escalfadór,	a chafing dish.
La yésca,	tinder.	braserillo,	
Una pajuéla,	a match.	Las trébedes,	a trevet.
Un pedernál,	a flint.	Un hornillo,	a cooking-stove.
eslabón, the steel to strike fire with.		hórno,	an oven.
orinál,	a chamber-pot.	Una sartén,	a frying-pan.
colchón,	a mattress.	Un cazo,	a saucepan.
colchón de plúmas,	feath- er bed.	Una cazuéla,	a little pan.
Una cólcha, a quilt or coverlet.		espumadéra,	a skimmer.
Un cátre,	a cot.	Las parrillas,	a gridiron.
Una cáma de campaña,	a field bed.	Un coladéro,	a sieve.
La testera de cáma,	the bed's head.	rállo,	a grater.
Las columnas de cáma,	the bed posts.	Una mechéra,	a larding pin.
Un gergón,	a straw-bed.	Un asadór,	a spit.
Una entera,	a mat.	Una aceitéra, alcúza,	an oil- pot.
Un calentadór de cáma,	a warming-pan.	vinagéra,	a cruet.
		Un almiréz, mortéro,	a mortar.
		Una máno de mortéro,	a pestle.
		redóma,	a vial.
		Un sumidéro,	a sink.
		cántaro,	a pitcher.
		bacín,	a close-stool pan.
		Una albórnía,	a great earth- en pan.



Una herráda, }	a bucket or	Un páge,	a page.
Un cúbo, }	pail.	lacayo,	a footman.
Una cúba,	a tub.	cochéro,	a coachman.
La legía, coláda,	ley.	mózo de cabállos,	a groom.
El jabón,	soap.	caballerizo,	a gentleman
La levadura,	leaven.		of the horse.
Una rodilla,	a coarse cloth.	copéro,	a cup-bearer.
Un estropájo,	a dishcloth.	maestre sala,	a sewer.
La pála del horno, the peel of	the oven.	bodeguéro,	a butler.
harína,	meal, flour.	repostéro,	
El salvádo,	bran.	halconéro,	a falconer.
Una artesa,	a trough.	cocinéro,	a cook.
Los mantéles,	table cloths.	galopin,	a scullion.
Una servilléta,	a napkin.	portéro,	a porter.
Un aguamanil,	a water-jug.	El huésped,	the host or
Una almofia, an earthen bowl.		ámo de casa,	landlord.
toálla,	a towel.		
Los plátos,	the plates.	Of country affairs.—De las	
Un cuchillo,	a knife.	cósus del campo.	
tebedór,	a fork.	Una alquería,	a farm house.
saléro,	a salt cellar.	quinta,	a country house.
pláto gránde,	a large dish.	Un quintéro,	a farmer.
Una escudilla,	a porringer.	boyéro,	a cowkeeper.
cuchára,	a spoon.	vaquéro,	
Un tajador,	a chopping block.	porquéro,	a swine-herd.
jarro,	a jug, a mug.	pastór,	a shepherd.
Una táza,	a cup.	zurrón,	a scrip.
salvilla.	a salver.	cayádo,	a shepherd's
Un flásko,	a flask.		crook.
Una botélla,	a bottle.	Una hónda,	a sling.
Un váso de vídrio,	a tumbler.	Un horteláno,	a gardener.
Una fuente, un gran pláto,	a dish, a basin.	jardinéro,	
Un mónda diéntes,	a tooth-	cavadór,	a digger.
escárba diéntes,	pick.	viñadéro,	a vine dresser.
mayordómo,	a steward.	arádo,	a plough.
trinchánte,	a carrier.	Una azáda,	a spade.
secretário,	a secretary.	Un azadón,	a pick-axe.
camaréro,	a chamberlain.	labrador,	a husbandman.
dispenséro,	a purveyor.	Una estéva,	a plough
capellán,	a chaplain.	mancéra,	handle.
limosnéro,	an almoner.	réja de arádo,	a plough
			share.
		El rastrillo,	the harrow.

- Un sembrador, *a sower.*  
 escardador, *a weeder,*  
 rozador, *a weeding-hook.*  
 segador, *a reaper.*  
 Una guadaña, *a scythe.*  
 Un trillo, mayál, *a flail.*  
 Una hórca, *a fork.*  
 Un biéldo, *a winnowing fan.*  
 pescador, *a fisherman.*  
 Una red barredóra, *a drag-net.*  
 vára, cáña pára pescár, *a fishing-rod.*  
 Un sedál de cáña, *a fishing-line.*  
 anzuélo, *a fish-hook.*  
 cazador, *a huntsman.*  
 cébo, *a bait.*  
 La líga, *bird lime.*  
 Una jáula, *a cage.*  
 Un obréro, } *a day labour-*  
 jornaléro, } *er.*  
 asnéro, *a keeper of asses.*  
 cabréro, *a goat-herd.*  
 paisáno, *a countryman.*  
 cámpo, *a field.*  
 lóno, *a ridge.*  
 Un súrco, *a furrow.*  
 El trigo en yérba, *green corn.*  
 La tierra incúlta, *land untilled.*  
 Un mónte, } *a mount, or*  
 Una montáña, } *mountain.*  
 cuésta, *a declivity.*  
 Un colládo, *a hill.*  
 cérrro, *a high ridge of hills.*  
 välle, *a valley.*  
 abísmo, *an abyss.*  
 Una zánja, *a trench, a ditch.*  
 lagúna, *a lake.*  
 Un pantáno, *a marsh.*  
 Una llanúra, *a plain.*  
 péña, róca, *a rock.*  
 Un peñasco, *a ridge of rocks.*
- Un despeñadéro, *a precipice.*  
 Una sélva, *a forest.*  
 Un bósque, *a grove, a wood.*  
 Una esplanáda, *esplanade.*  
 máta, *a bush.*  
 zárza, *a bramble.*  
 espína, *a thorn.*  
 Un prádo, *a meadow.*  
 vergél, huérto, *an orchard.*  
 Una huérta, *a kitchen-garden.*  
 Un jardín, *a flower-garden.*  
 Una éra en un jardín, *a bed, a plot in a garden.*  
 gloriéta, *a bower.*  
 almáciga, *a seed plot.*  
 bóveda de párras, *a vine arbour.*  
 Un laberinto, *a labyrinth.*  
 Una grúta, *a grotto.*  
 cascáda, *a cascade.*  
 fuénte, *a fountain.*  
 Un chórrro de águá, *a spout of water.*  
 El pilón de úna fuénte, *the basin of a fountain.*  
 Un encañádo, *a conduit of water.*  
 acuedúcto, *an aqueduct.*  
 La hortáliza, *garden vegetables.*  
 Una plánta, *a plant.*  
 El camíno real, *the highway.*  
 Una sénda, veréda, *a path.*  
 pisáda, un rástro, *a foot-step, a track.*  
 cabalgadúra, *a beast of burden.*  
 Un carromáto, *a wagon.*  
 cárro, *a cart.*  
 Una ruéda, *a wheel.*  
 El ráyo de úna ruéda, *the spoke of a wheel.*

- Las llantas, *the tire or rim.*  
 pinas, *the felloes of a wheel.*  
 El cúbo de una rueda, *the nave of a wheel.*  
 égo, *the axle-tree.*  
 La pezonera, *the pin of a wheel.*  
 Una calosa, *a chaise.*  
 litera, *a litter.*  
 Las ándas, *a bier, the shafts.*  
 Un cóche, *a coach.*  
 Una carroza, *an awning.*  
 cesta, *an osier-basket.*  
 rástra, párria, *a sledge.*  
 canasta, *a twig-basket.*  
 espuerta, *a bass-basket.*  
 Un chirrón, *a dung-cart.*  
 Una banasta, *a great hamper.*  
 alforja, *saddlebag, wallet.*  
 bolsa, *a purse.*  
 Un costál, *saco, a sack, bag.*  
 Una maléta, *a portmanteau.*  
 Un talégo, *a bag.*  
 Una balija, *a cloak-bag.*  
 Un surron, *a budget or pouch.*
- Of the church, and things belonging to it.—De la Iglesia, y cosas pertenecientes á ella.*  
 La nave, *the nave, aisle of a church.*  
 El cimbório, *the dome.*  
 La cúpula, *the cupola.*  
 El pináculo, *the pinnacle.*  
 coro, *the choir.*  
 La capilla, *the chapel.*  
 Un atril, *a stand or desk.*  
 La sacristía, *the vestry.*  
 El campanario, *the belfrey, steeple.*  
 Una campana, *a bell.*
- El badajo, *} tongue of the*  
 La lengüeta, *} bell, or clapper.*  
 pila, *the font.*  
 El bisópo, *the sprinkler.*  
 confesionário, *the confession box.*  
 Una tribuna, *a tribune or gallery.*  
 El cimetérío, *the church-yard.*  
 osário, *the sharnel-house.*  
 Un altar, *an altar.*  
 frontal, *a fore-part of an altar.*  
 ornáto, *an ornament.*  
 El tabernáculo, *} the taberna-*  
 sacrário, *} cle, ciborium.*  
 Un pálio, *a pall, a canopy.*  
 El mantel del altar, *the altar-cloth.*  
 Un misál, *a mass-book.*  
 Una sotana, *a cassock.*  
 sobrepelliz, *a surplice.*  
 Un roquete, *a short surplice.*  
 bonéte, *a bonnet, a cap.*  
 Una mitra, *a mitre.*  
 Un báculo, *a crozier.*  
 patriarca, *a patriarch.*  
 arzobispo, *an archbishop.*  
 obispo, *a bishop.*  
 obispado, *a bishoprick.*  
 Una diócesis, *a diocese.*  
 Un coadjutor, *coadjutor.*  
 sufragáneo, *suffragan.*  
 sacerdote, *a priest.*  
 El sacerdocio, *priesthood.*  
 Un diácono, *a deacon.*  
 subdiácono, *a subdeacon.*  
 acólito, *an acolyte.*  
 lector, *a reader.*  
 clérigo, *a clergyman.*  
 obispo, *a prelate.*  
 abad, *an abbot.*

Una abadésa,	<i>an abbess.</i>	Predicár,	<i>to preach.</i>
abadía,	<i>an abbey.</i>	Catequizar,	<i>to catechise.</i>
Un canónigo,	<i>a canon.</i>	Enterrár,	<i>to inter.</i>
deán,	<i>a dean.</i>	Sepultár,	<i>to bury.</i>
prevoste,	<i>a provost.</i>	La excomanión,	<i>excommuni-</i>
arcediano, <i>an archdeacon.</i>			<i>cation.</i>
chántré,	<i>a chanter.</i>	suspensión,	<i>suspension.</i>
maestro de coro, <i>a master</i>		Un entredicho, <i>an interdict.</i>	
of the choir.		La irregularidad, <i>irregularity.</i>	
cantór,	<i>a singer.</i>	Descomulgár,	<i>to excommu-</i>
sacristán, <i>a vestry keeper.</i>			<i>nicate.</i>
prebendado, <i>aprebandary.</i>		Una catedral,	<i>a cathedral</i>
cúra, <i>a curate, a parson.</i>		church.	
Una parroquia,	<i>a parish.</i>	La conventual,	<i>the church of</i>
Un vicario,	<i>a vicar.</i>		<i>a convent.</i>
oficial,	<i>an officer.</i>	Una parroquial,	<i>a parish</i>
promotor,	<i>a promoter.</i>	church.	
Una encomienda, <i>a comman-</i>		El adviento,	<i>advent.</i>
dry.		La cuareisma,	<i>lent.</i>
El bautismo,	<i>baptism.</i>	Las témporas,	<i>ember-weeks.</i>
La confirmación,	<i>confirma-</i>	Una vigilia, <i>a vigil, an eve.</i>	
tion.		Un ayuno,	<i>a fast.</i>
El matrimonio,	<i>matrimony.</i>		
Comulgár,	<i>to receive the sa-</i>	Things relating to War.—	
crament.		Cósas pertenecientes á la	
Los órdenes sacros,	<i>holy or-</i>	guerra.	
ders.		La artillería,	<i>artillery.</i>
Una ceremonia,	<i>a ceremony.</i>	Una piéza de artillería,	<i>acaná</i>
La rúbrica,	<i>the rubric.</i>	Un cañón,	<i>non.</i>
El ritual,	<i>the ritual.</i>	El tren de artillería,	<i>the train</i>
oficio divino,	<i>divine ser-</i>	of artillery.	
vice.		La boca de cañón,	<i>the mouth</i>
salterio,	<i>the psalter.</i>	of a cannon.	
Un salmo,	<i>a psalm.</i>	El fogón,	<i>the touch-hole.</i>
La antifona,	<i>antiphon.</i>	La culáta del cañón,	<i>the breech</i>
Una lección,	<i>a lesson.</i>	of a gun.	
Un versículo,	<i>a verse.</i>	curéña,	<i>the carriage of</i>
sermón,	<i>a sermon.</i>	El afúste,	<i>a gun.</i>
La meditación,	<i>meditation.</i>	Cargár,	<i>to load.</i>
oración vocal,	<i>vocal</i>	Apuntár,	<i>to aim at, to level.</i>
prayer.		Disparár,	<i>to fire.</i>
oración mental,	<i>mental</i>	Un tiro de cañón,	<i>a cannon-</i>
prayer.		shot.	

Desmontár un cañón, <i>to dis-</i> <i>mount a gun.</i>	Un puñal, <i>a poniard.</i>
Enclavár un cañón, <i>to spike</i> <i>a gun.</i>	Una bayoneta, <i>a bayonet.</i>
Una culebrina, <i>a culverin.</i>	Un yelmo, <i>a casque.</i>
Un falconete, <i>a falconet.</i>	Una celada, <i>a helmet.</i>
Un pedrero, <i>a swivel, pate-</i> <i>rero.</i>	daga, <i>a dagger.</i>
cañon entero, <i>a whole</i> <i>cannon.</i>	Un morrión, <i>a murrion.</i>
médio cañón, <i>half cannon.</i>	La visera, <i>the visor of a</i> <i>helmet.</i>
petardo, <i>a petard.</i>	El gorjál, <i>the gorgerin.</i>
Una bomba, <i>a bomb.</i>	La gola, <i>the gorget.</i>
bombarda, <i>a bomb-ketch.</i>	Un peto, <i>a breast-plate.</i>
Un mortero, <i>a mortar-piece.</i>	Una coraza, <i>a cuirass.</i>
Una granada, <i>a grenade.</i>	El espaldar, <i>the back-plate.</i>
Un mosquete, <i>a musket.</i>	Un coselète, <i>a corslett.</i>
Una carabina, <i>a carabine.</i>	brazalète, <i>an armlet.</i>
escopeta, <i>a gun, a fire-</i> <i>lock.</i>	escarcéla, <i>armour from</i> <i>the waist to the thighs.</i>
pistola, <i>a pistol.</i>	Únas hinojeras, <i>armour for</i> <i>the knees.</i>
bala, <i>a ball, a bullet.</i>	Un broquel, <i>a huckler.</i>
La pólvora, <i>powder.</i>	escudo, <i>a shield.</i>
Una mécha, <i>a match.</i>	Una adarga, <i>a target.</i>
Un pedernal, <i>a flint.</i>	cota de málla, <i>a coat of</i> <i>mail.</i>
Una flecha, <i>an arrow.</i>	Un general, <i>a general.</i>
Un dardo, <i>a dart.</i>	teniente general, <i>a lieu-</i> <i>tenant general.</i>
Una jabalina, <i>a boar-spear.</i>	sargento mayor de batalla, <i>a</i> <i>major general.</i>
honda, <i>a sling.</i>	coronel, <i>a colonel.</i>
Un arco, <i>a bow.</i>	sargento mayor, <i>a lieu-</i> <i>tenant colonel.</i>
Una hacha de armas, <i>a battle-</i> <i>axe.</i>	capitán, <i>a captain.</i>
lanza, <i>a lance.</i>	teniente, <i>a lieutenant.</i>
alabarda, <i>a halberd.</i>	corneta, <i>a cornet.</i>
partesana, <i>a partisan.</i>	alférez, <i>an ensign.</i>
pica, <i>a pike.</i>	sargento, <i>a serjeant.</i>
Un alfange, <i>a scimitar.</i>	cabo, <i>a corporal.</i>
Una espada, <i>a sword.</i>	cuadrillero, <i>a commander</i> <i>of a squad.</i>
El puño de la espada, <i>the han-</i> <i>dle of a sword.</i>	soldado, <i>a soldier.</i>
pomo de la, <i>the pommel of.</i>	caudillo, <i>a chief.</i>
La guarnición de la hoja, <i>the</i> <i>hilt of the blade.</i>	tambor, <i>a drum, drummer.</i>

Un píñano,	a fife.	Un vivandéro,	a sutler.
Una trompéta,	a trumpet.	partido,	a party.
Un atabál, timbál,	kettle drum.	Los corredóres,	the scout.
soldádo de á caballo,	a trooper.	Batir el cámpo,	to scout.
soldádo de á pié,	a foot	Los batidóres,	discoverers.
infánte,	soldier.	La murálla,	rampart.
granadéro,	a grenadier.	Los muros,	walls.
dragón,	a dragoon.	Una alména,	turret, battle-ment.
piquero,	a pike-man.	El parapéto,	the parapet.
mosquetéro,	a musqueteer.	Un castillo,	a castle.
fusilero,	a fusilier.	fuérte,	a fort.
La infantería,	the infantry.	Una fortaleza,	a fortress.
caballería,	the cavalry.	fortificación,	a fortification.
Un artillero,	a gunner.	tórre,	a tower.
bombardéro,	a bombardier.	ciudadéla,	a citadel.
ingeniero,	an engineer.	Un bastión,	a bastion.
minero,	a miner.	Una cortina,	a curtain.
gastador,	a pioneer.	média luna,	a half moon.
zapador,	a sapper.	tronera,	an embrasure.
Una continéla,	a sentinel.	Un terraplén,	a platform.
La vanguárdia,	the vanguard.	caballero,	a cavalier.
El cuérpo de batálla,	the main body of the army.	rebellín,	a ravelin.
La retaguárdia,	the rear.	La cóntra escárpa,	counter-scarp.
El cuérpo de resérva,	the corps de reserve.	Una barrera,	a barrier.
cuérpo de guárdia,	the corps de guard.	falsa brága,	a fausse braye.
ála,	the wing of an army.	Un foso,	a ditch.
Un batallón,	a battalion.	repécho,	a breast work.
regimíento,	a regiment.	Una garíta,	a centry box.
Una compaña de cabállos,	a troop of horse.	casamáte,	casemate.
compaña de infantería,	a company of foot.	galería,	gallery.
hilera,	a rank.	Un corredór,	
fila,	a file.	La estráda cubiéрта,	the covert way.
Un escuadrón,	a squadron.	El camíno cubiéрто,	a gation.
mochilero,	baggage man.	Un cestón, gavión,	a gabion.
bagáge,	a baggage.	Una estacáda,	a palisade.
		Un redúcto,	a redoubt.
		Una ataláya,	a beacon, a watch tower.

- Una manta, *a mantelet or moveable pent house.*  
 fagina, *a fascine.*  
 mina, *a mine.*  
 Una contra-mina, *a counter-mine.*  
 trinchera, *a trench.*  
 El real, *the royal camp.*  
 Las vituallas, *provisions.*  
 municiones, *ammunition.*  
 Un bisónio, recluta, *a recruit.*  
 pecorero, *a marauder.*  
 Una contra marcha, *a counter-march.*  
 escaramuza, *a skirmish.*  
 batalla, *a battle.*  
 Un sitio, *a siege.*  
 cuartel mayor, *head quarters.*  
 Una encamisada, *a camisado.*  
 salida, *a sortie, sally.*  
 Batir, *to batter.*  
 Una brecha, *a breach.*  
 escalada, *an escalade.*  
 Un asalto, *an assault.*  
 La llamada, *the call, chamade.*  
 capitulación, *the capitulation.*  
 guarnición, *the garrison.*  
 Tocar la caja, *to beat the drum.*  
 Levantar gente, *to raise men.*  
 Pagar el sueldo, el pre, *to pay the soldiers.*  
 Batir la estrada, *to scour the country.*  
 Levantar el sitio, *to raise the siege.*  
 Marchar á banderas desplegadas, *to march with flying colours.*  
 Reforzar el ejército, *to reinforce the army.*  
 Tocar á recoger, *to sound a retreat.*  
 Entregar una plaza, *to surrender a place.*  


---

 Commercial terms.—Voces mercantiles.  
 Un abarcador, *a monopoliser.*  
 Abaratar, *to cheapen.*  
 Abonar, *to credit.*  
 Acarrear, *to convey.*  
 El acarreo, porte, *carriage.*  
 Aceptar una letra, *to accept a bill.*  
 Una acción, *a share, stock.*  
 La acción de empujar, ó tirar, *hallenge.*  
 Un acreedor, creditor; acreedor hipotecario, *mortgagee*; el que da la hipoteca, *mortgager*; acreedor impo-  
 rtuno, *a dun*; valista, ó acreedor por vale, *creditor by a note or bill.*  
 La aduana, *custom-house.*  
 Un ajuste, bargain; ajuste de cuentas, *a settlement.*  
 á la buelta, *carried over.*  
 almacén, *storehouse, warehouse, magazine.*  
 Una almoneda, *a public sale, an auction.*  
 Alquilár, arrendar, *to hire.*  
 Una áncora de la esperanza, *a sheet anchor.*  
 Á quien su poder hubiere, *to his or their assigns.*  
 Una arbitración, sentencia de jueces árbitros, *umpirage.*  
 Las arras, ó la dote, *earnest money.*  
 Un arrendador, *a farmer that hires.*

- El arrendamiento,** *hiring, farming.*  
**Arrendar,** *to undertake, to farm.*  
**Un arribo,** *an arrival.*  
**Un asegurador,** *an insurer.*  
**Asegurar,** *to insure.*  
**Un asiénto,** *a contract, an entry.*  
**La avería,** *average.*  
**avería y cápa,** *primeage and hat money.*  
**Un balance, saldo,** *a balance.*  
**báncó,** *bank.*  
**banquero,** *banker.*  
**Barato,** *cheap.*  
**Los bienes propios,** *real or personal property.*  
**biénes habidos y por haber,** *goods had and to be had.*  
**Un calabróte,** *a short cable.*  
**cámbio,** *exchange, change.*  
**Negociar una letra de cámbio,** *to negotiate a bill of exchange.*  
**Un capital, caudál,** *stock, capital.*  
**Cargar el temporal,** *to befall a heavy storm.*  
**Cáro,** *dear.*  
**Una carta cuenta,** *a bill of sale.*  
**carta,** *letter*; **el porte de cartas,** *postage*; **portador,** *bearer, penny-postman.*  
**Carta de marear,** *sea-chart.*  
**Cerrar una carta,** *to make up a letter.*  
**Carta de guía,** *a passport.*  
**Carta de sanidad,** *bill of health.*  
**Una maléta para cartas,** *mail.*  
**Un caudál,** *a treasure, a stock.*  
**caudál destinado,** *a fund.*  
**La caja,** *cash*; **un cajero,** *cashier, cash-keeper*; **dinero en caja,** *cash on hand.*  
**El libro de caja,** *cash-book.*  
**Un certificado,** *certificate.*  
**Certificar,** *to certify.*  
**Un ciento,** *cent*; **dos ó tres &c. por ciento,** *two or three &c. per cent.*  
**El cobrador,** *receiver*; **cobrar,** *to receive*; **cobrador de sisa,** *excise-man*;—**de derechos de muélla,** *wharfinger.*  
**La comisión,** *commission.*  
**Un compañero,** *partner.*  
**Una compañía,** *partnership.*  
**cómpra,** *purchase*; **un comprador,** *buyer, purchaser*; **comprador,** *ó vendedor de acciones,* *stock-jobber.*  
**Un compromiso,** *compromise.*  
**La comunicacion,** *intercourse.*  
**El conocimiento,** *bill of lading.*  
**La consignación,** *consignment.*  
**El consumo,** *consumption.*  
**Contádo (dinero de contádo)** *ready money.*  
**El contenido,** *contents.*  
**Un contrabandista,** *smuggler.*  
**contrabádo,** *contraband.*  
**Una contráta de fletamento,** *a charter party of freight.*  
**contribución,** *an assessment or tribute.*  
**cópia,** *a copy.*  
**Un corredór,** *or corredór de oréja,* *broker*;—**de cámbios,** *exchange-broker.*  
**El corréo,** *the post office.*  
**La correspondencia,** *correspondence.*  
**Un correspondiente,** *a correspondent.*  
**Corriente,** *current.*  
**La costúmbre,** *custom.*



- El crédito, *credit*.  
 La cuenta, *bill, account*; su-  
 mar una cuenta, *to cast up*  
*an account*; pedir cuenta,  
*to call to an account*; pa-  
 gar á cuenta, *to pay a part*  
*of an account*.  
 Los daños, *damages*.  
 La data ó fecha, *date*.  
 dar, ó dejar á flête, *to let*  
*out a vessel on freight*.  
 Debájo de cubiêrta, *under deck*.  
 El derêcho, *duty, custom*;   
 derêchos de entráda, *duties*  
*of importation*; dros. de  
 estracción, *of exportation*.  
 Los derêchos de embârque  
 ó desembarque, *wharfage*.  
 La descarga, *unloading*.  
 El descuento, *discount*; de-  
 volución de dros de entrá-  
 da, *drawback*.  
 Un desembólso, *disbursement*.  
 Desempaquetâr, *to unpack*.  
 Estivar, *to stow*.  
 Estivador, *stower*.  
 Estiva, *stowage*.  
 Despachâr, *to sell, send, dis-*  
*patch*; despachâr un cor-  
 réo, *to send an express*;   
 despachâr mercaderías, *to*  
*sell goods*; despácho de  
 aduana, *clearance, cocket*;  
 despácho, *expedition*.  
 De tôdo nos hacemos cârgo,  
*we have taken due notice*  
*of all*.  
 La déuda, *debt*.  
 El deudór, *debtor*.  
 El diêzmo, *tenth, tithe*; diez-  
 méro, *tithe gatherer*.  
 El dinêro, *money*; dinêro con-  
 tádo ó de contádo, *ready*  
*money*; dinêro cercenádo,  
 ó cortádo, *clipped money*;   
 dinêro en cája, *cash*; dinê-  
 ro prestádo, *money lent*.  
 Un domicílio, *a domicil*.  
 Una tripulación, *a crew*.  
 Tripalâr, *to man*.  
 Únas arras, *a pledge*.  
 Los dros. municipáles, *town's*  
*fees*.  
 Un duplicádo, *duplicate*.  
 duêño, ámo, *owner*.  
 Únos efectos, *effects*.  
 Un envoltório, ó una arpi-  
 llêra, *wrapper*.  
 empeño, *pawn, obligation*.  
 Encíma de la bârra, *over the*  
*bar*.  
 Un endosador, *an endorser*.  
 encargádo de, *agent for*.  
 endóso, *endorsement*.  
 En testimonio de verdád, *in*  
*testimonium veritatis*.  
 La entráda, *entry*; dros. de  
 entráda, *duties of entry*.  
 El equivalênte, *equivalent*.  
 escâso de despácho, *dull*  
*of sale*.  
 Escribír, *to write*; la escritú-  
 ra, *hand-writing, bond, en-*  
*gagement*; escritúra de a-  
 rrendamiênto, *lease*; un es-  
 critório, *counting-house*.  
 Estrenâr, *to hânsel*.  
 La exigência, *exigency*.  
 estracción, *exportation*.  
 Un estrácto, *extract, abridge-*  
*ment*.  
 estractór, *extractor*.  
 La estorsión, *extortion*.  
 Un factór, *factor*.  
 Una factúra, *invoice*.  
 factoría, *factory*.

- La falta,** *fault, want, error.*  
 falta de pagamento, *non-payment.*
- Un fardo,** *a bale.*  
 fardo pequeño, *a truss.*
- Una feria,** *a fair.*
- Un fiador,** *abóno, surety, bail.*  
 fiador hipotecario, *mort-gager.*  
 fiel medida ó peso, *stand-ard measure, or weight.*
- Unas fijaderas** para papeles, *files for papers.*
- Fletar,** *to freight a ship.*
- El flete,** *freight.*  
 fletador, *freighter.*  
 fondo, ó caudal, ó acción. *funds, stock, or share.*  
 forcejo, *struggle.*  
 ganador, *gainer.*
- La ganancia,** *gain.*
- El ganapan,** *porter.*
- Los gastos,** *charges, expenses.*  
 géneros, *goods.*
- Las guardas,** *custom-house of-ficers*; guardas vijiadores, *tides-men, tide-waiters.*
- Una gruesa** ó mucha mar, *a heavy sea.*
- Un guarda** de navío, *a tides-man, inspector.*
- Una guía,** *a permit.*  
 hacienda ruin, *trash of goods.*
- arpillera, } *wrapper.*
- Un envoltorio,** }
- Hilo acarréto,** *packthread.*
- Una hipoteca,** *a mortgage.*  
 junta de sanidad, *board of health.*
- El impórté:** impórté liquido, *proceeds*; neat proceeds.
- Insolvente,** *insolvencia, insol-vent, insolvency.*
- El interés,** *interest.*  
 introductor de géneros, *importer of goods.*
- inventario,** *inventory.*
- juéz,** *judge.*  
 juéz árbitro, *referee, umpire, arbitrator.*
- Los júros,** *fers, annuity.*
- El lácre,** *sealing-wax.*
- Una láncha,** *a lighter.*  
 lauchada, *embárque en láncha, lighterage.*
- Una letra** de cámbio, *a bill of exchange, a draft*; cámbio seco, *usurious contract*; dar ó tomar á cámbio, *to lend or borrow on interest*; sacar, librar, ó tirar una letra, *to draw a bill*; acep-tar una letra, *to accept a bill.*
- Un legájo** de cartas, *a bundle of letters.*
- Un libro** de tienda, *shop book*; borradorcillo, *small note-book for memoranda*; borrador, *a day-book, diá-rio ó jornal, a journal*; lí-bro mayor, *a ledger*; co-piador, ó libro de cópias de cartas, *a letter-book*; libro de muéstras, *a pat-tern book.*
- La licéncia,** *license, permit.*  
 lósa vidriada, *Dutch ware.*  
 maléta para cartas, *mail.*
- Un marchánte,** *a customer.*  
 marinero, *seaman.*
- Las mercaderías,** } *goods,*  
 mercancías } *wares.*

- Un mercader por mayor, a *wholesale dealer*.  
 monopolista, *monopolist*.  
 puerto, a *port or harbour*.  
 Un muélla, *wharf*; deréchos de muélla, *wharfage*; su cobrador, *its wharfinger*.  
 Un negociante de géneros estrangéros, *importer of foreign goods*.  
 Un negociante de acciones, a *stock-jobber*.  
 Una obléa, a *wafer*.  
 obligación, a *bond*.  
 obligaciones, *contracts*.  
 Un ofrecedor, *bidder*; mayor oferente, *higher bidder*.  
 La orilla, *the shore*.  
 Pagar á cuenta, *to pay on account*; un pagaménto, *payment*; falta de págo, *non-payment*; un pagaré, a *promissory note*.  
 Un paquete, *parcel*.  
 paquete de cartas, a *packet of letters*.  
 Para las costas de, *for the costs of*.  
 Pedir cuenta, *to call to an account*.  
 Las pérdidas, *losses*.  
 El péso bruto, *gross weight*.  
 péso limpio de réy, *net weight*.  
 poco mas ó ménos, *thereabout*.  
 Una petáca, *bundle, hamper, roll*.  
 póliza de seguros, *policy of insurance*.  
 poner las cosas en órden, *to set things in order*.  
 El portador, *bearer*; portador de cartas, *penny-post man*; carta de espéra, *letter of respite*.  
 Los portes, *portage*.  
 El précio, *price, rate*; la subida de précio, *enhancement, rise of price*.  
 El prémio, *premium, interest*.  
 Un préstamo, dinero prestádo, a *loan, money lent*.  
 El primáge, páte de flétes de navío, *primage*.  
 Una promesa, a *promise*.  
 protésta, a *protest*.  
 Protestár una létra, *to protest a bill or draft*.  
 Protestár una, dos y tres y las mas véces en derécho necesarias.... *to protest in the most effectual manner possible against...*  
 El provécho, *profit*.  
 La puntualidad, *punctuality*.  
 Un quebrádo, a *bankrupt*.  
 Una quiebra, a *bankruptcy*.  
 Que se dirá, *which will be mentioned*.  
 La quinquillería, *hardware*.  
 Un quintál, a *hundred weight*.  
 Una quitánza, a *release*.  
 El recambio, *re-exchange*.  
 recibo, *receipt*.  
 Regateár, *to cheapen*.  
 La remesa, *the remittance*.  
 rénta, *income*.  
 riqueza, *wealth*.  
 El riésgo, *risk*.  
 Romper sobre la cósta, *to break on the shore*.  
 La rópa, *clothes*.  
 sóbra de haciénda, *refuse of goods*.

Sacar las mercaderías, *to un-*  
*stow,*  
 Sano de quilla y costados, *tight, staunch and strong,*  
 El seguro, *insurance.*  
 Sellar una carta, *to seal a*  
*letter.*  
 Ser de cuenta de, *to be on ac-*  
*count of.*  
 La sisa, *excise.*  
 Su cobrador, *the exciseman.*  
 Un sobrescrito, *a superscrip-*  
*tion.*  
 sobrestante de tierra, *land-*  
*overseer.*  
 La sobrestada, *demurrage,*  
 subasta, almoneda, *sale*  
*by auction.*  
 Sumar una cuenta, *to cast up*  
*an account.*  
 La subida de precio, *enhance-*  
*ment.*  
 suscripción, *subscription.*  
 El suscriptor, *the subscriber.*  
 Surgir, *to ride at anchor.*  
 Un talégo de moneda, *a bag*  
*of money.*  
 La tara, *the tare, tret.*  
 tasación, *the set rate.*  
 táxa, *assize.*  
 Un tendéro, *a shop-keeper.*  
 Ponér tienda, *to open a shop.*  
 Una tienda, *a shop.*  
 Un tenedor de libros, *a book-*  
*keeper.*  
 La tonelería, *cooperage.*  
 Un tratante, *a trader.*  
 negociante, *a merchant.*  
 Tratar, *to deal or trade.*  
 Un trato, ó negocio, *inter-*  
*course, business, or traffick.*  
 Un tributo, *tribute.*  
 trueque, *barter, exchange.*

Trocár, *to barter.*  
 Un vendedor, *seller.*  
 La venta, *sale.*  
 Un valor, *a value, worth.*  
 Los vigiadores de réntas, *in-*  
*spectors, tides-men.*  
 Una cumplida, las restantes  
 de ningún valor, *one being*  
*fulfilled, the others to stand*  
*void.*  
 Un uso, *60 days, usance.*  
 La usura, *usury.*  
 Un usurero, *a usurer.*  
 La gerga, *coarse cloth.*  
 Un gergón, *a large coarse sack.*

Navigation.—Navegación.

Un navío, una náve, ó nao, *a*  
*ship.*  
 de línea, *of the line.*  
 Un navío de guerra, *a man of*  
*war.*  
 Un navío marchante ó una  
 fragata, *a merchant ship.*  
 Un navío ligero, *a light vessel.*  
 Una galéra, *a galley.*  
 galeaza, *a galeasse.*  
 Un galeón, *a galleon.*  
 Una galeota, *a galleot.*  
 fragata de guerra, *a frig-*  
*ate.*  
 Un saique, *a saick.*  
 Una carraca, *a carrack.*  
 Un fuste, *a fust.*  
 Una pinaza, *a pinnace.*  
 barca de paságe, *a ferry-*  
*boat.*  
 goléta, *a schooner.*  
 canoa, *a canoe.*  
 piragua, *a pirogue.*  
 gondola, *a light boat.*  
 Un esquife, *a skiff.*  
 Una balandra, *a sloop.*

Un bergantín,	a brig.	La véla de gábia, <i>the top-sail.</i>
quéche,	a ketch.	El juanete, <i>the top-gullant sail.</i>
Una láncha, un bóte, <i>a launch.</i>		La véla de mesána, <i>the mizen sail.</i>
barqueta,	} a boat.	véla de trinquete, <i>the fore sail.</i>
barquilla,		
Un batel,		cevadéra, <i>the sprit sail.</i>
bagel, barco, búque, <i>vessel.</i>		véla latina, <i>latine sail.</i>
Una balsa, <i>a raft, a float.</i>		Un rémo, <i>an oar.</i>
La capitána, <i>the admiral ship.</i>		La pala de rémo, <i>the blade.</i>
almiranta, <i>the vice-admiral.</i>		Un práctico, <i>a pilot.</i>
armada, <i>the royal fleet.</i>		Las troneras, <i>the port holes.</i>
flota, <i>the fleet of merchant men.</i>		empavesadas, <i>nettings.</i>
Una escuadra, <i>a squadron.</i>		Enarbolár, <i>to hoist.</i>
Abordo, <i>aboard.</i>		Tremolár, <i>to waive.</i>
La popa, <i>the poop, stern.</i>		Un pabellón, <i>a flag.</i>
proa, <i>the prow or head.</i>		gallardete, <i>a pendant.</i>
Una tartana, <i>a tartan.</i>		estándarte, <i>standard.</i>
Un brulote, <i>a fireship.</i>		Una banderola, <i>a banner.</i>
patáche, <i>a tender, a petach.</i>		bandera, <i>the colours.</i>
Una falúca, falúa, <i>a felucca.</i>		La brújula, <i>the compass.</i>
bárca, <i>a coasting fishing vessel.</i>		púnta de la proa, <i>the stem.</i>
La sentina, <i>the well.</i>		puente cubierta, <i>the deck.</i>
El lastre, <i>ballast.</i>		Las escotillas, <i>the hatches.</i>
mástil, árbol, <i>the mast.</i>		El timón, <i>the helm.</i>
árbol mayor, <i>the main-mast.</i>		La quilla, <i>the keel.</i>
La gábia, <i>the round top.</i>		Una áncla, áncora, <i>an anchor.</i>
El trinquete, <i>the fore-mast.</i>		amarra, <i>mooring.</i>
La mesána, <i>the mizen-mast.</i>		maróna, <i>a rope.</i>
La carlinga del árbol, <i>the step of the mast.</i>		Un cable, <i>a cable.</i>
vérge, enténa, <i>the yard.</i>		La sonda, <i>the sounding lead.</i>
El estibór, <i>starboard.</i>		Un piloto, <i>a mate.</i>
babór, <i>larboard.</i>		guardián, <i>a boatswain.</i>
Gobernár el navío, <i>to steer.</i>		marinero, <i>a sailor.</i>
El barlovento, <i>windward.</i>		corsario, <i>a privateer.</i>
sotavento, <i>leeward.</i>		armador, <i>a ship-owner.</i>
Remolcár, <i>to tow.</i>		Una cámara, <i>a cabin.</i>
Escoltár, convoyár, <i>to convoy.</i>		Un camarote, <i>a birth.</i>
Una véla, <i>a sail.</i>		Una tormenta, <i>a tempest.</i>
véla mayor, <i>the main-sail.</i>		borrásca, <i>a storm.</i>
		bonanza, <i>fair weather.</i>
		calma, <i>calm.</i>

El viento en pópa, <i>the wind full astern.</i>	El día después de mañana, <i>the day after tomorrow.</i>
viento largo, <i>fast wind.</i>	
Coger el viento, <i>to ply to windward.</i>	<i>The months,—Los meses,—are masculine.</i>
Ir á la bolina, <i>to tack upon a wind.</i>	Enéro, <i>January.</i>
Irse á fondo, á pique, <i>to sink.</i>	Febrero, <i>February.</i>
<i>The year and its parts, &amp;c.—</i>	Márzo, <i>March.</i>
El año y sus partes, &c.	Abril, <i>April.</i>
Un año, <i>a year.</i>	Máyo, <i>May.</i>
Un mes, <i>a month.</i>	Júnio, <i>June.</i>
Una semana, <i>a week.</i>	Júlio, <i>July.</i>
Un día, <i>a day.</i>	Agosto, <i>August.</i>
Una noche, <i>a night.</i>	Setiembre, <i>September.</i>
La mañana, <i>the morning.</i>	Octubre, <i>October.</i>
La tarde, <i>the evening.</i>	Noviembre, <i>November.</i>
Una hora, <i>an hour.</i>	Diciembre, <i>December.</i>
Un minuto, <i>a minute.</i>	<i>The days of the week.—Los días de la semana,—are masculine.</i>
Un momento, <i>a moment.</i>	Lunes, <i>Monday.</i>
La primavera, <i>the spring.</i>	Martes, <i>Tuesday.</i>
El verano, <i>the summer.</i>	Miércoles, <i>Wednesday.</i>
El otoño, <i>the autumn.</i>	Jués, <i>Thursday.</i>
El invierno, <i>the winter.</i>	Viérnes, <i>Friday.</i>
La salida del sol, <i>the sun-rising.</i>	Sábado, <i>Saturday.</i>
El ponerse del sol, <i>the sun-setting.</i>	Domíngo, <i>Sunday.</i>
La auróra, <i>the dawn.</i>	<i>The holidays of the year.—</i>
El mediodía, <i>noon.</i>	Días de fiesta del año.
La média noche, <i>midnight.</i>	El primér día del Año, <i>New Year's day.</i>
Un cuárto de hora, <i>a quarter of an hour.</i>	El día de Réyes, <i>Twelfth-tide.</i>
Una média hora, <i>half an hour.</i>	La Cuarésma, <i>Lent.</i>
Tres cuárto de hora, <i>three quarters of an hour.</i>	Las Cuátro témporas, <i>the Ember-weeks.</i>
Hóy, <i>to-day.</i>	El domíngo de Ramos, <i>Palm-Sunday.</i>
Ayér, <i>yesterday.</i>	El Viérnes Santo, <i>Good-Friday.</i>
El día ántes de ayér, <i>the day before yesterday.</i>	

La pascua de resurrección, <i>Easter-day.</i>	<i>Winds,—</i> Viéntos,— <i>are masculine.</i>
pascua del Espíritu Santo, <i>Whit-sunday.</i>	El nórté, <i>north wind.</i>
El día de Difuntos, <i>All-Souls-day.</i>	sud ó sur, <i>south wind.</i>
día de todos los Santos, <i>All-Saints-day.</i>	éste, } <i>east wind.</i>
La pascua de navidad, <i>Christmas.</i>	levánte, }
vigília, <i>the vigil, the Eve.</i>	poniente, oeste, <i>west wind.</i>
	nordéste, <i>north-east wind.</i>
	noroéste, <i>north-west wind.</i>
	sudéste, <i>south-east wind.</i>
	sudoéste, <i>south-west wind.</i>

*Table of the current Money in Spain.—*Tábla de las Monedas de España.

La piéza mas pequeña de moneda de España se llama Maravedí, del cual resúta la Tábla siguiente,

Copper, or Billion.— <i>Cóbre,</i> ó <i>vellón.</i>	¶ 42½ cuartos, 5 reales ó peseta columnaria.
2 maravedises <i>hacen,</i> un	85 cuartos, 10 reales ó medio duro.
2 ochávos, un cuarto.	170 cuartos, 20 reales ó un peso duro.
2 cuartos, una móta, ó dos cuartos.	

Gold.—*Óro.*

Silver.— <i>Plata.</i>	20 reales, escudillo de oro.
* 8½ cuartos, un réal.	40 reales, doble escudillo de oro.
† 10½ diez cuartos y medio y un maravedí.	80 reales, doblón de oro.
‡ 17 cuartos, 2 reales.	160 reales, média ónza de oro, ó 8 duros.
§ 21½ cuartos, 2½ reales.	320 reales, una ónza, ó 16 pesos duros.
34 cuartos, 4 reales ó una peseta,	

\* 5 Cents. † 6½ Cents. ‡ 10 Cents. § 12½ Cents. || 20 Cents, or a pistareen. ¶ 25 Cents. *Tr. i. devant* Spanish America, copper money is as yet unknown; dollars, half dollars, quarters, eighths and sixteenths of a dollar, and the gold coins above mentioned, are only in use.

*Military words of command.*—Palabras militares de Mandamiento.

Fórmense,	<i>fall in.</i>	Césen el fuego, <i>cease firing.</i>
Atención,	<i>attention.</i>	Márchen, <i>march.</i>
Ármas al hombro,	<i>shoulder arms.</i>	Álto, <i>halt.</i>
Fígen bayonetas,	<i>fix bayonets.</i>	Línea á la izquiérda, <i>left into line.</i>
Presénten las ármes,	<i>present arms.</i>	Conversión á la derécha, <i>right wheel.</i>
Aparéjen,	<i>make ready.</i>	Conversión á la izquiérda, <i>left wheel.</i>
Presénten,	<i>present.</i>	Conversión atrás á la derécha, <i>right backwards wheel.</i>
Fuégó,	<i>fire.</i>	Conversión atrás á la izquiérda, <i>left backwards wheel.</i>
Cében,	<i>prime.</i>	Á la derécha frén-te, <i>right face.</i>
Cárguen,	<i>load.</i>	Á la izquiérda frén-te, <i>left face.</i>
Sáquen baquéta,	<i>draw ram-rods.</i>	
Atáquen,	<i>ram down cart-ridge.</i>	

## FAMILIAR PHRASES.

*Sentencias Cortas y Familiáres.*—*Short and Familiar Phrases.*

I. <i>Acérca de pedir álgo.</i>	I. <i>About asking any thing.</i>
Le suplico ; le ruégó, déme vm. ; hágame el favór de dárme	<i>I beseech you ; pray, give me ; do me the favour to give me</i>
Tráigame	<i>Bring me</i>
Se lo agradézco	<i>I thank you for it</i>
Le dóy las grácias	<i>I give you thanks</i>
Váya á buscárme tal cósa	<i>Go and fetch me such a thing</i>
Luégó, en éste instánte	<i>Presently, this moment</i>
Querído Señor, hágame vm. éste gústo	<i>Dear Sir, do me this pleasure</i>
Concédame, señóra, ésta grácia	<i>Madam, grant me this favour.</i>
Se lo suplico	<i>I beseech you for it</i>
Se lo pído encarecidamén-te	<i>I earnestly beg it of you</i>



II. *Expresiones tiernas.*

Mi vida  
 Mi querido, mi querida  
 Mi alma  
 Mi dueño,  
 Mi queridito, mi queridita  
 Mi corazoncito  
 Lumbre de mis ojos,

Cielo mío, niña de mi alma

Hija de mi corazón

Ángel mío  
 Estrélla mía  
 Bien mío

III. *Acérca de agradecer y cumplimentar, y mostrar amistad.*

Viva usted muchos años

Le devuélvo las mas vivas  
 gracias

Gustoso lo haré

De todo mi corazón

De muy buena gana

Lo estimo

Soy de vm.

Soy su servidór

Su muy humilde servidór

Vm. me favorece mucho

Se toma vm. demasiado tra-  
 bájo

No hállo ninguno en servirle

Es vm. muy atento y muy  
 cortés

¿Que desea vm.? ¿que me  
 manda vm.?

Ordéneme con toda libertad

Sin cumplimíento

II. *Expressions of kindness.*

*My life*  
*My dear*  
*My soul*  
*My love, my lord or master*  
*My little darling*  
*My little heart*  
*Dear sweet heart, light of*  
*my eyes*

*My most beloved, my heaven,*  
*pupil of my soul*

*My dearest child, child of*  
*my heart*

*My angel*

*My star*

*My blessing*

III. *Of thanking and complimenting, and showing friendship.*

*I thank you, may you live*  
*many years*

*I return you the most heart-*  
*felt thanks*

*I will do it cheerfully*

*With all my heart*

*Heartily, with a very good*  
*will*

*I am obliged for it*

*I am yours*

*I am your servant*

*Your very humble servant*

*You are very obliging, you*  
*favour me much.*

*You take too much trouble*

*I find none in serving you*

*You are very civil and polite*

*What do you wish? what do*  
*you command me?*

*Command me with full liberty*  
*Without compliment*

Sin ceremonia	<i>Without ceremony</i>
Le amo de corazón	<i>I love you sincerely</i>
Con el alma y la vida	<i>With all my heart</i>
É yo correspondo á vm. cómo debo	<i>And I return it as I ought</i>
Hága cuenta sobre mí	<i>Rely or depend upon me</i>
Mándame vm.	<i>Command me</i>
Hónreme con sus preceptos	<i>Honour me with your commands</i>
Tiene vm. algo que mandarme?	<i>Have you any thing to command me?</i>
No tiene vm. sino hablar	<i>You have but to speak</i>
Dispóngame de su servidór	<i>Dispose of your servant</i>
Sólo aguardo sus preceptos	<i>I only wait your commands</i>
Demasiado honor me hace	<i>You do me too much honour</i>
Degémonos de cumplimientos	<i>Let us forbear compliments</i>
Entre amigos honrados, se excusan cumplimientos	<i>Between honest friends, compliments are excused</i>
Al Señor Don—le beso las manos	<i>Present or give my respects to Mr. D— or I kiss the hands of Mr. D—.</i>
Déle vm. muchas expresiones mías	<i>Remember my love to him, give him many expressions of mine</i>
No faltaré	<i>I will not fail</i>
Póngame vm. á los piés de la Señora	<i>Present my respects to my lady, or put me at the feet of Madam</i>
Muchas memorias á la Señorita	<i>Remember me to Miss, or many remembrances to Miss</i>
Páse vm. adelante, le voy á seguir	<i>Walk before, I am going to follow you</i>
Después de vm., Caballero	<i>After you, Sir</i>
Sé bien lo que le debo	<i>I know well what I owe you</i>
Vámos, Señor, páse vm.	<i>Come, Sir, pass on</i>
Lo haré para obedecerle	<i>I will do it to obey you</i>
Para sólo agradarle	<i>Only to please you</i>
No soy amigo de tantas ceremonias	<i>I am not fond of so many ceremonies</i>
No soy cumplimentero	<i>I am not ceremonious</i>
Es lo mejor	<i>It is the best</i>
Tiene vm. razón	<i>You are in the right</i>

IV. *Acérca de afirmar, negár, consentir, &c.*

Es verdad  
 Es ésto verdad ?  
 Demasiádo verdad  
 Para tratár verdad  
 En efecto, es así  
 Quién lo duda ?  
 No háy duda  
 Créo que es así  
 Créo que no  
 Digo que sí  
 Digo que no  
 Apuésto que sí  
 Va que no  
 Por mi vida  
 Á se de caballéro  
 Á se de hombre de bien  
 Por mi honor  
 Créame vm.  
 Se lo puédo decir  
 Se lo puédo afirmar  
 Apostára algo  
 Se burla vm. ?  
 Hábla vm. de veras ?  
 Lo digo muy de veras  
 Lo adivinó vm.  
 Lo acertó vm.  
 Bien le créo  
 Se le puéde créer  
 Eso no es imposible  
 Pues, en hora buena  
 Póco á póco  
 No es verdad  
 Aquéllo es falso  
 Náda de éso háy  
 Es incierto  
 Es mentíra  
 Es una falsedad  
 Me burlába, chanceába  
 Lo decía de chánza  
 Séa en hora buena

IV. *Of affirming, denying, consenting, &c.*

*It is true*  
*Is this true ?*  
*Too true*  
*To tell the truth*  
*Really, it is so*  
*Who doubts it ?*  
*There is no doubt*  
*I believe it is so*  
*I believe not*  
*I say it is*  
*I say it is not*  
*I lay it is*  
*I lay it is not*  
*Upon my life*  
*As I am a gentleman*  
*As I am an honest man*  
*Upon my honour*  
*Do believe me*  
*I can tell it to you*  
*I can affirm it to you*  
*I could bet something*  
*Do you jest ?*  
*Do you speak in earnest ?*  
*I say it quite in earnest*  
*You guessed at it*  
*You hit it*  
*I truly believe you*  
*One may believe you*  
*That is not impossible*  
*Well, let it be so*  
*Softly, fair and softly*  
*It is not true*  
*That is false*  
*There is no such thing*  
*It is untrue*  
*It is a lie*  
*It is a falsehood*  
*I did jest ; I was joking*  
*I said it in jest*  
*Let it be so ; well and good*

No me opongo á éello  
 Estamos de acuerdo  
 Dicho y hécho  
 No lo quiero

*I do not oppose it  
 We are agreed, in accord  
 Said and done  
 I will not have it, I do not  
 want it, I do not wish for it*

V. *Acérca de consultár, ó  
 considerár.*

V. *Of consulting, or consid-  
 ering.*

¿Que se ha de hacér ?  
 ¿Que harémos ?  
 Que me dice vmd. que hága ?  
 Que remedio háy para éso ?  
 Que partido hémos de tomár ?  
 Hagámos ésto ó éso  
 Hagámos una cosa  
 Mejor será que yó....  
 Aguárde vm. un poco  
 No sería mejor, si ?....  
 Dégame hacér  
 Si estuviéra en su lugar  
 Es lo mismo  
 Viéne á salir á lo mismo

*What is to be done ?  
 What shall we do ?  
 What do you tell me to do ?  
 What remedy is there for that ?  
 What course are we to take ?  
 Let us do this or that  
 Let us do one thing  
 It will be better that I....  
 Wait a little  
 Would it not be better, if ?...  
 Let me do  
 Were I in your place  
 It is the same  
 It comes to turn out to the  
 same*

VI. *Del comer y del beber.*

VI. *Of eating and drinking.*

Téngo buen apetito  
 Téngo hambre  
 Me muero de hambre

*I have a good appetite  
 I am hungry  
 I am starving, dying with  
 hunger*

Me parece que ha tres días  
 que náda he comido  
 Cóma vm. algo  
 Que gústa vm. comer ?  
 Comiéra un poco de cualqui-  
 éra cosa

*It seems to me that it is three  
 days I have eaten nothing  
 Eat something  
 What do you like to eat ?  
 I could eat a little of any-  
 thing*

Déme vm. algo de comer  
 He comido bastante  
 Estóy satisfecho  
 Quiére vm. comer aún mas ?  
 No téngo mas apetito  
 Téngo sed  
 Me muero de sed  
 Téngo mucha sed  
 Déme vmd. de beber

*Give me something to eat  
 I have eaten enough  
 I am satisfied  
 Will you eat still more ?  
 I have no more appetite  
 I am dry  
 I am dying with thirst  
 I am very thirsty  
 Give me to drink*

Viva vm. muchos años	<i>I thank you, may you live many years</i>
Gustoso bebería una copita de vino, un vaso de agua	<i>I could drink with pleasure a glass of wine, a tumbler of water</i>
Béba vm. pués	<i>Drink then</i>
He bebido bastante	<i>I have drunk enough</i>
No puedo beber mas	<i>I can drink no more</i>
Mi sed está apagada	<i>My thirst is allayed, extinct</i>
VII. <i>Del ir, venir, moverse, &amp;c.</i>	VII. <i>Of going, coming, stirring, &amp;c.</i>
De dónde viene vm. ?	<i>Whence do you come ?</i>
A dónde va vm. ?	<i>Where do you go ?</i>
Vengo de—Voy á—	<i>I come from—I am going to—</i>
Súba, bage	<i>Come up, come down</i>
Entre vm., salga vm.	<i>Come in, go out</i>
Pase vm. adelante	<i>Come forward</i>
No se mueva, no se menee	<i>Do not move, do not stir</i>
Estése ahí	<i>Stay there</i>
Acérquese de mí	<i>Come near to me</i>
Retírese vm.	<i>Retire, withdraw</i>
Váyase	<i>Go away, begone</i>
Vaya un poco atrás	<i>Go back a little</i>
Venga vm. acá	<i>Come hither, here</i>
Aguarde vmd. un rato	<i>Wait a little</i>
Espéreme, aguárdeme	<i>Wait for me, stay for me</i>
No vaya tan de prisa	<i>Do not go so fast</i>
Va vm. muy á prisa	<i>You go very fast</i>
Quítese de delante de mí	<i>Get away from before me</i>
No me toque vm.	<i>Do not touch me</i>
Déje eso	<i>Leave that</i>
Porqué ?	<i>Why ?</i>
Así lo quiero	<i>I wish it so</i>
Estoy bien aquí	<i>I am well here</i>
La puerta está cerrada	<i>The door is shut</i>
Ahora está abierta	<i>Now it is open</i>
Abra vm. la puerta	<i>Open the door</i>
Abra vm. la ventana	<i>Open the window</i>
Cierre la ventana	<i>Shut the window</i>
Venga vm. por aquí	<i>Come this way</i>
Vaya vmd. por allá	<i>Go that way</i>
Pase vmd. por aquí	<i>Pass this way</i>

Páse por allá  
Que búscas vm. ?  
Que perdió vm. ?

VIII. *Del hablar, decír,  
obrar, &c.*

Háble vm. áto  
Hábla vm. muy bájo  
Con quién habla vm. ?  
Me habla vm. ?  
Dígale algo  
Hábla vm. Español ?  
Sábe vm. el castellano ?  
Algo lo entiendo y hablo  
Que dice vm. ?  
Que ha dicho vm. ?  
No digo náda  
No he dicho náda  
Cálle vm.  
Cállome  
Élla no quiere callár  
No háce mas que hablar y  
charlar  
He oído decír, que—  
Me lo han dicho  
Lo dicen por ahí  
Tódos lo dicen  
El Señor A. me lo dijo  
Madáma no me lo ha dicho  
Se lo dijo á vm. ?  
Se lo dijo élla ?  
Cuándo lo oyó vm. decír ?  
Hóy me lo han dicho  
Quién se lo dijo ?  
No lo puedo creér  
Que dice él ?  
Que dice élla ?  
Que le ha dicho ?  
No me dijo náda  
No me ha dicho noticia alguna  
El Señor B. me dijo nuévas  
No se lo diga vm.  
Se lo diré

*Pass that way*  
*What do you look for ?*  
*What did you lose ?*

VIII. Of speaking, saying,  
acting, &c.

*Speak loud*  
*You speak very low*  
*With whom do you speak ?*  
*Do you speak to me ?*  
*Tell him something*  
*Do you speak Spanish ?*  
*Do you know the Castilian ?*  
*I understand and speak it a*  
*What do you say ?* [little  
*What have you said ?*  
*I say nothing*  
*I have said nothing*  
*Hold your tongue, be silent*  
*I am silent, I hold my tongue*  
*She will not hold her tongue*  
*She does nothing but prattle*  
*and tattle*  
*I have heard, that—*  
*They have told me so*  
*They say so abroad*  
*Every one says so*  
*Mr. A. told it me*  
*The lady has not told it me*  
*Did he tell it to you ?*  
*Did she tell it to you ?*  
*When did you hear it said ?*  
*To-day, they have told it to me*  
*Who told it to you ?*  
*I cannot believe it*  
*What does he say ?*  
*What does she say ?*  
*What has he said to you ?*  
*He said nothing to me*  
*He has not told me any news*  
*Mr. B. told me news*  
*Do not tell it to them*  
*I will tell it him*

No se lo diré	<i>I will not tell it to her</i>
No le diga vm. palabra	<i>Say not a word to him</i>
Se lo callaré	<i>I will keep it from him</i>
Cállelo vm. bien	<i>Keep it well to yourself</i>
Ha dicho vm. éso ?	<i>Have you said that ?</i>
No, no lo he dicho	<i>No, I have not said it</i>
No lo dijo vm. ?	<i>Did you not say so ?</i>
No lo han dicho ?	<i>Have they not said so ?</i>
Que está vm. haciendo ?	<i>What are you doing ?</i>
Que ha hécho vm. ?	<i>What have you done ?</i>
No hágo náda	<i>I do nothing</i>
No he hécho náda	<i>I have done nothing</i>
Acabó vm. ?	<i>Have you done? did you finish?</i>
No acabó vm. ?	<i>Have you not done? did you not finish</i>
Que está haciendo él ?	<i>What is he doing ?</i>
Que háce élla ?	<i>What does she do ?</i>
Que quiere vm. ? que manda vm. ?	<i>What do you wish? what do you command ?</i>
Que es lo que le háce falta ?	<i>What is it that you want ?</i>
Que pide vm. ?	<i>What do you ask ?</i>
Respóndame	<i>Answer me</i>
Porqué no me respónde vm. ?	<i>Why don't you answer me ?</i>
IX. Del oír, escuchár, &c.	IX. Of hearing, listening, &c.
Óiga vm., Don. N.	<i>Hearken, Mr. N.</i>
Óigo, señor	<i>I hear, Sir</i>
Me óye vm. ?	<i>Do you hear me ?</i>
No le óigo	<i>I do not hear you</i>
No le puedo oír	<i>I cannot hear you</i>
Háble mas álto	<i>Speak louder</i>
Óiga, vénga acá	<i>Hark ye, come hither</i>
Óigole	<i>I hear you</i>
Escúchole	<i>I listen to you</i>
Estése quiéto	<i>Be quiet, be still</i>
No hága ruído	<i>Do not make a noise</i>
Que ruído es éste ?	<i>What noise is this ?</i> [speak
No nos podemos oír hablar	<i>We cannot hear one another</i>
Que zámbara árma vm. allá !	<i>What a thundering noise you make there !</i>
Me quiebra la cabéza	<i>You break my head</i>
Me atúrde vm.	<i>You stun me</i>
Es vm. muy molésto	<i>You are very troublesome</i>

X. *Del entender, y comprender.*

Le entiénde vm. bién ?  
 Ha entendido vm. lo que ha dicho ?  
 Entiénde vm. lo que dice ?  
 Me entiénde vm. ?  
 Le entiendo bién  
 No le entiendo  
 Entiénde vm. el Español ?  
 No lo entiendo  
 Lo entiendo un poco  
 Lo entiénde el Señor ?  
 No lo entiénde  
 Me ha entendido vm. ?  
 No le he entendido  
 Ahora le entiendo  
 Cuando no habla vm. tan de prisa  
 El no pronuncia bién  
 Parece tartamudo  
 No se le entiénde lo que dice

X. *Of understanding and comprehending.*

*Do you understand him well ?*  
*Have you understood what he has said ?*  
*Do you understand what he says ?*  
*Do you understand me ?*  
*I understand you well*  
*I do not understand you*  
*Do you understand Spanish ?*  
*I do not understand it*  
*I understand it a little [it ?*  
*Does the gentleman understand*  
*He does not understand it*  
*Have you understood me ?*  
*I have not understood you*  
*Now I understand you*  
*When you do not speak so fast*  
*He does not pronounce well*  
*He seems a stammerer*  
*One does not understand what he says*

XI. *Acérca de preguntár.*

Cómo dice vm. ?  
 Que es ésto ? que háy ?  
 Que se dice ?  
 Que quiere decir éso ?  
 Que quieren ellos decir ?  
 De que sirve aquéllo ? á que buéno ?  
 Que le parece ? que tal ?  
 Á que viéne aquéllo ?  
 Dígame vm., se puede saber ?  
 Se le puede preguntár ?  
 Que me pregunta vm. ?  
 Cómo, Señor ?  
 Que se ha de hacér ?

XI. *About asking a question,*

*How do you say ?*  
*What's this ? what is there ?*  
*What do people say ?*  
*What means that ?*  
*What do they mean ?*  
*What is the use of that ?*  
*what's it good for ?*  
*What do you think of it ?*  
*how do you like it ?*  
*To what purpose comes that ?*  
*Tell me, may one know ?*  
*May one ask you ?*  
*What do you ask of me ?*  
*How, sir ?*  
*What is to be done ?*



Que deséa vm. ?  
 Que gústa vm. ?  
 Lo que quisiére  
 Suplícole me respónda  
 Porqué no me respónde ?

*What do you wish ?*  
*What do you choose ?*  
*What you please*  
*Pray answer me*  
*Why don't you answer me ?*

## XII. *Acérca de saber.*

Sábe vm. éso ?  
 No lo sé  
 No sé náda de éllo  
 Élla bién lo sabía  
 Acáso no lo sabía él ?  
 Supuésto que lo supiése  
 No sabrá náda de éllo  
 Que! no ha sabído náda de éllo ?

No súpo jamás de ésto  
 Ántes de vm. lo sabía yó  
 Es así ó no ?  
 No que lo sépa yó

## XIII. *Del conócér, olvidár, y acordárse.*

Lo conóce vm. ?  
 La conóce vm. ?  
 Los conóce vm. ?  
 Las conózco  
 No les conózco  
 Nos conocémos  
 No nos conocémos  
 No le conóce vm. á él ?  
 Créo que le he conócido  
 Le he conócido á élla  
 Nos hémos conócido  
 Les conózco de vista  
 La conózco de nómbre  
 Él me conocía muy bién  
 Me conéce vm. ?  
 He olvidádo su nómbre  
 Me ha olvidádo vm. ?

## XII. *Of knowing or having a knowledge of things.*

*Do you know that ?*  
*I do not know it*  
*I know nothing of it*  
*She knew it well*  
*Did he not perchance know it ?*  
*Suppose he knew it*  
*He shall know nothing of it*  
*What ! has he known nothing of it ?*

*He never knew of this*  
*I knew it before you*  
*Is it so or not ?*  
*Not that I know of*

## XIII. *Of knowing or being acquainted with persons, forgetting and remembering.*

*Do you know him ?*  
*Do you know her ?*  
*Do you know them ?*  
*I know them*  
*I do not know them*  
*We are acquainted*  
*We do not know one another*  
*Do you not know him ?*  
*I believe I have known him*  
*I have known her*  
*We have known one another*  
*I know them by sight*  
*I know her by name*  
*He knew me very well*  
*Do you know me ?*  
*I have forgotten your name*  
*Have you forgotten me ?*

Le conoce á vm. élla ?	<i>Does she know you ?</i>
Le conoce á vm. el Señor ?	<i>Does the gentleman know you ?</i>
Paréce que no me conoce	<i>It seems he does not know me</i>
Bién me conoce el Señor	<i>The gentleman knows me well</i>
Yá no me conoce	<i>He knows me no more</i>
Me olvidó del todo	<i>He quite forgot me</i>
Yá no me conoce élla	<i>She knows me no more</i>
Téngo el honor de ser conocido de él	<i>I have the honour to be known to him</i>
Se acuerda vm. de éso ?	<i>Do you remember that ?</i>
No se me acuerda, no me acuerdo de éllo	<i>I do not remember it; I do not recollect it</i>
Muy bién lo téngo presente	<i>I do remember it very well</i>
Hágaselo acordár	<i>Remind him of it</i>

XIV. *De la edad, de la vida, de la muerte, &c.*

XIV. *Of age, life, death, &c.*

Que edad tiene vm. ?	<i>How old are you ?</i>
Que edad tiene su hermano ?	<i>How old is your brother ?</i>
Téngo veinte y cinco años	<i>I am five and twenty</i>
Tiene veinte y dos años	<i>He is twenty-two years old</i>
Tiene vm. mas años que yo	<i>You are older than I</i>
Empieza á envejecer	<i>He begins to grow old</i>
Que edad tendrá vm. ?	<i>How old may you be ?</i>
Estoy bueno que es lo esencial	<i>I am well, that is the main thing</i>
Está vm. casado ?	<i>Are you married ?</i>
Cuántas veces ha estado vm. casado ?	<i>How many times have you been married ?</i>
Cuántas mugéres ha tenido vm. ?	<i>How many wives have you had ?</i>
Tiene vm. aún padre y madre vivos ?	<i>Have you a father and mother still alive ?</i>
Mi padre murió	<i>My father is dead</i>
Mi madre se ha muerto	<i>My mother is dead</i>
Dos años ha que perdí á mi padre	<i>I lost my father two years ago</i>
Mi madre se ha vuelto á casar	<i>My mother has married again</i>
Cuántos hijos tiene vm. ?	<i>How many children have you ?</i>
Cuánto téngo	<i>I have four</i>
Hijos ó hijas, varones ó hembras ?	<i>Sons or daughters, males or females ?</i>

Téngo un hijo y tres hijas	<i>I have one son and three daughters</i>
Cuántos hermanos tiene vm.?	<i>How many brothers have you?</i>
No téngo ninguno vivo	<i>I have none living, alive</i>
Todos se han muerto	<i>They are all dead</i>
Todos hemos de morir	<i>We must all die</i>
Cada hora es un paso hacia el túmulo	<i>Every hour is a step towards the grave</i>

XV. *De una aya y su Señorita.* XV. *Of a governess and her young lady.*

Está vm. aún en la cama?	<i>Are you in bed still?</i>
Duerme vm.?	<i>Do you sleep? are you asleep?</i>
Despiérte; que pesada es vm.!	<i>Awake; how heavy you are!</i>
Es vm. muy dormilóna	<i>You are very sleepy</i>
No está aún despierta?	<i>Are you not awake yet?</i>
Levántese ligero, presto	<i>Rise quickly</i>
Acaso es ya hora de levantarse?	<i>Is it perchance already time to rise?</i>
Sin duda lo es	<i>It is so undoubtedly</i>
Luégo darán las nueve	<i>Nine o'clock will presently strike</i>
Está vm. levantada?	<i>Are you up?</i>
Está su hermana levantada?	<i>Is your sister up?</i>
Vámos, despáche vm.	<i>Come, make haste</i>
Porqué no se da mas prisa?	<i>Why do you not make more haste?</i>

Cuidádo	<i>Take care</i>
Se caerá vm.	<i>You will fall</i>
Por poco se cae	<i>You came near falling</i>
Acérquese de la lumbre	<i>Come near the fire</i>
Abríguese bien	<i>Clothe yourself warm</i>
Se resfriará vm.	<i>You will catch cold</i>
Yá estoy acatarrada	<i>I have a cold already</i>
Vístase luégo	<i>Dress yourself directly</i>
Péinese	<i>Comb your hair</i>
Póngase las medias	<i>Put on your stockings</i>
Cálcese los zapatos	<i>Put on your shoes</i>
Tóme ésta camisa blanca	<i>Take this clean chemise</i>
Lávese las manos, la boca, y la cara	<i>Wash your hands, your mouth, your face</i>
Límpiese los dientes	<i>Clean your teeth</i>
Sus peñes están sucios	<i>Your combs are dirty</i>

Acordóneme la cotilla

Ayúdeme vm.

Porqué no me asiste ?

Acabó vm. yá ?

Aún no

Que enfadósá es vm. !

Diga sus oraciones

Háble álto

Empieçe

Vámos adelante

Acábe vmd.

Adónde está su libro de oraciones ?

Tráiga su Biblia

Búsquela presto, pronto

Léa vm. un capítulo

Adónde acabó vm. ayér ?

Aquí me paré

No tiéne vm. bién su libro

Léa póco á póco

Deletrée ésa voz

Vm. lee muy de prisa

No lee vm. bién

Lee muy despacio

No aprénde vm. náda

No obsérva náda

No estudia vm.

No aprovecha náda

Es vm. muy perezósá

Que murmúra vm. allá ?

Vuélva á empezár

No sábe vm. su leción

Ésta es su leción

Déme ótra leción

Porqué me habla vm. Inglés ?

Háble vm. siempre Español

Quiére vm. almorzár ?

Que gústa vm. pára su almuerzo ?

Comerá vm. pan y mantéca ?

*Lace my stays*

*Help me*

*Why don't you help me ?*

*Have you already done ?*

*Not yet*

*How tedious you are !*

*Say your prayers*

*Speak loud*

*Begin*

*Let us go on, forward*

*Make an end, finish*

*Where is your prayer-book ?*

*Bring your Bible*

*Look for it quick*

*Read a chapter*

*Where did you leave off yesterday ?*

*I stopt here*

*You do not hold your book well*

*Read slowly, by degrees*

*Spell that word*

*You read very fast*

*You do not read well*

*You read very slow*

*You learn nothing*

*You observe nothing*

*You do not study*

*You do not improve any*

*You are very idle*

*What do you mutter there ?*

*Begin again*

*You do not know your lesson*

*This is your lesson*

*Give me another lesson*

*Why do you speak English to me ?*

*Speak always Spanish*

*Will you breakfast ?*

*What will you have for your breakfast ?*

*Will you eat bread and butter ?*

Diga vm. lo que quiere mas	<i>Say what you like best</i>
Acábe de almorzár	<i>Finish breakfasting</i>
Almorzó vm. yá ?	<i>Have you breakfasted already ?</i>
Tóme su labór	<i>Take your work</i>
Muéstreme su labór	<i>Show me your work</i>
Éso no está bueno	<i>That is not right</i>
Rehága todo aquéllo	<i>Do all that again</i>
Tiene una aguja buena ?	<i>Have you a good needle ?</i>
Tiene vm. hilo ?	<i>Have you any thread ?</i>
Déje su labór	<i>Leave your work</i>
Váya á jugar un poco,	<i>Go and play a little</i>
Vuélva á trabajar cuándo ha- ya jugado	<i>Come again to work when you have played</i>
Váya á pasearse en el jardín	<i>Go and walk in the garden</i>
No se caliente	<i>Do not overheat yourself</i>
Vuélva presto, pronto	<i>Come again quickly</i>
Es hora de comer	<i>It is dinner-time</i>
Siéntese á la mesa	<i>Sit down to the table</i>
Vámos, tome vmd. una silla	<i>Come, take a chair</i>
Póngase la servilléta	<i>Put on your napkin</i>
Adónde están su cuchillo, su tenedor y su cuchara ?	<i>Where are your knife, your fork and your spoon.</i>
Réce antes de empezár	<i>Say grace before you begin</i>
Cóma vm. sopa	<i>Eat some soup</i>
Gusta vm. carnéro ?	<i>Will you have some mutton ?</i>
Quiere gordo ó magro ?	<i>Will you have fat or lean ?</i>
Le gusta la gordura ?	<i>Do you like fat ?</i>
Le gusta á vm. salsa ?	<i>Do you like sauce ?</i>
Dígame su gusto	<i>Tell me your taste</i>
Cóma, no cóme vm.	<i>Eat, you do not eat</i>
He aquí una ala de pollo	<i>Here is the wing of a chicken</i>
Cóma vm. pan con su carne	<i>Eat bread with your meat</i>
Ha bebido vm. ?	<i>Have you drank ?</i>
Pida de beber	<i>Ask for drink</i>
Es ésta carne sabrosa ?	<i>Is this meat agreeable ?</i>
Quiere vm. comer mas ?	<i>Will you eat more ?</i>
Ha comido vm. bastante ?	<i>Have you eat enough ?</i>
Le gusta el queso ?	<i>Do you like cheese ?</i>
Dé vm. las gracias	<i>Give thanks</i>
Váya á bailar	<i>Go to dance</i>
Ha bailado vmd. ?	<i>Have you danced ?</i>
Ejercítese bien	<i>Exercise yourself well</i>

Váya, dñnce vm. un minuete	<i>Come, dance a minuet</i>
No dñnza vm. bien	<i>You do not dance well</i>
Tengase derécha	<i>Stand upright</i>
Levñnte la cabéza	<i>Hold up your head</i>
Hága la cortesía	<i>Make a curtsy</i>
Míreme vmd.	<i>Look at me</i>
Que está vm. mirñndo ?	<i>What are you looking at ?</i>
Se fué su maéstro ?	<i>Is your master gone ?</i>
Ha acabádo vm. yá ?	<i>Have you done already ?</i>
Váya ahóra á cantár	<i>Go now and sing</i>
Lléve su libro consígo	<i>Carry your book with you</i>
Vuélva á trabajar cuándo há- ya acabádo	<i>Come again to work when you have done, finished</i>
Ha cantádo vm. ?	<i>Have you sung ?</i>
Tiéne leción nuéva ?	<i>Have you a new lesson ?</i>
Cñnte vm. úna ariéta	<i>Sing an air, arietta</i>
Cñnte vm. úna canción	<i>Sing a song</i>
Cñnta vm. bonitáménte	<i>You sing prettily</i>
Tóque vm. el cláve ó piño forte, la hárpa	<i>Play on the harpsichord or pi- ano forte, the harp</i>
Ahóra la guitárra	<i>Now the guitar</i>
Su prima no vále náda	<i>Your treble string is good for nothing</i>
Está su guitárra templáda ?	<i>Is your guitar in tune ?</i>
Sábe vm. templár-la ?	<i>Do you know how to tune it ?</i>
Aún está destempláda	<i>It is still out of tune</i>
No tiéne vm. bien su guitárra	<i>You do not hold your guitar well</i>
Váya vm. á aprender el Es- pañól	<i>Go and learn Spanish</i>
Donde está su gramática ?	<i>Where is your grammar ?</i>
Búsque su libro	<i>Look for your book</i>
Que leción tiéne vm. ?	<i>What lesson have you ?</i>
Que diálogo ha leído ?	<i>What dialogue have you read ?</i>
Repíta su leción	<i>Repeat your lesson</i>
No la sábe vm.	<i>You do not know it</i>
Náda ha aprendído	<i>You have learned nothing</i>
Léa delante de mí	<i>Read before me</i>
No pronúncia vm. bien	<i>You do not pronounce well</i>
Aprendió vm. su leción de memória ?	<i>Have you learnt your lesson by heart ?</i>
No tiéne vmd. memoria	<i>You have no memory</i>

No toma vm trabajo  
 Que quiere para merendár ?  
 —para cenár ?  
 Venga á cenár  
 No se engolosíne en la fruta  
 Estará vm. mala  
 La fruta no le sienta bien  
 Es tiempo de acostarse  
 Desnúdese luego  
 Réce  
 Levántese mañana temprano

*You take no pains  
 What will you have for luncheon ? for supper ?  
 Come to sup.  
 Do not eat fruit greedily  
 You will be sick  
 Fruit does not suit you  
 It is time to go to bed  
 Undress yourself presently  
 Say your prayers  
 Rise early to-morrow*

XVI. *Del paseo.*

Háce muy bello tiempo  
 Éste día claro y sereno con-  
 vida al paseo  
 No parece nube alguna  
 Vámos á paseár  
 Vámos á tomar el aire  
 Quiere vm. dar una vuelta ?  
 Gusta vm. venir conmigo ?  
 Respóndame, dígame sí, ó no  
 Vámos pues, me gusta  
 Le acompañaré  
 Adónde iremos ?  
 Vámos al Parque  
 Vámos á los prados  
 Irémos en coche ?  
 Cómo le gustare  
 Vámonos á pié  
 Tiene vm. razón  
 Eso es saludable  
 Se gana apetito andando  
 Ánimo, vámos, andémos  
 Por dónde iremos ?  
 Por dónde quisiere  
 Por aquí ó por allí  
 Vámos por aquí  
 Á mano derecha, á la derecha  
 Á mano izquierda, á la izquier-  
 da,

XVI. *Of walking.*

*It is very fine weather  
 This clear and serene day in-  
 vites to walk  
 There does not appear any cloud  
 Let us go and walk  
 Let us go and take the air  
 Will you take a turn ?  
 Do you wish to come with me ?  
 Answer me, tell me yes or no  
 Let us go then, I wish it  
 I will accompany you  
 Where shall we go ?  
 Let us go to the Park  
 Let us go to the meadows  
 Shall we go in a coach ?  
 As you please  
 Let us go on foot  
 You are in the right  
 That is healthy, wholesome  
 Walking gets one an appetite  
 Cheer up, come, let us walk  
 Which way shall we go ?  
 Which way you please  
 This way or that  
 Let us go this way  
 On the right hand, to the right  
 On the left hand, to the left*

Quiére vm. ir por agua ?	<i>Will you go by water ?</i>
Adónde está el bárco ?	<i>Where is the boat ?</i>
Adónde están los barqueros ?	<i>Where are the boatmen ?</i>
Entre vm. en el bárco	<i>Step into the boat</i>
Sólo atravesaremos el río	<i>We will just cross the river</i>
El agua está muy mansa y apacible	<i>The water is very smooth and calm</i>
Empieza á moverse	<i>It begins to move</i>
Adónde quiere vm. desembarcár, abordár ?	<i>Where will you land, board ?</i>
Estamos cerca de la orilla	<i>We are near the shore</i>
Para tú el bárco	<i>Stop the boat</i>
Pasemos la vista sobre éstos campos y prados	<i>Let us cast our sight upon these fields and meadows</i>
Que verdura tan hermosa	<i>What a fine green</i>
Estos prados están esmaltados con variedad de flores	<i>These meadows are enamelled with a variety of flowers</i>
Que prospecto tan hermoso !	<i>What a beautiful prospect !</i>
Este lugar es muy ameno	<i>This place is very pleasant</i>
Los árboles échan flores	<i>The trees are blooming</i>
Los rosales empiezan á echar capüllos	<i>The rose-bushes begin to bud, or throw out buds</i>
Aún no están abiertas éstas rosas	<i>These roses are not blown open yet</i>
Crece el trigo	<i>The corn grows</i>
Prométen mucho los pães	<i>The cornfields are very promising</i>
Las espigas son muy largas	<i>The ears are very long</i>
Yá el trigo está maduro	<i>The wheat is already ripe</i>
Ésta es una bella llanura	<i>This is a fine plain</i>
Éstas sombras son muy apacibles	<i>These shades are very pleasant</i>
Que todo tan hermoso !	<i>What a fine whole !</i>
Me parece que estoy en un paraíso terrenal	<i>Methinks I am in an earthly paradise</i>
No oye vm. la dulce melodía de las aves ?	<i>Do you not hear the sweet melody of birds ?</i>
El canto suave del ruiseñor	<i>The sweet warbling of the nightingale ?</i>
Aún no estamos en Mayo	<i>We are not yet in May</i>
Anda vm. demasiado presto	<i>You walk too quick</i>
No le puedo seguir	<i>I cannot follow you</i>
No puedo ir tan de prisa	<i>I cannot go so fast</i>



No me es posible alcanzarle	<i>It is not possible for me to keep up with you</i>
Es vm un póbre caminante	<i>You are a sorry walker</i>
Le suplico, ánde un poco mas despacio	<i>Pray, go a little slower</i>
Descansémos un rato	<i>Let us rest a little</i>
No vale la pena	<i>It is not worth the while</i>
Está vm. cansado ?	<i>Are you tired ?</i>
Estoy molido	<i>I am fatigued</i>
Acostémonos en la yerba	<i>Let us lie down upon the grass</i>
Me témo que esté húmeda	<i>I am afraid it is damp</i>
Cómo puede ser ? no ha llovido	<i>How can it be ? it has not rained</i>
Basta la humedad de la noche	<i>The dampness of the night is sufficient</i>
Ni aún quiero sentarme en el suelo	<i>Nor will I even sit upon the ground</i>
Pasémos pues á esa selva, florista	<i>Let us proceed then to that wood</i>
Entrémos en ese bosque	<i>Let us go into that grove</i>
Que sitio tan gustoso !	<i>What a delightful place !</i>
Que idóneo para estudiar !	<i>How fit for study !</i>
He aquí tres paséos	<i>Here are three walks</i>
Que bien plantados están estos árboles !	<i>How well these trees are planted !</i>
Se inclinan unos hacia otros	<i>They bend towards each other</i>
Éstos árboles hacen bella sombra	<i>These trees make a fine shade</i>
Que espesa está esa arbolada !	<i>How thick that grove is !</i>
Los rayos del sol no la pueden penetrar	<i>The sun-beams cannot pierce through it</i>
He aquí hermosos huertos	<i>Here are fine orchards</i>
Háy mucha fruta	<i>There is a great deal of fruit</i>
Veo manzanas, peras, avellanas, guindas	<i>I see apples, pears, filberts, cherries</i>
Antes quisiera nueces ó castañas	<i>I had rather have walnuts or chesnuts</i>
Éstos albaricóques y persigos me hacen venir el agua á la boca	<i>These apricots and early peaches make my mouth water</i>
Bien me comiera duraznos y algunas de estas ciruelas	<i>I could really eat peaches and some of these plums</i>

Cuánto cuesta la libra de guindas?	<i>What costs a pound of cherries?</i>
Ócho céntes	<i>Five cents</i>
Comprémos algunas	<i>Let us buy some</i>
Me témo que nos mojémos	<i>I am afraid we shall get wet</i>
Repáro que el tiempo empieza á anublarse	<i>I observe the weather begins to grow cloudy</i>
Volvámonos	<i>Let us go back</i>
Empieza á ser tarde	<i>It begins to be late</i>
Se póne el sol	<i>The sun is setting</i>
No corra vm.	<i>Do not run</i>
Aguárdeme un poco	<i>Stay for me a little</i>
Vámos, vámos, si estuviéres cansado, descansará cenando	<i>Come, come, if you be weary, you will rest yourself at supper.</i>
Y aún mejor en la cama	<i>And yet better in bed.</i>

XVII. *Del tiempo.*XVII. *Of the weather.*

Que tiempo hace?	<i>How is the weather?</i>
Hace buen tiempo?	<i>Is it fine weather?</i>
Hace mal tiempo?	<i>Is it bad weather?</i>
Hace calor?	<i>Is it hot?</i>
Hace frío?	<i>Is it cold?</i>
Luce el sol?	<i>Does the sun shine?</i>
Hace bello tiempo	<i>It is fine weather.</i>
Hace mal tiempo	<i>It is bad weather.</i>
El tiempo está seco, húmedo, nublado, lluvioso, tempestuoso, ventoso	<i>It is dry, damp, cloudy, rainy, stormy, windy weather.</i>
Es tiempo inconstante y variable	<i>It is unsettled and changeable weather.</i>
Hace gran calor, mucho frío	<i>It is very hot, very cold.</i>
El tiempo está claro y sereno	<i>It is clear and serene weather.</i>
Luce el sol	<i>The sun shines.</i>
Hace un tiempo oscuro	<i>It is dark weather.</i>
Hace nublado, el cielo está cargado de nubes	<i>It is cloudy, the sky is overcast.</i>
Las nubes son muy espesas	<i>The clouds are very thick.</i>
Luéve?	<i>Does it rain?</i>
No, créno que no	<i>No, I believe not.</i>
Empieza á llover	<i>It begins to rain.</i>
Aún no luéve	<i>It does not rain yet.</i>
Présto lloverá á cántaros	<i>It will soon rain in torrents.</i>

Yá llúeve  
Sólo es un aguacéro  
Pasará luégo  
Me témo que tendremos águá  
No téma vm., no ténga miédo  
Es úna núbe que pásá  
Tódo el día lloverá  
Múcho lo dúdo  
Présto acabará de llover  
Pongámonos al abrigo

No háy páda que temér  
Sólo es águá  
Tiéne vm. miédo del águá ?  
Sólo témo echár á perdér  
mi vestido

Yá tenemos águá  
No debémos salir con éste  
tiempo

Graníza ó apedréa  
Graníza muy récio  
Ahóra niéva

Que! niéva ?  
Míre vm. ésos grandes cópos  
Hiéla también

No, que deshiéla  
Créo que hiéla muy fuérte  
Es hiélo muy dúro

El hiélo se derríte  
La niéve se háce águá

Cáe aguaniéve  
Córre úna borrasca gránde  
Atruéna

Relampaguéa  
Sólo alúmbran los relámpa-  
gos

Córre mucho viéto  
Háce mucho viéto  
El viéto viéne muy frío  
Se mudó el viéto  
El viéto cáe  
Pasó la torménta  
El tiempo se aclára

*It rains already  
It is but a shower  
It will be over presently  
I am afraid we shall have rain  
Do not fear, be not afraid  
It is a flying cloud  
It will rain all day  
I question it much  
It will soon cease to rain  
Let us put ourselves under  
shelter*

*There is nothing to fear  
It is but water  
Are you afraid of water ?  
I fear only to spoil my clothes*

*It rains already  
We must not go out in such  
weather*

*It hails  
It hails very hard  
Now it snows  
What! does it snow?*

*Look at those great flakes  
It freezes also  
No, it thaws*

*I think it freezes very hard  
It is a very hard frost  
The ice is melting*

*The snow melts away  
There is a sleet falling  
There blows a great storm*

*It thunders  
It lightens  
The flashes of lightning alone  
give light*

*The wind blows hard  
The wind blows high  
The wind blows very cold  
The wind is changed  
The wind falls  
The storm is over  
The weather clears up*

El cielo empieza á aclararse  
Se abre el tiempo, empieza  
á serenarse

Divídense las nubes ; desa-  
parecen y desvanécense  
poco á poco

Ya vemos lucir el sol

Veo el arco íris, el arco celeste

Es señal de buen tiempo

Háce una neblina muy espesa

No nos podemos ver

He allí una niebla que se le-  
vanta

Pero el sol empieza á disiparla

#### XVIII. De la hora.

Que hora es ?

Vea vm. que hora es

Dígame que hora es

No sabe vm. que hora es ?

Es temprano

No es tarde

Nos volveremos á casa ?

Háy bastante tiempo

Sólo es medio día, sólo son  
las doce del día

Es cerca de la una

Abora dió la una

Es la una y cuarto

Es la una y media

Es la una y tres cuartos

Es cerca de las dos, ó darán  
las dos

No he oído el reloj

Han dado las seis

Son las siete al sol

Acában de dar las siete

Las ocho han dado

Cerca de las diez

Es cerca de las doce de la  
noche, ó media noche

Cómo lo sabe vm. ?

*The sky begins to clear up  
The weather settles, it begins  
to be fair again*

*The clouds divide, or break  
asunder; they disappear by  
degrees and vanish*

*We now see the sun shine*

*I see the rainbow*

*It is a sign of fair weather*

*There is a very thick mist*

*We cannot see one another*

*There is a fog rising*

*But the sun begins to disperse it*

#### XVIII. Of the time of day.

*What o'clock is it ?*

*See what o'clock it is*

*Tell me what o'clock it is*

*Don't you know what o'clock  
it is ?*

*It is early*

*It is not late*

*Shall we return home ?*

*There is time enough*

*It is but twelve o'clock, (at  
noon,) mid-day*

*It is almost one*

*It struck one now*

*It is a quarter past one*

*It is half an hour past one*

*It is three quarters past one*

*It is near two, or it is upon  
the stroke of two*

*I have not heard the clock*

*It has struck six*

*It is seven by the sun*

*It struck seven just now*

*It has struck eight*

*About ten o'clock*

*It is near twelve o'clock, or  
midnight*

*How do you know it ?*

Da el reloj	<i>The clock strikes</i>
Lo oye vm. dar ?	<i>Do you hear it strike ?</i>
No créo que sea tan tarde	<i>I do not think it is so late</i>
Míre su reloj	<i>Look at your watch</i>
Adelánta mucho	<i>It goes too fast</i>
Atrása demasiado	<i>It goes too slow</i>
No anda, está parado	<i>It does not go, it is stopped</i>
Déle vm. cuérda	<i>Wind it up</i>
Vea vm. que hora es al reloj de sol	<i>See what o'clock it is by the sun-dial</i>
Los cuadrantes no concuerdan	<i>The sun-dials do not agree</i>
La mano está quebrada	<i>The hand is broken</i>
Dónde está su reloj de repetición ?	<i>Where is your repeater ? or repeating watch ?</i>
No lo hallo, está extraviado	<i>I do not find it, it is mislaid.</i>
XIX. De las estaciones del año.	XIX. Of the seasons of the year.
Que estación le gusta mas ?	<i>What season do you like best ?</i>
La primavera es la mas agradable de todas	<i>Spring is the most pleasant of all</i>
Toda la naturaleza se anima	<i>All nature is animated</i>
El tiempo está muy suave, templado	<i>The weather is very mild, temperate</i>
Ni hace demasiado calor, ni demasiado frío	<i>It is neither too hot, nor too cold</i>
Enamóran entonces todos los animales, ó arden en amor	<i>All creatures then make love, or burn with love</i>
No háy primavera este año	<i>There is no spring this year</i>
Los tiempos están revueltos	<i>The times are disordered</i>
Es un invierno moderado	<i>It is a moderate winter</i>
Nada adelánta	<i>Nothing comes forward</i>
La estación está muy atrasada	<i>The season is very backward</i>
Tenemos un estío muy caluroso, tiempo abochornado	<i>We have a very hot summer, sultry weather</i>
Oh, que calor !	<i>How hot it is !</i>
Hace un calor excesivo	<i>It is excessively hot</i>
Que tiempo tan pesado !	<i>What heavy weather !</i>
No puedo con tanto calor	<i>I cannot endure so much heat</i>
Estoy traspirando, sudando, hecho agua	<i>I am perspiring, sweating, all over in a perspiration</i>
Me muero de calor	<i>I am dying with heat</i>
Jamás tuve tanto calor	<i>I never was so hot</i>

Es muy bello tiempo para los frutos de la tierra	<i>It is very fine weather for the fruits of the earth</i>
Tendremos mucho heno	<i>We shall have a great deal of hay</i>
La cosecha será muy abundante	<i>The harvest will be very plentiful</i>
Háy abundancia de fruta	<i>There is abundance of fruit</i>
Todos los árboles han producido mucho	<i>All the trees have produced much</i>
Nos hace falta un poco de agua	<i>We are in want of a little rain</i>
La cosecha está cerca	<i>Harvest time draws near</i>
Empiezan á segar los trigos	<i>They begin to reap the wheat</i>
Se han segado los prados	<i>The meadows have been mowed</i>
Es menester recoger los panes	<i>We must get in the corn</i>
Estamos en la canícula	<i>We are in dog-days</i>
Pasó ya el verano	<i>The summer is already gone</i>
El otoño, la caída de las hojas, lo ha sucedido	<i>Autumn, the fall of the leaves, has taken its place</i>
La vendimia se acerca	<i>Vintage draws near</i>
Hermosa vendimia tenemos	<i>We have a fine vintage</i>
Vendimiaremos en tres ó cuatro días	<i>We shall gather grapes in three or four days</i>
Los vinos serán buenos este año	<i>Wines will be good this year</i>
Las viñas han dado bien	<i>The vines have borne well</i>
El vino será barato	<i>Wine will be cheap</i>
Es preciso recoger los frutos atrasados	<i>We must gather the late produce</i>
Las manzanas y peras de invierno	<i>Winter apples and pears</i>
Los días se han acortado mucho	<i>The days have grown very short</i>
Las mañanas son frías	<i>The mornings are cold</i>
El invierno viene acercándose	<i>Winter comes on, drawing near</i>
Muy presto es noche	<i>It is very soon night</i>
Las tardes son largas	<i>The evenings are long</i>
Empieza la lumbre á recrear á la tardecita	<i>Fire begins to be pleasant at dusk</i>
No me gusta el invierno	<i>Winter does not please me</i>
Los días son muy breves	<i>The days are very short</i>

Yá no es de día á las cinco      *It is no longer light at five*  
 No se ve á las cinco      *One does not see at five*  
 Empiéza á anochecer á las      *It begins to grow dark at four*  
 cuátro

Amanéce á las siéte      *The day breaks at seven*  
 No se sabe en que pasar el      *One knows not in what to*  
 tiémpo      *spend one's time*

Éste inviérno es muy frío,      *This is a very cold, very sharp*  
 muy áspero      *winter*

Se acuerda vm. del gránde      *Do you remember the hard*  
 inviérno ?      *winter ?*

Jamás vi inviérno tan frío      *I never saw so cold a winter*

Empiézan á crecer los días      *The days begin to lengthen*

Los días son un poco mas      *The days are a little longer*  
 largos

Casi no hémos tenido inviérno      *We almost have had no winter*

La primavera yá viene á re-      *The spring comes already to*  
 gocijár la naturaléza      *revive or rejoice nature*

XX. *De la ida á la escuela.*

XX. *Of going to school.*

De dónde viene vm. ?

*From whence do you come ?*

De casa. De mi casa.

*From home. From my house.*

Adónde va vm. tan de prisa ?

*Where are you going so fast ?*

Vóy á la escuela

*I am going to school*

Venga conmigo

*Come with me*

Aguárde un poco

*Stay a little*

Vámonos, le suplico

*Let us go, I pray you*

Porqué juéga vm. andándo ?

*Why do you play as you go ?*

No se entretenga

*Do not amuse yourself*

Llegaremos bastánte presto

*We shall arrive soon enough*

Qué hora es ?

*What o'clock is it ?*

Cerca de las siéte

*Almost seven*

Aún no ha dado el reloj

*The clock has not struck yet*

Despachémos

*Let us make haste*

Quién viene ahí ?

*Who comes there ?*

Es uno de nuéstrs condiscí-  
 pulos

*It is one of our schoolfellows*

Irémos los tres júntos

*We will go all three together*

Vámonos á prisa

*Let us go away fast*

XXI. *En la escuela.*

XXI. *In the school.*

Siéntese en su lugar

*Sit down in your place*

Cuélgue su sombrero

*Hang up your hat*

Adónde está su libro ?	<i>Where is your book ?</i>
Léa su lección	<i>Read your lesson</i>
Estúdie su lección	<i>Study your lesson</i>
Aprenda su lección de memoria	<i>Get your lesson by heart</i>
Nada hace sinó jugar	<i>You do nothing but play</i>
Le anotaré	<i>I will set you up</i>
Se lo diré al maestro	<i>I will tell it to the master</i>
Acabó vm. ?	<i>Have you done ?</i>
Aún no he acabado	<i>I have not finished yet</i>
Que está escribiendo ?	<i>What are you writing ?</i>
Escribo mi ejercicio	<i>I am writing my exercise</i>
Todo lo he escrito	<i>I have written it all</i>
No me muéva	<i>Do not jog me</i>
Haga me un poco de lugar	<i>Make a little room for me</i>
Vm. tiene bastante lugar	<i>You have room enough</i>
Vaya atrás un poco	<i>Go a little farther</i>
Un poco mas arriba	<i>A little higher</i>
Algo mas abajo	<i>A little lower</i>
Sírvase de darme un libro	<i>Be pleased to give me a book</i>
Adónde empezamos ?	<i>Where do we begin ?</i>
Hasta dónde decimos ?	<i>How far do we say ?</i>
Hasta aquí	<i>Thus far, so far</i>
Cual es su tarea ?	<i>Which is your task ?</i>
De quien es este libro ?	<i>Whose book is this ?</i>
Sabe vm. su lección de memoria ?	<i>Do you know your lesson by heart ?</i>
Aún no	<i>Not yet</i>
Apúnteme vm.	<i>Do prompt me</i>
Ha de leerla tres veces	<i>You must read it three times</i>
Quien lo ha dicho ?	<i>Who has said so ?</i>
El Señor A. lo mandó	<i>Mr. A. ordered it</i>
Tiene vm. pluma y tinta ?	<i>Have you pen and ink ?</i>
Escriba vm. su ejercicio	<i>Write your exercise</i>
Lo escribió vm. mal	<i>You wrote it ill</i>
Léa vm. su lección	<i>Read your lesson</i>
Diga su lección	<i>Say your lesson</i>
Le azotarán	<i>You will be flogged</i>
Meréce vm. azotes	<i>You deserve a whipping</i>
Porqué llega vm. tan tarde ?	<i>Why do you arrive so late ?</i>
Tuve que hacer	<i>I had to do</i>
Que negocio le detuvo ?	<i>What business detained you ?</i>
A que hora se levantó ?	<i>At what hour did you rise ?</i>
A las ocho	<i>At eight o'clock</i>



Porqué se levantó tan tarde ?	<i>Why did you rise so late ?</i>
Es vm. un flojón	<i>You are a sluggard</i>
Quédese en su sitio	<i>Remain in your place</i>
Quítese de mi lugar	<i>Get away from my place</i>
Porqué me rempúja así ?	<i>Why do you push me so ?</i>
Quién le tóca ?	<i>Who touches you ?</i>
No se enóge vm.	<i>Do not be angry</i>
Me quejaré al maéstro	<i>I will complain to the master</i>
Dígaselo, si quisiére	<i>Tell it to him if you will</i>
Póco me impórta	<i>I care little</i>
Señór, no me quiere dejar quiéto	<i>Sir, he won't let me alone</i>
Me agarró el libro de las má- nos	<i>He snatched the book from my hands</i>
Háce búrta de mí	<i>He mocks me</i>
Me tiró de los cabéllos	<i>He pulled me by the hair</i>
Me da patádas	<i>He kicks me</i>
Me empúja fuéra de mi lugar	<i>He thrusts me out of my place</i>
No háy tal	<i>There is no such thing</i>
Que búlla es ésta ?	<i>What noise is this ?</i>
Tómen éste muchácho y dén- le úna máno de azótes	<i>Take this boy and give him a good whipping</i>
Señór, perdóneme vm.	<i>Sir, pardon me</i>
Suplícole, Señór, perdóneme ésta sóla vez	<i>Pray, Sir, forgive me this once alone</i>
Pórtese pués mejór en ade- lánte	<i>Behave then better for the fu- ture, hereafter</i>

Diálogos Familiares, Españóles é Ingléses.  
*Familiar Dialogues, Spanish and English.*

Diálogo I. <i>Acérca de saludár é informárse de la salud de algúno.</i>	Dialogue I. <i>Of saluting and inquiring after any one's health</i>
Buénos días, Señór	<i>Good morning, good day, Sir</i>
Yó se los deséo á vm.	<i>I wish you the same</i>
Buénas tárdes, Caballéro	<i>Good afternoon, Sir</i>
Buénas nóches, Señór	<i>Good night, good evening, Sir</i>
Servidór de usted	<i>Your servant</i>
Cómo está vm. ?	<i>How do you do ?</i>
Buéno, pára servir á vm.	<i>Very well, at your service</i>

Cómo va ? cómo lo pása ?	<i>How are you ? How goes it ?</i>
Siempre al servicio de vm.	<i>Always at your service</i>
Y á vm. Señor, cómo le va ?	<i>And you, Sir, how is it with you ?</i>
Múy bien, gracias á Dios	<i>Very well, thank God</i>
Estóy buéno pára servir á vm.	<i>I am very well at your service</i>
Vámos pasándo	<i>Pretty well ; so, so</i>
Me alégro múcho de vérle	<i>I am very glad to see you</i>
Me alégro de vérle con salud	<i>I rejoice to see you in health</i>
Agradézcose lo infinito	<i>I thank you very much for it</i>
Viva vm. muchos años	<i>I am obliged to you</i>
Cómo está el Señor su hermano ?	<i>How does your brother do ?</i>
Está buéno la última vez que le ví	<i>He was well the last time I saw him</i>
Está buéno, gracias á Dios	<i>He is well, thank God</i>
Créo que le va bien	<i>I believe he is well</i>
Ayer nóche estaba buéno	<i>He was well last night</i>
Me alégro de éso	<i>I am very glad of it</i>
Dónde está ?	<i>Where is he ?</i>
En el campo	<i>In the country</i>
En la ciudad	<i>In the city</i>
En casa	<i>At home</i>
Ha salido póco háce	<i>He is just gone out</i>
Se alegrará de ver á vm.	<i>He will be glad to see you</i>
Celebrará múcho sabér que vm. goza de perfécta salud	<i>He will be very happy to hear you enjoy perfect health</i>
Vm. le favorece múcho	<i>You are very polite</i>
También encontrará vm. con el mas sincero reconocimientó	<i>You will also meet with a most sincere return</i>
Sóy su servidór	<i>I am his servant</i>
Cómo está la Señorita ?	<i>How is the young lady ?</i>
Está buéna	<i>She is well</i>
Créo que está muy buéna	<i>I believe she is very well</i>
No está muy buéna	<i>She is not very well</i>
Está algo malita	<i>She is a little unwell</i>
Ayer mañana estaba indispu-esta	<i>She was indisposed yesterday morning</i>
Héla aquí que viéne	<i>Here she is coming</i>
Señorita, á los piés de vm.	<i>Miss, your most humble servant</i>

Servidóra de vm. Señor	<i>Sir, I am your servant</i>
Cómo ha estado vm., desde que no le he visto?	<i>How have you been, since I saw you last?</i>
Siempre bien, gracias a Dios	<i>Always well, thank God</i>
Cómo se halla vm.?	<i>How do you find yourself?</i>
Muy bien	<i>Quite well</i>
Me da gusto de saberlo	<i>I am pleased to know it</i>
De corazón lo agradezco	<i>I thank you heartily</i>
Péro cómo le va ahora?	<i>But how is it with you now?</i>
Mediáramente	<i>Tolerably</i>
No he pasado buena noche	<i>I have not passed a good night</i>
Lo siento muchísimo	<i>I am very sorry for it</i>
Es un dolor	<i>I regret it very much</i>
Yó le compadezco mucho	<i>I sympathise much with you</i>
No puedo yó lisonjearme mucho de salud	<i>I can't boast much in point of health</i>
Que ha tenido vm.?	<i>What has been the matter with you?</i>
Mi estómago ha estado des- compuesto	<i>My stomach has been a little out of order</i>
Paréce que está vm. buena ahóra	<i>It seems you are now well</i>
Así así, para servir á vm.	<i>So so, at your service</i>
Cómo están en casa?	<i>How do they do at home?</i>
Están nuestros amigos de la corte, del campo, de la ciu- dad, de la villa, buenos?	<i>Our friends at court, in the country, in the city, in town, are they well?</i>
Todos, están buenos, ménos mi madre	<i>They are all well, except my mother</i>
Que le duele?	<i>What ails her?</i>
Que enfermedad tiene?	<i>What is her complaint?</i>
Tiene calentura, dolor cóli- co, tos	<i>She has a fever, the colic, a cough</i>
Le duele la cabeza	<i>She has the head-ache</i>
Desde cuándo?	<i>How long since?</i>
Desde media noche empezó á padecer	<i>Since 'midnight she began to suffer.</i>
Deséo que se mejóre pronto	<i>I wish her to improve speedily</i>
Puedo yó servirla de algo?	<i>Can I serve her in any thing</i>
Puede mandárme con toda satisfacción	<i>She may command me with full confidence</i>
La Señora nunca ha dudado del favor de vm.	<i>Madam never has doubted your goodness</i>

Suplico á vm. que no me olvide	<i>I beg you will not forget me</i>
Éso quéda de mi cuenta	<i>That lies to my account</i>
Ha mucho tiempo que está mala ?	<i>Is it long since she has been ill ?</i>
No ha mucho	<i>It is not long</i>
Deséo que se mejóre	<i>I wish she may grow better</i>
La Señora sábe muy bien el favór de vm.	<i>My lady is sensible of your kindness</i>
Se alegrará de ver á vmd.	<i>She will be glad to see you</i>
Sóy muy servidór suyo	<i>I am her most humble servant</i>
Siénto no tenér tiempo de vér-la hóy	<i>I am sorry I have not time to see her to day</i>
Siéntese vmd. un ráto	<i>Sit down a little</i>
De véras no puédo	<i>Indeed I cannot</i>
Está vm. muy de prisa ?	<i>Are you in great haste ?</i>
Volveré mañana	<i>I will come again to-morrow</i>
No puéde vm. esperar un poco ?	<i>Cannot you stay a little ?</i>
Tengo négocios urgentes	<i>I have earnest business</i>
Sólo véngo pára saber cómo estaban vmd.	<i>I only come to know how you were</i>
Rinda vm. mis respétos á su hermano	<i>Present my best regards to your brother</i>
Encomiéndeme á mi Señora su madre	<i>Present my respects to my lady your mother</i>
Sus órdenes serán puntualmente obedecidas	<i>Your orders shall be punctually obeyed</i>
Dígale vm. cuánto siénto saber su indisposición	<i>Tell her how sorry I am to know her indisposition</i>
Lo haré sin falta	<i>I shall do it without fail</i>
Váya vm. con Diós	<i>Farewell, go with God</i>
Quéde vm. con Diós	<i>Good bye, remain with God</i>
Estimo mucho ésta visita	<i>I thank you for this visit</i>
Buenas nóches, Caballéro	<i>Good night, good evening, Sir</i>
Señora, felices nóches	<i>Good night, Madam</i>
Dial. II. <i>Acérca del hablar Español.</i>	<i>Dial. II. Of speaking Spanish.</i>
Aprende vm. el Español ?	<i>Do you learn Spanish ?</i>
Si, Señor, algùn tiempo háce	<i>Yes, Sir, some time since</i>
Yó me empéño en aprenderlo	<i>I endeavour to learn it</i>
Vm. háce muy bien	<i>You do very well</i>

- Es una lengua muy útil y hermosa *It is a very useful and very fine language*
- Es también muy graciosa, llena de sal y expresión *It is also very witty, full of humour and expression*
- Me han dicho también que es mas varonil y copiosa que la Francésa *I have been told it is also more manly and copious than the French*
- No obstante, la Francésa es mas de moda *Notwithstanding, the French is more in fashion*
- Si los Españoles hubieran cultivado su lengua como los Ingleses, en estos dos últimos siglos, sin duda que sería mucho mas de moda *Had the Spaniards cultivated their language as the English have, in these two last centuries, no doubt it would be much more in fashion*
- Por la superioridad de su dicción, y la suavidad de su estilo *For its superiority of diction, and suavity of style*
- Porqué su pronunciación no tiene mas de 27 sonidos *Because its pronunciation has only twenty-seven sounds*
- Porqué cada letra se debe pronunciar *Because every letter is to be pronounced*
- Y casi siempre con el mismo sonido que en el Alfabeto *And almost always with the same sound as in the alphabet*
- Porqué su pronunciación se puede explicar suficientemente en una página de duodécimo (véase página 20) *Because its pronunciation may be sufficiently explained in a duodecimo page, (See page 20)*
- También se puede adquirir con facilidad en una hora *It may also be easily acquired in an hour*
- No háy estudiante que en la primera lección no la pueda con facilidad aprender *There is no learner that in the first lesson may not easily learn it*
- Está en su poder, con 8 lecciones, el leerla corrientemente, y con 20 entender perfectamente cualquier libro con la ayuda de un buen diccionario *It is in his power, with eight lessons, to read it fluently, and with twenty to understand perfectly any book with the help of a good dictionary*
- No tiene declinación sinó para los artículos y pronombres *It has no declension but for the articles and pronouns*

- No tiéne mas de tres verbos auxiliares *It has no more than three auxiliary verbs*
- Cási constanteménte guárda la natúral precedéncia de las palábras *It preserves almost constantly the natural precedence of words*
- La preposición núnca se encuéntra sinó delante de su própío caso *The preposition never is met with but before its own case*
- Tódas sus irregularidádes se puéden con facilidad corregir *All its irregularities may be easily corrected*
- Por ésto la léngua Española es la mas própia pára aprendérse por arte *For this reason the Spanish language is the most proper to be learned by art*
- Y la mas proporcionáda pára las Universidádes, tratádos y comércio *And the most proper for Universities, treaties, and commerce*
- Tóda su brillantéz se descubrió en el siglo 16º— *All its brilliancy appeared in the 16th century*
- Y entónces se hablaba mas comunménte que ninguna ótra léngua *And it was then more commonly spoken than any other language*
- Los autóres Españóles de aquél siglo hicieron entónces y aún hácen ahora, así en verso cómo en prósa, una muy brillante figura *The Spanish writers of that century then made and yet make, both in verse and prose, a very brilliant figure*
- Ahora también háy muchos libros nuevos *There are also now many new books*
- Escrítos en el reinádo de Carlos III. *Written in the reign of Charles III.*
- Que yó no cito, porque son muchos *Which I do not quote, because they are very numerous*
- La primera lección me mostró lo muy fácil que es ésta léngua *The first lesson convinced me of the great facility of this language*
- Por mí, yó gusto mucho de élla *For my part, I like it very much*
- Porqué facilita núestros medios de fomentár el mas importante comércio que poseemos *Because it facilitates our means of encouraging the most important trade we possess*

- Digo él de España y las Américas *I mean that with Spain and North and South America*
- Pero no empiece vm sin un buen maestro *But do not begin without an able master*
- Porqué un mal hábito no es fácil de dejár *Because an evil habit is not easily removed*
- Se dice, que vm. habla muy bien el Español *It is said, that you speak the Spanish very well*
- Entiéndolo medianamente *I understand it pretty well*
- Que libros lee vm. para aprender el Español ? *What books do you read to learn Spanish ?*
- Los Rudimentos de la Lengua Española por Sales *The Rudiments of the Spanish Language by Sales*
- La Gramática de Jossé, y los Ejercicios por el mismo Autor *The Grammar of Josse, and the exercises by the same Author*
- Es natural de España y hombre muy dócto *He is a native of Spain and a very learned man*
- Léo también la Colmena, las Cartas Marrúecas y poesías selectas de CADALSO, y la Historia de la Conquista de Méjico, por SOLÍS *I read also the Colmena, the Cartas Marrúecas, and select poems of CADALSO, and the History of the Conquest of Mexico, by SOLÍS*
- Porqué no lee vm. Don Quijote ? *Why do you not read Don Quixote ?*
- Mi maestro me dijo que no era libro para principiantes *My master told me this was not a book for beginners*
- Que razón tiene ? *What is the reason ?*
- Porqué háy en él muchos modos de hablar y refranes *Because it contains a great many idioms and proverbs*
- De que diccionario se sirve vm. *What dictionary do you make use of ?*
- De él de Neumán en 2 tomos 8vo., y de él de Gattel, en 2, 18vo. *Of the dictionary of Neuman, 2v. 8vo., and that of Gattel, 2v. 18mo.*
- Que aprende vm. de memoria ? *What do you get by heart ?*
- Aprendo algunas voces del vocabulario de la Gramática *I learn some words in the vocabulary of the Grammar*
- Dígame vm., cómo se llama aquello ? *Tell me, how is that called ?*
- Creo que se llama ——— *I believe it is called ———*

Muy bien, y ésto ?

Péro no estúdia vm.algúna có-  
sa además del vocabulário ?

Sí, Señor, los egémplos de  
las réglas de la gramática  
El libro de egercicios, fráses  
famiáres y diálogos de la  
referida Gramática

Va vm. aprendiéndlo bién

Agradézco á vm. que me ali-  
énte

Pronúncio bién ?

Bellaménte, eleganteménte

Sólo le fálta mas práctica

Náda se adquiére sin trabájo

Por póco que se aplique vmd.  
sabrá muy préstlo el Espa-  
ñól

Estóy convencido de éllo

Me han dicho que vm. enten-  
día muy bién el Idioma  
Castelláno

Quisiéra que fuése verdád

Supóngo que deséa vm. saber  
ésta hermosa léngua

Lo ha de suponér así; porqué,  
en efécto, lo deséo

Bién, le vóy á enseñár el  
módo de hablár en póco el  
Españól

Se lo agradeceré múcho

El método mas fácil pára  
aprendér úna léngua, es  
hablárla á menúdo

Péro pára hablárla, es me-  
nestér saber algo de élla

Yá sábe vm. bastánte

Sólo sé algunas palábras de  
las mas necesárias, y algu-  
nas senténcias bréves

Ésto básta pára empezár á  
hablár

*Very well, and this ?*

*But do you not study any  
thing else besides words ?*

*Yes, Sir, the examples of the  
rules of the grammar*

*The book of exercises, famil-  
iar phrases and dialogues  
of said Grammar*

*You are learning well*

*I thank you for encouraging  
me*

*Do I pronounce well ?*

*Beautifully, elegantly*

*You only want more practice*

*Nothing is acquired without  
pains*

*However little you apply,  
you will very soon know  
the Spanish*

*I am convinced of it*

*I have been told you under-  
stood well the Castilian  
language*

*I should wish it were true*

*I suppose you have a mind  
to know this fine language*

*You ought to suppose it so ;  
for, indeed, I wish it*

*Well, I am going to teach  
you the way to speak Span-  
ish in a short time*

*I shall be much obliged to you  
The easiest way to learn a  
language, is to speak it  
frequently*

*But to speak it, one must  
know something of it*

*You know enough already*

*I know but a few words most  
necessary, and some short  
phrases*

*This is enough to begin to  
speak*



Si éso fuéa así, présto sabría la léngua	<i>If it were so, I should soon know the language</i>
No ténga vm. dúda de éllo	<i>Have no doubt of it</i>
No entiénde vmd. lo que le digo ?	<i>Do not you understand what I say to you ?</i>
Lo entiéndo y compréndo muy bien	<i>I understand and comprehend it very well</i>
Péro hállo mucha dificultád en hablár	<i>But I find it very hard to speak</i>
No téngo facilidad en hablár	<i>I have no facility in speaking</i>
Ésto viéne con el tiémpo	<i>This comes in time</i>
Téngo cortedad de hablár, por no esponérme á decir disparátes	<i>I am bashful to speak, for fear of exposing myself to speak nonsense.</i>
No se enfáde por ésto	<i>Be not discouraged for that</i>
Póca paciéncia téngo	<i>I have little patience</i>
Háce mucho tiémpo que vm. aprénde ?	<i>Is it long since you have been learning</i>
Dos mése ha que empecé	<i>It is two months since I began</i>
Es muy córto tiémpo	<i>It is a very short time</i>
No le dice su maéstro que debiéra siémpre hablár ?	<i>Does not your master tell you that you should always speak ?</i>
Muy á menúdo me lo dice	<i>He tells me so very often</i>
Porqué pués, no quiére vm. hablár ?	<i>Why will you not speak then ?</i>
Con quién he de hablár ?	<i>With whom shall I speak ?</i>
Con todos los que le háblen	<i>With all those that speak to you</i>
Quisiéra hablár, péro no me atrévo	<i>I should wish to speak, but I dare not</i>
Créame vm., séa atrevído, háble siémpre, bien ó mal	<i>Believe me, be confident, speak always, well or ill</i>
Sóbre tódo, no omíta vm. ocasión de hablár cuándo la encuéntre	<i>Above all, omit no occasion of speaking when you find it</i>
Habládo es, cómo aprendémos á hablár	<i>It is by speaking that we learn to speak</i>
Ha pensádo vm. muy bien	<i>You have judged very right</i>
Seguiré pués su conséjo	<i>I shall follow your advice then</i>
Hará vm. muy bien	<i>You will do very well</i>
Díal. III. Pára hablár Inglés.	<i>Dial. III. To speak English.</i>
Señór, es vm. Españól ?	<i>Sir, are you a Spaniard ?</i>
Sí, Señór, pára servirle	<i>Yes, Sir, at your service</i>

De que parage de España es vm. ?	<i>What part of Spain are you from ?</i>
De Madrid, de Tolédo, de Sevilla, &c.	<i>From Madrid, Toledo, Seville, &amp;c.</i>
De que ciúdad ?	<i>Of what city ?</i>
De Cádiz	<i>Of Cadiz</i>
Cuánto tiempo háce que está vm. en Inglaterra ?	<i>How long have you been in England ?</i>
Háce mas de un año	<i>It is more than a year</i>
Hábla vm. Inglés ?	<i>Do you speak English ?</i>
Háblolo un poco	<i>I speak it a little</i>
Péro mas entiendo de lo que háblo	<i>But I understand it better than I speak</i>
La lengua Inglesa es muy dificultosa para los Españoles	<i>The English language is very difficult for Spaniards</i>
La Española no es difícil para los Ingleses	<i>The Spanish is not difficult for Englishmen</i>
Estoy persuadido de lo contrario	<i>I am persuaded of the contrary</i>
Con dificultad lo créo	<i>I hardly believe it</i>
La esperiencia nos lo muestra todos los días	<i>Experience shows it to us every day</i>
La pronunciación del Español es mucho mas fácil que la del Inglés	<i>The pronunciation of the Spanish is a great deal easier than that of the English</i>
Ellos pronuncian todas las letras cómo las escriben	<i>They pronounce all the letters as they write them</i>
Conózco á varios Ingleses que pronuncian muy bien el Castellano	<i>I know several Englishmen who pronounce the Spanish very well</i>
Apénas se podrá hallar un Español entre ciento que pronuncie bien el Inglés	<i>One can hardly find one Spaniard in a hundred who pronounces English well</i>
Los Ingleses se comen la mitad de sus voces	<i>The English clip or eat up half their words</i>
Dan un sólo sonído á tres ó cuátro letras	<i>They give a single sound to three or four letters</i>
Péro en Español cada letra tiene su sonído	<i>But in Spanish, each letter has its sound</i>

De suerte que la dificultad  
no parece igual de ámbos  
lados

El Español tiene la ventaja  
Y aún la dificultad es ménos  
para la gente móza

Porqué los jóvenes son cómo  
cera blánda, en que se im-  
prime fácilmente todo

*So that the difficulty does not  
seem equal on both sides*

*The Spanish has the advantage  
And the difficulty is yet less  
for young people*

*Because young people are like  
soft wax, on which one ea-  
sily impresses any thing*

Díal. IV. *Del hacer una vi-  
sita por la mañana.*

*Dial. IV. Of making a morn-  
ing visit.*

Quién está ahí?

*Who is there ?*

Gente de paz, ábra vmd. la  
puérta

*A friend, people of peace,  
open the door*

Adónde está tu ámo?

*Where is your master ?*

Está en la cáma

*He is in bed*

Duérmee aún?

*Does he sleep yet ?*

No, Señor, está despierto

*No, Sir, he is awake*

Está levantado?

*Is he up ?*

Aún no; quiere vm. entrár  
en su cuarto?

*Not yet; will you step into  
his chamber ?*

Aún en la cáma?

*Still in bed?*

Me recogí anóche tan tarde,  
que no me he podido levan-  
tar mas temprano

*I retired so late last night,  
that I could not get up  
earlier*

Que hizo vm. después de ce-  
nár?

*What did you do after sup-  
per ?*

Cómo pasó vm. la nóche?

*How did you spend the even-  
ing, the night ?*

Jugámos á los náipes

*We played at cards*

Á que juego?

*At what game ?*

Jugámos á los cientos

*We played at piquet*

Es un juego muy de móda

*It is a game much in fashion*

Luégo nos fuímos al báile

*Afterwards we went to the  
ball*

Hásta que hora se estuvo  
vmd. allí?

*Till what o'clock were you  
there ?*

Hásta média nóche

*Till midnight*

Á que hora se acostó vmd.?

*What time did you go to bed?*

Á la una de la nóche

*At one in the morning*

No estraño que vm. se levánte  
tan tárde

Que hóra puéde ser ?

Qué hóra le paréce que es ?

Han dádo las diéz

Levántese vm. présto

Darémos úna vuélta en el  
párque luégo que esté vmd.  
vestido

Díal. V. *Del almorzár.*

Quiére vm. almorzár ?

Es tiémpo de desayunárse ?

Que gústa vm. pára su almu-  
érzo ?

Pan y mantéca ?

Mollétes calientes ?

Léche ? tostádas ? chocoláte ?

No ; tódo éso es buéno pára  
níños

Tráiganos ótra cósa

Gústan vms. de jamón ?

Sí, tráigalo, que cortarémos  
úna tajáda

Póngá úna servilléta en la mé-  
sa, y dénos plátos, cuchillos  
y tenedóres

Láve los vásos

Dé un asiénto al Señor

Tóme vm. úna silla y siéntese

Acérquese de la lúmbre

Estaré bién aquí, no téngo  
frío

Gústan vms. de huévos frés-  
cos ?

Han de ser pasádos por águá  
ó fritos ?

Quíte ése pláto gránde

Cóma vm. salchícha

Probémos el vino

Destápe ésa botélla

No téngo tirabuzón

*I do not wonder you rise so  
late*

*What o'clock may it be ?*

*What o'clock do you think  
it is ?*

*It has struck ten*

*Rise quickly*

*We will take a turn in the  
Park as soon as you are  
dressed.*

Díal. V. *Of breakfasting.*

*Will you breakfast ?*

*Is it breakfast time ?*

*What do you wish for your  
breakfast ?*

*Bread and butter ?*

*Hot loaves ?*

*Milk ? toasts ? chocolate ?*

*No ; all that is fit for chil-  
dren*

*Bring us something else*

*Do you wish for ham ?*

*Yes, bring it, and we will cut  
a slice of it*

*Lay a cloth upon the table,  
and give us plates, knives  
and forks*

*Rinse the tumblers*

*Give the gentleman a seat*

*Take a chair and sit down*

*Come near the fire*

*I shall be well here, I am not  
cold*

*Will you have new laid  
eggs ?*

*Must they be boiled or fri-  
ed ?*

*Take that dish away ?*

*Eat some sausage*

*Let us taste the wine*

*Uncork that bottle*

*I have no corkscrew*

Déme de beber  
 Cómo lo hálla vm. ?  
 Que le parece á vm. ?  
 Es bueno, no es malo  
 Dé de beber al Señor  
 Acábo de beber  
 No cóme vm.

Tánto he comido, que no tendré ganas á medio día

Se búrta vm. ? náda cási ha comido

Díal. VI. *Antes de la comida.*

Es yá tiempo de comer ?  
 Son cerca de las tres  
 Es hora de comer  
 Se atrasó hoy la comida hasta las cuatro

Quiére vm. hacer hoy penitencia con nosotros ?

Si vm. quiere cenar bien, venga á comer á mi casa

Póngala mesa, el mantel

Tráiga la comida

Ponga los saleros y los platos en la mesa

Láve, limpie los vasos

Póngalos sobre el aparador

Córtelos pedacitos de pan

Póngalos las sillas al rededor de la mesa con sus almohadillas

Quién asiste á la mesa ?

Han venido todos los convidados ó huéspedes ?

Aún no, algunos faltan

Dónde están los cuchillos, tenedores y cucharas ?

Están sobre el aparador

Sólo le he convidado para gozar de su compañía

Hará vm. penitencia

Mánde servir la comida

Give me to drink  
 How do you like it ?  
 What do you think of it ?  
 It is good, it is not bad  
 Give the gentleman drink  
 I have just drank  
 You do not eat

I have eaten so much, that I shall have no appetite at noon

Do you jest ? you have eaten scarcely any thing

Dial. VI. *Before dinner.*

Is it already dinner time ?

It is near three o'clock

It is time to dine

Dinner was delayed to-day till four

Will you make penance with us to-day ?

If you wish to sup heartily, come and dine at my house

Lay the table, the cloth

Bring the dinner

Put the salt-cellars and plates upon the table

Rinse or cleanse the tumblers

Set them upon the side-board

Cut a few slices of bread

Set the chairs round the table with their cushions

Who waits at the table ?

Are all the invited persons or the guests come ?

Not yet, some are wanting

Where are the knives, forks, and spoons ?

They are upon the side-board

I have invited you only to enjoy your company

You will make penance

Call for the dinner

Aún no está pronta	<i>It is not yet ready</i>
Yá está la comida en la mesa	<i>The dinner is already on the table</i>
Sólo aguardan á vm., Señor	<i>Sir, they only wait for you</i>
Tocaron la campana	<i>They rung the bell</i>
Siéntese vm. á la mesa	<i>Sit down to the table</i>
Tóme el primér asiento	<i>Take the first seat</i>
No permitiré que esté sentado allí	<i>I will not suffer you to sit there</i>
Aquí se sentará vm.	<i>You will sit here</i>
En verdad que no lo haré	<i>Indeed I shall not do it</i>
Vamos, degémonos de cumplimientos	<i>Come, let us forbear compliments</i>
Para que tanta ceremonia?	<i>Why so much ceremony?</i>
Mas llanéza se ha de usar entre los amigos	<i>More freedom should be used among friends</i>
Vaya un poco mas atrás, que tengámos lugar	<i>Go a little farther back, that we may have room</i>
Bién cabemos todos	<i>There is room enough for all</i>
Es menester que quepámos	<i>We must all find place</i>
Tenemos mas huéspedes de lo que pensábamos	<i>We have more company than we thought</i>
Fáltan aquí dos cubiertos*	<i>Two covers are wanted here</i>
Muchácho, vé á buscár dos servillétas	<i>Boy, go and fetch two napkins</i>

Díal. VII. *Comiendo.*Dial. VII. *At dinner.*

Le gusta á vm. la sópa á la Francésa?	<i>Do you like French soup?</i>
Sí, cómo el caldo esté bién hécho	<i>Yes, provided the broth is well made</i>
Á mí, déme vm. de nuéstra buena ólla	<i>As for me, give me some of our good ólla†</i>
Venga un poco de pan casero	<i>Bring a little household bread</i>
Tóme vm. pan blanco	<i>Take white bread</i>
Mas quiero éste	<i>I like this better</i>
Éste pan está mohoso	<i>This bread is mouldy</i>
Péro éste es muy sabroso	<i>But this is very sweet</i>
Muchácho, dános pan tierno	<i>Boy, give us new bread</i>

\* *Cubierto* means a plate, napkin, knife, fork and spoon, altogether.† *Ólla*, a Spanish dish made of meat, bacon, Spanish pease, &c.

Ráspa éste pan  
Quiéres vm. la cortéza de en-  
cima ó la de debájo ?  
Gústa vm. de éste cocido ?

Si vm. gústa ó gustáre  
Me serviré á mí mismo  
Dános el pláto gránde  
Ésta cárne es muy sustanciósá  
Sí, lo créo  
No cómo vm., Señor  
Perdóneme vm., que cómo  
tanto cómo dos  
Que buénos principios !  
Por mí, yó alábo éste con-  
vite comiéndo bién  
Péro áun no ha bebído vm.  
Muchácho, da de bebér al  
Señor  
Écha de bebér  
Lléna la cópa  
Señóra, bríndo por la salud  
de vm.

Buén provécho hága á vmd.  
Señor á la salud de sus amí-  
gos

Á todos sus gústos  
Á sus inclinaciones  
Múcho favór me háce vm.  
Cómo hálla vm. ésta cervéza ?  
Es bastánte buéna  
Quiéro probárla  
La hálla muy amárga  
Me quejaré al cervécero  
Quite todo ésto del médio  
Sirvan los segúndos principios  
Es vm. buén bebedór y mal  
comedór

No ve vm. qué cómo y bebo  
bién

Vámos, Señor, cóma vm. de  
lo que gustáre mas  
No téngo apétito

*Rasp this bread  
Do you wish the upper or  
under crust ?  
Will you have some of this  
boiled meat ?*

*If you please  
I will help myself  
Give us the dish  
This meat is very juicy  
Yes, I think so  
Sir, you do not eat  
Excuse me, I eat as much  
as two*

*What a fine first course !  
For my part, I commend this  
entertainment by eating well  
But you have not drank yet  
Boy, give the gentleman some  
drink*

*Pour some drink  
Fill the glass  
Madam, I drink your health*

*Much good may it do you  
Sir, to the health of your  
friends*

*To all your pleasures  
To your inclinations  
You are very kind  
How do you like this beer ?  
It is pretty good  
I wish to taste it*

*I find it very bitter  
I will complain to the brewer  
Take away all these things  
Serve up the second course  
You are a great drinker and  
a small eater*

*Do you not see I eat and  
drink well*

*Come, Sir, eat of what you  
like most  
I have no appetite*

Que le parece de ésta lengua  
de buéy, del picadillo, del  
guisado?

Quiere vm. que le sirva de  
éstas perdices, de ése ca-  
pón, de los pollos, ó galli-  
nétas?

Lo que á vm. le gustare

Que quiere vmd. mas, un alón  
ó una pierna?

Pára mí es todo uno

Cóma vm. algúnos rábanos  
para aguzar el apetito

La hambre es la mejor salsa

Yá he comido demasiado

Dénos mostáza

Á dónde está el mostacéro?

Yá ve vm. que mésa tenemos

No gastámos delicadéza

Ésto no se llama comér

Téngo mucha sed

Déme una cópa de vino

Vámos, Señor, por la salud  
del Presidente

Vívan el Egército y la Armáda!

Viva el Gobernador!

Le corresponderé con mucho  
gusto

Bebámos todos

El vino es muy esquisito

Que le parece ésta empanáda  
de pichónes?

Está muy buena y muy bien  
sazonáda

Sábe vm. trinchar?

Tríncho medianamente

Le serviré á vm.

Conózco lo que le gusta

Acertaré con su gusto

Á todos sirvé vm. y se olvida  
de sí mismo

Quíte ése pláto, venga el otro

*What do you say to this  
neat's tongue; to the min-  
ced meat, to the fricasee?*

*Shall I help you to a piece of  
these partridges, of that  
capon, of the chickens or  
woodcocks?*

*What you please*

*Which do you like best, a  
wing or a leg?*

*It is all one to me*

*Eat some radishes to sharpen  
your appetite*

*Hunger is the best sauce*

*I have eaten too much already*

*Give us some mustard*

*Where is the mustard-pot?*

*You see now what table we keep*

*We use no dainties*

*This is not called eating*

*I am very thirsty*

*Give me a glass of wine*

*Come, Sir, to the health of  
the President*

*Huzza for the Army and Navy!*

*Huzza for the Governour!*

*I will pledge you with a  
great deal of pleasure*

*Let us all drink*

*The wine is very exquisite*

*How do you like this pigeon  
pie?*

*It is very good and very well  
seasoned*

*Can you carve?*

*I carve pretty well*

*I will help you*

*I know what you like*

*I shall hit your taste*

*You help every body and for-  
get yourself*

*Take away that dish, bring  
the other*



Nos da vm. una comida de	<i>You give us a king's feast, in-</i>
Réy, en lugar de un con-	<i>stead of a friendly enter-</i>
vite de amigo	<i>tainment</i>
Pruébe de éstas alcachófas	<i>Try these artichokes</i>
Dáme ése cuchillo	<i>Give me that knife</i>
Ésta carne está fría	<i>This meat is cold</i>
Recalientala en el braséro	<i>Warm it again on the chafing</i>
	<i>dish</i>
Hágame el favor de un poco	<i>Favour me with a piece of</i>
de morcilla	<i>pudding</i>
Ésta carne está crúda	<i>This meat is rare</i>
Córteme vmd. un poco de	<i>Cut me a small piece of beef</i>
vaca	
Quiére vm. carnéro, vaca ó	<i>Will you have mutton, beef or</i>
ternéra ?	<i>veal ?</i>
Lo que gustáre, Señor	<i>What you please, Sir</i>
Asádo ó cocido ?	<i>Roasted or boiled meat ?</i>
Cóma vm. zanahorias, nabos,	<i>Eat some carrots, turnips,</i>
chirivías y bérza ó col	<i>parsnips and cabbage</i>
Tóme vm mostáza	<i>Take some mustard</i>
Le daré brazúelo ó pierna de	<i>Shall I help you to some shoul-</i>
carnéro ?	<i>der or leg of mutton ?</i>
Mas quiéro un poco de lomo	<i>I prefer a piece of the loin of</i>
de ternéra	<i>veal</i>
Váya éste plátó al rededór	<i>Let this dish go round the table</i>
de la mésa	
Yá ve vm., Señor, cómo nos	<i>Sir, you now see how we fare</i>
tratámos	
Éste es el mejor plátó de la	<i>This is the best dish at table</i>
mésa guisádo con mantéca	<i>dressed with lard</i>
Aún no se le ha llegádo	<i>It has not yet been touched</i>
Vóy á probár de él	<i>I am going to taste it</i>
Buén provécho hága á vmd.	<i>Much good may it do you</i>
Le gusta á vmd. la léche co-	<i>Do you like boiled milk, but-</i>
cida, la mantequilla ?	<i>ter ?</i>
Gústó múcho de cuajáda, ná-	<i>I am very fond of curds,</i>
ta y queso frésco	<i>cream and new cheese</i>
Cóma vra. de éste manjár	<i>Eat of this blanc-manger</i>
bláncó	
Váya un poco del estofádo.	<i>Take some of the stewed meat</i>
Las empanádas de carne nú-	<i>Meat pies nourish more than</i>
tren mas que las de man-	<i>apple-pies</i>
zánas	

Que bellos póstres !  
La fruta corresponde á todo  
lo demás

Ha recogido vm. las frutas  
mas esquisitas de la esta-  
ción

Esta pásta ó masa es muy li-  
géra y bien hecha

La torta es muy buena

Dáme cervéza fuerte

Da un plato limpio al Señor

Siénto no tengamos algo me-  
jor

He comido muy bien

Créo que todos han acabádo

Degemos la mesa

Quita la mesa

Demos gracias á Dios

Vámos á dar un paseo en el  
jardín

Vámos en hora buena

Téngo mucho sueño

Soy muy amigo de hacér la  
siesta

Díal. VIII. Para comprar li-  
bros.

Tiene vm. algún libro nuevo ?  
Sí, Señor ; que especie de li-  
bros quiere vm. ?

Le gustan á vm. libros de  
historia, de matemáticas,  
de filosofía, de teología,  
de medicina, de derecho ?

No, Señor, busco libros de  
poesía

Le puedo proveer de ellos  
en todas lenguas

Pues tengo todos los poetas  
Griegos, Latinos, Espa-  
ñoles, Portugueses, Italiá-  
nos, Franceses, é Ingleses

*What a fine dessert !*

*The fruit corresponds with all  
the rest*

*You have collected the most ex-  
quisite fruits of the season*

*This pastry is very light and  
well made*

*The tart is very good*

*Give me some strong beer*

*Give a clean plate to the gen-  
tleman*

*I am sorry we have nothing  
better*

*I have dined very well*

*I think every body has done*

*Let us leave the table*

*Remove the table*

*Let us say grace*

*Let us go and take a turn in  
the garden*

*Let us go with all my heart*

*I am very sleepy*

*I am very fond of taking a  
nap after dinner*

Díal. VIII. To buy books.

*Have you any new book ?*

*Yes, Sir ; what sort of books  
do you wish ?*

*Will you have books of history,  
mathematics, philosophy, di-  
vinity, physic, or law ?*

*No, Sir, I am looking for po-  
etical works*

*I can furnish you with them  
in all languages*

*For I have all the Greek, Lat-  
in, Spanish, Portuguese,  
Italian, French, and English  
poets*

- Muchos tengo yó de éstos *I have many of them*  
 Que poetas necesita vm. pues *What poets do you want then*  
 comprar? *to purchase?*  
 Virgilio en Latín, las comedias *Virgil in Latin, the plays of*  
 de Calderón, y el Teatro *Calderon, and the Theatre*  
 de Feijóo en Español *of Feijóo in Spanish*  
 Tiene vmd. el Paraíso Per- *Have you Milton's Paradise*  
 dido de Miltón, ó las obras *Lost, or the plays of Shak-*  
 dramáticas de Shakspeare *speare in English?*  
 en Inglés?  
 Tengo menester de la Gram- *I have need of Veneroni's Ital-*  
 mática Italiana de Veneróni, *ian Grammar, Bottarelli's*  
 de los Egercicios de *Exercises, and Goldoni's*  
 Bottarélli, y de las Comédias *Comedies*  
 de Goldóni  
 Tiene vmd. la Gramática Es- *Have you the Spanish and En-*  
 pañola é Inglesa de Jossé, *glish Grammar of Josse,*  
 y la de la Academia? *and that of the Academy?*  
 Tiene vmd. la Historia de *Have you the History of Eng-*  
 Inglaterra, de Francia, de *land, France, Spain and*  
 España y de Italia? *Italy?*  
 Todos esos libros tengo *I have all those books*  
 De que tamaño son? *Of what size are they?*  
 Los tengo en Fólío, Cuárto, *I have them in Folio, Quarto,*  
 Octavo y Duodécimo *Octavo and Duodécimo*  
 Hágame vm. el favor de en- *Do me the favour to show them*  
 señármelos *to me*  
 Los quiere vm. encuaderná- *Will you have them bound in*  
 dos en badana, becérro, ó *sheep, calf, or morocco*  
 cordobán? *leather?*  
 Los quiere vm. dorados é in- *Will you have them gilt on*  
 titulados? *the buck and lettered?*  
 No háy necesidad de eso *There is no occasion for that*  
 No los compro para adorno, *I do not buy them for or-*  
 sinó para leerlos *namment, but to read them*  
 Esta encuadernadura no es *This binding is not good*  
 buena  
 No está bien cosido este libro *This book is not well sewed*  
 Ahí tiene vm. otro en su lugar *There is another in its stead*  
 Cuánto pide vm. por este li- *How much do you ask for this*  
 bro? *book?*  
 Le costará á vm. dos pesos *It will cost you two dollars*  
 Esto es demasiado *This is too much*

- Es el precio último *It is the lowest price*  
 Le daré á vm. veinte reales *I will give you twenty rials*  
 Me sale á mas de lo que vmd. *It turns out to me more than*  
 me ofrece por él *you offer me for it*  
 Es muy caro *It is very dear*  
 Le aseguro á vm. que me *I assure you it costs me one*  
 cuesta peso y medio sin la *dollar and-a-half without the*  
 encuadernadura *binding*  
 No querrá vm. que pierda en *You will not wish me to lose*  
 mis libros *by my books*  
 Muy al contrario, quiero que *Quite to the contrary, I wish*  
 gane algo *you to gain something*  
 Es preciso pues que me dé *You must then give me four-*  
 veinte y cuatro reales *and-twenty rials*  
 Ahí los tiene vm., no reparo *There you have them, I do not*  
 en una cortedad *mind a trifle*  
 No necesita vm. otros libros? *Do you not want other books?*  
 Por ahora no *Not at present*  
 Pero he menester de papel, *But I have occasion for paper,*  
 plumas, tinta, arenilla, lácre, *pens, ink, sand, sealing-wax*  
 y oblas *and wafers*  
 No vendo nada de eso *I sell nothing of that*  
 Pero lo hallará vm. todo en *But you will find it all at the*  
 la tienda próxima que es *next shop which is a Sta-*  
 de un Papelero *tioner's*  
 Á Dios, Señor *Farewell, Sir*  
 Muy humilde servidór de vm., *Sir, your most humble servant*  
 caballero  
 Hágame vm. el favor de acor- *Do me the favour to remember*  
 darse de mí para otra vez *me again*  
 Siempre experimentará muy *You will always experience*  
 buen trato *good treatment*  
 Lo espero *I hope so*
- Dial. IX. *Del alquilar un* *Dial. IX. Of hiring a lodg-*  
*alajamiento.* *ing.*
- Señor, quiere vm. hacerme *Sir, will you do me a favour?*  
 un favor?  
 De muy buena gana, que me *Very willingly, what do you*  
 manda vm.?  
 Que venga vmd. conmigo, pá- *That you would come with me*  
 ra alquilar un alajamiento *to hire a lodging*

Le acompañaré adónde quisiere	<i>I shall wait on you wherever you please</i>
Vámos á la calle de Santiago	<i>Let us go into St. James' street</i>
Le voy siguiendo	<i>I follow you</i>
Aquí háy una cédula á esta puérta que dice cuartos de alquilár	<i>Here is a bill at this door which says rooms to let</i>
Lláme vm. á la puérta	<i>Knock at the door</i>
Quién es ?	<i>Who is there ?</i>
Gente de paz	<i>A friend, peaceable people</i>
Con quién quiere vm. hablar ?	<i>Whom do you wish to speak with ?</i>
Con el amo ó áma de casa	<i>With the master or mistress of the house</i>
Aquí está mi Señora	<i>Here is my Lady</i>
Señora tiene vm. cuartos de alquilár ?	<i>Madam, have you any rooms to let ?</i>
Sí, Señor, quiere vm. vérlos ?	<i>Yes, Sir, do you wish to see them ?</i>
Víne con ésa intención	<i>I came for that purpose</i>
Cuántos aposentos necesita vm. ?	<i>How many apartments do you want ?</i>
Quiero un comedór ó sala, una alcóba, un gabinete para mí, y un desván para mi criádo	<i>I want a dining-room or parlour, a bed-chamber, a closet for myself, and a garret for my man-servant</i>
Han de ser sus cuartos alhajados ó no ?	<i>Must your rooms be furnished or not ?</i>
Han de ser alhajados	<i>They must be furnished</i>
Hágame el favor de esperar un rato en ésta sala baja, mientras voy por las llaves	<i>Be so kind as to wait a moment in this lower parlour, while I go for the keys</i>
Muy bien, Señora, aguardaré	<i>Very well, Madam, I'll wait</i>
Quiere vm. tomarse el trabajo de subir ?	<i>Will you take the trouble to go up ?</i>
Seguiremos á vm., Señora	<i>We will follow you, Madam</i>
Ésta es la vivienda del primer álto	<i>This is the apartment on the first floor</i>
Ahí tiene vm. una cama muy buena y limpia	<i>There you have a very good and clean bed</i>
Bién ve vm. que háy todo lo preciso en un cuarto alhajado	<i>You see that there is every thing necessary in a furnished room</i>

Cómo mesa, espejo, sillas, alfombras, alacénas, escapárates, &c.

Péro adónde está el gabinete?  
Aquí está, y es bastante capaz  
Me cuádra muy bien éste alojamiento

Me alégro mucho

Cuánto pide vm. por semana?

Nunca alquilo mis cuartos  
sinó por mes ó por año

Bién, los tomaré por mes;  
cuánto es el precio de ellos?

Jamás tuve menos de diez  
guineas al mes por éstos  
dos cuartos

Son demasiado caros

Ha de considerár vm. que  
éste es el mas hermoso barrio  
de la ciudad

Y que está vm. á un paso de  
la corte

Pára que véa vm. que no sóy  
amigo de regatear, le daré  
ócho guineas por ellos

Es demasiado poco, no sabe  
vm. la renta que pago por  
ésta casa

Nada me importa saberlo

Péro en una palabra, partiremos  
la diferencia

Yó le aseguro que pierdo

Péro siento que vm. se váya

Y por el desván de mi criado,  
cuánto he de pagar por  
mes?

Me dará vm. dos guineas

No dará mas de guinea y  
media

*As table, looking-glass, chairs, carpets, closets, presses, &c.*

*But where is the closet?*

*Here it is, and is large enough*

*These apartments suit me very well*

*I am very glad of it*

*How much do you ask a week?*

*I never let my apartments but by the month or year*

*Well, I shall take them by the month; what is the price of them?*

*I never had less than ten guineas a month for these two rooms*

*They are too dear*

*You ought to consider that this is the finest ward of the city*

*And that you are within a step of the court*

*That you may see that I do not like haggling, I will give you eight guineas for them*

*It is too little, you do not know the rent I pay for this house*

*It is no concern of mine to know it*

*But in a word, we will divide the difference*

*I assure you that I lose*

*But I am sorry to have you go away*

*And for my man's garret, how much must I pay a month?*

*You will give me two guineas; I shall give only one guinea and a half*

No es bastante, pero le haré  
por vm., sea así  
No vale la pena de pararse  
en semejante cortedad

Pero dígame vm., no puedo  
yo comer aquí con vm.?

Sí, Señor, bien puede vm.

Cuánto toma por semana de  
cada huésped?

A razón de ocho guineas al  
mes

Y cuánto toma vm. por cuar-  
to y comida juntos?

Cinco libras por semana

Pues, empezaré mañana

Cuándo gustare

Buenas noches, Señora

Buenas se las dé Dios, Señor

Díal. X. *Del informarse de  
alguno.*

Quién es ese caballero?

Es un Inglés

Le tuve por un Francés

Se ha engañado vm. pues

Sábe vm. dónde vive?

Vive en el barrio de la corte

Tiene casa?

No, Señor, vive en cuartos  
alhajados

En casa de quién alója?

Vive en casa de fulano, en la  
calle de —

Que edad tiene?

Creo que tiene veinte y cinco  
años de edad

No me parece tan viejo

No puede ser mas mozo

Es casado?

No, Señor, es soltero

Están sus padres vivos?

*It is not enough, but I will  
do it for you, let it be so*

*It is not worth while to dwell  
on so small a matter*

*But tell me, may I not board  
here with you?*

*Yes, Sir, you may*

*How much do you take from  
each boarder a-week?*

*At the rate of eight guineas  
a month*

*And how much do you take for  
board and lodging together?*

*Five pounds a-week*

*Well, I shall begin to-morrow*

*When you please*

*Good night, Madam*

*Sir, I wish you the same*

Díal. X. *Of inquiring after  
one.*

*Who is that gentleman?*

*He is an Englishman*

*I took him for a Frenchman*

*Then you have mistaken*

*Do you know where he lives?*

*He lives in the ward of the  
court*

*Does he keep house?*

*No, Sir, he lives in furnished  
lodgings*

*At whose house does he lodge?*

*He lives at Mr. such a one,  
in the street of —*

*How old is he?*

*I believe he is five and twen-  
ty years of age*

*He does not appear to me so  
old*

*He cannot be younger*

*Is he married?*

*No, Sir, he is a bachelor*

*Are his parents living?*

Su madre aún vive, pero su  
padre murió dos años ha  
¿Tiene hermanos y hermanas?

*His mother is still alive, but  
his father died two years ago  
Has he any brothers and sis-  
ters?*

Dos hermanos y una herma-  
na tiene

*He has two brothers and a  
sister*

¿Está su hermana casada?

*Is his sister married?*

Sí, Señor

*Yes, Sir*

Con quién?

*To whom?*

Con el Conde de —

*To the Earl of —*

¿Era pues partido rico

*She was a rich match then*

Tuvo sesenta mil pesos de  
dote

*She had sixty thousand dol-  
lars for her portion*

¿Es hermosa?

*Is she handsome?*

No es fea

*She is not ugly*

Es bastante bonita

*She is pretty enough*

Está algo picada de viruelas

*She is a little pitted with the  
small pox*

¿Pero tiene mucho entendimi-  
ento

*But she has a great deal of  
understanding*

Es muy ingeniosa

*She is very ingenious*

Hábla este caballero la len-  
gua Española?

*Does this gentleman speak  
the Spanish language?*

Aunque es Inglés, habla tan  
bien Español, que los Es-  
pañoles le creen Español

*Although he is an English-  
man, he speaks Spanish so  
well, that the Spaniards  
think him a Spaniard*

Hábla Italiano cómo los Ita-  
lianos mismos

*He speaks Italian like the  
Italians themselves*

Entre los Alemanes pásala por  
Alemán

*He passes for a German  
among the Germans*

¿Cómo puede saber tantas len-  
guas diferentes?

*How can he know so many  
different languages?*

Goza de una memoria feliz y  
ha viajado mucho

*He enjoys a happy memory  
and has travelled a great  
deal*

Ha estado dos años en París,  
seis meses en Madrid, año  
y medio en Italia, y un año  
en Alemania

*He has been two years at  
Paris, six months at Mad-  
rid, a year and a half in  
Italy, and a year in Ger-  
many*

Ha visto todas las cortes prin-  
cipales de la Europa

*He has seen all the principal  
courts of Europe*



Cuánto tiempo ha que le conoce vm. ?	<i>How long is it since you know him</i>
Al rededor de tres años ha que tengo el honor de conocerle	<i>It is about three years since I have the honour of being acquainted with him</i>
Dónde hizo vm. conocimiento con él ?	<i>Where did you make acquaintance with him ?</i>
En Róma le conocí	<i>I got acquainted with him at Rome</i>
Es de bella estatura	<i>He is of a fine stature</i>
Ni demasiado alto, ni demasiado chico	<i>He is neither too tall, nor too short</i>
Se puede decir que es hombre garboso	<i>One may say he is an elegant man</i>
Siempre anda muy aseado y bien compuesto	<i>He is always very neat and very fine</i>
Se viste muy bien	<i>He dresses very well</i>
Es bien parecido, tiene buen aire	<i>He is very genteel, he has a good air</i>
Tiene bella presencia, y el aspecto noble	<i>He has a fine presence, and a noble look</i>
Nada disgusta en sus modos,	<i>Nothing is disagreeable in his manners</i>
Es cortés, afable, urbano con cualquiera	<i>He is civil, courteous, complaisant to every body</i>
Tiene mucho entendimiento, y es muy festivo en conversacion	<i>He is very sensible, and is very sprightly in conversation</i>
Danza bellamente, esgrime y monta muy bien	<i>He dances beautifully, fences and rides very well</i>
Toca la flauta, el clave, la guitarra, el piano y otros muchos instrumentos	<i>He plays upon the flute, the harpsichord, the guitar, the piano and many other instruments</i>
En una palabra, es un caballero cumplido y perfecto	<i>In a word, he is an accomplished and perfect gentleman</i>
Por el retrato que vm. hace de él, me da gana de conocerle	<i>By the picture you make of him, you give me a desire to know him</i>
Le procuraré su conocimiento	<i>I will procure you his acquaintance</i>

Se lo agradeceré á vm. mucho	<i>I shall be much obliged to you for it</i>
Cuándo quiere vm. que váyamos á visitarle juntos ?	<i>When will you have us go and wait upon him together ?</i>
Cuándo á vm. le gustare	<i>When you please</i>
Á que hora se puede verle en su casa ?	<i>At what o'clock may one see him at home ?</i>
Á cualquiera hora puedo verle, pues es muy amigo mío	<i>I can see him at any time, for he is a great friend of mine</i>
Vámos pues á verle mañana por la mañana	<i>Let us go then and see him to-morrow morning</i>
Séa en hora buena	<i>I will ; well and good</i>
De todo mi corazón	<i>With all my heart</i>
Cuándo le conviniere	<i>When it suits you</i>
Á Dios, Caballero	<i>Farewell, Sir</i>
Servidór de vm.	<i>Your servant</i>
Soy muy suyo	<i>I am truly yours</i>
Ténga vm. buenas noches	<i>I wish you a good night</i>
Muy buenas se las dé Dios	<i>I wish you the same</i>

Dial. XI. *Del parttr.*Dial. XI. *Of departing.*

Señor, vengo á despedirme de vm.	<i>Sir, I come to take leave of you</i>
Porqué quiere vm. irse ?	<i>Why will you go away ?</i>
Se acerca la hora de comer	<i>Dinner time draws near</i>
No puede vm. comer con nosotros ?	<i>Can't you dine with us ?</i>
Se lo estimo mucho, no me es posible hoy	<i>I thank you for it, it is not in my power to-day</i>
Porqué ? que negocios tiene vm. ?	<i>Why ? what business have you ?</i>
No tengo mucho que hacer, pero he de ir á comer á casa	<i>I have not much to do, but I must go and dine at home</i>
Ha convidado vm. á alguno á comer á su casa ?	<i>Have you invited any body to dine at your house ?</i>
No, pero he prometido á un caballero Inglés, que no sabe el Español, de ir con él á comprar algunas menudencias	<i>No, but I have promised an English gentleman, who does not know Spanish, to go with him to buy some trifles</i>
Á que hora le espera vm. ?	<i>At what hour do you expect him ?</i>

Le aguardo á las dos  
Está vm. seguro de que venga?  
No lo sé de cierto; pero ha-  
biéndoselo prometido, es  
preciso que esté en casa

Tiene vm. razón  
No le quiero pués detener  
Vaya vm. con Dios, servidór  
suyo

Quéde vm. con Dios  
Muchácho, ábre la puerta al  
Señor

Muy bien la abriré yó  
Pero no tiene vm. la lláve  
Que! écha vm. la lláve á la  
puérta?

Así lo acostubrámós  
Suplicole me ponga á los piés  
de mi Señora su hermana  
No faltaré á éllo, Señor  
Cuándo nos volverémós á  
ver?

Mañana, si Dios quiere  
Vendré á visitárle  
Hágame éste favór

*I expect him at two o'clock  
Are you sure he will come?  
I do not know it for certain;  
but having promised it to  
him, it is necessary I should  
be at home*

*You are in the right  
I will not detain you then  
Farewell, go with God, your  
servant*

*Good bye, remain with God  
Boy, open the door for the  
gentleman*

*I will open it myself  
But you have not the key  
How! do you lock your  
door?*

*So is our custom  
I beg you would present my  
best respects to your sister  
Sir, I will not fail to do it  
When shall we see one ano-  
ther again?*

*To-morrow, if it please God  
I will come to visit you  
Do me this favour*

#### Díal. XII. De noticias.

Que se dice de bueno?  
Que noticias tenemos?  
No sé ninguna  
Que se dice de nuevo?  
Sábe vm. alguna novedad?  
Que noticias corren?  
No háy ninguna  
No he sabido náda de nuevo  
Ha leído vmd. los papéles?  
He visto el Patrióta, la Cró-  
nica, el Diáriq Avisadór

Que se dice en la ciudad?  
No se habla de náda

#### Dial. XI. Of news.

*What is said good?  
What news have we?  
I know none  
What do people say, new?  
Do you know any news?  
What news are spread?  
There is none  
I have heard nothing new  
Have you read the papers?  
I have seen the Patriot, the  
Chronicle, the Daily Ad-  
vertiser  
What do they say in the city?  
They talk of nothing*

He oído decir, he sabido que  
Ésta es buena noticia  
No ha oído vm. hablar de la  
guerra?

No se dice nada de ella  
Se habla de un sitio  
Se dice que — está sitiada  
Se ha levantado el sitio  
Pero han vuelto á ponerle  
Ha habido algún combate na-  
val?  
Se decía, pero salió falso

Al contrario, hablan de una  
batalla  
Ésta novedad requiere confir-  
mación  
Quién se la comunicó?  
De buena parte me viene

El Señor N . . . me la dijo  
Cree vm. que tengamos pa-  
ces?  
Hay mucha apariéncia  
Para conmigo, creo que no  
En que se funda vm.?

En que veo que los ánimos  
de entrambas partes están  
muy poco inclinados á la paz  
Sin embargo, todos necesitan  
de la paz  
Sobre todo los comerciantes  
y mercaderes  
La guerra hace mucho daño  
al comercio  
Sin duda, la paz es mas ven-  
tajosa al comercio

Que se dice en la corte?  
Se habla de armar una flota  
de veinte buques de guerra  
Hablan de una expedición

*I heard, I have known that  
This is a good piece of news  
Have you not heard speak of  
the war?*

*Nothing is said of it  
They talk of a siege  
They say that — is besieged  
They have raised the siege  
But they have laid it again  
Has there been any sea-  
fight?*

*They said so, but it proved  
false  
On the contrary, they talk of  
a battle  
This news requires confirma-  
tion*

*Who communicated it to you?  
It comes to me from good au-  
thority*

*Mr. N . . . told it me  
Do you think we shall have  
a peace?*

*There is a great probability  
For my part, I believe not  
What do you ground your-  
self upon*

*Because I see the minds of  
both parties are very little  
inclined to peace*

*Every body wants peace,  
however  
Especially merchants and  
traders*

*War does a great injury to  
trade*

*Without question, peace is  
more advantageous to com-  
merce*

*What do they say at court?  
They talk of fitting out a  
fleet of twenty men of war  
They talk of an expedition*

Cuándo se cree que la escuá-  
dra saldrá ?

No se dice, no se sabe

Adónde irá la Princesa ?

Únos dicen á Windsór, ótros  
á Kew

Que dice la Gaceta ?

No la he leído

Hablándole sinceraménte, los  
desígnios de la córte son  
tan secrétos que nádie  
puéde saberlos

Póco se me da de los negó-  
cios de estádo

No me méto jamás en arre-  
glár el estádo

Hablémos de noticias parti-  
culáres

Cómo está el Señor D . . . . ?

Cuándo le ha visto vm. ?

Ayer le ví

Es verdád lo que dicen de él ?

Que se dice de él ?

Dicen que riñó al juégo

Con quién ?

Con un caballéro Francés

Han peleádo ?

Sí, Señor, peleáron

Está herido ?

Dicen que salió herido mor-  
talménte

Lo siénto, es hombre de bien

Sóbre que riñéron ?

Lo ignóro enteraménte

Se dice que le desmintió

No lo puédo créer

Ni yó tampóco

Séa lo que fuére, pronto se  
sabrá

En su casa lo preguntaré

*When do they think the fleet  
will sail ?*

*It is not said, it is not known*

*Where will the Princess go ?*

*Some say to Windsor, others  
to Kew*

*What says the Gazette ?*

*I have not read it*

*To speak freely, the designs  
of the court are so se-  
cret, that nobody can know  
them*

*I care little about state af-  
fairs*

*I never meddle with settling  
the nation*

*Let us talk of private intel-  
ligence*

*How is Mr. D . . . . ?*

*When have you seen him ?*

*I saw him yesterday*

*Is what is said of him true ?*

*What do they say of him*

*They say that he quarrelled  
at the game*

*With whom*

*With a French gentleman*

*Have they fought ?*

*Yes, Sir, they fought*

*Is he wounded ?*

*They say he came out mor-  
tally wounded*

*I regret it, he is an honest  
man*

*About what did they quarrel ?*

*I am quite ignorant of it*

*They say he gave him the lie*

*I cannot believe it*

*Nor I neither*

*Be what it may, it will soon  
be known*

*I will inquire about it at his  
house*

Díal. XIII. *Entre dos amigos.*

Que! es vm.?  
De dónde viene que no me  
míra vmd.?  
Ciérto que no reparába en  
vm.

No le veía  
Pása vm. cerca de mí, me  
tóca con el códo, y no me  
ve?

Íba caviládo en algo

Pensába vm. quizás en su  
querida  
Ótros negocios téngo en mi  
cabéza

Que negocios?

Hallándome escáso de diné-  
ro, vóy á ver á un sugéto  
que me debe

É íba pensádo sóbre si le  
mandaría arrestár en cáso  
de no pagárme

Vive léjos de aquí?

Á cuátro páso de aquí

Está vm. ciérto de hallárle  
en cása?

Creo que le hallaré á éstas  
hóras

Se estará vm. múcho tiémpo?

No un cuárto de hóra

Despáche vm. pués, que le  
vóy á esperar en éste café

Estaré con vm. luégo

Yá de vuélta?

Cómo lo ve vm.

Le halló vm.?

Sí, Señor

Le pagó á vm.?

Dial. XIII. *Between two friends.*

What! is it you?

How comes it that you do  
not look at me?

Indeed I did not take notice  
of you

I did not see you

You pass close by me, touch  
me with your elbow, and  
do not see me?

I was cogitating about some-  
thing

Perhaps you were thinking  
of your love

I have other business in my  
head

What business?

Being in want of money, I  
am going to see a person  
who owes me

And I was thinking whether  
I should cause him to be  
arrested in case he does  
not pay me

Does he live far from here?

Four steps from here

Are you sure to find him at  
home?

I believe I shall find him at  
this time

Shall you stay long?

Not a quarter of an hour

Make haste then, I go and  
wait for you in this coffee-  
house

I shall be with you presently

Back already?

As you see

Did you find him?

Yes, Sir

Did he pay you?

Gracias á Dios  
Lo celebro mucho  
Péro si no le hubiéra pagádo,  
yó le hubiéra prestádo di-  
néro  
No le hubiéra faltádo dinéro

Mi bólsa estába á su servicio  
Se lo estímo mucho  
Nos quedámos aquí ?  
No, vámos á bebér úna bo-  
télla, pára pasár média hó-  
ra juntos

En hóra buéna, péro quiéro  
regalárle y pagárle yó  
Cuándo se háya bebído ha-  
blarémos de éso

Vámonos  
Le vóy siguiéndo

Díal. XIV. *Del escribír úna  
cárta.*

No es hóy día de corréo ?  
Porqué ?  
Porqué he de escribír úna  
cárta

Á quién escribíe vm. ?

Á mi hermano

No está en la ciudad ?

No, Señor, está en el cámpo

En que cámpo ?

En las águas de Tnnbridge

Cuánto tiémpo háce ?

Quince días

Déme vmd. úna hója de papél

dorádo, úna plúma y tinta

Éntre vm. en mi gabinéte, y  
hallará sóbre la mésa recá-  
do de escribíe

No háy plúmas

Ahí están en el tintéro

Náda válen

*Thank God  
I am very glad of it  
But if he had not paid you,  
I would have lent you  
money  
You should not have wanted  
money*

*My purse was at your service  
I am much obliged to you  
Shall we stay here ?  
No, let us go and drink a  
bottle, to pass half an hour  
together*

*With all my heart, but I will  
treat you and pay for it  
We will talk of it when we  
have drank it  
Let us go away  
I am following you*

Dial. XIV. *Of writing a  
letter.*

*Is not this a post-day ?  
Why ?  
Because I have a letter to  
write*

*Whom do you write to ?*

*To my brother*

*Is he not in town ?*

*No, Sir, he is in the country*

*In what part of the country ?*

*He is at Tunbridge-wells*

*How long since ?*

*A fortnight*

*Give me a sheet of gilt pa-  
per, a pen and ink*

*Step in my closet, and you  
will find upon the table  
what is necessary to write*

*There are no pens*

*There they are in the ink-  
stand*

*They are good for nothing*

Allí háy ótras	<i>There are some others</i>
No están cortádas éstas plú- mas	<i>These pens are not made</i>
Adónde está su corta-plúmas?	<i>Where is your pen-knife?</i>
Sábe vm. cortár plúmas?	<i>Can you make pens?</i>
Las corto á mi módo	<i>I make them after my fashion</i>
Ésta no es mála	<i>This is not bad</i>
Es bastanteménte buena	<i>It is good enough</i>
Miéntas acábo ésta cártá, há- game vmd. el favór de hacér un pliégó de éstos papéles	<i>While I finish this letter, be so kind as to make a pack- et of these papers</i>
Que séllo quiére vm. que le póngá?	<i>What seal will you have me put to it?</i>
Séllela vm. con mis ármás ó con mi cífra	<i>Seal it with my coat of arms or with my cypher</i>
Que lácre le he de ponér?	<i>What wax shall I put to it?</i>
Póngá vm. rójo ó négro, no impórta	<i>Put either red or black, no matter</i>
No bastarán obléas?	<i>Will not wafers suffice?</i>
Es lo mismo	<i>It is all one</i>
Ha puéstó vm. la fécha?	<i>Have you put the date?</i>
Créo que sí, péro no he fir- mádo	<i>I believe I have, but I have not signed it</i>
Que día del mes tenémós?	<i>What day of the month is this?</i>
El diéz, el véinte, &c.	<i>The tenth, the twentieth, &amp;c.</i>
Pliégue vm. ésta cártá	<i>Fold up this letter</i>
Póngale el sobrescritó	<i>Put the superscription to it</i>
Ciérrela vm. y séllela	<i>Close it and seal it</i>
Adónde está la arenílla?	<i>Where is the sand?</i>
En la salvadéra	<i>In the sand-box?</i>
Deséque su escritúra con te- léta	<i>Dry your writing with blot- ting-paper</i>
Cómo envía vm. sus cártas?	<i>How do you send your letters?</i>
Las remíto por el harriéro, ó por el corréo	<i>I send them by the waggoner, or by the mail</i>
Mí criádo las llevará al co- rréo, si vm. gustáre confi- árselas	<i>My man shall carry them to the post office if you will trust them to him</i>
Lléva las cártas del señór al corréo, y no te se olvide el franqueárlas	<i>Carry the gentleman's letters to the post-office, and do not forget to free them</i>
No téngo dinéro	<i>I have no money</i>



Ahí lo tienes, vé presto y  
vuélve luégo  
Estaré de vuelta en ménos de  
medio cuarto de hora -  
Ha llegado el correo ?  
Ahóra acába de llegar  
Hay cartas para mí ?  
Creo que sí  
Porqué no las has traído ?  
Aún no se entregaban

*There is some, go quick and  
come back immediately  
I will be back in less than  
half a quarter of an hour  
Has the mail come ?  
It is just arrived this minute  
Are there letters for me ?  
I believe so  
Why did you not bring them ?  
They were not delivered yet*

## Díal. XV. Del trocar.

Quiére vm. trocar su relój ?  
Con que ?  
Con mi espáda ó espadín  
En hora buena, pero cuánto  
me dará vm. de vuelta ?

Cuánto me pide vm. ?  
Me dará vm. doce pesos

En cuánto aprécia vm. su re-  
lój ?

En treinta y seis pesos

No vale tanto

Es viejo

Lo confieso, pero anda bien

No le volveré yo nada

Mi espáda vale tanto como  
su relój

Ciertamente se burla vm.

No, Señor

Que espáda es ésta ?

Acábo de comprarla en la  
espadería

Es la guarnición de cobre  
dorado ?

Bélla pregunta ! no ve vm que  
es de plata sobredorada ?

Es el puño de plata ?

Sin duda que lo es

## Dial. XV. Of exchanging.

*Will you barter your watch ?  
For what ?*

*For my sword or small sword  
With all my heart, but how  
much will you give me in  
return*

*How much do you ask me ?  
You will give me twelve dol-  
lars*

*What do you value your  
watch at ?*

*At thirty-six dollars*

*It is not worth so much*

*It is old*

*I own it, but it goes well*

*I will return you nothing*

*My sword is worth as much  
as your watch*

*You joke surely*

*No, Sir*

*What sword is this ?*

*I have just bought it at the  
sword cutler's*

*Is the hilt of gilt copper ?*

*A fine question ! do not you  
see it is silver gilt ?*

*Is the hilt of silver ?*

*Without doubt it is so*

- Cuánto le costó á vm. éste  
espadín ? *How much did this small  
sword cost you ?*  
Á cómo le sale ? *What does it come to you at ?*  
Me cuesta treinta pesos *It costs me thirty dollars*  
Me ha de dar vm. pués séis  
pesos de vuélta *You must give me six dollars  
to boot then*  
No lo haré por cierto *I will not do it certainly*  
Bién, dégese de éllo *Well, leave it off*  
Véa vm. si quiere trocar  
iguál ? *See whether you will change  
even*  
Buena está ésta ! *This is a good one !*  
No es tan fácil engañárme có-  
mo le parece *It is not so easy to take me  
in as you think*  
Pués, váya sin náda de vuélta *Well, let us change even*  
Hécho, en hora buena *Done, with all my heart*  
Díal. XVI. De los juégos en  
general ; y priméro de él  
de los dados. *Dial. XVI. Of gaming in  
general ; and first of that  
of dice.*  
Juéga vm. algúnas véces ? *Do you play sometimes ?*  
Sí, Señor, però jamás juégo  
sinó pára divertírme *Yes, Sir, but I never play  
only to divert myself*  
Mas, me parece, que el juégo  
es úna diversion muy peli-  
grósa *But, methinks, gaming is a  
very dangerous diversion*  
Sí, cuándo se juéga múcho  
dinéro *Yes, when one plays deep,  
high, or for much money*  
Péro siémpre juégo póco di-  
néro *But I always play for a small  
matter or little money*  
Con que la pérdida ó ganán-  
cia es úna cortedad *And so the loss or gain is a  
trifle, inconsiderable*  
Juéga vm. á los juégos de  
suérte, ó de habilidad ? *Do you play at games of  
chance, or of skill ?*  
Que entiénde vm. por juégos  
de suérte ? *What do you mean by games  
of chance ?*  
Juégos de náipes, dados, &c.  
Y por los de habilidad ? *Games at cards, dice, &c.  
And by those of skill ?*  
El agédrez, las damas, los  
bolos, el trúco, &c. *Chess, draughts, bowls, bil-  
liards, &c.*  
Juéga vm. múcho á los dá-  
dos ? *Do you play a great deal at  
dice ?*  
Muy rára vez *Very seldom*  
Porqué ? *Why ?*

Porqué háy muchos trampó- sos muy astutos	<i>Because there are many very dexterous sharpers</i>
Se corre mucho riesgo con esos ratéros, pues parecen hombres de forma	<i>One runs a great danger with those cheats, because they appear like gentlemen</i>
Tienen dados falsos	<i>They have loaded dice</i>
Váya, á que juego jugaré- mos ?	<i>Well, what game shall we play at ?</i>
Á él que vm. quisiere	<i>Which you please</i>
Jugarémos á los naipes ?	<i>Shall we play at cards ?</i>
Cómo le gustare	<i>As you please</i>
Juguémos al hombre, á los cientos	<i>Let us play at ombre, at piquet</i>
Váyan los cientos	<i>Let us play at piquet</i>
Es un juego muy de moda	<i>It is a game much in fashion</i>
Démos dos barájas y unos tántos	<i>Give us two packs and some counters</i>
Que jugarémos á cada juego ?	<i>What shall we play each game ?</i>
Juguémos un peso para pasar el tiempo	<i>Let us play a dollar to pass away time</i>
Jugámos partida doble ?	<i>Do we play lurches ?</i>
Cómo quisiere	<i>As you please</i>
Cuántos tantos me da vm. ?	<i>What odds do you give me ?</i>
Me pide vm. tantos y juega también cómo yo	<i>You ask me odds and you play as well as I</i>
Está cabal ésta baraja ?	<i>Is this pack whole ?</i>
No, le falta un naipe	<i>No, a card is wanting in it</i>
Quíte vmd. los naipes bajos	<i>Throw out the low cards</i>
Veámos quién da	<i>Let us see who deals</i>
Sóy mano	<i>I have the hand</i>
Vm. da el naipe	<i>You deal the cards</i>
Baráje vm. las cartas	<i>Shuffle the cards</i>
Tódas las figuras están juntas	<i>All the court-cards are to- gether</i>
Dé vm. los naipes	<i>Deal the cards</i>
Á mí me falta una carta	<i>I want a card</i>
Vuelva vm. á dar	<i>Deal again</i>
Levante vm.	<i>Cut, rise</i>
Tiene vm. sus cartas ?	<i>Have you your cards ?</i>
Creo que están cabales	<i>I believe they are complete</i>
Ha descartado vm. ?	<i>Have you discarded ?</i>
Cuántas toma vm. ?	<i>How many do you take in ?</i>

Tómolas todas	<i>I take them all</i>
No, déjola una	<i>No, I leave one</i>
Téngo mal juégo	<i>I have bad cards, a bad game</i>
Ha de tenér vm. bello juégo, pués yó náda téngo	<i>You must have a fine game, since I have nothing</i>
Mi juégo me apúra	<i>My cards puzzle me</i>
Diga vm. su juégo	<i>Call your game</i>
Cuánto de púnto ?	<i>How much is your point ?</i>
Ciucuenta, sesenta, &c.	<i>Fifty, sixty, &amp;c.</i>
Buén, buen púnto	<i>Good, it is a good point</i>
No sírvén	<i>They are not good, avail not</i>
He descartádo la partida	<i>I have laid out the game</i>
Sésta mayor, quinta al Réy, ó cuárta de cabálla, tercéra á la sóta ó de diéz	<i>A sixieme major, a quint to the king, or quart to the queen, a tierce to the knave or ten</i>
Ótro tánto téngo, igual	<i>I have just as much, it is equal</i>
Tres áses, tres réyes, &c. son buénos ?	<i>Are three aces, three kings, &amp;c. good ?</i>
No, téngo un catórce	<i>No, I have fourteen</i>
Téngo catórce de cabállos	<i>I am fourteen by queens</i>
Váya jugándo	<i>Play on</i>
Juégo cópa, espáda, óro, básto	<i>I play a heart, spade, dia- mond, club</i>
El as, el réy, el cabálla, la sóta, el diéz, el nuéve, el ócho, el siéte	<i>The ace, the king, the queen, the knave, the ten, the nine, the eight, the seven</i>
Hágo un píque, repíque, ca- póte	<i>I make a pique, a repique, a capot</i>
Gáno los náipes	<i>I win the cards</i>
Téngo siéte bázas	<i>I have seven tricks</i>
He perdído	<i>I have lost</i>
Ha ganádo vm.	<i>You have won</i>
Me débe vm. un péso	<i>You owe me a dollar</i>
Me lo debía vm.	<i>You owed it to me</i>
Estámos pués en paz	<i>We are then even, quits</i>
Váya ótra partida	<i>Let us play another game</i>
En hóra buéna, con múcho gústo	<i>With all my heart, with great pleasure</i>
Dial. XVII. Del jugar al agédrez.	<i>Dial. XVII. Of playing at chess.</i>
En que emplearémos la tár- de ?	<i>How shall we spend the af- ternoon ?</i>

Juguémos al agédren  
 Juguémos, en hora buena  
 Però juéga vm. mejor que yó  
 Es vm. mas fuerte que yó  
 No lo créa vm.  
 Me ha ganádo vm. siémpre  
 No jugaré mas con vm., si no  
 me diere alguna ventaja  
 Es preciso que me dé un alfil  
 y la mano  
 En verdád que no puédo, ju-  
 éga vm. tan bién cómo yó  
 Véa vm. si quiere jugar á la  
 par  
 Muy bién, lo haré una vez  
 Cuánto jugarémos ?  
 Siémpre juégo poco dinero  
 Vaya médio peso cáda juégo  
 Juégo priméro  
 Tómo éste peón  
 Me alégro, pués vóy á tomár  
 éste alfil y dárle jáque  
 Róque me llámo  
 Náda gána vm. en éso ; pués  
 á su róque ó torre me llévo  
 con mi cabállo  
 Però cómo resguardará vm.  
 á su réina ?  
 Dándole jáque y máte con mi  
 alfil y mi róque  
 He perdido el juégo, yá no  
 puédo movér el réy  
 Me débe vm. pués médio peso  
 Así es  
 Però vm. me lo debía ántes  
 Bién, estamos en paz  
 Dénos vm. un tabléro  
 Juégue vm. priméro  
 Sóplo éste peón  
 Hága dáma éste peón

*Let us play at chess  
 Let us play, I am willing  
 But you play better than I  
 You are an over-match for me  
 Do not think it  
 You always have beat me  
 I will play no more with you  
 unless you give me some odds  
 You must give me a bishop  
 and the move  
 Indeed I cannot, you play as  
 well as I do  
 See if you have a mind to  
 play even  
 Well, I will do it for once  
 What shall we play for ?  
 I always play for a small  
 matter  
 Let us play for half a dollar  
 a game  
 I have the move, I play first  
 I take this pawn  
 I am glad of it, for I am going  
 to take this bishop and  
 check you, give you check  
 I castle, I call myself rook  
 You get nothing by that ; for  
 I take your rook or castle  
 with my knight  
 But how will you save your  
 queen ?  
 By checkmating you with my  
 bishop and rook  
 I have lost the game, I can  
 no longer move the king  
 You owe me half a dollar then  
 It is so  
 But you owed it me before  
 Then, we are quits or even  
 Give us a draughts-board  
 I give you the move, play first  
 I huff this man  
 King that man*

Cuántas damas tiene vm. ?	<i>How many kings have you ?</i>
Téngo dos	<i>I have two</i>
Cóma vm. éste, que luégo comeré tres	<i>Take this, then I shall take three</i>
Piérdo el juégo	<i>I lose the game</i>
Díal. XVIII. <i>Del jugar á la pelóta.</i>	<i>Dial. XVIII. Of playing at tennis.</i>
Véa vm. que bello día háce	<i>See what a fine day it is</i>
Aprovechémonos de éste día tan hermoso	<i>Let us improve this so fair a day</i>
Que harémos hói ?	<i>What shall we do to-day ?</i>
El buen tiémpo nos convída á jugar ó á paseár	<i>The fine weather invites us to play or to walk</i>
En que juégo hémos de entretenérnos ?	<i>What play shall we amuse ourselves at ?</i>
Él de pelóta es el mejor pára el egercicio	<i>That of tennis is the best for exercise</i>
Péro es juégo mas de inviérno que de veráno	<i>But it is a play fitter for winter than summer</i>
Sudarémos ménos, si jugámos con raquetás	<i>We shall perspire less, if we play with rackets</i>
Vámos al juégo de pelóta	<i>Let us go to the tennis-court</i>
Jugarémos con pálas	<i>We will play with battledoors</i>
Hagámos la partida	<i>Let us make the match</i>
Está vm. conmigo	<i>You are with me</i>
No impórta cómo estámos	<i>It is no matter how we are</i>
Éste está con nosotros	<i>He is on our side</i>
Es vm. mejor jugador que yó	<i>You are a better player than I</i>
Estése cáda úno en su lugar	<i>Let every one stand at his place</i>
Manténgase detrás de mí, y cója la pelóta	<i>Stand behind me, and catch the ball</i>
Pasó por encima de mí	<i>It flew over me</i>
La cogí en el áire	<i>I caught it in the air</i>
Recháce la pelóta	<i>Strike the ball back</i>
Es vm. mal compañero	<i>You are a bad second</i>
No ha ganádo vm. aún	<i>You have not beat yet</i>
Aún puéde vm. perdér	<i>You may lose yet</i>
Tenémos la superioridad	<i>We have the best of it</i>
Perdió vm., ganámos	<i>You have lost, we have won</i>
Cuánto jugámos ?	<i>What did we play for ?</i>

Dos pésos  
Ha puésto vm. en el juégo ?  
No, péro shí está mi diuéro  
Es lo mismo  
Mañana jugarémos ótra vez  
Cuándo vmd. quisiére

Dial. XIX. *De las diversiones del cámpo, particularmente de la caza y de la pesca*

Señor, me alcgro de ver á vm. ; adónde ha estado tan largo tiempo ?

Adónde se méte vm. ?

Dos méses ha que estamos en una casa de cámpo

Ha venúdo vm. á la ciudad pára quedárse ?

No, Señor, vuelvo mañana por la mañana

Cómo pása vm. su tiempo en el cámpo ?

Parte de él empléo en estudiár  
Péro cuáles son sus diversiones, después de sus negocios sérios ?

Vóy tal vez á cazár

Á que caza ?

Á véces á la caza del venádo, á véces de la liébre

Tiéne vm. buénos pérros ?

Tenemos muchos pérros de muestra

Dos gálgos, dos gálgas, cuatro jatcos ó zorréros, y tres perdiguéros

No caza vm. áves ?

Caza vm. á véces con la escopéta ?

Sí, Señor, muy á menudo

Sobre que tíra vm. ?

*Two dollars*

*Have you staked ?*

*No, but there is my money*

*It is all one*

*To-morrow we will play again*

*When you please*

Dial. XIX. *Of country sports, especially of hunting and fishing.*

*Sir, I am overjoyed to see you ; where have you been so long a while ?*

*Where do you keep yourself ?*

*We have been these two months at a country house*

*Are you come to town to stay ?*

*No, Sir, I go back to-morrow morning*

*How do you pass your time in the country ?*

*I bestow a part of it on books  
But which are your diversions, after your serious business ?*

*I go sometimes a hunting*

*What do you hunt ?*

*We sometimes hunt a stag, sometime a hare*

*Have you good dogs ?*

*We have a number of pointers*

*Two grey-hound dogs, two grey-hound bitches, four fox-hounds and three set-ting-dogs*

*Do you not go a fowling ?*

*Do you go a shooting sometimes ?*

*Yes, Sir, very often*

*What do you shoot at ?*

- Sóbre todo género de caza como perdices, faisanes, gallinétas, conejos, &c. *At all manner of game, as partridges, pheasants, sand-pipers, rabbits, &c.*
- Tira vm. al vuelo la pieza ó corriendo? *Do you shoot flying or running?*
- De ámbas maneras *Both ways*
- Cómo coge vm. los conejos? *How do you catch rabbits?*
- Á véces con rédes, y á véces á escopetázos *Sometimes with nets, and sometimes with a gun*
- Y las codornices? *And the quails?*
- Solemos tomarlas con una red y un perro perdiguero *We catch them commonly with a net and a setting-dog*
- Es vm. amigo de pescar? *Are you fond of fishing?*
- Muchísimo *Extremely*
- Pesca vm. á menudo con red? *Do you fish often with a net?*
- Muy raras véces *Very seldom*
- Mas quiero pescar con la caña y anzuelo *I prefer fishing with a line and hook*
- La pesca y la caza son diversiones muy nobles *Fishing and hunting are very noble diversions*
- El Réy mas rico y mas pobre de Europa no se divierte en otra cosa *The richest and poorest king of Europe does not divert himself in anything else*
- Un día quizá pensarán sus ministros que sus vasállos están anualmente dando á sus vecinos millones por pescado salado y hediondo *One day perhaps their ministers will think of their subjects giving yearly to their neighbours millions for stinking salt-fish*
- Tienen no obstante muy buenos peces en sus costas *They have notwithstanding very good fish on their coast*
- Pero no toman el trabajo de curarlos *But they do not take the trouble to cure it*
- Esto sucede por falta de animar la pesca *This arises from want of encouraging the fisheries*
- Y de otros muchos motivos *And from many other causes*
- Coge vm. muchos peces en su estanque? *Do you catch much fish in your pond?*
- Que hace vm. cuando no caza ó pesca? *What do you do when you neither hunt nor fish?*
- Jugamos á la bola, al truco, ó á los bólos *We play at bowls, at billiards, or nine-pins*
- Según esto, no puede vm. estar cansado del campo? *According to this, you cannot be tired with the country?—*



Así le parece á vm. y es lo contrario

Yá empiezo á anhelar por la ciudad, y espéro presto pasárme á ella

Dial. XX. *Del ir á la comédia.*

Se dice que hóy representan una piéza nuéva

Es comédia, tragédia, ópera, ó entremés ?

Es una tragédia

Cómo la llaman ?

La \_\_\_\_\_

Quién es su autor ?

El Señor \_\_\_\_\_

Es ésta la primera representación ?

No, Señor, yá se ha representado tres véces

Éste es el día del autor

Cómo se recibió en las primeras representaciones

Con universal apláuso

El autor éra yá célebre

Y ésta última tragédia ha aumentado mucho su fama

Irémos á vérla ?

De muy buena gana

Vóy á mandar al cochero que apronte el coche

Irémos á un aposento ?

En hora buena, pero mas quisiéra ir al pátio

Porqué ?

Porqué podemos ver y oír mejor allá que en los pálcos

Que tal le parece la sinfonía ?

Muy buena me parece

Los corredóres están yá llenos

*So it seems to you, and it is otherwise*

*I already begin to long for the city, and I hope shortly to proceed to it*

*Dial. XX. Of going to the play.*

*They say there is a new play acted to day*

*Is it a comedy, a tragedy, an opera, or a farce ?*

*It is a tragedy*

*How do they name it ?*

*The \_\_\_\_\_*

*Who is its author ?*

*Mr. \_\_\_\_\_*

*Is this the first representation ?*

*No, Sir, it has been already acted three times*

*This is the author's night*

*How was it received on the first representations ?*

*With universal applause*

*The author was already famous*

*And this last tragedy has much increased his fame*

*Shall we go and see it ?*

*Very willingly*

*I am going to bid the coachman to get the coach ready*

*Shall we go to a box ?*

*As you please, but I had rather go to the pit*

*Why ?*

*Because we can see and hear better there than in the boxes*

*How do you like the overture ?*

*I think it is very fine*

*The galleries are full already*

Y cómo vm. lo ve, estamos  
muy apretados en el patio  
No caben las damas en los  
aposentos

Nunca ví la casa tan llena  
Éstas Señoras están muy bien  
vestidas

Repára vm. aquella señora  
en el aposento del Rey

Jamás he visto róstro tan her-  
moso en mi vida

Quién es ?

La Duquesa de ———

Y quién es la Señora jóven  
que está con ella ?

Su hermana, la Señora de —

Péro ya se levanta la cortina,  
escuchémos

Tendremos ántes el Prólogo

El segundo ácto está acabádo

Las escenas están muy bóllas

Don — es muy buen actor

Éste es el último ácto

Acabóse la piéza—cómo le  
gusta á vmd. ?

Muchísimo, me parece esce-  
lente tragédia y muy bien  
representada

Tuvo grande apláuso

Ahora tendremos el Epílogo

Quién lo dice ?

La Señora ———

Lo dice con mucho ánimo

Quiere vmd. quedarse para  
ver la Pantomíma ?

No, ya la hé visto, y cómo es  
tarde, haremos mejor de  
irnos

De todo mi corazón

Irémos á la Ópera mañana

*And as you see, we are very  
much crowded in the pit*

*The ladies cannot be contained  
in the boxes*

*I never saw the house so full  
These ladies are very well dress-  
ed*

*Do you observe that lady in  
the king's box ?*

*I never have in my life seen  
so beautiful a face*

*Who is she ?*

*The Duchess of ———*

*And who is the young lady who  
is with her ?*

*Her sister, Lady —*

*But the curtain rises already,  
let us attend*

*We shall first have the Pro-  
logue*

*The second act is over*

*The scenes are very fine*

*Mr. — is a very good actor*

*This is the last act*

*The piece is over—how do you  
like it ?*

*Very much ; I think it an ex-  
cellent tragedy and very  
well performed*

*It received great applause*

*Now for the Epilogue*

*Who speaks it ?*

*Mrs. ———*

*She speaks it with great spirit  
Will you stay to see the Panto-  
mime ?*

*No, I have seen it already,  
and as it is late, we had bet-  
ter go away*

*With all my heart*

*We will go to the opera to-  
morrow*

Dial. XXI. *Del vestirse.*

Señor Maestro, trae vm. mi  
vestido entéro ?

Sí, Señor, aquí está

Le estaba aguardando ; prué-  
bemelo

Quiero vm. probar la casaca ?

Véamos si está bien hecha

Creo que le gustará á vm.

Me parece muy larga

Yá no se llévan tan cortas  
cómo ántes

Se úsan largas ahora

Abotóneme vm.

Me ajusta demasiado

Es preciso que ajuste bien

Este vestido le coge muy  
bien el talle

No son las mangas demasiado  
largas y anchas ?

No, Señor, van muy bien

Se llévan ahora muy largas y  
anchas

Los pantalones son demasiá-  
do angostos y cortos

Los calzones son muy estre-  
chos

Es la moda

Déme la chupa

Le va muy bien este vestido

Pero las medias no vienen  
con este paño

Que le parece de mi sombrero ?

Es un castor hermoso

Que galón le pondrá vm. ?

Un galón de oro con una he-  
billas de diamantes

Me compró vm. las ligas có-  
mo le digo ?

Sí, Señor, ahí están

Dial. XXI. *Of dressing one-  
self.*

Master, do you bring my full  
suit of clothes ?

Yes, Sir, here it is

I was waiting for you ; try it  
on me

Will you try the coat ?

Let us see if it is well made

I believe it will please you

It seems to me very long

They do not wear them now so  
short as formerly

They wear them long now

Button me

It is too close

It ought to be very close

This suit fits your shape very  
well

Are not the sleeves too long  
and too wide ?

No, Sir, they fit very well

They wear them now very long  
and wide

The pantaloons are too narrow  
and short

The small clothes are very  
strait

It is the fashion

Give me the waistcoat

This suit becomes you very  
well

But the stockings do not match  
this cloth

What do you say to my hat ?

It is a beautiful beaver

What lace will you put to it ?

A gold lace with a diamond  
buckle

Did you buy me the garters as  
I told you ?

Yes, Sir, there they are

Son éstas médias de séda de París ó de Lóndres ?	<i>Are these silk stockings from Paris or London ?</i>
Son de Fráncia	<i>They are from France</i>
A cuánto las vénden ?	<i>How much do they sell them for ?</i>
Tres pésos el par	<i>Three dollars a pair</i>
Es bastánte baráto, siéndo tan fínas	<i>It is cheap enough, being so fine</i>
Muchácho, ha venido el za- patéro ?	<i>Boy, is the shoemaker come ?</i>
No, Señor, no ha venido	<i>No, Sir, he is not come</i>
Córre pues á su cása, y díle que me tráiga mis zapátos	<i>Run then to his house, and bid him bring me my shoes</i>
Señór, aquí está, le encontré en el camino	<i>Sir, here he is, I met him on the way</i>
Son éstos mis zapátos ?	<i>Are these my shoes ?</i>
Sí, Señor	<i>Yes, Sir</i>
Póngamelos vm.	<i>Put them on me</i>
Están muy ajustádos	<i>They are very tight</i>
Me apriétan un póco	<i>They pinch me a little</i>
Póngalos en la hórma para ensanchárlas	<i>Put them on the last to widen them</i>
Bastanteménte se ensancha- rán llevándolos	<i>They will widen enough by wearing them</i>
Ésta piel da de sí cómo un guante	<i>This leather stretches like a glove</i>
Siénto muy bién que me las- timarán	<i>I feel very sure that they will hurt me</i>
Mis cállas lo padecerán	<i>My corns will suffer for it</i>
Me duélen mucho los piés	<i>My feet ache much</i>
El empéine de éste zapáto no vále náda	<i>The upper-leather of this shoe is good for nothing</i>
El talón es demasiádo bájo	<i>The heel is too low</i>
Las suélas no son bastánte fuértés ni gruésas	<i>The soles are neither strong nor thick enough</i>
Hágame vm. ótro par	<i>Make me another pair</i>
Es vm., Señor, muy difícil de contentár	<i>You are, Sir, very hard to please ?</i>
Quiére vm. probár ótro par que tráge por acaso ?	<i>Will you try another pair which I brought by chance ?</i>
En hora buena	<i>I am willing</i>
Créo que le irán bién	<i>I believe they will fit you</i>
Mi pié está mas descansádo	<i>My foot is more at ease</i>

Cuánto valen éstos zapatos ? *What are these shoes worth ?*  
 ¿Cómo los vende vm. ? *How much do you sell them at?*  
 Dos pesos y medio *Two dollars and a half*  
 Es demasiado caro *It is too dear*  
 Es precio hecho *It is a fixed price*  
 Es un zapato bien hecho y *It is a shoe well made and well*  
 y bien cosido *stitched*  
 Hágame otro par como éste *Make me another pair like this*

Tóme mi medida *Take my measure*  
 Ahí tiene su dinero *There is your money*  
 Viva vm. muchos años, Ca- *May you live many years, Sir*  
 ballero *I thank you, Sir*

DÍAL. XXII. *Del hablar á un mozo de cabállos.* *Dial. XXII. Of speaking to a groom.*

Almoháza mi caballo *Curry my horse*  
 Estríega y límpiale bien con *Rub and clean him well with*  
 un manójo de paja *a wisp of straw*  
 Mi caballo está sin herra- *My horse is unshod ; is with-*  
 dúras *out shoes*  
 Le faltan dos herradúrras *He wants two shoes*  
 Lévale á casa del herrador *Take him to the farrier*  
 Mándalo herrár *Get him shod*  
 Lévalo después al río *Lead him afterwards to the*  
*river*

Le has dado de beber *Have you watered him ?*  
 Sí, Señor *Yes, Sir*  
 Dále su pienso de cebáda *Give him his allowance of*  
*barley*

Paséale ésta tarde *Walk him this afternoon*  
 Dále también salvádo *Give him also some bran*  
 Ha comido su cebáda ? *Has he eaten his barley ?*  
 Échale paja ahora *Give him now some straw*  
 Ensilla mi caballo y tráemelo *Saddle my horse and bring him*  
*to me*

Tómale por el freno *Take him by the bridle*  
 No le hagas correr *Do not make him run*  
 No le recalientes *Do not overheat him*  
 Está cansado ? *Is he tired ?*  
 Quítale el freno *Unbridle him*  
 Pónle en la caballeriza *Put him in the stable*

**Dial. XXIII.** *De ir á un viáje.*

Vengo á despedirme de vm.  
y á recibír sus órdenes  
Adónde va vm., Señor?  
Vóy á Madrid  
Cuándo parte vm.?  
En éste instante  
Va vm. á caballo ó en cóche?

Á caballo  
Muchácho, tráeme mi caballo  
Aquí está, Señor  
Está bién almohazádo?  
Muy bién, Señor  
Cuántas léguas háy de aquí á M———?

Diéz léguas  
Son léguas largas?  
No, Señor, son las mas córtas de España

Le parece á vm. que podámos caminar tánto hoy?  
Sin dúda, no es tan tárde  
Darán préstó las dóce  
Tiéne vm. bastánte tiémpo pára llegar ántes de ponerse el sol

Háy buén camíno?  
Muy hermóso  
Ningún pantáno se encuéntra  
Péro tiéne vm. bósques que atravesár y ríos que pasár  
Háy pelígro en el camíno réal?

¿No se hábla de que háya ladrones en los bósques?  
No se díce náda de ésto  
No háy que temér náda ni de día ni de nóche

**Dial. XXIII.** *Of going on a journey.*

*I come to bid you farewell and take your commands*  
*Where are you going, Sir?*  
*I am going to Madrid*  
*When do you set out?*  
*Presently; this minute*  
*Do you go on horseback or in a coach?*

*On horseback*  
*Boy, bring me my horse*  
*Here he is, Sir*  
*Is he well curried?*  
*Very well, Sir*  
*How many leagues is it from here to M———?*

*Ten leagues*  
*Are they long leagues?*  
*No, Sir, they are the shortest in Spain*

*Do you think we can travel so far to day?*  
*Without doubt, it is not so late*  
*Twelve o'clock will soon strike*  
*You have time enough to arrive before the sun sets*

*Is there a good road?*  
*Very fine*  
*You meet with no quagmire*  
*But you have woods to go through and rivers to cross*  
*Is there any danger upon the highway?*

*Do they not talk of there being highwaymen in the woods?*  
*There is said nothing of this*  
*There is nothing to fear either by day or night*

Es un camino en que anda gente siempre	<i>It is a road where you always meet with people</i>
Que camino he de tomar ?	<i>Which way must I take ?</i>
Cuando esté vm. cerca de la primera aldea, tomará á mano derécha	<i>When you are near the first village, you will take to the right</i>
He de subir el monte ?	<i>Must I go up the mountain ?</i>
No, Señor, dégelo vm. á la izquierda	<i>No, Sir, leave it to the left</i>
Es el camino dificultoso en los bosques ?	<i>Is the way difficult through the woods ?</i>
No, Señor ; váya vm. siempre derécho, no se puede estraviar	<i>No, Sir ; go always straight along, you cannot lose your way</i>
Adónde encontraremos el río ?	<i>Where shall we come to or meet the river ?</i>
Á la salida del bosque	<i>At the issue of the wood</i>
Se puede vadeár, es vadeable ?	<i>Can one ford it, is it fordable ?</i>
No, Señor, se pása en un barco	<i>No, Sir, people pass it over in a ferry</i>
Vámos, caballeros, montemos	<i>Come, gentlemen, let us mount</i>
Á Dios, Señores	<i>Farewell, gentlemen</i>
Dios les dé buen viage	<i>God grant you a good journey</i>
Les doy muchas gracias	<i>I give you many thanks</i>
No quiere vm. echar un trago ?	<i>Will you not take a draught ?</i>
Cómo vmd. gustare	<i>As you please</i>
Váya, á su buen viage	<i>Come, to your good journey</i>

Dial. XXIV. *En una posáda.*Dial. XXIV. *In an Inn.*

Dónde está la mejor posáda de la ciudad ?	<i>Where is the best inn in the city ?</i>
Á la señal del Caballo Blanco	<i>At the sign of the White Horse</i>
En que parage de la villa está ?	<i>In what part of the town is it ?</i>
Cerca de la iglesia mayor	<i>Near the principal church</i>
Podremos alojarnos aquí ?	<i>Can we lodge here ?</i>
Sí, Señor, tenemos bellos cuartos y buenas camas	<i>Yes, Sir, we have fine chambers and good beds</i>
Apeémonos, Señores	<i>Let us alight, gentlemen</i>

- Dónde está el mózo de pája y cebáda, de cabállos? *Where is the hostler, the groom?*
- Aquí estóy, Señor *Here I am, Sir*
- Toma nuéstrs cabállos *Take our horses*
- Llévalos á la caballeríza *Lead them to the stable*
- Cúdalos bién *Take good care of them*
- Véamos, ahora, qué nos dará vm. de cenár? *Now, let us see, what will you give us for supper?*
- Véan vms., Señóres, lo que mas gustáren *See yourselves, gentlemen, what you like best*
- Dénos média docéna de pichónes, dos perdíces, seis codornices, un buén capón y úna ensaláda *Give us half a dozen pigeons, a brace of partridges, six quails, a good capon and a salad*
- Tendré cuidádo de tódo; no se inquiétén vms. *I will take care of all; do not trouble yourselves*
- No quíeren vms. ótra cósa? *Will you have nothing else?*
- No, básta con ésto; péro dénos buén vino y frúta *No, that is sufficient; but give us good wine and fruit*
- Les asegúro, que les daré gústo *I shall please you, I warrant you*
- Quiéren vms. ir á ver sus aposéntos? *Will you go and see your chambers?*
- Sí, lláme á su camaréro *Yes, call your chamberlain*
- Alúmbra á éstos Señóres que súban arriba *Light these gentlemen that they may go up stairs*
- Háganos cenár cuánto ántes *Give us our supper as soon as possible*
- Ántes que se háyan quitádo las bótas, estará la céna próna *Before your boots are pulled off, supper will be got ready*
- Adónde están nuéstrs lacáyos? *Where are our lackeys?*
- Ahí súben con sus balíjas *There they are coming up with your portmanteaux*
- Han traído nuéstras pistólas? *Have they brought our pistols?*
- Sí, Señor, aquí están *Yes, Sir, here they are*
- Quita mis bótas, botines, y vé después á cuidár de nuéstrs cabállos *Pull off my boots, half-boots, buskins, and then go and take care of our horses*
- Lláma pára cenár *Call for supper*



Señores, la cena está pronta, está en la mesa	<i>Gentlemen, supper is ready, it is on the table</i>
Vámonos, Señores, á cenar, para poder acostarnos tem- prano	<i>Let us go to supper, gentle- men, that we may go to bed early</i>
Sentémonos á la mesa	<i>Let us sit down at table</i>
Vm. no come náda; que tiene?	<i>You eat nothing; what ails you?</i>
No tengo ganas, estoy cansado	<i>I have no appetite, I am tired</i>
Estoy molido	<i>I am beaten down</i>
Estaré mejor en la cama que en la mesa	<i>I shall be better in bed than at table</i>
Tóme vmd. ánimo	<i>Take courage</i>
Si se siente malo, váyase á acostár	<i>If you feel unwell, go and lay down</i>
Mánde calentár su cama	<i>Get your bed warmed</i>
Que no les impida de cenar, váy á descansar	<i>That I may not hinder you from supping, I am going to rest</i>
Ha menester vm. algo?	<i>Do you want any thing?</i>
Náda quiero sino descansar	<i>I want nothing but rest</i>
Tengan vms. buenas noches	<i>I wish you a good night</i>
Tráe los póstres, y di á la patrona que venga á ha- blarnos	<i>Bring the dessert, and bid the landlady come and speak with us</i>
Aquí viene	<i>Here she is coming</i>
Señores, les gusta á vms. la cena?	<i>Gentlemen, are you pleased with your supper?</i>
Sí, Señora, pero ahora es menester satisfacer á vm.	<i>Yes, mistress, but now we must satisfy you</i>
Cuánto hemos gastado?	<i>How much have we spent?</i>
Que hemos de pagar?	<i>What have we to pay?</i>
El escóte no sube mucho	<i>The reckoning does not rise high</i>
Vea vm. cuánto le debemos por nosotros, nuestros criá- dos y caballos	<i>See how much we owe you for ourselves, our servants, and our horses</i>
Por la cena, la cama y el al- muérzo	<i>For the supper, bed and break- fast</i>
Todo importa diez pesos	<i>All amounts to ten dollars</i>
Me parece que es demasiado	<i>I think it is too much</i>
Al contrario, es muy barato	<i>On the contrary, it is very cheap</i>

Hága vm. mismo la cuenta,  
y hallará que no les pido  
demasiado

Pagaremosle mañana por la  
mañana después del almu-  
erzo

Cómo vms. quisiéren

Dénos sábanas limpias

Las sábanas que les envío son  
muy buenas

Buenas noches, Señora

Buenas noches les dé Dios á  
vms., caballeros; servidora  
de vms.

Necesitan vms. de algo?

Nada nos hace falta

Sólo que se haga buen fuego

Las noches son muy frías

Es menester cuidarse en vi-  
aje

Díal. XXV. *Pára hablar con  
los empleados en las adu-  
anas.*

Traén vms. algo contra las  
órdenes de su magestad,  
del soberano, del estado, ó  
de la república?

No, yó no tengo géneros de  
contrabando alguno

Tengo solamente algunos  
efectos que pagan impues-  
tos, y vóy á declarárselos

Cuánto debo pagar por esto?

Es menester dárme sus llaves  
Hélas aquí. Hágame vmd.  
la gracia de despachárme  
luego, porque tengo mucha  
prisa

Se lo estimaré mucho

32\*

*Reckon yourself, and you will  
find that I do not ask you  
too much*

*We will pay you to-morrow  
morning after breakfast*

*As you please*

*Give us clean sheets*

*The sheets I send you are  
very good*

*Good night, landlady*

*I wish you the same, gentle-  
men; your servant*

*Do you want any thing?*

*We are in want of nothing*

*Only that a good fire be made*

*The nights are very cold*

*One must take care of oneself  
travelling*

Díal. XXV. *To speak with  
the officers in the custom-  
houses.*

*Do you bring any thing con-  
trary to the orders of his  
majesty, of the sovereign,  
the state, or republic?*

*No, I have no contraband  
goods at all*

*I have only some goods that  
pay duty, and I am going  
to manifest them to you*

*How much must I pay for  
this?*

*You must give me your keys*

*Here they are. Be so kind as  
to expedite me directly, for  
I am in great haste*

*I shall be much obliged to you  
for it*

Ahí tiéne vmd. la lláve del candádo; he aquí la lláve de la cerradura

Hágame vmd. la gracia de buscar con precaución, porqué háy muchas cosas que puéden quebrarse

Ha acabádo vmd.?

No emplomará vmd. ahóra el baúl y los cófres, pára que no me los registren ótra vez?

No podría vm., en lugar de registrárme aquí en ésta puerta, venir á hacerlo en la fonda, ó en la casa adónde vóy á posár?

Grácias, páselo vmd. bién. Díos guarde á vmd., Sr.

*There is the key to the padlock; here is the key to the lock*

*Do me the favour to search with care, for there are many things that may be broken*

*Have you done?*

*Will you not put a lead stamp now upon the trunk and chests, that they may not be searched again?*

*Could not you, instead of searching me here at this gate, come and do it at the inn, or house where I am going to lodge?*

*Thank you, farewell. Your servant, Sir*

Dial. XXVI. Pára una persona estraviáda en una ciudád.

*Dial. XXVI. For a person who has lost his way in a city.*

No me haría vmd. el favór de decírme, si estóy léjos del bárrío de San Francisco, ó de la cálle de San Páblo?

*Would you not oblige me so far as to tell me, whether I am a great way from the Ward of St. Francis, or Street of St. Paul?*

Háy muy léjos de aquí á —? Búsko la posáda del Señor — ó de la Señóra —

*Is it very far from here to —? I am looking for the residence of Mr. —, or Madam —*

Po que ládo débo ir?

*Which way must I go?*

Después, ¿daré vuélta á la derecha ó á la izquérda?

*Shall I turn, afterwards, to the right or left?*

Es aquí que víve el Señor —? Quisiéra vm. dárme su dirección?

*Does Mr. — live here?*

*Would you favour me with his address?*

Podría vmd. señálar-me el camino que débo tomar, pára ir á casa del Señor —?

*Could you point out to me the way I must take, in order to go to the house of Mr. —?*

- Quiero vmd. conducirme  
allá, le pagaré bien; le  
daré ———  
Pase vm. adelante, yo le se-  
guiré  
No ande tan á prisa  
Condúzcame vm. por el ca-  
mino mas corto  
Esta calle está embarazada,  
tomemos otro camino  
Lláme vm. un coche de al-  
quilér  
Cochero, queréis llevarme?  
Moro en la calle de ———
- Will you lead me there, I will  
pay you handsomely; I will  
give you ———  
Walk before, I will follow you  
Do not walk so fast  
Lead me the shortest way  
This street is obstructed, let us  
take another way  
Call for a hackney-coach  
Coachman, will you drive me?  
I reside in the street of ———*

Díal. XXVII. *Un militar  
vencedor estableciéndose  
en una casa de los venet-  
dos, y hablando á los due-  
ños de la casa.*

Dial. XXVII. *A military  
man victorious, quartering  
in a house of the conquer-  
ed, and speaking to the  
masters of the house.*

No tengáis miedo, somos In-  
gleses, Alemanes, Rusos,  
Franceses, &c. Nuestro  
carácter nacional puede  
aseguraros de nuestra ge-  
nerosidad, y la obediencia  
que debemos á nuestro so-  
berano es un segundo fin-  
dór. El enemigo vencido  
no es para nosotros sino  
un amigo desdichado

Entregaos con seguridad á  
vuestras ocupaciones ordi-  
narias; os prometemos se-  
guridad, atenciones, sosie-  
go, protección y ayuda, si  
necesitáreis de ella

Si mi gente os diere algún  
motivo de queja, recurrid  
á mí con confianza, yo no

*Be not afraid, we are Eng-  
lishmen, Germans, Rus-  
sians, Frenchmen, &c. Our  
national character may as-  
sure you of our generosity,  
and the obedience we owe  
to our sovereign is a double  
security. A subdued en-  
emy is considered by us  
only as an unfortunate  
friend  
Give yourselves up with confi-  
dence to your customary busi-  
ness; we promise you safe-  
ty, kindness, tranquillity,  
protection and assistance, if  
you should want any  
If my people should give you  
any cause of complaint, ap-  
ply openly to me, I will not*

sufriré que se páse algo  
que pueda dáros disgusto

*suffer that any thing should  
occur that may be unpleasant to you*

No tengáis miedo, un soldado  
valeroso no es temible sino  
en el campo de batalla

*Be not afraid, a brave soldier  
is dreadful only on the field  
of battle*

Camarádas, comportémonos  
cómo hombres de valor;  
respetemos la desdicha, y  
no ocasionemos aquí ni al-  
boroto ni desorden

*Comrades, let us behave our-  
selves as brave men; let us  
respect misfortune, and let  
us cause here neither com-  
motion nor disorder*

### Díal. XXVIII. *Idiotismos.*

### Dial. XXVIII. *Idiotisms.*

Buscár á uno de zéca en  
méca

*To seek any one by sea or  
land*

Es tan cláro cómo el sol

*It is as clear as day*

Con su pan se lo cóma

*That is his concern*

No me está á cuenta

*That is not to my profit*

Cáda uno se entiende

*Each one knows his own busi-  
ness*

Éso está colgado de un hilo

*That hangs only by a thread*

Cáda ovéja con su paréja

*Birds of a feather flock to-  
gether*

Cuánto va que ésto sucede?

*What will you bet that that  
will happen?*

Cáesele la cara de vergüenza

*He blushes to his eyes*

No está pára fiestas

*He is not good-humoured*

No háy forma de vivir con  
ése hombre

*One cannot live with such a  
man*

Mas vále buena fama que cá-  
ma doráda

*A good name is above wealth*

## FÁBULAS.

---

N. B. In looking for words in the Dictionary, the student should bear in mind the observations made in pages 17, 18, 19 and 20, in regard to pronunciation and orthography.

Remember that the Spanish Academy considers *ch*, *ll*, and *ñ*, as distinct characters from *c*, *l* and *n*, and in its Dictionary, as in all others who follow this single legitimate standard of the Spanish tongue, you must look through all the words beginning with these simple characters, before you find those commencing with the aforesaid compound.

---

### Fábula Priméra.

#### *Los Animáles en constéjo juntos pára elegír un Réy.*

HABIENDO muérto el león, todas las áves y béstias se congregaron á su cuéva pára condolerse con la réina vídua; que hacía resonár sus lamentos y gritos en los montes y bósques.

Después de los acostumbrádos cumplimiéntos, procedieron todos á la elección de un réy, la corona del difunto monárca fué colocáda en médio de la asamblea.

Su aparénte heredéro éra demasiádo jóven y endéble pára obtenér la dignidad réal, á la que tantos animáles mas fuertes que él pusieron su demándá.

Dégenme crecer un póco, dijo su altéza, y entónces experimentaréis que puédo llenár el tróno, y con el tiémpo hacér felices á mis súbditos. Entretanto estudiaré las acciones heroicas de mi pádre, con la esperánza de que algún día, podré sérle igual en glória.

Por mi páрте, dijo el leopárdo, insisto en mi derécho á la corona, por la mayor semejanza que téngo al último réy entre todos los candidátos.

Yó, por ótro ládo, gritó el óso, sostendré que se me hizo injusticia cuándo su magestád anteriór se me prefirió: sóy tan fuerte, intrépido, y sangriénto, cómo éra; y además, sóy maéstro de un árte que él jamás púdo adquirir, cuál es, el trepar por los árboles.

Yó apélo, dijo el elefánte, al juicio de ésta augusta asamblea, si alguno de los preséntes puédo con algún colorído jac-

társe de ser tan áltó, de tan nóble preséncia, tan robústó, ó tan circunspectó cómo yó.

Yó sóy la mas nóble, y la mas hermosa criatúra éntre todos vosotros, dijo el caballo.

É yó sóy la mas política, dijo la zorra.

É yó sóy el mas velóz en corrér, dijo el córzo.

En dónde encontraréis, dijo el mico, un réy mas agradáble, mas ingenióso, y mas divertído que yó ? Yó divertiría continuaménte á mis vasállos, y sóy además el mas semejánte al hómbré, que es el Señor del Univérso.

El papagáyo interrumpiéndole, hizo su arénga : supuésto que vm. se alába de su semejánza al hómbré, me paréce que puédo yó alabárme con múcha mas justícia. Tóda la semejánza de vm. consiste en su hocíco feo y algúnos géstos ridículos ; péro yó puédo hablár cómo un hómbré, é imitár su lenguáge, señál indicatíva de su razón, y su mayór adórno.

Guardád vuéstra maldíta garúlla, replicó la móna : habláis, es ciérto, péro no cómo hómbré ; repetís siémpre úna misma cosa sin entendér úna sóla palabrá de lo que decís.

Tóda la asambléa se rió de éstos dos riváles imitadóres del género humano, y confiriéron la coróná al elefánte, porqué éra fuérte y sábio ; y no sólo éra exénto del bárbaro natural de las béstias de rapiña, sinó también de la vanidád y amor própío de que múchos están tocádos, siémpre pareciéndoles ó fingiéndó ser lo que, en la realidád, no son.

### Fábula Segunda.

#### *El Dragón y las Dos Zórras.*

Un dragón guardába con ánsia un tesóro inménso en úna cuéva profunda ; núnca dormía de día ni de nóche, pára asegurárlo.

Dos zórras aduladóras, artificiósas, y pícaras de profesión, se introdugéron en su grácia con sus lisónjas fastidiósas. Ámbas éran sus íntimas amigas.

Los que son mas cortésés y oficiósos no son siémpre los mas sínceros. Le rindiéron sus obséquios con la mayór sumisión : admiráron sus fantasías ociosas ; conviniéron con él en sus idéas, y se burláron de su crédula tontería.

Finalménte, quedóse un día dormído éntre sus confidéntes : le ahogáron, y tomáron posesión de su tesóro.

Éra preciso repartir el pilláge ; uu punto muy delicádo, y no éra fácil de ajustarse, porqué dos villános no convienen sinó en la egecucion de sus delitos.

Una de éllas empezó á exhortár en éstos términos : de que nos servirá tódo éste dinéro ? Un gazápo nos sería un botín, ó présa mas agradáble : no podemos hacér una comida de éstos doblónes, son muy indigestos. Los hombres son muy lócos, en dejarse arrebatár de riquezas tan imaginárias. No seámos nosótras criaturas tan insensátas, cómo éllos lo son.

La otra pretendió que éstas reflexiones la habían hécho una impresión fuérte, y la aseguró que en lo venidéro estaría contentá de continuár una vida filosófica, y cómo Bías llevar su tesóro tódo consigo.

Al parecer, ámbas estában dispuestas á abandonár su tesóro mal adquirido : pero ámbas se quedaron á la mira, hásta que se despedazáron.

Al espirár la una dijo á la otra, que estába tan mortalmente herida cómo élla : que querías hacér con tódo aquél oro ? Lo mismo que tú te proponías hacér con él, replicó la otra.

Siéndo informádo un vajadór de su pendencia, las dijo, que éran tóntas. Así lo es el mayor número del género humano, replicó una de las zórras. Tampóco á vosotros puede servir de comida, y con tódo, os asesináis unos á otros por el dinéro.

Nosótras, las zórras, hemos sido bastante sábias, á lo ménos hásta aquí, pára mirár al dinéro cómo una cosa inútil. Lo que habéis introducido éntre vosotros cómo una conveniencia, es vuestra desgracia. Dejáis un bien sustancial, solamente por seguir un bien fantástico.

---

### Fábula Tercera.

#### *Las Dos Zórras.*

Una nóche entráron dos zórras furtivamente en un gallinero : matáron el gallo, las gallinas, y los póllos : después de ésta matanza, empezáron á devorár su présa.

Una que éra jóven y sin reflexión, propuso comerlos todos de una vez ; la otra vieja y codiciosa quería ahorrár pára otro día.

Hija, dijo la vieja, la esperiencia me hizo sabia ; en mi tiempo he visto mucho mundo. No consumámos á la vez



pródigamente todo nuestro caudal ; tuvimos buen suceso, y debemos cuidar de no mal gastarlo.

Replicó la joven, estoy resuelta á recrearme mientras lo tengo por delante, y saciar mi apetito por toda una semana ; por lo que toca á venir aquí mañana, es cuento : eso es espórnos : mañana vendrá aquí el amo, y por vengar la muerte de sus pollos, nos dará con una tranca en la cabeza.

Después de esta réplica, cada una de ellas obra como le parece mas propio.

La joven come hasta que revienta, sin poder apenas arrastrarse á su cueva antes de morir. La vieja que le pareció mucho más prudente gobernar su apetito, y ser frugal, fué el día siguiente al gallinero, y la mató el labrador.

Así cada edad tiene su vicio favorito : los jóvenes son fogosos é insaciables en sus placeres ; y los viejos incorregibles en su avaricia.

#### Fábula Cuarta.

##### *El lobo y el Cordero.*

Había un rebaño de ovejas, que pacían seguras de todo mal en un cercado ; todos los perros dormían, y sus amos tocaban la gaita rural con sus compañeros bajo de un álamo frondoso.

Un lobo hambriento vino al redil á registrarlos por las rendijas.

Un cordero inesperto, y que nunca había estado fuera, entró en conversacion con él.

Y le dijo, que es lo que tú quieres aquí, lobo ?

Un poco de esta yerba fresca, le respondió el lobo. Bien sabes que no hay cosa mas agradable, que matar la hambre en un prado verde esmaltado con flores, y apagar la sed en una fuente trasparente. Aquí encuentro copia de uno y otro, que puede uno desear mas ? por mi parte, yo amo la filosofía que nos enseña á contentarnos con poco.

Es verdad pues, replicó el cordero, que tú te abstienes de la carne de las bestias, y que un poco de yerba te satisface ? Si es así, vivamos como hermanos y pastemos juntos.

El cordero, luego, saltó del redil al prado en donde el grave filósofo le despedazó, y de una vez le devoró.

Desconfíate siempre de las lenguas lisongeras de los que se jactan de su propia virtud. Forma tu juicio según sus acciones, y no según sus palabras.

## EPÍTOME DE LA HISTÓRIA DE ESPAÑA.

(Sacado de las *Cárta*s *Marruecas* de Don JOSÉ CADÁLISO, *Cárta* III.)

“LA península, llamada España, sólo está contigua al continente de Europa por el lado de Francia de la que la separan los montes Pirineos. Es abundante en oro, plata, azogue, hierro, piedras, aguas minerales, ganados de excelentes calidades, y pescas tan abundantes como deliciosas. Esta feliz situación la hizo objeto de la codicia de los fenicios y otros pueblos. Los cartagineses, parte por dolo, y parte por fuerza, se establecieron en ella; y los romanos quisieron completar su poder y gloria con la conquista de España; pero encontraron una resistencia, que pareció tan extraña como terrible á los soberbios dueños de lo restante del mundo. Numancia, una sola ciudad, les costó catorce años de sitio, la pérdida de tres ejércitos, y el desdoro de los mas famosos Generales, hasta que reducidos los numantinos á la precisión de capitular ó morir, por la total ruina de la patria, corto número de vivos, y abundancia de cadáveres en las calles (sin contar los que habían servido de pasto á sus conciudadanos después de concluidos todos sus viveres) incendiaron sus casas, arrojaron sus mugeres, niños y ancianos en las llamas, y salieron á morir en el campo raso con las armas en la mano. El grande Escipión fué testigo de la ruina de Numancia, pues no puede llamarse propiamente conquistador de la ciudad: siendo de notar que Lúculo, encargado de levantar un ejército para aquella expedición, no halló en la juventud romana reclutas que llevar, hasta que el mismo Escipión se alistó para animarla. Si los romanos conocieron el valor de los españoles como enemigos, también experimentaron su virtud como aliados. Según to sufrió por ellos un sitio igual al de Numancia contra los cartagineses; y desde entonces formaron los romanos de los españoles el alto concepto que se vé en sus autores, oradores, historiadores y poetas. Pero la fortuna de Roma, superior al valor humano, la hizo señora de España, como de lo restante del mundo, menos algunos montes de Cantabria, cuya total conquista no consta de la his-

toría, de módo que no puéda dudárse. Lárgas revoluciones inútiles de contárse en éste paráge tragéron del nórtte enjámbras de naciones feróces, codiciosas y guerréras, que se estableciéron en España : péro con las delicias de éste clima tan diferénte del que habían dejádo, cayéron en tal grádo de afeminación y flogedád, que á su tiémpo fuéron esclávós de ótros conquistadóres venídos del médio día. Huyéron los gódos españoles hásta los móntes de una provincia, hóy llamada Astúrias : y apénas tuvieron tiémpo de desechár el súto, llorár la pérdida de sus casas y ruína de su réino, cuándo saliéron mandádos por Peláyo, úno de los mayores hombres que la naturaleza ha producido.

Désde aquí se ábre un teátro de guérras que duráron cerca de ocho siglos. Vários réinos se levantáron sóbre la ruína de la Monarquía Góda Española, destruyéndo él que querían edificár los móros en el mismo terréno, regádo con mas sángre española, romána, cartaginésa, góda y móra de cuánto se puéde ponderár con horrór de la plúma que lo escriba, y de los ojos que lo véan escrito. Péro la poblaci6n de ésta península éra tal, que después de tan lárgas guérras y tan sangrientas, aún se contában véinte mill6nes de habitantes en élla. Incorporáronse tántas provincias, y tan diferéntes, en dos coronas, la de Castilla y la de Aragón ; y ámbas en el matrimónio de Don Fernádo y Doña Isabél, Príncipes que serán inmortáles éntre cuántos sépan lo que es gobiérno. La reforma de abúsos, aumento de ciéncias, humillaci6n de los soberbios, apáro de la agricultura y ótras operaciones sembrantes formáron ésta Monarquía : ayudóles la naturaleza con un número increíble de vasállos insígenes en létras y ármás ; y se pudiéron haber lisongeádo de dejár á sus sucesóres un império mayor y mas duradéro, que él de R6ma antigua (contádo las Américas nuevaménte descubiertas,) si hubiéran lográdo dejár su corona á un heredéro var6n. Nególes el ciélo éste gózo á trúéque de tántos cómo les había concedido ; y su cétro pasó á la casa de Aústria, la cual gastó los tesóros, taléntos y sángre de los Españóles en cosas agénas de España por las continuas guérras, que así en Alemánia, cómo en Itália túvo que sostenér Cárlos I. de España ; hásta que cansádo de sus mismas prosperidádes ó tal vez conociéndo con prudéncia las vicisítúdes de las cosas humanas, no quiso esponérse á sus revéses, y dejó el tr6no á su hijo Don Felipe II.

Éste Príncipe, acusádo por la emulaci6n, por ambici6so y político cómo su pádre, péro ménos afortunádo, siguiéndo los

proyéctos de Carlos, no pudo hallar los mismos sucesos aún á costa de ejércitos, de armadas y de caudales. Murió dejando á su pueblo estenuado con las guerras, afeminado con el oro y plata de América, disminuido con la población de un mundo nuevo, disgustado con tantas desgracias, y deseoso de descanso. Pasó el cetro por las manos de tres Príncipes menos activos para manejar tan grande Monarquía, y en la muerte de Carlos II. no era España sino el esqueleto de un gigante.”

---

### CHÍSTES.

Un hombre discreto preguntando á su hijo de dónde venía, pues era tan tarde, le respondió: Padre, yo vengo de ver á uno de mis amigos. De tus amigos, le respondió el padre sorprendido; ¡Tú tienes pues tantos amigos! Oh! cómo has hecho siendo tan joven para alcanzar muchos; pues que yo en mas de sesenta años no he podido encontrar uno.

---

El Caballero Tomás Moro, famoso Cancellér de Inglaterra, puesto en prisión por Enrique octavo, dejó crecer sus cabellos y barba, y viniendo un barbero para cortarlos y afeitárle; amigo, le dijo: el Rey é yo pleiteamos sobre mi cabeza; é yo no quiero hacer el menor gasto en éste pleito, sin saber ántes quién de los dos ha de disponer de élla.

---

Luis doce, Rey de Francia, cuando no era sino Duque de Orleáns, había padecido muchos pesares de dos personas que habían sido favoritos en el reinado precedente. Uno de sus allegados procuraba inspirarle que les mostrase resentimiento. No, respondió su Magestad, que indigno es de un Rey de Francia tomar parte en la venganza del Duque de Orleáns.

---

Conrado tercero, Emperador, después de haber tomado á Múnick, determinó pasar los hombres á filo de la espada, permitiendo sólo á las mugeres salir de allí, pudiendo llevar sobre ellas sus muebles mas preciosos. Estas mugeres aprovechando la ocasión tomaron sobre sus hombros á sus maridos, asegurando eran sus mas preciosos muebles. Esto agradó tanto al Emperador, que no sólo perdonó á los habitantes, sino también á su Príncipe que había destinado á la muerte.

La Reina Isabel observando la bella gracia de un noble Español en un torneo, le preguntó un día que le digese absolutamente el nombre de su Dama. El Español lo resistió algún tiempo. En fin cediendo á su curiosidad, prometió á su Magestad enviárle su retrato. El día siguiente hizo presentár á su Magestad un paquetillo, donde la Reina no hallando sino un espejito, quedó sonrojada al punto.

---

Los cortesanos del Rey Filipo le aconsejaban que se vengase de un hombre que habia hablado mal de él. Antes es menester saber, si yo no le he dado razon, dijo Filipo: y habiéndose averiguado que el tal hombre jamas habia recibido cosa alguna, le envió ricos presentes. Supo el Rey poco después que el mismo le llenaba de alabanzas. Mirad pues, dijo á los cortesanos, que yo sé mejor que vosotros apaciguar una lengua mala.

---

Continuando las disputas entre Francisco primero, Rey de Francia, y Enrique octavo, Rey de Inglaterra; resolvió éste de enviar al primero un Embajador portador de palabras fieras y amenazas, para lo cual hizo eleccion del Obispo Bonner en que tenia gran confianza. Este Obispo le dijo que ponía su vida en gran peligro, si daba tales recados á un Rey tan altivo como Francisco primero. No temas, le dijo el Rey que si el Rey de Francia hiciése tal, yo haria caer muchas cabezas de Franceses que están aquí. Páse por ello, señor; pero cuál de esas cabezas me vendria tan bien sobre los hombros como ésta, poniendo el dedo á su sien.

---

Cuando el Mariscal de la Ferté hizo su entrada en Metz, los judíos que allí eran tolerados se presentaron al cumplimiento con todo habitante; y anunciándolos en la anticámara; no quiero verlos, dijo: porque ellos hicieron morir á nuestro Señor. Que no entren de ningún modo. Digéronles pues que no podian ver á su Escelencia. Á que replicaron sentidos, pues traian un presente de cuatro mil doblones. Lo que dicho inmediatamente á su Escelencia; oh bien! diles que entren; que éstos podres diábolos segoramente no lo conocian cuando lo crucificaron.

CORRESPONDENCIA MERCANTIL.  
COMMERCIAL CORRESPONDENCE.

---

*Cártas de Comércio, y Modé-  
los de una Factura, un Co-  
nocimiento, una Cuenta,  
Létras de Cámbio, Carta  
Promisoria y Carta de  
Crédito.*

Commercial Letters, and  
Models of an Invoice,  
Bill of Lading, an Ac-  
count, Bills of Exchange,  
Promissory Note and Let-  
ter of Credit.

*Propuesta para una Corres-  
pondencia.*

A Proposal for a Corres-  
pondence.

*México, 1 de Enero de 1825.*

Mexico, January 1, 1825.

Muy Señor mío, cómo ésta es la primera vez que tengo el honor de dirigirme á vm., espero que me perdonará la libertad que me he tomado.

Sir,

As this is the first time I have the honour of addressing you, you will, I hope, excuse the liberty I have now taken.

El ventajoso carácter que mi buen amigo el Señor Don N. me ha dado de su persona y casa de vm., me anima á pensar en una correspondencia mercantil que pueda ser ventajosa á vm., cómo á mí.

The honourable character my worthy friend Mr. N. has given me of your person and house, encourages me to think of a commercial correspondence which may be to our mutual advantage.

Pero ante todas cosas, necesito me franquee vm. el favor de darme una relacion de los pesos y medidas que comunmente se usan en Inglaterra, porque creo que se diferencian mucho de los de este país.

But before this, I must beg the favour to give me an account of the weights and measures which are commonly used in England, as I believe they differ materially from those in this country.

Yo estimaré ésta relacion como un favor particular, y vm. puede confiar en mi sinceridad y prontitud que le serviré en cuanto dependa de mis facultades.

I shall esteem this as a particular obligation, and you may rely upon my sincerity and readiness to serve you in whatever lies in my power.

Esperando que vm. me honre con su favorable respuesta, quedo rogando á Dios me guarde su vida muchos años.

B. L. M. de vm.

*In the expectation of your honouring me with a favourable answer, I remain,*

*Your obedient and humble servant.*

Ser. Don —.

Boston, February, 1825.

Mr. —

Boston, February, 1825.

Sir,

Muy Señor mío ; me es muy apreciable el favor que he recibido de vm. en la del 1º del últº, en la que me manifiesta los deseos que tiene de entablar conmigo una correspondencia mercantil ; yó me tendré por dichoso si puedo corresponder á las esperanzas de vm., y á la idea li-sonjera que se ha servido tomar de mi casa y familia.

Vm. no ignora, que nosotros los comerciantes debemos vivir de nuestra profesión, y promover nuestros intereses en cuanto sea compatible con el honor y la equidad.

Yó admito la proposición de vm., y en prueba de mi reconocimiento, remitiré á vm., por el primér buque que salga de este puerto para ese, varias partidas fabricadas en este país, y al precio mas bájo que se pueden dar ; la nómina de ellas, juntamente con los precios, irán insertas en las facturas.

Espero serán del gusto de vm., y que servirán de motivo para nuestro mayor conocimiento y trato ; y esté vm.

*I am most agreeably favoured by yours of the first ultº, wherein you show a desire to commence a commercial correspondence with me ; I shall think myself happy if I can answer your expectations, and the flattering idea you have been pleased to form of my house and family.*

*You well know, that we merchants must live by our profession, and promote our interest as far as is consistent with honour and equity.*

*I accept your proposal, and as a proof of my acknowledgment, I will send you, by the first vessel that sails from this port to your place, sundry parcels manufactured here, and at the lowest price that can be afforded ; the particulars thereof, together with the prices, will be inserted in the invoices.*

*I hope they will prove to your satisfaction, and be the foundation of our farther acquaintance and dealing ;*

seguro de que cualquiera cosa que confíe á mi cuidado, será egecutada y manejada con el mayor candor y fidelidad : y si éstas mercaderías como las que puede vm. necesitar en adelante, al tiempo de enfiar-delárlas ó de cualquier otro modo, sufriesen alguna avería, se hará la correspondiente rebaja, dándome vm. el aviso.

Incluyo á vm. muestras de otras producciones que pueden tener despacho en ese mercado : y en este caso, podré proveerle de todo cuanto necesite.

Si vm. puede hacerme retornos cómodos con sus vinos esquisitos, aguardiente, y frutas ; como también dos zurrónes de cochinilla, y 20 quintales de barrilla, se le dará á vm. su comisión ; el corretaje, almacenaje y todos los demás gastos de puerto se pagarán á parte.

En consecuencia de las órdenes de vm., le envío un estado de las pesas y medidas de Inglaterra : y además la diferencia de las monedas de España y las nuestras. Tocante á la subida y baja de los cambios y fondos, se informará vm. por nuestros papeles públicos.

Quedo rogando á Dios me guarde su vida muchos años. B. L. M. de vm. Su atento amigo.

*and assure yourself that whatever you trust to my charge, shall be performed and managed with the greatest candour and fidelity imaginable ; and if these goods or those you may want hereafter, should suffer any average in the packing or otherwise, proper allowance will be made, upon notice.*

*I herewith send you a sample of other staple commodities which may answer your market ; in that case, you may be furnished with every article you want.*

*If you can conveniently make returns in some of your exquisite wines, brandy, and fruits ; as also two zeroons of cochineal, and of kelp\* 20 quintals, you shall have your commission ; brokerage, storage and all other port-charges will be paid apart.*

*Pursuant to your orders, I send you a statement of the weights and measures used in England ; as also the difference of the value of coins between Spain and ours. Of the rise and fall of exchange and stocks, you may be informed by our public papers.*

*I remain your obedient humble servant, and respectful friend.*

---

\* Kelp se llama también barilla en Inglés.



## FACTÚRA.

Factúra de las Mercaderías embarcadas por el Sr. Don Agustín S. para los Señores *Cristóbal B. é hijos* de Cádiz á bordo del Navío nombrado el *Cisne*, su Capitan *Martín D.*, destinado para dicho Cádiz, por orden y cuenta de los dichos Señores, siendo numeradas y marcadas como sigue,

*A saber :*

No. 1 á 2.	{	2 Zurrónes de Cochinilla	-	-	-
1 á 75.		75 Quintales de Azafrán	-	-	-
C.B.E.		315 Cajas de Azúcar	-	-	-

	Súma, \$
Deréchos y Gasto	- - -
Comisión á 5 por ciento	-

Súma total, \$

Salvo Yerro y Omisión.

Bostón y Abril 9, de 1825.

R. D. T.

*Un Conocimiento.*

*A Bill of Lading.*

Londres, Febrero, 1825.

London, February, 1825.

Yó — vecino de —  
Maestre que soy del buen  
Navío (que Dióssálve) nom-  
brado N. N., que al presente  
está surto y anclado en el río  
Támesis, puerto de Londres,  
para con la buena ventura  
seguir éste presente viage al  
puerto de Cádiz; reconózco  
habér recibido, y tengo car-  
gado dentro del dicho mi Na-  
vío debájo de cubiérta, de vos  
N. N., seis fardos de baqueta  
de Moscovia, siete dichos de  
pañó Inglés, ocho de estófas,

*Shipped by the Grace of  
God in good order and well  
conditioned, by Mr. (or Mes-  
srs.) N. N. in and upon the  
good ship called N. N. where-  
of is master under God, for  
this present voyage, —  
now riding at anchor in the  
river Thames at London, and  
by God's aid bound for Ca-  
diz: to wit; six bales of  
Russia leather, seven ditto of  
English cloths, eight ditto of  
stuffs, nine ditto of bays, ten  
ditto of says and serges, five*

## INVOICE.

*Invoice of Merchandise shipped by Mr AUGUSTIN S. for Messrs. CHRISTOPHER B. & SONS of Cadiz, on board the Ship named SWAN, her Master MARTIN D., bound to said Cadiz, per order and account of the said Gentlemen, being numbered and marked as follows,*

TO WIT :	
No. 1 a 2, } 2 Zerbons of Cochineal - - -	
1 a 75. } 75 Quintals of Saffron - - -	
C.B.E. } 315 Boxes of Sugar - - -	

Amount, \$  
Duties and Charges - -  
Commission at 5 per Cent.

Total, \$

*Errors and Omissions excepted.*

*Boston, 9th April, 1825.*

*R. D. T.*

nuéve de bayétas, diéz de anascótes y sárgas, quiniéntas piézas de liénzo superfíno de la fábrica de Irlánda, seténta díchas de batistas, cincuenta táblas de mantéles adamascádos y cincuenta docénas de servillétas, un cajón de hója de láta, dos de latón ó azófar, tres de acéro, cuátro quintáles de cóbre, séis cájas de relójes de faltriquéra y díjes, séis cajónes de quinquillería ó buhonería, siéte de herramiéntas de córte, tódo enjúdo y bién acondicionádo, numerádos y marcádos con la márca al márgen. Con lo cuál promé-

*hundred pieces of superfine Irish linen, seventy ditto of cambric, fifty diaper table cloths, and fifty dozen of napkins, one chest of tin, two ditto of latten or brass, three ditto of steel, four quintals of copper, six boxes of watches and trinkets, six chests of hardware, seven ditto of edge tools, all in good order and condition, marked and numbered as in the margin ; and are to be delivered in the like good order and condition (the dangers of the seas only excepted) in the aforesaid port unto Mr. N. N. or Messrs.*

to, y me obligo, llevándome Dios en buen salvamento con el dicho mi Navío a espresado puerto, de acudir y entregar, por vos y en vuestro nombre, dichos géneros igualmente enjutos y bien acondicionados (sálvo los peligros del mar) á Don N. N. ó á los Señores — ó á quien allí por él fuere parte: pagándome de flete á razón de cuarenta chelines esterlines por cada tonelada, con diez por ciento de cápa y avería. Y en fe de que así me obligo á cumplir, os doy tres conocimientos de un tenor, firmados de mi nombre, por mí ó mi escribano; el uno cumplido, los otros no valgan. Fécho en Londres á primero de Febrero de 1825.

—, or his or (their) assigns; he or (they) paying freight at the rate of forty shillings per ton, with the usual primage and average. In witness whereof, the said Commander or his clerk has signed three bills of lading, all of this tenor and date; one of which being fulfilled, the other two to stand void. Dated in London, the 1st day of February, 1825.

Cádiz, Marzo, 1825.

Muy Señor mío. He recibido la estimada de vm. del primero de Febrero con el conocimiento de diversas mercaderías embarcadas abordo del Navío llamado el —, todo lo cual ha sido debidamente recibido en buena orden y condición: los géneros son todos de mi satisfacción, y espero que tendrán pronto despacho. Inclúsa va una letra de cambio contra los Señores —, de esa ciudad, que monta — á uso\* y medio, que vm. se servirá

Cadiz, March, 1825.

Sir,

The favour of yours of the 1st February came safe to hand with the bill of lading of sundries shipped on board the ship called the —, all of which are duly received in good order and condition: I have found the goods to my mind, and I hope will suit our market. You will receive herewith a Bill of Exchange on Messrs. —, of your city, to the amount of —, at one and a half usance, which be

\* The uso is two months in Spain.

cargar á mi cuenta ; el saldo que aún resta se remitirá sin dilación á su tiempo.

Quédo rogando á Dios guarde á vm. muchos años.

B. L. M. de vm.

Su mayor servidór.

Á D ———.  
Del Comercio de Londres.

*pleased to place to my credit ; the balance which remains due shall be punctually remitted in its time.*

*I have the honour to be*

*Respectfully,*

*Your humble servant.*

To Mr. ———  
*Merchant in London.*

Cádiz, á los S<sup>res</sup>. N. F.

París, á 24 de Márzo de 1825.

Múy S<sup>res</sup>. míos; confírmole á vms. mi ulta. de 8 del pas<sup>do</sup>. ; después recibí las muy favorecidas de vms. 29 del mismo, 2 y 4 del corte. en que me inclúyen una letra de . . . francos á cargo del Sr. N. de la q<sup>a</sup>. les he dado crédito. Téngo aún en mi poder la letra de cambio del Sr. B., de q<sup>a</sup>. procuraré el pago. No habiéndole hallado en su casa, le he hecho avisar p<sup>a</sup>. q<sup>a</sup>. me haga el pago de ella á su término. Por lo q<sup>a</sup>. mira á la otra remesa de vms. contra los S<sup>res</sup>. A y comp., no la han aceptado aún, suplicándome que aguarde hasta el lunes que es el día de correo de España : así lo he hecho ; veremos el resultado, y en caso q<sup>a</sup>. no la paguen, se la devolveré á vms. con la protesta al correo próx<sup>o</sup>.

Las cambiáles á largos días, pierden aquí un 5. p. 100 al año, y aún medio p. 100 al mes ; y así lo ha entendido el Sr. A. en la negociación de la letra que vms. han librado contra él ; si estuviéramos en mi mano, podría obtener un lucro de ella en el pag.<sup>to</sup> de enéro con medio p. 100 de beneficio, deducido la rebaja. Doy á vms, gracias por la orden que se han servido dar á su casa de París, p<sup>a</sup>. q<sup>a</sup>. pague por mí . . . á los S<sup>res</sup>. P., les he abonado de conformidad en su cuenta. Remito á vms. aquí adjuntas 3 letras de cambio á 60 días de vista.

Una á cargo del Sr. Don E. por, fr. 3,000

Otras dos sobre los S<sup>res</sup>. H. y comp.

de 1000 cada una, 2,000

5,000

50

Pérdida á 1 p. 100,

Sírvanse vms. hacérlas aceptar y abonarme de 4,950 por su importe, deducida la pérdida. Interin quédo rogando á Dios guarde á vuestras Mercedés muchos años, cómo desea  
Su mayor servidór, Q. S. M. B. X.

# CUÉNTA.

<i>Debe</i>	<i>Don F. D.</i>	<i>a</i>	<i>Don R. D. T.</i>	<i>Ha de haber.</i>
1825. Abril	Por 100 Cajas de Azúcar,	\$2000	1825. Abril	Por 200 Barriles de Harina. \$1000
"	" 100 Cajones de Cigárros	1000	"	" 100 idem Puérco salado 2000
	<u>Total,</u>	<u>\$3000</u>		<u>Total,</u> \$3000
	Sálvo Yerro y Omisión.			
	Bostón y Abril 9, de 1825.			(Firmádo) R. D. T.

# ACCOUNT.

<i>Debit</i>	<i>Mr. F. D.</i>	<i>to</i>	<i>R. D. T.</i>	<i>Credit.</i>
1825. April	To 100 Boxes Sugar, .	\$2000	1825. April	By 200 Barrels Flour, . \$1000
"	" 100 Boxes Cigars, .	1000	"	" 100 ditto Pork, . 2000
	<u>Total,</u>	<u>\$3000</u>		<u>Total,</u> \$3000
	Errors and Omissions excepted.			
	Boston, 9th April, 1825.			(Signed) R. D. T.

**Létra de Câmbio.****La Priméra.****Lóndres, 1825.****Por £400 esterlinas.**

Á dos úsos (ó á úso y mé-  
dio, ó á ocho días vista) se  
servirá vm. mandár pagar  
por ésta mi priméra de câm-  
bio á Don —, ó á su ór-  
den, cuátrocientas libras es-  
terlinas, valor recibido de  
D. N. N., que sentará vm.  
cómo por aviso. M. N.

Á Don —,

Comerciánte en Cádiz.

**A Bill of Exchange.****The First.****London, 1825.****For £400 sterling.**

*At double usance (or at  
usance and a half, or at eight  
days sight) pay by this my first  
bill of exchange to Mr. —,  
or order, the sum of four hun-  
dred pounds sterling, value  
received of Mr. N. N. and  
place it to account as per  
advice. M. N.*

To Mr. —,

Merchant in Cadiz.

**Priméra.****Aviso de una Létra de Câmbio.****Lóndres 1 de Enero de 1825.**

Múy Señor mío. Hóy mis-  
mo he librado contra vm. una  
létra de câmbio, á úso y médio  
á favór de Don —, ó á su  
órden, por la cantidad de cuá-  
trocientas libras esterlinas,  
que me hará vm. la finéza de  
honrar, y cargar á mi cuenta.

Quédo rogándo á Diós me  
guárde su vida muchos años.

B. L. M. de vm.

S. S. S.

Á Don —,

Del comércio de Cádiz.

**Prima.****Advice of a Bill of Ex-  
change.****London, January 1, 1825.**

Sir,

*I have this day drawn on  
you a bill of exchange, at  
one and a half usance, in  
favour of Mr. —, or  
his order, for four hundred  
pounds sterling, which I beg  
you to honour, and place to  
my account.*

I have the honour to be,

Sir, respectfully,

your obedient servant.

To Mr. —,

Merchant in Cadiz.

**La Segúnda.****Lóndres. 1825.****Por £400 esterlinas.**

Á dos úsos se servirá vm.  
pagár por ésta mi segúnda

34

**The Second.****London, 1825.****For £400 sterling.**

*At double usance pay this  
my second bill of Exchange*

de cámbio (no habiéndolo hecho por la primera) á Don N. N. ó á su orden cuatrocientas libras esterlinas, &c. (first not paid) to Mr. N. N. or order, the sum of four hundred pounds sterling, &c.

## El Endóso.

Páguese á Don N. N. ó á su orden, valor en cuenta con, (ó valor recibido de) dicho.

## The Endorsement.

Pay to Mr. N. N. or his order, value in account with, (or value received from) the said.

## Cárta Promisória.

Lóndres, 1 de Enéro, 1825.

Á úso y médio contado desde la presente data, prometo pagar á Don —, ó á su orden, la cantidad de —, por valor recibido en dinéro contado, ó en géneros á mi satisfacci6n.

A. B.

£

## Promissory Note.

London, January 1, 1825.

At one and a half usance after date, I promise to pay to Mr. —, or his order, the sum of —, for value received in ready money, or in goods to my satisfaction.

A. B.

£

## Cárta de Crédito.

Lóndres, 1 de Enéro de 1825.

Múy Señor mío. Vmd. recibirá ésta de la mano del Señor Don —, (que pása á viajar por divérsas pártes de Eur6pa) y me hará la fin6za de proveérle de cártas de recomendaci6n pára las principales ciudádes de España; su objéto es salir de aquí inmediatamente pára ésa. Créo que tendrá vmd. múcho gústo en tratárle por ser un caballéro igualmente distinguido por su mérito personal y por su nacimiénto; por lo que, espéro que vm. le franquéé la

## Letter of Credit.

London, January 1, 1825.

Sir,

You will receive this by the hands of Mr. —, (who is upon his travels into divers parts of Europe) and I beg you will provide him with recommendatory letters to the principal cities in Spain: his design is to set out from hence for your city immediately. I think you will be pleased with his acquaintance, as he is a gentleman equally distinguished for his personal merit and birth; be so kind, therefore, to give

mas generosa recepcion, y durante su estada en esa ciudad le sirva con todo el acatamiento que esté en su poder. Al mismo tiempo me hará vm. el favor de franquearle sobre doble recibo el dinero que necesite hasta la suma de — que podrá vm. reembolsar cargándolo á mi cuenta, enviándome uno de sus recibos. Espero que vm. me desempeñará como amigo en esto asunto; y mientras,

Quedo rogando á Dios me guarde su vida muchos años.

B. L. M. de vm.

S. S. S.

Á Don —,  
Banquero de Cádiz.

*Confirmación de la anterior,  
enviada por el Correo.  
Londres, 1 de Enero, 1825.*

Muy Señor mío. Con esta data he escrito á vm. otra que le entregará el Señor —, caballero Inglés, con cuya casa tengo la mayor intimidad; y deseando servirle por su cuenta he tomado con gusto esta ocasión que se me ofrece: Por tanto con el mayor empeño suplico á vmd. le procure todas las diversiones é informes de forma que se halle gustoso en esa ciudad. También se servirá vm. de franquearle todo el dinero que pidiere, hasta la cantidad de

*him the best reception, and serve him as effectually as in your power during his abode in your city. You will also do me the favour to supply him on his double receipt with what money he may have occasion for, to the amount of —, for which you may reimburse yourself by charging it to my account, and transmitting one of his receipts to me. I hope you will attend to this my request as a friend, and in the mean time, I have the honour to be,  
Respectfully,*

*Your obedient servant.*

To Mr. —,  
Banker in Cadiz.

*Confirmation of the preceding, sent by the Post.  
London, January 1, 1825.  
Sir,*

*I wrote to you this day a letter which will be delivered to you by Mr. —, an English gentleman, with whose family I am very intimate: and desirous of serving him on his own account I have embraced with pleasure this opportunity which offers. I therefore most earnestly request of you to procure him such diversions and information as may render his stay in your city agreeable. You will also please to supply him with all the money he may*



—tomándole recibo doble por lo que le entregue ; uno de los cuáles me enviará, y lo cargará á mi cuenta. Inclúsa va su firma pára que vm. la conózca, y la hónre cómo correspónde. Yó me lisonjéo de que vm. tendrá múcho gústo en lográ el conocimíento de un bello jóven caballero, que ha recibido la mejór educaci3n.

Quédo rogádo á Dí3s me guárde su vida múchos años.

B. L. M. de vm.

S. S. S.

Sor. Don —. Cadiz.

*ask to the amount of ———, taking of him a double receipt for the same, one of which you will send to me, and you will charge it to my account. I have enclosed herein his signature, that you may know it, and conduct yourself accordingly. I flatter myself you will be much pleased in enjoying the acquaintance of a sensible young gentleman, who has had an excellent education.*

*I have the honour to be,*

*Most respectfully,*

*Your obedient servant.*

*Mr. —. Cadiz.*

### *Cárta3 críticas de un Móro viajánte en España.*

*Por Don JOSÉ CADÁL3O.*

#### CÁRTA I.

*De Gazél á Ben-Beláy.*

Aún no me hálo capáz de obedecér á las nuévas instáncias que me háces sóbre que te remita las observaci3nes que v3y haciéndo en la capital de ésta vásta monarquía. Sábes tú cuántas cósas se necesitan pára formár una verdadéra idéa del país en que se viája ? Bién es verdád, que habiéndo hécho vários viáges por Eur3pa, me hálo mas capáz, ó por mejór decir, con ménos obstáculos que ótros Africános ; péro aún así he halládo tánta diferéncia éntre los Européos, que no básta el conocimíento de úno de los países de ésta pártedel mún-do, pára juzgár de ótros estádos de la misma. Los Européos no parécen vecinos, aunque la esterioridád los háya uniformádo en mé3as, teátros, paséos, egército, y lújo : no ob3tánte las léyes, vicios, virtúdes, y gobiérno son sumaménte divérsos, y por consiguíente las costúmbres própias de cáda naci3n.

Aún dentro de la Española háy variedad increíble en el carácter de sus provincias. Un Andalúz en náda se parece á un Vizcaíno ; un Catalán es totalmènte distinto de un Gallego ; y lo mismo sucede éntre un Valenciano y un Montañés. Ésta Península, dividida tantos siglos en diferentes reinos, ha tenido siémpre variedad de tráges, léyes, idiomas, y monedas,

Acábo de leér la História de España, y me parece que de la relación se puede inferir, lo priméro ; que ésta península no ha gozado una paz que pueda llamarse tal en cerca de dos mil años, y que por consiguiente es maravilla, que aún tengan yerbas los campos, y aguas las fuentes. Lo segúndo ; que habiendo sido la religión motivo de tantas guerras contra los descendientes de Tarif, no es mucho que sea objeto de todas sus acciones. Lo tercéro ; que la continuación de estar con las armas en la mano, les háya hécho mirár con desprecio el comércio é industria mecánica. Lo cuárto ; que de esto mismo nazca lo mucho que cada nóble en España se envanéce de su nobléza. Lo quánto ; que los muchos caudales adquiridos rápidamente en Indias, distraén á muchos de cultivár las artes mecánicas en la península y de aumentár su población.

Las demás consecuencias morales de éstos eventos políticos las irás notando en las cartas que te escribiré sobre éstos asuntos.

## CARTA II.

*Del mismo, al mismo.*

El atraso de las ciencias en España en éste siglo ; quién puede dudár que procede de la falta de protección que hallan sus profesores ? Háy cocheros en Madrid, que ganan trescientos pesos duros ; pero no háy quién no sépa que se ha de morir de hambre, cómo se entregue á las ciencias, exceptuadas las de *pane lucrando*, que son las únicas que dan de comer.

Los pocos que cultivan las ótras, son cómo los aventureros voluntarios de los egércitos que no llévan paga y se exponen mas. Es un gústo oírlos hablar de matemáticas, física moderna, historia natural, derecho de gentes, antigüedades, y létras humanas, á véces con mas recato que si hiciéran

moneda falsa. Viven en la oscuridad y mueren como vivieron, tenidos por sabios superficiales en el concepto de los que saben poner setenta y siete silogismos seguidos sobre si los cielos son fluidos ó sólidos.

Hablando pocos dias ha con un sabio escolástico de las mas condecorados en su carrera, le oí esta expresion con motivo de haberse nombrado á un sujeto escelente en matemáticas, *sí, en su país se aplican mucho á esas cosas, como matemáticas, lenguas orientales, física, derecho de gentes, y otras semejantes.* Pero yo te aseguro, Ben-Beley, que si señalasen premios para los profesores, premios de honor ó de interés, ó de ámbos, ique progresos no harían! Si hubiese siquiera quien los protegiere, se esmerarian sin mas estímulo positivo; pero no háy protectores.

Tan persuadido está mi amigo Núño de esta verdad, que hablando de esto, me dijo: en otros tiempos, allá cuando me imaginaba, que era útil y glorioso dejar fama en el mundo, trabajé una obra sobre varias partes de la literatura que habia cultivado aunque con mas amor que buen suceso. Quise que saliese bajo la sombra de algún poderoso, como es natural á todo autor principiante. Oí á un magnate decir, que todos los autores eran locos: á otro, que las dedicatorias eran estafas: á otro, que renegaba de él que inventó el papel; otro se burlaba de los hombres que se imaginaban saber algo: otro me insinuó, que la obra que le sería mas aceptá, sería la letra de una tonadilla: otro me dijo, que me viera con un criado suyo, para tratar de esta materia; otro ni me quiso hablar: otro ni me quiso responder; otro ni me quiso escuchár: y de resultas de todo esto tomé la determinación de dedicár el fruto de mis desvelos al mózo-que traía el agua á casa.

### CARTA III.

*Del mismo, al mismo.*

Cuando hice el primér viage por Európa, te di noticia de un país que llaman Francia, y está mas allá de los montes Pirineos. Desde Inglaterra me fué muy fácil y cierto el tránsito. Registré sus provincias septentrionales; llegué á su capital, pero no pude examínarla á mi gusto, por ser corto el tiempo que podía gastar entonces en ello, y ser mucho el que se necesita para egecutarlo con provecho.

Ahora he visto. la parte meridional de ella, saliendo de España por Cataluña, y entrando por Guipúzcoa, internándome hasta León por un lado, y Burdeos por otro.

Los Franceses están tan mal queridos en este siglo, como los Españoles lo eran en el anterior; sin duda, porque uno y otro siglo han sido precedidos de las eras gloriosas respectivas de cada nación, que fué la de Carlos V para España, y la de Luis XIV para Francia. Este último es mas reciente; con que también es mas fuerte su efecto; pero bien examinada la causa, creo hallar mucha preocupación de parte de todos los Europeos contra los Franceses. Conozco, que el desenfreno de su juventud; la mala conducta de algunos que viajan fuera de su país, profesando un sumo desprecio de todo lo que no es Francia; el lujo que ha corrompido la Europa; y otros motivos semejantes repugnan á todos sus vecinos mas sóbrios; á saber, al Español religioso, al Italiano político, al Inglés soberbio, al Holandés avaro, y al Alemán áspero; pero la nación entera no debe padecer la nota por culpa de algunos individuos. En ambas vueltas, que he dado por Francia, he hallado en sus provincias (que siempre mantienen las costumbres mas puras que la capital) un trato humano, cortés y afable para los extranjeros, no producido de la vanidad de que se les visite y admire, (cómo puede suceder en Paris,) sino dimanado verdaderamente de un corazón franco y sencillo, que halla gusto en procurárselo al desconocido. Ni aun dentro de su capital, que algunos pintan como el centro de todo desorden, confusión y lujo, faltan hombres verdaderamente respetables. Todos los que llegan á cierta edad, son sin duda los mas sociables del Universo; porque desvanecidas las tempestades de su juventud, les queda el fondo de una índole sincera, prolija educación (que en este país es común) y exterior agradable, sin la astucia del Italiano, la soberbia del Inglés, la asperéza del Alemán, la avaricia del Holandés, y el despegó del Español.

En llegando á los cuarenta años, se transforma el Francés en otro hombre distinto de lo que era á los veinte. El militar concurre al trato civil con suma urbanidad; el magistrado con sencillez, y el particular con sosiego; todos con ademanes de agasajar al extranjero que se halla medianamente introducido por su Embajador, calidad, talento ú otro motivo. Se entiende todo esto entre la gente de forma; que con la mediana y común, el mismo hecho de ser extranjero, es una

- recomendación superior á cuántas puede llevar él que viaja.

La misma desenvoltura de los jóvenes, insufrible á quien no los conoce, tiene un no sé que, que los hace amables. Por ella se descubre todo el hombre interior incapaz de rencores, astucias bajas, ni intención dañada. Cómo procuro indagar precisamente el carácter de las cosas verdadero, y no graduárlas por las apariencias, casi siempre engañosas, no me parece tan odioso aquel bullicio y descompostura, por lo que llevo dicho. Del mismo dictamen es mi amigo Núño, no obstante lo quejoso que está de que los Franceses no sean igualmente imparciales, cuando hablan de los Españoles.

#### CARTA IV.

*De Ben-Belley á Gazel.*

Acabo de leer el último libro de los que me has enviado en los varios viajes que has hecho por Europa; con el cual llegan á algunos centenares las obras Europeas de distintas naciones y tiempos que he leído. Gazel! Gazel! sin duda tendrás por grande lo que voy á decirte: y si publicas este mi dictamen, no habrá Europeo que no me llame bárbaro Africano; pero la amistad que te profeso, es muy grande, para dejar de correspondér con mis observaciones á las tuyas; mi sinceridad es tanta, que en nada puede mi lengua hacer traición á mi pecho. En este supuesto, digo, que de los libros que he referido, he hecho la siguiente separación. He escogido cuatro de matemáticas, en los que admiro la extensión y acierto que tiene el entendimiento humano cuando va bien dirigido: otros tantos de filosofía escolástica, en que me asombra la variedad de ocurrencias extraordinarias que tiene el hombre, cuando no procede sobre principios ciertos y evidentes: uno de medicina, al que falta un tratado completo de los simples, cuyo conocimiento es diez mil veces mayor en África: otro de anatomía, cuya lectura fué sin duda la que dió motivo al cuento del loco, que se figuraba tan quebradizo como el vidrio: dos de los que reforman las costumbres, en las que advierto lo mucho que aún tienen que reformar; cuatro del conocimiento de la naturaleza, ciencia que llaman filosofía; en los que noto lo mucho que ignoraron nuestros abuelos, y lo mucho mas que tendrán que aprender nuestros

niétos. Algunos de poesía, delicioso delirio del alma, que prueba la ferocidad en el hombre si la aborrece ; puerilidad, si la profesa toda la vida ; y suavidad, si la cultiva algún tiempo.

Todas las demás obras de las ciencias humanas las he arrojado ó distribuido, por parecerme inútiles estráctos, compendios defectuosos, y copias imperfectas de lo ya dicho, y repetido una y mil veces.

---

## CARTAS FAMILIARES.

*Del Padre JOSÉ FRANCISCO de ISLA, escritas á varios sujetos.*

### CARTA I.

*El Padre de Isla á su hermana.*

La Coruña, 24 de Setiembre, de 1755.

Mi amada María Francisca : discúrro que tus oraciones, y las de tu penitenciario me consiguieron un tiempo tan feliz hasta una légua antes de llegar á la Coruña, en que me llovió un poco, sin duda para que conociése lo mucho que debía á las devotas almas que me encomendaban á Dios ; y acaso será efecto de lo mismo la descomposición de vientre que me dura tres días ha ; pues cómo no prosiga adelante, será mas beneficio que indisposición, aunque sirva de molestia mientras persevera. Tu salud me tiene con mas cuidado de él que manifiesto, siendo razón que yo oculte mi dolor á quien por no aumentármelo me dissimula lo que padece, porqué así lo pide la buena correspondencia. Nunca he pretendido saber mas de lo que me quisieren decir, ni que me quieran mas de lo que me quisieren querer ; con que siendo en este punto sumamente fácil la conformidad, sólo aspiraré á manifestar en todas ocasiones que ninguno te ama ni puede amarte mas que

*Tu amante hermano y padrino,*

JOSÉ FRANCISCO.

## CÁRTA II.

*Del mismo á su cuñado.*

Villagarcía, 2 de Enero, de 1756.

Amado hermano y amigo : no es de extrañar que en corréo de pascuas (1) y en la misma víspera de ellas hubiesen tardado tanto en dar cartas. Si el mundo amaneciera un año con juicio, en ningún tiempo se debiera tardar menos ; pero dejémosle correr su tren, pues no se puede remediar. No obstante yo he conseguido este año no haber recibido hasta ahora mas que tres cartas de pascuas, y esas de gente novicia en mi correspondencia á escepción del Señor Taranco, á quien, por mas que he hecho, no he podido espeler del cuerpo este espíritu maligno, siendo las pascuas mas seguras en su carta que en el calendario.

Diviértete en leer esa necia satisfacción que me da N . . . á la pieza que me jugó, suponiendo que yo había de ir á Villár de Frades á esperar el coche para dar las órdenes á los cocheros. Allá tiene una respuesta, cuál la merece su bobería, con el nuevo cargo de que su hijo pásase á vista de Villagarcía sin entrar en ella ; y suponiendo que él por sí no era capaz de hacerla, sinó mediáran las instrucciones de su padre, le pregunto que motivo le he dado para que le instruyese tan mal ; él me ha dado malos ratos, pero no los llevará buenos con mis cartas, y estoy esperando las de padre é hijo para ver por donde parten. Este último es natural que trueque el viage de Portugal por él de París, adonde dicen que irá el Conde de Aranda por embajador ordinario después de haber evacuado ya su embajada extraordinaria, que parece se redujo precisamente á condolencia por la destrucción de Lisboa y á socorrer á aquéllos Príncipes con caudales y con géneros.

Recibí una carta atrasadísima de D. Miguel de Medina, en que me resume lo que le escribe Mascaréñas, desde el campo delante de lo que fué Lisboa, á los diez y ocho dias de su total destrucción. Dice que se salvó con toda su familia entre una espesa lluvia de piedras y de cascájo por especial protección de la santísima virgen, habiendo visto primero desplomarse toda su casa, y después arder con todos los

(1) *Pascua*, en Español, significa. todas las grandes fiestas, especialmente las de Navidad.

muébles, alhajas y papéles. Éstos últimos y los libros son los que mas le duelen, no habiéndose eximido mas que unos pocos que tenía en una quinta, y un cajón de ellos que le llegó de Madrid, el día después de la fatalidad. Sólo pide á Medina mas y mas libros, especialmente de arquitectura, porque el rey de Portugal trata de edificar una nueva corte de planta en parage distinto de la antigua, aunque éste todavía no se ha determinado. Á mí aún no me ha escrito, no obstante tener tres ó cuatro cartas mías, pero ni lo extraño, ni me quejo.

Llegaron los diez y ocho barriles de escabéches y de dulce, buenos todos, á escepción de uno de sardinas, que debía de estar mal calafeteado, y se abrió en el camino. Repito gracias, y renuevo todo lo que te supliqué en la posta pasada.

Dime, si has recibido ese cajoncillo de cigarrros de la Habana, porque cada día me confirmo mas en la sospecha de alguna maniobra del mesonero de Villar de Frades, en cuyo poder los puso el P. Manuel de Barachaguren, administrador de esta iglesia; y el pícaro del mesonero no háy forma de decir cómo se llamaba el maragato á quien dice se los entregó, y que se obligó á llevarlos. Antes de ayer ví o de allá Pinilla, que está encargado de esta averiguación, y sólo me trajo razón de que el maragato había vuelto á pasar á Madrid, y que á su regreso á Santiago le haría cargo el mesonero de dicho cajoncillo. Yó hubiera ya ido en persona á Villar de Frades á liquidar este embuste y á escarmentar al mesonero, si el tiempo lo hubiera permitido; pero á reserva de dos días que por fuerza eran ocupados en la iglesia, todos los demás han sido intratables.

Hubo carta de Roma de 17 de noviembre; pero nada dice de congregación, ni del P. Idiaquez. Tampoco me ocurre mas añadir, sinó rogar á Dios te me guarde como ha menester,

*Tu amante hermano y amigo,*  
JOSÉ.

### CARTA III.

*Del mismo, al mismo.*

Búrgos, 21 de Enero, de 1757.

Amado hermano y amigo: salí de Villagarcía el día 15: en él se estancó dos veces la calésa sobre el hielo, y la segun-



da vez estuvo encima de él desde las cuatro de la tarde hasta las once del día siguiente, y nosotros dentro de ella por espacio de tres horas. Socorriéronnos caritativamente de un lugar vecino, enviándonos caballerías para que subiésemos á él, y llegamos como puedes considerár. Allí tomamos otras dos mulas para que ayudásen á romper el hielo y nieve hasta Palencia : pero aún así no quise entrár en la calésa, y fui á caballo hasta la misma ciudad. En ella me detuve día y medio: tomé otra calésa, mejoró el tiempo, y voy caminando, gracias á Dios, con felicidad, después de haber padecido muchas tentaciones de volvérmelo á mi colegio.

No tengo tiempo de escribir á María Francisca, ni á las demás personas que me hacen merced, y sirva ésta para todas. Hoy llegué á Búrgos entre mil trabajos y peligros. Mañana parto tomando de aquí otras dos mulas para pasar los montes de Oca, que son lo mas peligroso del camino. La salud buena, á escepción del pecho, que se me cerró el día que estuve sobre el hielo. Á Dios.

*Tu hermano, JOSÉ.*

#### CARTA IV.

*Del mismo, al mismo.*

Zaragoza, 18 de Marzo, de 1756.

Amado hermano y amigo ; según lo que me dices en la tuya de dos del corriente, contemplo ya á madre en la otra vida, y á padre muy cerca de ella : cúmplase en todo la voluntad del Señor. Yo voy continuando con felicidad mi carrera, teniendo ya andado mas de la mitad de ella. Me han pedido varios sermones para imprimirlos, pero no lo conseguirán. La salud se ha resentido un poco, porque no soy de alabastro ; pero no me ha estorbado, gracias á Dios, cumplir con mi ministerio.

Un abrazo á María Francisca, y vive como necesita

*Tu amante hermano y amigo,*

JOSÉ FRANCISCO.

## CARTA V.

*Del mismo al mismo.*

Zaragóza, 22 de Márzo, de 1757.

Amádo hermano y amigo : cuándo esperába la noticia de la muerte de nuéstrs dos enfermos, me hállo gustosaménte sorprendido con la que me das de su recóbro en la túya de 9 del corriénte. Bendito sea Diós por éste nueúo beneficio. Sólo, sí, me da cuidádo la salud de María Francísca, cuyos escésos de amor son incorregíbles. Yó estóy molido y médio reventádo después de véinte y ócho sermones, faltándome todavía diéz y séis. El fruto es gránde, y éste es mi único consuélo. Á Diós, que te guarde cómo ha menéster,

*Tu amante hermano y amigo,*

JOSÉ FRANCISCO.

## CARTA VI.

*Del mismo á su hermana.*

Villagarcía, 17 de Júnio, de 1757.

Hija mía : tus cartas de priméro y ócho del corriénte que llegaron júnatas, porque así lo quiéren los señóres estafetéros, me déjan con la misma alternativa de aféctos que tú esperiméntas en tu salud. De buena gana partiría contigo mi robustéz, porque aunque no me sóbra mucha, ménos me bastaría pára mis taréas ordinárias y estraordinárias. Los baños cási fuéron las priméras medicínas que se conociéron en el múnndo, y por múnchos siglos las únicas ; por éso téngo mucha fe con éellos. La dificultád está en atinár que espécie de baños son los que se opónen á tal espécie de enfermédades, y cuáles acháques son los que no puéden resistír á táles baños. En tódo caminan á tiéntas los médicos ; mas por lo mismo puéde ser que aciérten, porque tal vez háce la casualidad lo que no puéde hacér la elección y el discernimiéto. Yá estamos en el mejór tiémpo de tomárls, que es el mes de júnio y cercanías de S. Juán, especialménte si por allá comiénzan á esplicárse los calóres, que por acá todavía están muy remisos. Mi parecer es que no piérdas día, pues si surtiésen buén efecto, tendrás lugar pára recobrár las fuérzas que son

menester para repetirlos para setiembre. Yó no abandonaría el uso de los polvos de Aix, habiéndolos experimentado tan propicios, sin estrañar que hasta ahora no hubiesen desarraigado la causa, porque cuando las raíces son profundas, es menester no dejar el azadón de la mano hasta arrancárlas, y éso no se hace en un día.

No puedo negar que cuánto mas largas son tus cartas, mas me gustan; pero tampoco me puede gustar finéza tuya que sea en detrimento de tu salud; y así mientras Dios no te la mejore, me contentaré con una fe de vida, para lo cual basta tu firma, y me darás que sentir siempre que tuvieres que padecer por consolarme. Las memorias acostumbradas; y  
A Dios, hija.

*Tu amante hermano.*

JOSE FRANCISCO.

## CARTA VII.

*Del mismo á la misma.*

León, 4 de Mayo, de 1759..

Hija mía; hoy hace ocho días que llegué á esta ciudad, habiendo gastado cuatro en el camino, porque me detuve dos en el monasterio de Véga con mi prima. La mitad del viage fué con gran calor, y la otra mitad con escesivo frío, el que ha continuado desde que llegué acompañado de agua, de vientos fuertes, y también de algo de nieve. Pagué la patente en la primera noche con un fuerte dolor cólico que me obligó á guardar cama todo el día siguiente; pero como rompió por ambas vías, quedé presto desahogado. Lo mismo sucedió al General de S. Benito, que se halla en esta ciudad; sólo que á éste le acometió á la despedida, y á mí á la entrada; por cuya razón y por el mal tiempo suspendió el viage, que ya tenía echado á Espinaréda. Visitóme al día siguiente de mi arriba: comí con su Reverendísima otro día. Me ha visitado toda la ciudad, y como con el Intendente los días que me déjan libres otros convites. He celebrado mucho ver la fábrica de telas, aunque temo que se atrase por la desunión de los que principalmente la manejan. Luego que el tiempo lo permita, me restituiré á mi celdita, cuya quietud se me hace mas apetecible, siempre que carézco de ella.

*Vive tanto como tu amante,*  
JOSE.

## CARTA VIII.

*Del mismo al Sr. D. G. R.*

Pontevedra, 25 de Máyo, de 1764.

Múy Señor mío y mi dueño: tengo la fortuna de que V. S. me conozca muchos años ha. Si no se le ha borrado de la memoria mi carácter, tendrá muy presente mi realidad y mi enteréza. La carne y sangre no me hacen fuérza, ni las pasiones humanas me han cegado nunca la razón. Concederésla á mi mayor enemigo, siempre que la tenga; negarésela, y se la negué alguna vez á mi mismo padre, cuando concebí que no la tenía.

Hermáno mío es Don José Joaquín de Isla y Losada. Si en el injusto, voluntario y empeñado pleito criminal que le suscitaron sus contrarios, no hubiera sido testigo ocular de su inocencia, é yo hubiese de sentenciarle, el primer voto que tendria contra sí seria el mio, y no seria el mas benigno. Sobradas esperiencias tiene él mismo de ésta mi enteréza en los varios sucesos de su vida. En los mas me tuvo contra sí, pero en el presente no puedo desampararle, ni es razón que niegue á un hermáno mío lo que en iguales circunstancias concedería á quien hubiese quitado violentamente la vida á mi padre y á mi madre.

Pasaron á mi vista todos los lances, porque me hallaba en Santiago en aquél turbado día. No hallé que condenar en éste mozo, y lo que mas es, ni tampoco lo hallaron sus mismos contrarios. Ellos formaron los primeros autos, y por éstos mismos autos le absolviéron los Señores jueces del recto tribunal de que V. S. es digno miembro. Me aseguran que la segunda probanza nada añade á la primera, sinó confirmár mas y mas el empeño de acabár de arruinar á ese mozo, para cubrit fina inconsideración con la pérdida de un inocente.

Alégan los contrarios su honor y él de una comunidad verdaderamente muy respetable. Ésta le tendrá siempre muy resguardado, y nunca podrá dependér de la precipitación de algunos particulares menos detenidos. Pero supongámos que depénda: y no se interesará también el honor del tribunal de V. S., en que sin nuevos, grandes y evidentes documentos no reforme lo que pronunció con tanto exámen y con tanta madurez? Mas nada de ésto es del caso. El dictámen de que conviene que perézca un inocente, para que no perézcan muchos culpados, ya sabemos todos la baja cuna que tuvo.

Nunca le adoptáron por súyo los tribunales cristianos. En ellos reina y reinará la máxima contraria: ménos malo es absolver á muchos culpados, que condenar á un inocente.

Estálo sin duda mi hermano en el feo delito que le impútan. Todos los esfuerzos de sus contrarios, siendo tantos, tan poderosos y tan empeñados, no pudieron conseguir que dejáse de conocerlo y de definirlo así el rectísimo tribunal. Grande es la fuerza de la inocencia, cuando no bastan á oprimirla las máquinas del poder. Mejor diré: siempre es muy débil el poder con los tribunales donde preside la justicia. Éste es hoy todo mi consueto y toda mi esperanza.

Nada mas tengo que esponer á V. S. Pedirle que haga gracia á mi hermano, sería suponerle reo, pues en pléitos criminales no cabe otro que moderar el rigor de las leyes. Suplicarle otra cosa, sería agraviar su integridad, que tengo muy conocida. Con que en suma esta carta sólo se reduce á dar testimonio de que mi profundo silencio no ha dependido de que tenga por culpado á José Joaquín, como alguno ha querido soñar; sinó precisamente de haber descansado y descansar en la justicia de la causa, y en la equidad de los jueces. Tampoco he querido malograr esta oportuna y casi necesaria ocasión de renovar á V. S. todo mi antiguo respeto. Nuestro Señor guarde á V. S. muchos años como puede y le suplico. B. L. M. de V. S.

*Su mas atento servidór y capellán,*  
**JOSÉ FRANCISCO DE ISLA.**

## CARTA IX.

*Del mismo á su hermana.*

Bolonia, 8 de Junio, de 1780.

Amada hija, hermana y Señora mía: recibí tu estimadísima carta de 2 del pasado, acompañada con la gaceta de Madrid, su fecha 23 del mismo, con que me regala siempre nuestro amantísimo sobrino. Según estas dos fechas tu carta se detuvo veinte y un dias en Madrid ó en Parma, porque si hubieran caminado juntas la gaceta y ella, no pudiera la una ganar á la otra las enormes ventajas que la ganó en el camino. El que las recibe en Parma, no es capaz de detenerlas ni un sólo momento, porque deseosísimo de servirte á tí, y de complacerme á mí, é informado también de que ni á tí ni á mí

nos ha quedado otro consuelo igual á él de nuestra inocente conversacion, tampoco él tiene otro mayor que él de cooperar á que lo logremos con toda la posible puntualidad y prudente frecuencia. Résta pues, que dicha carta se hubiese quedado trasapelada en tu escritorio ó en el buró de él que nos hace el singular favor de dirigirlas. Parecióme que debía advertirte esto para tu gobierno.

He celebrado mucho que hayas abandonado la casa húmeda, fría y sin ventilación que habitabas, atribuyéndolo á ella con sobrada razón, á lo ménos gran parte de lo que has padecido en el pasado invierno. Alegrarme infinito de que te trate mejor, como lo espero, la calle de Atócha, junto á Loréto, donde te has pasado. Si no tengo trastornada la memoria, (cómo lo tengo) pareceme que la calle de Atócha hacía parte del cuartel del oriente de Madrid, reputado por el mas sano; lo que si fuere así, no contribuirá poco á tu recobro. No me dices el número de la casa, ni el cuarto que en ella habitas, lo que dicen es necesario para guía de los sobrescritos.

Al Señor Conde de Aranda solamente le escribí desde Calvi sobre los manuscritos que me habían embargado en España, suplicándole que si después de examinados no se hallase en ellos cosa que ofendiese á la religion ni al estado, se sirviese su Escelencia disponer que aquellos inocentes hijos viniessen á hacer compañía á su pobre y desterrado padre. Respondióme aquel Señor que eso ya no estaba en su mano; pero que estuviere sin cuidado porque aquellos hijos estaban á cargo de quien haría que fuessen tratados como los trataría su mismo padre, sin permitir que ninguno se metiese con ellos. Esto fué en suma la respuesta.

Correspondo cordialísimamente á la memoria que hacen de mí los amigos Ramírez y Casás. Deséo con las mayores ansias que el primero triunfe cuánto antes, y no césó de rogar á Dios por el recobro del segundo.

Días ha que está concluida la versión de *Gil Blas*; pero ni mi cabeza ni mi pulso me han permitido emprender todavía el prólogo y dedicatoria. Los calóres son excesivos, y con ellos se hace mayor cada día mi dejamiento y mi suma debilidad.

Á Dios, hija mía: á Dios, y manda á éste tu amante hermano,

*Padrino y servidor,*

JOSÉ FRANCISCO.

## CARTA X.

*Del mismo á un amigo suyo.*

Quién siendo poco mas rico que el Padre de Isla, pero habiendo oído que éste estaba muy necesitado, le escribió, ofreciéndole partir con él lo poco que le quedaba.

Querido amigo : ¡ que sobrehumana fuerza es ésta ! ; que alma ha jamás sido capaz de tan heroicas acciones ! Temes, te persuades que estoy necesitado, ¡ y quieres partir conmigo lo poco que te queda ! Mercedes que te erijan estatuas : y si fuérase éste el tiempo de la gentilidad, te adorarían como á Dios de la amistad. Yó no puedo explicarte mi reconocimiento á la piedad que usas conmigo. Es cosa deplorable el verse en estado de necesitarla ; pero, ¡ cuán dulce y consolante es encontrár almas tan tiernas y tan grandes como la tuya que lo compadézcan ! Todos mis infortunios, todos mis males son nada en comparación de la satisfacción que me causa tu humanidad y afecto. ¡ Y quieres condenár mi gratitud al silencio ! ya sé, amigo, sí, ya sé que tu corazón eget-cita su beneficencia no para recibir el lisonjero tributo del reconocimiento, sino para satisfacer su noble inclinación. Pero, ¿ cómo quieres que déje de ser reconocido á tan singulares beneficios como he recibido de tu generosa amistad ? Eso no puede ser, amigo : con que, permitirás que, obediendo á la voz imperiosa de mi corazón, te diga que mi gratitud será indeleble, y que mi afecto para tí tendrá un siempre por término de su duración.

Envíame sólo la mitad de lo que me ofrécas, y sobraré para hacer de muy pobre muy rico á

*Tu fíno amigo, JOSÉ.*

## REFLEXIONES MORALES.

### MORAL REFLECTIONS.

---

¡ Oh hombre, séas él que fuéres noble ó artesano ; rico ó pobre ; dócto ó ignorante ; eclesiástico ó secular ; religioso ó militar ; soberano ó súbdito ; descíende dentro de tí mismo, y en un silencio profundo, y no interrumpido, reflexiona sobre los horrores de la náda, que precedieron á tu concepción ! ¿ Cómo de la náda has pasado á ser ? cómo en un instante has llegado á ser espíritu y cuérpo, ésto es ; conjunto de dos sustancias, cuya unión parece incompatible, y cuya acción es un prodigio continuado ?

Ni tu padre, ni tu madre tuvieron conocimiento ni poder para coordinar tus músculos, para diluir ni liquidar tu sangre, ni para endurecer tus huesos. Una inteligencia suprema, superior á todas las potencias de la tierra, y superior á todas tus ideas, quiso, y comenzó tu existencia ; quiso, y creciste al estado en que te hallas. ¡ Ay de mí ! ¿ Y quién es ésta inteligencia ? ¡ Ay ! Quién puede ser, sino el motor universal, el principio de todo lo que vegeta y respira, y el infinito ser, al que llamamos *Dios* ? Su mano omnipotente te bosquejaba, cuando tú no podías conocerle, y te conserva y mantiene en un siglo en él que se hace vanidad de ultrajarle. Pero si no eras ayer, y puede ser déges de ser hoy ; ¿ posible es que se te pase el día, que tan rapidamente se huye, sin pensar en éste criador y conservador, sin darle gracias, y sin adorarle ?

EL MARQUÉS CARACCIÓLO.

---

La verdad es la que rige los cielos, alumbra la tierra, sustenta la justicia, gobierna las Repúblicas, confirma lo que es claro, y aclara lo que es dudoso ; con ella todas las virtudes tienen su perfección. Ella es un homenaje que nunca cae, un escudo que no se pasa, un tiempo que no se turba, una flota que no perece, una flor que no se marchita, una mar que no se altera, y un puerto en donde nadie pelagra. La Verdad tiene en sí tan gran fuerza, que sin ella la fortaleza es flaca, la prudencia es malicia, la templanza es miseria, la justicia es sanguinolenta, la humildad es traidora, la pacien-



cia fingida, la castidad vana, la riqueza perdida, y la piedad superflua. La verdad es un centro adonde todas las cosas reposan, el norte por donde el mundo se rige, el antidoto con que todos se curan : es la sombra adonde todos descansan, el terrero adonde todos tiran, pero el blanco adonde pocos aciertan.

DON PÉDRO DE MEDINA.

El temor de la justicia divina es el principio que hizo nacer en la imaginación de varios libertinos las horribles ideas filosóficas, ya de negar á Dios la existencia, ya de despojar de su inmortalidad al alma. Toda la desdicha de estos miserables viene de que, lejos de contemplar al Omnipotente como á un padre cariñoso, sólo se figuran en él un juez severo; y para sacudir de sí el temor que esta calidad les inspira, forcejen á persuadirse, ó con la primera de estas dos quimeras, que no hay Dios que los castigue; ó con la segunda, que sólo pueden temer de él un castigo leve, y de corta duración, cómo lo es cualquiera pena temporal. ¿Pero que logran con esto? Puntualmente lo que el réo, que huyendo de la justicia, se arroja por un despeñadero, y por evitar un suplicio contingente, abraza una muerte indubitáble. Por el precipicio mayor de todos, que es el de la impiedad, procuran huir de la justicia divina. Y aún los que niegan á Dios la existencia, no tanto aspiran á huir de la justicia divina, cómo que la justicia divina huya de ellos, pretendiendo que el soberano juez se desaparezca de aquel augusto trono, en que los ha de sentenciar.

FEIJÓO.

El avaro ya se sabe que es un mártir del demonio, ó un anacoreta, que con su abstinencia y su retiro hace méritos para ir al infierno. El corazón, partido entre los dos deseos de conservar y adquirir, padece una continua fiebre, mezclada con un mortal frío; pues, se abraza con la ansia de conseguir lo ageno, y tiembla con el susto de perder lo propio. Tiene hambre, y no come; tiene sed, y no bebe: tiene necesidad, y no reposa: jamás se ve libre de sobresaltos. Ningún ratón se mueve en el silencio de la noche, que con el ruido no le dé especie de ser un ladrón que le escala. Ningún viento sopla que en su imaginación no amenace naufragio al navío que tiene puesto en comercio: Ninguna guerra se suscita, que no considere ya á los enemigos talando sus tierras:

cualquier rencilla de particulares, dentro de su idea viene á parár en populár tumulto, que lleva á sacco el caudal. No háy nubecilla que no imagine tempestuosa para sus viñas y mieses : no háy intemperie, que no amague corrupción á lo que tiene recogido en las trójes.

FEIJOÓ.

El Ambicioso es un esclavo de todo el mundo : del príncipe, porque concéda el empleo : del valido, porque intercéda : de los demás, porque no estórben. Tiene el alma y el cuerpo en continuo movimiento, porque es menester no perdér instante. Á todos teme, porque ninguno háy que con una acusación no pueda desvanecer toda su solicitud. ¡ O cuánto forceja con su semblante porque muestre agrado á los mismos á quienes profesa mortal odio ! ¡ Cuánto trabajo le cuesta reprimir todas aquellas inclinaciones viciosas que pueden dificultár sus médras ! De la pasión dominante son victimas todas las demás pasiones ; y el vicio de la ambición, como tirano dueño, sobre atormentarle por sí mismo, le prohíbe todos aquellos gustos á que le lleva el deseo. Ve al que va á la comedia, al que logra el paseo honesto, al que asiste al banquete, al que goza el sarao, todo lo ve, y lo envidia ; pero los apetitos están en él, aunque furiosos, aprisionados como los vientos en la cárcel de Eolo.

FEIJOÓ.

Cuánto mas abulta el cuerpo de un hombre, tanto mas tiene donde le hiéra el enemigo : y cuánto mas es la amplitud de la fortuna, tanto mas háy donde hiéra la adversidad. Son las ricas torres elevadas, y las pobres chozas humildes ; y el rayo mas veces descarga en la torre su furia, que en la choza. Uno de los mayores males que háy en lo temporal, sinó el mayor de todos, es la salud quebrada ; cómo el mayor bien la salud robusta. Y no tiene duda que, en igualdad de temperamento, mucho mas sano es el pobre que el rico ; porque éste con los escesos se estraga la salud, y aquél se la conserva con su sobriedad.

Que bella digresión hace Lucano en el libro quinto de la guerra civil, sobre la felicidad del pobre barquero Amintas, cuando pinta á César en el silencio de la noche pulsando la puerta de su choza, para que le conduzca prontamente á la

Calábria. Todo el mundo está conmovido y temblando con los movimientos de la guerra civil; y dentro de la misma Grecia, que es el teatro de la guerra, vecino á los mismos ejércitos, duerme, sin temor alguno, un pobre barquero sobre enjutas óvas. Despiértanle los golpes que da á su puerta el generoso Caudillo, sin introducir en su pecho el menor susto: pues, aunque no ignora que está toda la campaña cubierta de tropas, sabe también que no hay en su choza cosa que pueda brindar los militares insultos. ¡O vida del pobre, esclama el poeta, que tienes la felicidad de estar exenta de las violencias! ¡O pobreza, beneficio grande de los Dióses, aunque no reconocida de los hombres! Que muros ó que templos gozarán el privilegio que tienen Amintas y su choza de no temblar á los golpes de la robusta mano de César!

FEIJOO.

---

La modestia es la prenda mas amable de una doncella, aún en cotéjo de la hermosura. Esta, no háy duda, halaga y solicita mucho mas la pasión del hombre, pero aquella se grangea su mayor estimación y aprecio. La pasión nace de los atractivos que le hacen amar aquello que la provoca: mas el aprecio y estimación que infunde el decóro de la modestia, proceden del respeto que adora en la esterior compostura de un rostro la belleza interior del alma, á quien aquella retrata. Aquella misma es también seguro indicio de la dulzura de génio, y de la suavidad del carácter á quien sirve de alma, de la cual espera su mayor satisfacción y dicha en el casamiento el hombre que pretende poseerla. La hermosura es don accidental de la naturaleza, que entre pocos la reparte; pero la hermosura interior del alma la dá la virtud sola, á cualquiéra que deséa conseguirla.

PÉDRO DE MONTENGÓN.

---

En todas aquellas cosas, que esencialmente componen la felicidad temporal, conviene á saber; Vida, Salud, Hónra y Hacienda, es muy mejorado el virtuoso, respecto de él que no lo es. La Hónra nadie ignora que es parto legítimo de la Virtud. Por éso los Romanos edificaron unidos los templos de éstas dos dichas, que veneraban cómo deidades, de modo que sólo por el templo de la Virtud se podía entrar al templo

del Honór. Los mismos que huyen de la práctica de la Virtud, la miran con estimación y reverencia. La Salud y larga vida es mas natural y posible en el hombre virtuoso, por la templanza con que vive, al paso que el vicioso con sus escésos se estraga la salud, y se acorta la vida. 'La Hacienda tiene una gran maestra de economía en la Virtud, siendo cierto que se conserva evitando toda superfluidad.

La suavidad y dulzura que al alma ocasiona la buena conciencia, coloca en muy eminente grado la fortuna de los justos sobre la de los pecadores. Es esta una felicidad de poco bulto, pero de mucha monta; una piedra preciosa, que en breves dimensiones encierra grandes quilates. Es la conciencia espejo del alma, y sucede al justo y al pecador, cuando se miran en este espejo, lo que á la hermosa y á la fea al verse en el cristal; aquella se complace, porque ve perfecciones; esta se entristece, porque no registra sino lunares.

FEIJÓO.

---

¡ O Muerte, cuán amarga es tu memoria ! Cuán presta tu venida ! Cuán secretos tus caminos ! Cuán dudosa tu hora ! Cuán universal tu señorío ! Los poderosos no te pueden huir ; los sabios no te saben-evitar ; los fuertes contigo pierden las fuerzas ; para contigo ninguno háy rico ; pues, ninguno puede comprar la vida, ni aún por tesoros. Todo lo andas, todo lo cercas, y en todo lugar te hallas. Tú paces las yerbas ; bebes los vientos ; corrompes los aires ; mudas los siglos ; truecas el mundo, y no dejas de sorber la mar. Todas las cosas tienen sus crecientes y menguantes ; mas tú, siempre permaneces en un mismo ser. Eres un martillo que siempre hiere ; espada que nunca se embota ; lazo en que todos caen ; cárcel en que todos entran ; mar donde todos pelinegran ; pena que todos padecen ; y tributo que todos pagan— ¡ O muerte cruel ! ¿ Como no tienes lástima de venir al mejor tiempo é impedir los negocios encaminados á bien ? Robas en una hora, en un minuto, lo que se ganó en muchos años ; cortas la sucesión de los linages ; dejas los Reinos sin herederos ; hinches el mundo de orfandades ; cortas el hilo de los estudios ; haces malogrados los buenos ingenios ; juntas el fin con el principio, sin dar lugar á los medios.— ¡ O muerte, muerte ! O implacable enemiga del género humano ! ¿ Porque tuviste entrada en el mundo ? ...

LUÍS DE GRACIÁN.

ALGUNOS  
REFRÁNES DE LA LENGUA ESPAÑOLA CON  
SUS ESPLICACIONES.

---

*Quién mucho abarca poco aprieta.* Que esplica, que quién emprende ó toma á su cargo muchas cosas á un tiempo, ordinariamente no cümple con ninguna.

*Abájanse los estados, y álzanse los estábolos.* Que advierte la poca constancia de la fortuna.

*Quién mal anda, mal acaba.* Que se dice de él que ni tiene orden ni cuidado en sus negocios, que ordinariamente se le sigue desgracia.

*Si el corazón fuera de acero, no le venciera el dinero.* Que da á entender la dificultad que háy en resistir las tentaciones de la codicia.

*Quién el aceite merlura, las manos se untan.* Que da á entender que los que manejan dependencias ó intereses ajenos, suelen aprovecharse de ellos mas de lo justo.

*Quién no adoba, ó quita gotera, tiene que hacer casa entera.* Que enseña el cuidado con que se debe acudir al remedio de los males en sus principios ántes de que sean grandes.

*La muger del ciego, ¡para quién se aféila!* Que vitupera el demasiado adorno de las mugeres, con el fin de agradar á otros que á sus maridos.

*El buen pagador, ámo es de lo ajeno.* Que denota que él que paga bien y exactamente lo que debe, tiene mucho crédito.

*Agua ni enferma, ni embeoda, ni adluda.* Que recomienda los buenos efectos del agua, por contraposición á los del vino.

*Quién en un mes quiere ser rico, al medio le ahorcan.* Que amonesta á los que por medios ilícitos quieren hacerse ricos en poco tiempo.

*Por el alabado degé al conocido, y vime arrepentido.* Que advierte no aventurémonos el bien ó la conveniencia que gozamos por la esperanza de otra que se figura mayor.

*Díme con quién andas, y te diré quién eres.* Que advierte lo mucho que influyen á las costumbres las buenas ó malas compañías.

## TREATISE ON SPANISH VERSIFICATION.

Spanish versification is the art of making Spanish Verses according to certain rules.

These rules regard, 1st. the structure of the verses ; 2d. the mixture of the verses with one another.

### ARTICLE I.

#### *Of the structure of verses.*

#### SECTION I.

#### *Of the different kinds of verses.*

The Spanish verses are measured by the number of syllables. Variety in the number of syllables produces different kinds of verses.

1st. The verses of *eleven syllables* or *endecasílabo*, *hendecasyllable*.

Sálga mi trabajáda voz y rómpa  
El son confuso y mísero laménto  
Con eficácia y fuérza, que interrómpa  
El celéste y terréstre movimiénto :  
La fama con sonóra y clára trómpa,  
Dándo mas fúria á mi cansádo aliénto,  
Derráme en tódo el órbe de la tierra  
Las armas, el furór y nuéva guérta.

ALÓNSO DE ERCÍLLA.

2d. The verse of *ten syllables* or *decastílabo*, *decasyllable*.

Los que andáis empollándo óbras de ótros  
Sacád, pués, á volár vueéstra cría.  
Yá dirá cáda autór : ésta es mía ;  
Y verémos que os quéda á vosótros.

T. DE YRIARTE.

3d. The verse of *nine syllables*.

Si querér entendér de tódo  
Es ridícula presunción,  
Servír sólo pára úna cosa  
Suéle ser fáta no menór.

T. DE YRIARTE.

4th. The verse of *eight* syllables or *de redondilla mayor* (large roundelay.)

Al infierno el Tráico Orfeo  
Su mugér bajó á buscár,  
Que no pudo á peor lugar  
Llevarle tan mal deséo.

Cantó, y al mayor tormento  
Puso suspensión y espánto,  
Mas que lo dulce del canto,  
La novedad del intento.

El Díos adústo ofendido,  
Con un extraño rigór,  
La pena que halló mayor  
Fue volvérle á ser marido.

Y aunque su mugér le dió  
Por pena de su pecado ;  
Por premio de lo cantado,  
Perdérlo facilitó.

F. DE QUEVEDO.

5th. The verse of *seven* syllables.

¿ Quién es aquél que baja  
Por aquella colina,  
La botella en la mano,  
En el rostro la risa ;  
De pámpanos é yedra  
La cabeza ceñida ;  
Cercado de zagales,  
Rodeado de ninfas ;  
Que al son de los panderos  
Dan voces de alegría,  
Celebran sus hazañas,  
Aplauden su venida ?  
Sin duda será Baco,  
El padre de las viñas ;  
Pues no, que es el poeta,  
Autor de ésta letrilla,

J. CADALSO.

6th. The verse of *six* syllables or *de redondilla menor* (small roundelay.)

De amóres me muéro,  
Mi madre acudid,

Si no llegáis pronto  
 Veréisme morir ;  
 Catórces años téngo,  
 Ayér los cumplí,  
 Que fué el primér día  
 Del florido abril ;  
 Y chícos y chícas  
 Me suélen decír !  
 ¿ Porqué no te cásan,  
 Mariquílla ? dí.  
 De amóres me muéro, etc.

J. CADALSO.

## 7th. The verse of five syllables.

Poderóso caballéro  
*Es don Dinéro,*  
 Núnca ví álmás ingrátas  
 Á su gústo y afición,  
 Que á las cáras de un doblón,  
 Hácen sus cáras barátas ;  
 Y pués las háce bravátas  
 Désde úna bólsa de cuéro,  
 Poderóso caballéro  
*Es don Dinéro.*

F. DE QUEVEDO.

## 8th. The verse of four syllables.

¿ Quién los juéces con pasión,  
 Sin ser unguénto, háce humanos,  
 Pués untándoles las mãos  
 Les ablánda el corazón ?  
 Quién gásta su opilación.  
 Con óro y no con acéro ?  
*El dinéro.*  
 Quién procura que se aléje  
 Del suélo la glória vána ?  
 Quién siendo toda cristiána  
 Tiéne la cára de heréje ?  
 Quién háce que al hómbré aquéje  
 El desprécio y la tristéza ?  
*La pobreza.*

F. DE QUEVEDO.



9th. The verse of *three* syllables.

Dinéros son calidád,  
 Verdád :  
 Mas áma, quién mas suspíra,  
 Mentíra.

L. DE GÓNGORA.

10th. The verse of *two* syllables.

Ingráta, hermosa Antándra,  
 En cúyas centéllas  
*Béllas,*  
 El álma es salamándra,  
 Que respíra encendída,  
 Dúlce ardór, blándio incéndio, ardiénite vída.

11th. The verse of *fourteen* syllables, which is nothing more than the union of two verses of seven syllables.

Yó leí, no sé dónde, que en la léngua herbolária,  
 Saludándo á un tomillo la yérba parietária,  
 Con socarronería le dijo de ésta suérte :  
 Díos te guarde, Tomillo : lástima me da véрте ;  
 Que aunque mas oloroso que tódas éstas plántas,  
 Apénas médio pálmio del suélo te levántas.

T. DE YRIARTE.

12th. The verse of *thirteen* and *twelve* syllables, á la francesa (after the French fashion.)

En ciérta catedral úna campána había  
 Que sólo se tocaba algún solémne día.  
 Con el mas récio son, con pausádo compás  
 Cuátro gólpes ó tres solía dar no mas.  
 Por ésto, y ser mayor de la ordinária márca,  
 Celebráda fué siémpre en tóda la comárca.

T. DE YRIARTE.

13th. The verse of *twelve* syllables or *de arte mayor* (of great art,) which is only the union of two verses of six syllables.

No hémos de reírnos siémpre que chochéa  
 Con anciánas fráses un novél autór ?  
 Lo que es afectádo júzga que es primór ;

Hábla puro á cósta de la claridad,  
Y no hálle voz bája para nuestra edad,  
Si fué nóbile en tiempo del Cid campeador.

T. DE YRIARTE.

The verses of *fourteen, ten and nine syllables*, are not frequently used. Those *á la francesa* and *de arte mayor*, which were often used in the early times of Spanish poetry, are but seldom used at present.

The verses of *eight, six, five, four, three and two syllables* are known under the general denomination of *vérsos de rondalla* (roundelay verses,) and the verses of *eleven and seven syllables* under that of *vérsos italianos* (Italian verses.)

The Spaniards call *vérsos entéros* (entire verses) the verses of *eleven, eight and six syllables*, and *vérsos de pié quebrado* (verses of broken measure) or simply *vérsos quebrados* (broken verses) the verses of *seven, five, four, three and two syllables*.

## SECTION II.

### *Of the Accent.*

In every Spanish word there is a long syllable, that is, upon which more stress is laid than upon the others. This syllable is said to bear the accent, and though this accent is not always marked, it is, however, not the less sensible for it. The word *accent* is then synonymous with *long*.

We call *aguda* (acute) the syllable that bears the accent.

All the syllables which precede or follow the long syllable are brief.

The monosyllables are naturally long, but they are brief when they are placed next to another word, or when they precede a word with which they have an immediate relation.

The accent generally falls upon the antepenultima, penultima or last syllable of words, but most commonly upon the penultima.

The words which have the accent upon the antepenultima syllable are called *esdrújulos* (gliding) and those which have it upon the last syllable *agudos* (acute.)

The Spaniards call *vérsos llanos* (plain verses) the verses terminated with a word which has the accent upon the penultima syllable; *vérsos esdrújulos* (gliding verses) the verses

terminated with a word *esdrújulo*, and *versos agudos* (acute verses) the verses terminated with a word *agudo*.

In the verses *llanos* the number of syllables is equal to that determined by the kind to which they belong; thus a verse *llano* of eleven syllables has eleven syllables, a verse *llano* of eight syllables has eight syllables, &c. &c.

1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11  
 Sá|ga|mi|tra|ba|já|da|voz|y|róm|pa...  
 1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8  
 La|no|ve|dád|del|in|tén|to...  
 1 2 3 4 5 6 7  
 El|pá|dre|de|las|ví|ñas...

The verses *esdrújulos* have one syllable more than the kind to which they belong indicates; thus a verse *esdrújulo* of eleven syllables has twelve, a verse *esdrújulo* of eight syllables has nine, &c. &c.

1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12  
 Un|gá|to|pe|dan|tj|si|mo|re|tó|ri|co...  
 1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9  
 Á|tó|dos|los|a|ca|dé|mi|cos...

The verses *agudos* have a syllable less than the kind to which they belong indicates; thus a verse *agudo* of eleven syllables has only ten, and a verse *agudo* of eight syllables has only seven, &c. &c.

1 2 3 4 5 6 7  
 Con|un|es|trá|ño|ri|gór...  
 1 2 3 4 5  
 Ve|réis|me|mo|rír...

The verses which are formed of the union of two smaller verses may have more or less syllables, according as these verses are either *llanos* or *agudos*; thus a verse of *arte mayor*, which is formed of the union of two verses of six syllables, will have twelve syllables if these two verses are *llanos*; it will have only eleven if one is *agudo* and the other *llano*, and it will have only ten if both are *agudos*.

1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12  
 Di|chó|sos|vos|ó|tros—á|quién|los|cui|dá|dos  
 1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12  
 Del|mún|do|no|túr|ban—el|dúl|ce|re|pó|so...

1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10	11	
El	rós	tro	cu	biér	to	—	con	trís	te	pe	sár
1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10	11	
De	nó	ta	la	pé	na	—	del	grá	ve	do	lór...
1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10		
No	quíe	ro	vi	vír	—	ví	da	con	do	lór...	

The verses *llános* are those of general use in Spanish poetry. The verses *agúdos* are only used mixed with the verses *llános* and solely in light poetry, for they are avoided in elevated poetry. The verses *esdrújulos* are seldom used alone, they are most often mingled with verses *llános*, and this mixture is not common.

The Spanish verses, of whatsoever kind they may be, being most always *llános*, it may be said that they require an accent upon the penultimate syllable.

Independently of this final accent, the hendecasyllable verses, or of eleven syllables, require also an accent upon their fourth or sixth syllable.

As to the number of accents which may also enter into the hendecasyllable verses, and the place which they should occupy, it is impossible to determine it by fixed rules, nothing but the harmony of the verse can serve as a guide. Be it sufficient to observe 1st. that, the more accents are introduced in a verse, the more its harmony is slow and sustained ; 2d. that there may be introduced in a hendecasyllable verse, besides the final accent and that of the 4th. or 5th. syllable which are indispensable, one, two, and even three accents ; 3rd. that they are placed nearly at an equal distance from each other and not unfrequently upon the syllables which are paired.

Di	chó	so	quién	en	vér	so	ge	ne	ró	so	
Ce	lé	bra	las	ha	zá	ñas	in	mor	tá	les,	
Y	el	vi	gór	y	el	es	fuér	zo	valle	ró	so.

In the verses which are not hendecasyllable, the final accent is the only one indispensable ; one or many other accents may be in truth introduced in them, as the measure permits or harmony requires, but the place which they should occupy is not fixed, and the ear alone should be consulted.

The verses of *arte mayor* require, besides the final accent, an accent upon the second and upon the eighth syllable.

## SECTION III.

*Of the elision.*

When a word ends in a verse with a vowel and the following word begins with a vowel or an *h*, there is an elision of the final vowel, that is, it is not counted as any thing.

O|bé|lla in|grá|ta á|quién|el|ál|ma a|dó|ra !

If there should be a monosyllable consisting of a single vowel between two words, one of which ends and the other begins with a vowel, the three syllables shall be blended so as to make only one syllable.

En|ví|dia á a|qué|llos|prá|dos|la her|mo|sú|ra...

Fa|l|tán|do á Es|pá|ña|su|ma|yór|te|só|ro...

The initial *y* being a consonant cannot occasion an elision, it is not so with the final *y* and the conjunction *y*.

Di|chó|so|yó|que|ví|ne á|tan|buén|puér|to...

De|lán|te|de és|ta|pé|ña|tos|ca y|dú|ra...

The elision may be omitted, 1st. when the first word consists of a single vowel or is terminated with an accented vowel, 2d. when the second word begins with an *h*, 3d. when there is a natural pause or the conjunction *y* stands between the two words.

Dí|chó|so|hóm|bre|que|ví|ves...

O|ál|ma|des|ven|tu|rá|da !...

Un|pé|rro|y un|bo|rrí|co|ca|mi|ná|ban,

Sir|vién|do á un|mis|mo|due|ño.

## SECTION IV.

*Of the vowels which form or do not form diphthongs.*

When several vowels are in succession in the same word, sometimes they form a single syllable and at others two.

The vowels *AA*, *AE*, *AI*, when the accent bears upon the *I*, and *AO*, form two syllables; *AI* when the accent does not bear upon the *I*, *AU* and *AY* form but one. Ex. *Sa-avédra*, *a-érso*, *sará-o*, *distrá-ído*, *estáis*, *auróra*, *háy*.

The vowels EA, EE, and EO form two syllables, but when EA and EO are final and the accent bears upon the preceding syllable, they form but one; EI, EU and EY form but one syllable. Ex. *Océ-ano, pose-ér, trofé-o, línea, eléreo, momentáneo, deidad, deuda, réy.*

The vowels IA, IE, IO, IU form but one syllable, but when the accent bears upon the I, they form two. Ex. *Gló-ria, siémpre, contrário, triúnfo, alegrí-a, temí-a.*

The vowels OA, OE, OI, when the accent bears upon the I, and OO, form two syllables; OI when the accent does not bear upon the I, OU and OY form but one. Ex. *Bo-áo, po-éta, o-ído, bo-ótes, cóime, Toucán, estóy.* In *héroe* OE forms but one syllable.

The vowels UA, UE, UI, UO, UY, UIE, UEY, form but one syllable; but when the accent bears upon the U, they form two. Ex. *Iguál, fuégo, guirnál-da, mónstruo, múy, quién, quietúd, buéy, ganzú-a.*

The preceding rules are general, and liable to few exceptions; nevertheless the poets do not always strictly confine themselves to them; and sometimes unite vowels to form but one syllable which ought to form two, while at others they separate vowels in order to form two syllables which ought not to form but one. In this manner we find *poéta* forming two syllables instead of three, *real* forming one syllable instead of two, *diálogo* forming four syllables instead of three, *triúnfo* forming three syllables instead of two, &c. &c.

### Of Rhyme.

The Spaniards have two kinds of rhymes, the rhyme *consonant* and the rhyme *assonant*.

The rhyme *consonant* (consonancia) is the perfect agreement of two sounds which terminate two verses.

The rhyme *consonant* always begins at the vowel upon which the accent bears; thus in the verses *esdrújulos* it will begin at the vowel of the antepenultima, in the verses *llanos* at the vowel of the penultima and in the verses *agudos* at the vowel of the last syllable.

The rhyme *consonant* being only made for the ear, regard should be had to the pronunciation rather than the orthography of the final syllables; thus *híjo* will rhyme well with *fíxo*, (now *fíjo*), *iníquo* (now *inícuo*) with *chíco*, &c.

The rhyme *assonant* (*asonancia*) consists in the resemblance of the vowels found in the final syllables of two words the consonants of which are different.

The rhyme *assonant* always begins in the same manner as the rhyme *consonant* at the vowel upon which the accent bears; thus *ligéra, cubiérita, mésa, auménta, péna, lléva, trégua*, which have the accent upon the penultimate syllable, may rhyme by *assonance*, and the same will happen with *caracól, dolór, corazón, Díos, vóz, amó, nació*, which have the accent upon the last syllable, which shows 1st, that no regard is had for the rhyme *assonant* but to the resemblance of the vowels, and that in diphthongs, nothing is regarded but the last vowel; 2d. that the consonants must be different, and that when there are two consonants in succession, it is sufficient that one of the two should not be found in the other word.

In the words *esdrújulos*, one may be content for the rhyme *assonant* with the resemblance of the vowels of the antepenultima and of the last syllable of the two words, thus, *erá-culo* and *tártago* will form a good rhyme *assonant*, though the vowel of the penultima of the one be not similar to that of the penultima of the other.

The use of the rhyme *consonant* is much more common than that of the rhyme *assonant*, therefore whenever in speaking of rhyme the kind shall not be designated, the rhyme *consonant* will be the one meant.

Rhyme is not indispensable in the Spanish verses as it is in the French, and the Spaniards have verses not rhymed or blank verses which are called *versos sueltos* (free verses) in which it is necessary carefully to avoid the least final *consonance*.

#### SECTION VI.

*Of the ENJAMBEMENT, or running of one verse into another to complete the sense.*

In Spanish the *enjambement* of verses is permitted even in elevated poetry, that is, that the sense may remain in suspense at the end of a verse, and end only at the beginning of the following verse; which happens principally whenever the beginning of a verse is the regimen or necessary dependence of what is found at the end of the preceding verse.

Volvéd las armas y ánimo furioso  
 Á los pechos de aquéllos que os han puésto  
 En dura sujeción, con afrentoso  
 Partido á todo el mundo maniéfsto.

ALÓNSO DE ERCILLA.

Even sometimes the Spanish poets transport the syllable *mente* of an adverb to the following verse or make an elision of the final vowel of the word that terminates the verse with the vowel of the word which begins the other verse, but these *enjambemens*, which can only take place between an entire verse and a broken one, are so uncommon, that they should be considered as poetical licenses.

Y mientras miserable—  
 Mente se están los otros abrasando  
 Con sed insaciable  
 Del peligróso mando,  
 Tendido yó á la sómhra esté cantando.

FRAY LUÍS DE LEÓN.

#### SECTION VII.

*Of poetical licenses, and what should be avoided in verses.*

Though the language of Spanish poetry be not different from that of prose, and the same expressions be commonly used in it, nevertheless it is permitted to make in the construction of the phrase certain transpositions which prose would not admit of, and which contribute in a high degree to the harmony and nobleness of verses. It is always necessary to make these transpositions with intelligence and taste, so as they may not occasion any harshness or obscurity.

Harmony also requires us generally to avoid in all kinds of verses, words too long and of a difficult pronunciation, or which may have too great a conformity of sound with words already used; those having the guttural letters should be employed sparingly; the too frequent meeting of vowels, and that of rough or hissing consonants, such as the *s* or *r*, &c. should not often recur.

In short, no use should be made in poetry, particularly in high poetry, of low and prosaic words; but taste and discernment, supported by deliberate reading, will teach, better than all the rules that can be given, the choice of words that should be made; for, often, an able poet uses happily a word which seemed proscribed from poetry.



## ARTICLE II.

*Of the mixture of verses with one another.*

The mixture of verses, either as to measure or rhyme, being generally arbitrary in Spanish poetry, it evidently must be extremely various ; we shall therefore limit ourselves to make known the combinations used by the best poets, and give examples of those which particularly deserve to be known.

## SECTION I.

*Of successive rhymes.*

*Paréjas* or *pareados* are called the verses of which the rhymes are successive, that is, the 1st of which rhymes with the 2d, the 2d with the 4th, and so on, taking care to vary the rhyme every two verses.

The successive rhymes are used in the verses imitated from the French, which are called for this reason *vérsos á la francesa* ; and in order to supply the want of masculine and feminine rhymes, the verses *lláños* are caused alternately to be followed by two verses *agúdos*, as may be seen in the example which we have before cited when speaking of this kind of verse, which is now seldom used.

Entire pieces of verses *de redondilla*, and even of Italian verses may be composed in successive rhyme, by intermixing arbitrarily with hendecasyllables small verses of seven syllables which rhyme with the following hendecasyllable ; but these compositions are rare, unless it be to set them to music, and the successive rhymes are but seldom used except for proverbs, distichs and epitaphs.

## SECTION II.

*Of rhymes crossed and intermixed.*

The Spaniards give the generick name of *cóplas* to all kinds of assemblages or combination of verses, but this denomination is particularly appropriate to what we call *stanzas*.

The Spanish *stanzas* are not strictly bound to any pause, and may run into one another ; however, when they consist of more than four verses, one or more pauses are introduced, according as harmony requires it ; and generally the *enjambement* or running of one *stánza* into another is carefully avoided.

*Of stanzas of three verses or Tercets.*

The *tercets* are stanzas commonly composed of three verses either hendecasyllables or of *redondilla mayor*, the arrangement of which may take place in several manners.

1st. The first verse may be free, *suéltelo*, and the 2d. rhyme with the 3d. 2d. The first verse may rhyme with the 3d. and the 2d. be free. These two kinds of mixture are used in the *villancicos*. 3d. Sometimes the 1st verse rhymes with the 2d. and the third is free. 4th. Finally in the pieces of verses composed of *tercetos*, the 1st. and 3d. verses rhyme together, the 1st. verse of the second *terceto* rhymes with the 2d. verse of the preceding tercet, and so on to the last *terceto* which consists of four verses to complete the rhyme.

Should there be but one or two successive *tercetos* of Italian verses, there might be admitted among the hendecasyllables a small verso, *verso quebrado* of seven syllables, which would be the 1st. or 2d.

The satires, epistles and elegies are composed in hendecasyllable *tercetos*; they are also sometimes used in descriptive poems, eclogues and idyls.

*Hendecasyllable Tercetos.*

En aquél prado allí nos reclinámos,  
Y del Céfito frésco recogiendo  
El agradable espirtu (1) respirámos.

Las flóres á los ojos ofreciendo  
Diversidad estraña de pintura,  
Diversamente así estában oliendo ;

Y en médio aquésta fuente clara y púra,  
Que cómo de cristál resplandecía  
Mostrando abiertamente su hondúra ;

El aréna que de óro parecía  
De bláncas pedrezuélas variáda,  
Por do manába el águá se bullía.

---

(1) *Espirtu* for *espíritu*, (poet. lic.)

En derredor ni sólo una pisada  
De fiéra, ó de pastór, ó de ganado  
Á la sazón estaba señalada.

Después que con el agua resfriado  
Hubimos el calor y juntamente  
La sed de todo punto mitigado ;

Élla, que con cuidado diligente  
Á conocer mi mal tenía el intento,  
Y á escudriñar el ánimo doliente ;

Con nuevo ruego y firme juramento  
Me conjuró, y rogó que le contase  
La causa de mi grave pensamiento...

GARCILASO DE LA VEGA, *Égloga*, 2<sup>a</sup>

## 2. Of stanzas of four verses, or quatrains.

The *quatrains* are stanzas of four verses, the 1st of which rhymes with the 4th. and the 2d. with the 3d., or the 1st of which rhymes with the 3d. and the 2d with the 4th.

The verses that enter into the composition of *quatrains* are commonly verses of *redondilla mayor*, verses of *redondilla menor* or *hendecasyllables*.

The *quatrains* in verses of *redondilla* are called *cuartillas* or *cuartetas* and those in *hendecasyllable* verses *cuartetas*.

In the *quatrains* in verses of *redondilla menor*, the 1st. and 3d. verses may be free (*sueltos*.)

Though all kinds of stanzas may be composed in verses of *redondilla menor*, nevertheless they are seldom used except in the *quatrains*, and it is for this reason that sometimes the name of *redondilla menor* is given to the *quatrains* composed with this kind of verse.

### *Cuartillas de redondilla mayor.*

Deseáis, señor Sarmiento,  
Sabér en éstos mis años  
Sujétos á tantos daños,  
Cómo me pórtó y sustento.

Yó os lo diré en brevedád,  
Porqué la historia es bien breve,  
Y el dáros gusto se os debe  
Con toda puntualidad.

Salido el sol por oriente  
De r  os acompa  ado,  
Me dan un hu  o pasado  
Por   gua, blando y caliente ;

Con dos tr  gos del (1) que su  lo  
Llam  r y   n  ctar divino,  
Y    qui  n   tros llaman vino,  
Porqu   nos vino del ci  lo.

Cu  ndo el luminoso v  so  
T  ca en la meridional,  
Dist  ndo por un igual  
Del oriente y del oc  so ;

Me dan as  da y coc  da  
De   na gru  sa y gentil   ve,  
Con tres v  ces del su  ve  
Lic  r que   legra la v  da.

Despu  s que cay  ndo vi  ne  
   dar en el mar Hesp  rio,  
Desampar  ndo el imp  rio  
Que en   ste horizonte ti  ne ;

Me su  len dar    com  r  
Tost  das en vino m  lso,  
Que el enflaquecido p  lso  
Restit  yen    su ser.

Lu  go me ci  rran la pu  erta,  
Y   me entr  go al dulce su  no ;  
Dormido s  y de   tro du  no,  
No s   de mi n  eva ci  erta.

H  sta que habi  ndo sol n  evo,  
Me cu  ntan c  mo he dormido,  
Y as   de n  evo les pido,  
Que me den n  ctar y hu  vo.

Ser vi  ja la c  sa es   sto,  
V  o que se va cay  ndo,  
V  yle punt  les poni  ndo,  
Porqu   no c  iga tan pr  sto.

---

(1) *D  l for. de   l, (pot. lic.)*

Mas todo es vano artificio,  
 Presto me dicen mis males,  
 Que han de faltár los puntales,  
 Y allanárse el edificio.

BALTASÁR DE ALCÁZAR.

### 3. Of the stanzas of five verses.

The stanzas of five verses, called *cóplas redondillas* or *quintillas*, are commonly composed in verses of *redondilla mayor*, they also might however be composed in hendecasyllable verses. In these stanzas, the verses are intermixed in all manners, provided they should all be upon two rhymes, and that there may never be more than two successively upon the same rhyme.

### 4. Of stanzas of six verses, or sixains.

The stanzas of six verses, called *redondillas de seis versos* are commonly composed in verses of *redondilla mayor*; they might also be composed in hendecasyllable verses. In these stanzas, the verses are intermixed in all manners, provided they should all be upon two rhymes, and that there may never be more than two successively upon the same rhyme.

### 5. Of the stanzas of seven verses.

The stanzas of seven verses, *redondillas de siete versos*, are little used; they are composed of verses of *redondilla mayor*, the 1st. of which rhymes with the 4th. and the 5th.; the 2d. with the 3d.; and the 6th. with the 7th. Stanzas of seven hendecasyllable verses might also be composed.

### 6. Of the stanzas of eight verses, or octaves.

The stanzas of eight verses are commonly composed in hendecasyllable verses, or in verses of *redondilla mayor*, the rhymes of which are intermixed in different manners.

1st. The 1st. verse may rhyme with the 4th. 5th. and 8th.; the 2d. with the 3d., and the 6th. with the 7th.

2d. The first verse may rhyme with the 3d., the 2d. with the 4th. 6th. and 8th., the 5th. with the 7th.

3d. The rhymes may be crossed.

4th. Finally the rhymes of the six first verses may be crossed, and the two last rhyme together, which commonly happens in the stanzas of eight hendecasyllable verses.

We call *octávas* the stanzas of eight hendecasyllable verses, and *redondillas de ocho versos* the stanzas of eight verses of *redondilla*.

The octaves serve principally in epic and didactic poems, they are also used in descriptive poems, eclogues and idyls.

*Octávas.*

¿ Porqué con tanta sáña procurámos  
Ir nuestra sangre y fuézas apocándo,  
Y envueltos en civiles armas dámos  
Fuérza y derécho al enemigo bándo ?  
¿ Porqué con tal furór despedazámos  
Ésta unión invencible, condenándo  
Nuestra cáusa aprobáda y armas jústas  
Justificándo en todo las injústas ?  
¿ Que rábia ó que furór desatinádo  
Habéis contra vosotros concebido,  
Que así queréis que el Araucáno estado  
Venga á ser por sus manos destruido,  
Y en su virtud y fuézas ahogádo  
Quéde con nombre infame sometido  
Á las estrañas léyes y gobiérno  
Y en dura servidúmbre é yúgo eterno ?  
Volved sobre vosotros, que sin tiénto.  
Corréis á toda prisa á despeñáros,  
Refrenád ésa furia y movimiénto  
Que es la que puede en ésto mas dañáros :  
¿ Sufrís al enemigo en vuestro asiénto  
Que quiere cómo á brutos conquistáros,  
Y no podéis sufrir aquí impacientes  
Los consejos y avisos convenientes ?...

ALONSO DE ERCILLA.

The *cópla de arte mayor*, thus called because it was composed in verses of twelve syllables or of *arte mayor*, was a stanza of eight verses, the 1st. of which commonly rhymed with the 4th. 5th. and 8th., the 2d. with the 3d., and the 6th. with the 7th. This stanza is no more used at present. *Paréjas*, *tercetos*, *cuartetes*, &c. might be made in verses of *arte mayor* as also in hendecasyllable.

7. *Of stanzas of nine verses.*

The stanzas of nine verses bear the name in Spanish of *redondilla mistas*, because they are composed of the reunion of a stanza of four verses and of a stanza of five verses of *redondilla mayor*. Stanzas of nine verses might also be composed of a stanza of four verses and of a stanza of five hendecasyllable verses.

8. *Of the stanzas of ten verses, or dizains.*

The *décimas* are stanzas of ten verses, commonly of *redondilla mayor*, the 1st. of which rhymes with the 4th. and 5th. ; the 2d. with the 3d., the 6th. with the 7th. and 10th., and the 8th. with the 9th.

The *décima* may also be composed of the union of two stanzas of five verses *quintillas*, in each of which the mixture of the rhymes may be uniform, but it is better that it should be different. This kind of *décima* is called *cópla real*.

*Cópla real.*

Aquí la envidia y mentira  
Me tuvieron encerrado.  
¡ Dichoso el humilde estado  
Del sabio que se retira  
De aqueste mundo malvado,  
Y con pobre mesa y casa  
En el campo deleitoso  
Con sólo Dios se compasa,  
Y á solas su vida pása,  
Ni enviado, ni envidioso !

FRÁY LUÍS DE LEÓN.

*Remark.* The stanzas of more than ten verses are not composed of entire verses only, but of entire verses, *versos entéros*, mixed with broken verses, *versos quebrados*.

## SECTION III.

*Of the mixture of entire with broken verses.*

Commonly the hendecasyllable verses are mixed with the verses of seven syllables; those of eight syllables with those of four, and those of six syllables with those of three. Some-

times also entire verses of different measure are mixed with broken verses of different measure.

There is nothing determined however in such cases, as to the number of verses of each kind that may be mixed together. The verses thus mixed sometimes form stanzas, and at others do not form any. When they form stanzas of less than ten verses, the mixture of rhymes is the same as in the stanzas composed only of entire verses. But when they form stanzas of more than ten verses, and when they are not disposed in stanzas, the mixture of rhymes is absolutely arbitrary; even unrhymed verses may be admitted among the verses rhymed. It is however proper to remark 1st. that in mixed verses, whether they form stanzas or not, the corresponding rhymes must never be too distant from one another; 2d. that in the stanzas in mixed verses as in the stanzas in entire verses, the mixture adopted for the rhymes in the 1st. stanza must generally be followed in all the other stanzas of the same piece, and that it is the same with the mixture of the verses of different measure; 3d. that the stanzas in mixed verses do not contain commonly more than twenty verses.

The following examples will give an idea of the great variety of the mixture of the entire and broken verses which is commonly used in odes, light poetry, and pieces destined to be set to music.

Íba cogiendo flores  
Y guardando en la falda  
Mi nínfa para hacer una guirnalda;  
Mas primero las toca  
A los rosados labios de su boca,  
Y les da de su aliento los olores,  
Y estaba (por su bien) entre una rosa  
Una abeja escondida,  
Su dulce humor hurtando;  
Y cómo en la hermosa  
Flor de los labios se halló, atrevida  
La picó, sacó miel, fuéase volando.

L. MARTÍN.

*Profecía del Tájo.*

Folgaba (1) el rey Rodrigo  
Con la hermosa Cába en la ribera

---

(1) *Folgaba* for *Folgraba*, (obsolete.)



De Tájo sin testígo ;  
 El pécho sacó fuéra  
 El río, y le habló de ésta manera :

En mal púnto te góces,  
 Injúdo forzadór, que yá el sonído  
 Óyo (1) yá, y las vóces,  
 Las ármes y el bramído  
 De Márte, de furór y ardór ceñído.

¡ Ay ! ésa tu alegría  
 ¡ Que llántos acarréa ! y ésa hermosa  
 Que vió el sol en mal día,  
 Á España ; Ay ! cuán llorósa,  
 Y al cétro de los Gódos cuán costósa !

Llámas, dolóres, guérras,  
 Muértés, asolamientos, fiéros máles  
 Éntre tus brázos cierras,  
 Trabájos inmortáles  
 Á tí y á tus vasállos naturáles.

Á los que en Constantína  
 Rómpen el fértil suélo, á los que báña  
 El Ébro, á la vecína  
 Sansuëña, á Lusitána,  
 Á toda la espaciósa y triste España.

Yá dénde (2) Cádiz lláma  
 El injuriádo Cónde, á la vengánza  
 Aténto, y no á la fama,  
 La bárbara pujánza,  
 En quién pára tu daño háy tardánza.

Óye, que al ciélo tóca  
 Con temeróso son la trómpa fiéra,  
 Que en África convóca  
 El Móro á la bandéra,  
 Que al áire desplegada va ligéra.

La lanza yá blandéa  
 El Árabe cruél, é hiére el viénto  
 Llamándo á la peléa,  
 Innumeráble cuénto  
 De escuádras júntas véo en un moménto ;

(1) Óyo for Óigo, (obsolete.)

(2) Dénde for désde, (idem.)

Cúbre la gente el suelo,  
 Debájo de las velas *desapárese* (1)  
 La mar, la voz al cielo  
 Confusa y vária crece,  
 El pólvoro róbale el día y le oscurece.

¡ Ay ! que ya presuróso  
 Súben las lárgas náves ; ¡ Ay ! que tienden  
 Los brázos vigoróso  
 Á los rémos, y encienden  
 Las máres espumósas por do hienden.

El Éolo derécho  
 Hínche la véla en pópa, y lárga entráda  
 Por el Hercúleo estrecho  
 Con la punta aceráda  
 El gran pádre Neptúno da á la armáda.

¡ Ay triste ! ¿ Y aún te tiene  
 El mal dulce regázo ? ¿ Ni llamado  
 Al mal que sobreviene  
 No acórras ? ¿ ocupádo  
 No ves ya el puérto á Hércules sagrádo ?

Acúde, córrre, vuéla,  
 Traspása el álta sierra, ocúpa el lláno,  
 No perdónes la espuéla,  
 No des paz á la máno,  
 Menéa fulminádo el híerro insáno.

¡ Ay cuánto de fatíga !  
 ¡ Ay cuánto de dolór está presénte  
 Á él que viste loríga,  
 Al infánte valiente,  
 Á hómbrres y cabállos juntaménte !

Y tú, Bétis divíno,  
 De sángre agéna y túya amancilládo,  
 Darás al mar vecino,  
 ¡ Cuánto yélmo quebrádo !  
 ¡ Cuánto cuérpo de nóbrres destrozádo !

---

(1) *Desapárese* for *desapárese*, (poet. lic.)

El furibúndo Márte  
 Cinco lúces las háces desordéna  
 Igual á cada párté ;  
 La sésta ; Áy ! te condéná  
 O cára pátria, á bárbara cadéna.

FRAY LUÍS DE LEÓN, *Oda.*

Fonséca, yá las hóras  
 Del inviérno aterído,  
 Aunque tárde se fuéron,  
 Y su vez agradable permitiéron  
 Al Céfiro florido.  
 Yá el veráno  
 Nos descúbre su frén-te,  
 De rósas y de púrpura ceñído :  
 Remíte el aire el desabrído céño,  
 Y el sol líbra sus ráyos  
 De las nubes oscúras ;  
 Y con lúces mas vívas y mas púras,  
 Regalándo las niéves,  
 Al blándo pié de los parádos ríos  
 Las prisiónes de yélo alégre quíta,  
 Y su antiguo corrér les solícíta...

F. DE RIÓJA.

¡ Cuán présto se va el placér,  
 Cómo después de acordádo,  
 Da dolor ;  
 Cómo á nuéstro parecér  
 Cualquiera tiémpo pasádo,  
 Fué mejór !

JÓRGE MANRIQUE.

#### SECTION IV.

##### *Of blank verses.*

We have just seen that blank verses, *suéltos*, that is, which are not subject to rhyme, are mixed with the rhymed verses; they are likewise mixed with the *assonant* verses, as will be seen hereafter; but they may also be used alone without mixture of any other kind of verse.

Conciseness in thought, force of expression, and above all elegance and harmony in versification resulting from the symmetrical disposition of long and brief syllables; this is, what constitutes the beauty of blank verses and gives them a great

analogy with the Greek and Latin verses ; thus the Spaniards without rigorously observing, however, the rhythm of the ancients, have imitated it in blank verses with considerable success.

The hendecasyllable is the verse most used in works in blank verse ; it is called *heroic*, not because it is used in preference in the heroic poem and other works of a serious kind ; for, these are composed commonly in octaves or *tercetos* of rhymed verses, but because it imitates best the harmony of the great Greek and Latin verses, and seems therefore more proper to be used in the translations of the master works of antiquity.

In mixing hendecasyllables with broken verses of different measures, almost all the lyric combinations of the ancients may be imitated. In the following ode, the *cuartetos* of which are composed of three hendecasyllable verses and a broken verse of five syllables, the harmony of the Sapphick strophe may be easily discovered, which is one of the most beautiful of these combinations.

*Al Céfitro.*

Dúlce vecino de la vérde sélva,  
Huésped eterno del abril florido,  
Vital aliento de la madre Vénus,  
Céfitro blándo,

Si de mis ánsias el amor supiste,  
Tú, que las quéjas de mi voz lleváste,  
Oye; no témas, y á mi nínfa díle,  
Díle que muéro.

Filis un tiempo mi dolor sabía,  
Filis un tiempo mi dolor llorába,  
Quísome un tiempo ; mas ahora témo,  
Témo sus íras.

Así los Díoses con amor patérno,  
Así los ciélos con amor benígno  
Niéguen al tiempo que feliz voláres,  
Niéve á la tiérra.

Jamás el peso da la núbe párdá,  
Cuándo amanéce en la eleváda cúmbre,  
Tóque tus hombros, ni su mal granízo  
Hiéra tus álas. ESTEBAN DE VILLÉGAS.

## SECTION V.

*Of works in verse.*

The principal works in verse are ; epic poems, didactic and descriptive ; theatrical pieces, odes, epistles, elegies, eclogues, idyls and fables. As these different kinds of works are common to the Spanish literature and that of other nations, we shall not consider them. It is true that the Spaniards deviating sometimes in their composition, and particularly in that of theatrical pieces, from the precepts dictated by good taste, would seem to require some details ; but these details are foreign to a treatise on versification and would exceed its limits. It will be sufficient to remark that the Spanish theatrical pieces are sometimes in prose, and at others in rhymed or unrhymed verses, and that all kinds of stanzas, sonnets, romances, &c. are introduced in the plays ; in short, that all the other works in verse are generally composed of stanzas. As to the kind of stanzas which is proper for every class of works, we have indicated it as far as possible when speaking of the different kinds of stanzas ; the choice of them however being often left to the fancy of the poets, it is the works of those who have excelled in each class that ought to be taken as models. We shall only treat here of the small works in verse which are in some manner peculiar to the Spanish language, or which at least are subject in that language to some particular rules, and we shall pass over those, such as the sonnets in echos, *saládos*, labyrinths, cubic poems, &c. the whole merit of which consisted in a ridiculous difficulty, and which good taste has proscribed long ago.

1. *Sonétos.*

The sonnet, *sonéto*, occupies yet in Spanish poetry the rank which it formerly occupied in French poetry.

The Spaniards have several kinds of sonnets which are ; the simple sonnet, the double sonnet, the crossed sonnet, the sonnet with a tail, and the continued sonnet.

The simple sonnet, *sonéto simple*, is composed of fourteen hendecasyllable verses, the first eight of which named *piés* are divided in two *quatrains*, and the last six form two *tercets* which are called *vuéllas*. The two quatrains are made upon the same rhymes, and in each of them the first verse rhymes with the fourth, and the two intermediate ones

together. The verses of the two tercets rhyme together upon two or three rhymes, which must not resemble those used in the two quatrains.

The double sonnet, *soneto doblado*, is subject to the same rules as the simple sonnet; the only difference there is between the two consists in this, that, in the double sonnet, broken verses of seven syllables are interposed among hendecasyllables, namely: one or several in each quatrain and one alone in each tercet. Every one of these broken verses having the same rhyme as the entire verse which precedes it, this rhyme is double, and is the reason why this sonnet is named a double sonnet.

The crossed sonnet, *soneto terciado*, is thus called, because the rhymes of the two quatrains are crossed; in other respects it is like the simple sonnet.

The sonnet with a tail, *soneto con cola*, differs from the simple sonnet because there is interposed after the second and fourth verses of each quatrain, and after each tercet, a broken verse called *cola*. The broken verses thus interposed are of four or five syllables; those of the quatrains rhyme with each other, and their rhyme must be different from the rhymes of the quatrains; those of the tercets rhyme also with each other, and their rhymes must be different from the rhymes of the quatrains and tercets.

The continued sonnet, *soneto continuo*, is similar as to the quatrains to the simple sonnet or to the crossed sonnet, but the rhymes of the tercets are crossed and the same as those of the quatrains.

The simple sonnet is more used than the others, we shall give two of them, the French imitations of which are well known.

Un soneto me manda hacer Violante,  
Que en mi vida me he visto en tal aprieto,  
Catorce versos dicen que es soneto,  
Burla burlando van los tres delante.  
Yo pensé que no hallara consonante,  
Y estoy á la mitad de otro cuarteto,  
Mas si me veo en el primér terceto  
No hay cosa en los cuartetos que me espante.  
Por el primér terceto voy entrando,  
Y aún parece que entré con pié derécho,  
Pues fin con éste verso le voy dando.

Yá estóy en el segundo, y aún sospécho  
Que estóy los trece vérsos acabándo:  
Contád si son catorce, y está hécho.

LÓPE DE VEGA.

Sobérbias tórres, áltos edificios,  
Que yá cubristes (1) siéte escé los móntes,  
Y ahóra en descubiertos horizontes  
Apénas de habér sido dáis indícios:

Griégos liceos, célebres hospícios  
De Plutárcos, Platónes, Genosóntes,  
Teátro que lidió Rinoceróntes,  
Olímpias, lústros, baños, sacrificios;

¡ Que fuérzas deshiciéron peregrínas  
La mayor pómpa de la glória humana,  
Ímpérios, triúnfos, armas y doctrínas?

¡ O gran consuélo á mi esperánza vana,  
Que el tiémpo que os volvió bréves ruínas,  
No es mucho que acabáse mi sotána!

LÓPE DE VEGA.

## 2. *Sílvus.*

The Spaniards give the name of *silva* to a piece of hendecasyllable verses mixed at pleasure with broken verses of seven syllables, in which no order is observed for the distribution of the rhymes, and in which some blank verses may even be introduced. There are also *sílvus* in verses of seven syllables. The *silva* is a composition after the manner of the ode, which is proper for all sorts of subjects.

### *A la Riqueza.*

¡ O mal segúro bién ! ¡ O cuidadósá  
Riqueza, y cómo á sómbra de alegría,  
Y de sosiégo engáñas !  
Él que véla en tu alcánce, y se desvíá  
Del póbre estádo, y la quietúd dichósá,  
Ócio y seguridad preténde en váno.  
Púés tras el luéngo (2) errár de águá y montáñas  
Cuándo el metál precíoso cója á máno,  
No ha de ver sin cuidádo abrír el día.

(1) *Cubristes* for *cubristeis* (poet. lic.)

(2) *Luéngo* for *largo* (pot. lic.)

No sin causa los dioses te escondieron  
 En las entrañas de la tierra dura :  
 ¿ Mas que halló difícil y encubierto  
 La sedienta codicia ?  
 Turbó la paz segura,  
 Con que en la antigua selva florecieron  
 El abeto y el pino,  
 Y trájolos al puerto  
 Y por campos de mar les dió camino:  
 Abrióse el mar, y abrióse  
 Altamente la tierra,  
 Y saliste del centro al aire claro,  
 Hija de la avaricia,  
 A hacér á los hombres crúda guerra.  
 Saliste tú, y perdióse  
 La piedad que no habita en pécho aváro.

• • • • •  
 ¡ Á cuántos armó el oro de cruéza ! (1)  
 ¡ Y á cuántos ha dejado  
 En el último trance ! ; o dura suerte !  
 Pierde su flor la virginal pureza  
 Por tí, y vése manchado  
 Con adulterio el lécho no esperado.  
 Al menos animoso  
 Para que te poséa,  
 Das riqueza, ardimiento licenciado,  
 Ninguno háy que se véa  
 Por tí tan abastado y poderoso,  
 Que carézca de miedo.  
 ; Que cosa habrá de máles tan cercada,  
 Pues óra pretendida, óra alcanzada,  
 Y aún estando en deseos,  
 Pena ocultan tus ciegos devaneos ?  
 Pero cánsome en vano, decir puedo,  
 Que si sombras de bien en tí se viéran,  
 Los inmortales Dioses te tuviéran. F. DE RIÓJA.

### 3. Romances.

They call *romance* a piece of verse destined to be set to music, composed of a series of quatrains, the 1st. and 3d. verses of which are blank, whilst the 2d. and 4th. rhyme by assonance. Assonance is the greatest difficulty of romances,

---

(1) *Cruéza*, obs. : now *crueldad*.



because it must be the same in all the quatrains. Romances are commonly in verses of *redondilla mayor* or *menor*, and sometimes in hendecasyllable verses, for which reason they are then called *romances heróicos*. They are also in verses of seven syllables, and one of the verses of each quatrain may be hendecasyllable, this is commonly the fourth; one or two broken verses of any kind, particularly of five or four syllables may likewise be mixed with the verses of *redondilla*; in short, romances may be composed in quatrains of verses *esdrújulos* and even of *arte mayor*, pure or mixed; in a word, nothing is more varied than the versification of romances, but it is necessary that the mixture adopted in the first quatrain be followed in all the others. The romances commonly have no *burden*, there are however some romances in which the last or the two last verses of the first quatrain are repeated after the second, and so on after each quatrain, or every other quatrain. The *burden* sometimes begins only in the middle of the romance and does not always continue till the end, neither is it necessary that it should be composed of the last or of the two last verses of the 1st quatrain, it may be formed of one or two verses which are added.

The *romance* is the favourite kind of poetry of the Spaniards, it is really their national lyric poetry, it equally accommodates itself to the accents of joy and to those of sorrow. They sing in them alternately the exploits of warriors, love, adventures, &c. They call *jácara* a romance *sang* to a popular air bearing that name.

De las Africánas pláyas  
 Alejádo de sus huértas,  
 Mira el forzádo horteláno  
 De España las áltas tiérras.  
 Mira las golósas cábras  
 En las peládas ladéras,  
 Que apénas se determina  
 Si son cábras ó son péñas :  
 Tiénde la envidiósa vista  
 Por las abundósas (1) végas  
 Y comarcánas cabáñas,  
 Que cási á la par huméan.  
 Mirába por Gibraltár  
 Las heládas rócas yértas  
 Azotádas de las óndas,

---

(1) *Abundós* synonymous of *abundante*.

Y arrancádas de la aréna.  
 Mira el estrecho cubierto,  
 Y las hirviéntes arénas,  
 Que le parece que bráman,  
 Y por mil pártes resuénan.  
 O sagrado mar, le dice,  
 Haz con mis suspiros tréguas ;  
 Perdóna si ellos ó el viento  
 Son cáusa de tu tormenta.  
 Pásame en esotra pláya ;  
 Que si en élla me presentas,  
 Te ofreceré un blanco tóro  
 El mejor de mis dehésas.  
 No quiero que mis deséos  
 Váyan á tierras agénas ;  
 Da vida á un nuévo Leandro,  
 Que en tus manos se encomiéndá.  
 Esto diciéndo el forzado,  
 En las blándas óndas se écha  
 Con los brazos á remár ;  
 Hiénde, rómppe, rásga y huélla.  
 Mas allá á la média nóche,  
 Cuándo los miémbros le aquéjan,  
 Temeróso de su dáño  
 Habló así á las óndas ;  
 Queridas y amádas ólas ;  
 Pués determináis que muéra,  
 Dejádme salir amigas,  
 Que yó os pagaré ésta déuda.  
 Fuéle el viento favorable,  
 Oyó fortuna sus quéjas,  
 Y al nacér el rúbio sol,  
 Hizo pié sóbre la aréna.  
 Dió grácias al mar piadóso,  
 Al viento, nórté y estréllas,  
 Y con ceremónia humilde  
 Besó y adoró la tierra.

The verses of seven syllables disposed in *cuartétos* of blank and assonant verses as in the *románces*, and which for this reason are often called *versos de románce* are those generally used in Anacreontic odes.

No con mi blánda lira  
 Serán en áyes tristes  
 Llorádas las fortúnas  
 De réyes infelices ;  
 Ni el gríto del soldádo  
 Feróz en crúdas lídes,  
 O el truénio con que arrója  
 La bála el brónce horrible.  
 Yó tiémblo, y me estremézco ;  
 Que el númen no permite  
 A el (1) lábio temeróso  
 Canciónés tan sublímés.  
 Muchácho sóy, y quíero  
 Decir mas apacibles  
 Queréllas, y gozárame  
 Con dánzas y convites.  
 En éllos coronádo  
 De rósas y alelíes,  
 Entre rísas y vérsos  
 Menudéo los bríndis.  
 En córos las mucháchas  
 Se júntan por oírme,  
 Y al púnto mis cantáres  
 Con nuévo ardór repíten ;  
 Pués Báco y él de Vénus  
 Me diéron, que felice  
 Celébre en dúlces hímanos  
 Sus glóriás y festínes. J. MELÉNDEZ VALDÉS.

Quiéro cantár de Cádmo,  
 Quiéro cantár de Atrídas,  
 ; Mas, áy ! que de amor sólo,  
 Sólo cánta mi lira.  
 Renuévo el instruménto,  
 Las cuérdas mudo á prisa,  
 Péro si yó de Alcídes,  
 Élla de amor suspíra.  
 Pués, héroes valíentes,  
 Quedáos désde éste día ;  
 Porqué yá de amor sólo,  
 Sólo cánta mi lira.

E. DE VILLÉGAS, *Imitación de Anacreonte.*

(1) *A el* for *al*, article, poet. lic. often used by writers, as they also use *al* for *á él*, pronoun.

Vuélve, mi dulce líra,  
 Vuélve á tu estílo humilde  
 Y déja á los Homéros,  
 Cantár á los Aquíles.  
 Cánta tú la cabáña  
 Con tónos pastoríles,  
 Y los épicos métros  
 Á Virgilio no envidies.  
 No espéres en la córte  
 Gozár días felices,  
 Y vuélvete á la aldéa,  
 Que tu preséncia pide.  
 Yá te agúardan zagáles  
 Que con flóres se visten  
 Y adórnan sus cabézas  
 Y cuéllos juveníles.  
 Yá te espéran pastóres  
 Que deseósos víven  
 De escuchár tus canções  
 Que con gústo repíten.  
 Y pára que sus voces  
 Á los écos admíren,  
 Y repitan tus vérsos  
 Los melodiósos cisnes ;  
 Vuélve, mi dulce líra,  
 Vuélve, á tu tóno humilde ;  
 Y déja á los Homéros  
 Cantár á los Aquíles.

J. CADÁLZO.

4. *Endéchas.*

The *endéchas* are elegies or funeral songs in praise of the dead, they are a kind of *románcé* commonly in verses of seven syllables. The *endéchas*, in which the last verse of each *quatrain* is a hendecasyllable, are called *endéchas reales* ; they are also rhymed *endéchas*.

5. *Seguidíllas.*

The *seguidílla* is composed of a series of *quatrains* in crossed verses of seven and five syllables. The *seguidílla* has a great resemblance with the *románcé* ; the only difference existing, is that the couplets of the *seguidílla* being commonly detached, the assonance may change at every couplet.

There is a kind of *seguidilla* called *chambérge*, from the name of the air upon which it is sung, each *quatrain* of which is followed by six verses alternately of three and seven syllables, rhyming by assonance two by two, that is, every verse of three syllables rhymes with the verse of seven which immediately follows it.

#### 6. *Letrillas*.

The *letrilla* is a kind of lyric poetry of a simple and graceful style. It is commonly composed of a series of *quatrains* in verses of six or eight syllables. The *letrilla* has a great resemblance with the *romance*; but it is shorter. The 1st. and the 3d. verse of each *quatrain* are blank or rhymed, the 2d. and the 4th. are assonants; all the verses may nevertheless be also rhymed. It is requisite, as in *romances*, that the assonance be the same in all the *quatrains*. There are some *letrillas* which have a *burden*, others have none, sometimes the *burden* forms a part of the *quatrain*, sometimes it is added.

No álma primavéra  
 Bélla y apacible,  
 O el dulce Favónio  
 Que ámbares respire;  
 No rosáda Auróra  
 Tras la nóche triste,  
 Ni el pincél que en flóres  
 Bélló se matíce;  
 No núbe que Fébo  
 Su pabellón pinte,  
 O álamo que abráce  
 Dos émulas vides;  
 No fuénte que pérlas  
 Á cién cáños fie,  
 Ni lírio éntre rósas,  
 Clavél éntre jazmínes;  
 Al rompér el día  
 Son tan apacibles  
 Cómo el pastorcillo  
 Que en mi pécho vive.

YGLÉSIAS.

De éste modo ponderába  
 Un inocente pastor  
 Á la nínfa á quién amaba  
 La eficácia de su amor.

¿ Ves cuántas flores al prado  
 La primavera prestó ?  
 Pues mira, dueño adorado,  
 Mas véces te quiero yó.

¿ Ves cuánta arena dorada  
 Tajo en sus aguas llevó ?  
 Pues mira, Fílis amada,  
 Mas véces te quiero yó.

¿ Ves al salir de la aurora  
 Cuánta avécilla cantó ?  
 Pues mira, hermosa pastora,  
 Mas véces te quiero yó.

¿ Ves la nieve derretida  
 Cuánto arroyuelo formó ?  
 Pues mira, bien de mi vida,  
 Mas véces te quiero yó.

¿ Ves cuánta abeja industriosa  
 De ésa colmena salió ?  
 Pues mira, ingrata y hermosa,  
 Mas véces te quiero yó.

¿ Ves cuántas gracias la mano  
 De las deidades te dió !  
 Pues mira, dueño tirano,  
 Mas véces te quiero yó.

J. CADÁLZO.

### 7. *Liras*.

The *lira* is a small piece of hendecasyllable verses mixed with broken verses, composed to be sung with the accompaniment of a guitar or lyre. The *liras* are composed of five or six verses. In the *liras* of five verses, the four first are broken verses of seven syllables and the fifth is a hendecasyllable; the 1st. verse rhymes with the 3d., the 2d. 4th. and 5th. rhyme together. In the *liras* of six verses, the odd verses are broken verses of seven syllables and the others are hendecasyllables; the rhymes of the four first verses are crossed, and the two last verses rhyme together. There are

also *líras* of six verses the 1st. 2d. 4th. and 5th. of which are broken verses of seven syllables, the 3d. a broken verse of two syllables and the 6th. a hendecasyllable, then the 1st. verse rhymes with the 4th., the 2d. with the 3d. and the 5th. with the 6th.

### 8. *Canciones.*

The *canción* is a kind of lyric poetry, which is composed of several *estanzas* or *estancias*, in hendecasyllable verses mixed with broken verses of seven syllables. The *canción* has not commonly more than from ten to twelve stanzas, and is often terminated by a shorter stanza called *remate* or *représa*. The mixture of rhymes as well as that of entire and broken verses is arbitrary, it varies even sometimes from one stanza to the other, but in general the mixture adopted in the 1st. stanza is followed in all the others. The mixture of the verses and rhymes is not the same in the *remate* as in the other stanzas, it is likewise arbitrary.

¡ O libertad preciosa,  
 No comparada al oro,  
 Ni al bien mayor de la espaciosa tierra !  
 Mas rica y mas gozosa  
 Que el precioso tesoro  
 Que el mar del Sur entre su nácar cierra ;  
 Con armas, sangre y guerra,  
 Con las vidas y famas,  
 Conquistado en el mundo !  
 Paz dulce, amor profundo,  
 Que el mal apártas y á tu bien nos llamas ;  
 En tí sólo se anida  
 Oro, tesoro, paz, bien, gloria y vida.  
 Cuando de las humanas  
 Tiniéblas ví del cielo  
 La luz, principio de mis dulces días ;  
 Aquéllas tres hermanas,  
 Que nuestro humano vélo  
 Tegiendo llévan por inciertas vías ;  
 Las duras penas mías  
 Trocáron en la gloria,  
 Que en libertad poséo  
 Con siémpre igual deséo ;  
 Dónde verá por mi dichosa historia,

Quién mas leyére en élla,  
 Que es dulce libertád lo ménos délla. (1)  
 Yó pues, señor exénto-  
 De ésta montaña y prádo,  
 Gózo la glória y libertád que téngo ;  
 Sobérbio pensamiénto  
 Jamás ha derribádo  
 La vída humilde y póbre que entreténgo ;  
 Cuándo á las mãos véngo  
 Con el muchácho ciégo,  
 Haciéndo róstro embisto ;  
 Vénzo, triúnfo y resisto  
 La flecha, el arco, la ponzóña, el fuégo,  
 Y con libre albedrío  
 Llóro el agéno mal, y espánto el mío.  
 Cuándo la auróra baña  
 Con heládo rocío,  
 De aljófar celestíal el mónte y prádo ;  
 Sálgó de mi cabaña  
 Ribéras déste (2) río  
 Á dar el nuévo pásto á mi ganádo :  
 Y cuándo el sol dorádo  
 Muéstra sus fuérzas gráves,  
 Al suéño el pécho inclíno  
 Debájo de un saúce ó pino,  
 Oyéndo el son de las parléras áves,  
 O yá gozándo el áura,  
 Donde el pérdído aliénto se restáura.  
 Cuándo la nóche oscúra  
 Con su estrelládo mánto  
 El cláro día en su tiniébla enciérta,  
 Y suéna en la espesúra  
 El tenebróso cánto  
 De los noctúrnos híjos de la tierra,  
 Al pié de aquésta-sierra  
 Con rústicas palábras  
 Mi ganadíllo cuénto,  
 Y el corazón conténto  
 Del gobiérno de ovéjas y de cábras,  
 La temerósa cuénta  
 Del cuidadáso réy me representa.

---

(1) *Délla* for *de élla*, (poet. lic.)

(2) *Déste* for *de éste*, (poet. lic.)



Aquí la vérde péra  
Con la manzana hermosa  
De guálida y rója sangre matizada,  
Y de colór de cera,  
La cerméña olorosa  
Téngo, y la endrina de colór moráda ;  
Aquí de la enramáda  
Párra que el ólmo enláza  
Melósas úbas cójo ;  
Y en cantidad recójo,  
Al tiémpo que las rāmas desenláza  
El caluróso estío,  
Membrillos que coronan éste río.  
No me da descontento  
El hábito costoso  
Que de lascivo el pécho nóble infāma :  
Es mi dulce susténto  
Del cāmpo generoso  
Éstas silvéstres frútas que derrāma ;  
Mi regaláda cáma  
De blādas piéles y hójas,  
Que algún réy la envidiāra ;  
Y de tí, fuénte clāra,  
Que bulliéndo el arēna y āgua arrójas,  
Éstos cristāles púros,  
Susténtos póbres, pero bién seguros.  
Estése el cortesāno  
Procurādo á su gústo  
La blānda cáma y el mejór susténto ;  
Bése la ingrāta māno  
Del poderoso injústo,  
Formādo tórres de esperānza al viénto ;  
Viva y muēra sediénto  
Por el honróso ofício,  
Y góce yó del suélo,  
Al āire, al sol, al hiélo,  
Ocupādo en mi rústico egercício ;  
Que mas vále pobréza  
En paz, que en guérrea misera riquéza.  
Ni témo al poderoso,  
Ni al rico lisongéo,  
Ni sóy camaleón dél que gobiérna ;  
Ni me tiéne envidióso

La ambición y deséo  
 De agéna glória, ni de fama eterna :  
 Carne sabrosa y tierna,  
 Vño aromatizado,  
 Pan bláncO de aquél día  
 En prádo, en fuénte fría,  
 Hálla un pastór con hámbrE fatigádo,  
 Que el gránde y el pequéño  
 Sómos iguáles lo que dúra el suéño. LÓPE DE VÉGA.

9. *Baláta.*

The ballad, *baláta*, is a small piece of verse which is now but little in use, its name comes from this, that it was originally sung while dancing. The ballad is composed in pure hendecasyllable verses, or mixed with broken verses of seven syllables, and is divided into four parts, the 1st. of which is called *représa*, (repetition,) because it is wholly or partly repeated at the end of the ballad ; the 2d. *priméra mudánza* (1st. change,) the 3d. *segúnda mudánza* (2d. change,) because the tone of the *représa* is changed in it, and the 4th. *vuélta* (return,) because they return to the 1st tone. The *représa* and *vuélta* are commonly composed of three or four verses, and each *mudánza* almost always has one verse less.

*Représa.* { Tras su manáda Elísio lamentádo  
 { Mil véces éste vérsO repetía  
 { ¡Áy ! quién se viéra cuál se vió algún día !

1 a. *Mu-* { Víme yó tan señór de mi fortúna,  
*dánza.* { Tan líbre de dólór, tan prosperádo,

2 a. *Mu-* { Que no temí jamás mudánza algúna  
*dánza.* { De aquél priméro y venturóso estádo :

*Vuélta.* { Yá tóda mi ventúra se ha trocádo ;  
 { No sóy ni yá seré quién ser solía :  
 { ¡Áy ! quién se viéra cuál se vió algún día !

10. *Villancícos.*

The *villancíco*, (country lay) has a great relation to the ballad, and is likewise made for singing. It begins with a *cabéza*, which is repeated as the *burden* of the ballad. The *cabéza* is a kind of introduction containing a sentence of two, three or four verses. It is followed by a stanza of six verses

called *piés*, which is its comment. The two first *piés* form the 1st *mudanza*, the two following the 2d *mudanza*, and the two last the *vuélta*, after which the last or the two last of the *cabéza* are repeated. The *villancicos* are composed in verses of pure *redondilla mayor* or *menor*, or mixed with broken verses. The two following *villancicos* will serve as examples for the mixture of the verses and rhymes.

<i>Cabéza.</i>	{ En lo próspero y advérsese Lo que sólo satisfáce, Es pensar que Diós lo háce.
1 a. <i>Mudanza.</i>	{ Que me súa ó háje el mundo, O que me póngá fortuna
2 a. <i>Mudanza.</i>	{ Sóbrec el cuérno de la lúna, O me húnda hásta el profundo ;
<i>Vuélta.</i>	{ La razón en que me fúndo Pára que tódo lo abráce,
<i>Repetición.</i>	{ Es sabér que Diós lo háce.

---

<i>Cabéza.</i>	{ Cuándo el corazón se abrása, Écha luégo Por las ventánas de cása Vívo fuégo.
1 a. <i>Mudanza.</i>	{ No se puéde reprimír El amor
2 a. <i>Mudanza.</i>	{ Aunque mas quíera encubrir Su fervór,
<i>Vuélta.</i>	{ Que cómo es niño y ciégo, Da sin tása
<i>Repetición.</i>	{ Por las ventánas de cása Vívo fuégo.
1 a. <i>Mudanza.</i>	{ Suspiros y ánsias estráñas Van saliénde,
2 a. <i>Mudanza.</i>	{ Cuándo se están las entráñas Derripiéndo,
<i>Vuélta.</i>	{ Que el álma hécha úna brása Envía luégo
<i>Repetición.</i>	{ Por las ventánas de cása Vívo fuégo.

## APPENDIX.

### EXTRACTS FROM THE SPANISH GRAMMAR

By L. J. H. McHENRY.

London Edition.

#### *On the verbs SER and ESTÁR.\**

AMONG the difficulties which Englishmen encounter in the study of the Spanish Language, there is, perhaps, none greater than the one attending the proper choice of these verbs. A Spaniard, no doubt, perceives a very striking difference between them; yet he finds it almost impossible to make an Englishman sensible of their different meanings. SER and ESTÁR equally signify in English *to be*; but SER denotes absolute, and ESTÁR a relative existence; might I be allowed the definition, I would say that SER expresses the kind, and ESTÁR the manner of being, and therefore we find that ESTÁR is employed when the existence is connected with, and as if it were modified by, some circumstances either of time or of place. If I say "*este hombre es valiente*," this man is valiant; I mean that this man possesses that certain portion of natural courage requisite to form what is meant by a valiant man; but if ESTÁR be substituted, "*este hombre está valiente*," will then mean that the man is at that time inspired with valour by some existing circumstance.

In the same manner, *esta naranja es ágría*, this orange is sour; denotes that the orange belongs to a species, of which the acid taste is a characteristic: change the verb into ESTÁR, and *esta naranja está ágría* will then convey the idea that the orange might have been sweet had it not been gathered too soon, or some other circumstance prevented its reaching the necessary degree of maturity.

From the foregoing remarks may be drawn the following general rule: viz. that when the attribute is inherent in, or essential to the subject, we express it by SER, and when it is only accidental or contingent we make use of ESTÁR: thus, if we saw a man with a wooden leg, we should say, *este hombre es cojo*, this man is lame; but if a man walking with crutches only, it might be expressed by *este hombre es*, or *está cojo*: with *es* we should denote that his lameness was

\* See also Josse's Grammar, page 95.

deemed permanent, and with *ESTÁ* that we considered it as temporary only. This, however, will be more clearly shown in the following rules.

**RULE I.** General truths on the qualities of the mind are expressed with *SER*, and emotions with *ESTÁR*; *Ex.*

<i>La muerte es terrible,</i>	<i>Death is terrible.</i>
<i>Soy humilde,</i>	<i>I am humble.</i>
<i>Eres soberbio,</i>	<i>Thou art proud.</i>
<i>Es infeliz,</i>	<i>He is unhappy.</i>
<i>Estoy enfadado,</i>	<i>I am angry.</i>
<i>Estás triste,</i>	<i>Thou art sorrowful.</i>
<i>Está contento,</i>	<i>He is pleased.</i>

**II.** The natural beauties of the body, and its defects when deemed permanent, are denoted by *SER*; as

<i>La muchacha es bonita,</i>	<i>The girl is pretty.</i>
<i>El hijo era feo,</i>	<i>The son was ugly.</i>
<i>La madre es coja,</i>	<i>The mother is lame.</i>
<i>El padre es ciego,</i>	<i>The father is blind.</i>

**III.** The physical changes in the animal body are expressed with *ESTÁR*, as

<i>El niño está frío,</i>	<i>The child is cold, (to the touch.)</i>
<i>Yo estaba ciego,</i>	<i>I was blind.</i>
<i>Estuvo cojo la semana pasada</i>	<i>I was lame last week.</i>

**IV.** The natural qualities of substances are expressed by *SER*; as

<i>El yelo es frío</i>	<i>Ice is cold.</i>
<i>La miel es dulce,</i>	<i>Honey is sweet.</i>
<i>La leche es blanca,</i>	<i>Milk is white.</i>
<i>El plomo es pesado,</i>	<i>Lead is heavy.</i>

**V.** The chemical and mechanical changes in substances are expressed with *ESTÁR*; as

<i>La leche está ácida,</i>	<i>The milk is sour.</i>
<i>El plomo está derretido,</i>	<i>The lead is melted.</i>
<i>El agua está caliente,</i>	<i>The water is warm.</i>
<i>La carne estaba asada,</i>	<i>The meat was roasted.</i>

**VI.** When *to be* connects two nouns, two pronouns, two infinitives, or one of each, it is translated *SER*; as

<i>El amor de Dios es el principio de la sabiduría,</i>	<i>The love of God is the beginning of wisdom.</i>
<i>Perdonar las injurias es obrar como Cristianos,</i>	<i>To forgive injuries is to act like Christians.</i>
<i>¿Quién soy yo?</i>	<i>Who am I?</i>
<i>Acuérdate hombre, que tú eres polvo,</i>	<i>Remember man that thou art dust.</i>

**VII.** The materials of which bodies are formed are denoted by *SER*; as

<i>El vestido es de paño,</i>	<i>The suit is of cloth.</i>
<i>Las medias eran de seda,</i>	<i>The stockings were of silk.</i>
<i>Los candeleros son de plata,</i>	<i>The candlesticks are of silver.</i>
<i>La mesa es de caoba,</i>	<i>The table is of mahogany.</i>

VIII. *To be*, forming the passive voice, or used impersonally, is generally translated *ser*; as

El hombre <i>fué</i> criado,	<i>Man was created.</i>
Los pecados <i>serán</i> castigados	<i>Sins will be punished.</i>
¿No <i>es</i> de maravillarse que la virtud	<i>Is it not to be wondered at that virtue</i>
<i>sea</i> tan á menudo despreciada?	<i>should be so often despised?</i>

IX. Possession and destination are expressed with *ser*; as

La corona <i>es</i> del Réy,	<i>The crown is the King's.</i>
El caballo <i>era</i> mío,	<i>The horse was mine.</i>
Este vino <i>es</i> de España,	<i>This wine is from Spain.</i>
Estas ruédas <i>son</i> para un coche,	<i>These wheels are for a coach.</i>
La flor <i>es</i> para ella,	<i>The flower is for her.</i>
La carta <i>era</i> para España,	<i>The letter was for Spain.</i>
Esta máquina <i>es</i> para copiar cartas,	<i>This machine is to copy letters.</i>

X. Locality is denoted by *estar*; as

Él <i>estaba</i> en la calle,	<i>He was in the street.</i>
Yo <i>estaré</i> á la puerta,	<i>I shall be at the door.</i>
El desertor <i>estaba</i> entre dos soldados,	<i>The deserter was between two soldiers.</i>
El réo <i>está</i> delante del juez,	<i>The culprit is before the judge.</i>
Tú <i>estabas</i> con tu amigo,	<i>Thou wast with thy friend.</i>

XI. *ESTAR* is employed always to conjugate a verb in the gerund; as

<i>Estoy</i> escribiendo,	<i>I am writing.</i>
Ella <i>estaba</i> leyendo,	<i>She was reading.</i>
Él <i>estará</i> predicando,	<i>He will be preaching.</i>
Hémos <i>estado</i> arguyendo,	<i>We have been arguing.</i>

XII. Before adverbs or adverbial expressions denoting manner, we generally use *estar*; as

<i>Está</i> de moda,	<i>He is in the fashion.</i>
<i>Estaba</i> de rodillas,	<i>He was on his knees.</i>
<i>Estoy</i> de prisa,	<i>I am in haste.</i>
<i>Estoy</i> del mismo parecer,	<i>I am of the same opinion.</i>

NOTE. The last of these sentences is often found with *ser*; but the observation already made on the different meaning of the two verbs is equally applicable in this instance, and if we examine the expression, we shall find that *ser* denotes my way of thinking in a more general, and *estar* in a more limited point of view; and that *soy de este parecer* means, this is the way I always thought; and *estoy de este parecer*, this is my present opinion.

XIII. *SER* requires the same case before, as after it; as

Si yo <i>fuera</i> tú,	<i>If I were thou.</i>
Si tú <i>fuieras</i> ella,	<i>If thou wert she.</i>

NOTE. The objective case of the neuter pronoun *ello*, is frequently used with *ser* and then is generally translated *so*, as,

Vmd. dice que <i>es</i> viejo, pero ni vm.	<i>You say that you are old, but neither</i>
ni yo lo <i>somos</i> ,	<i>you nor I are so.</i>
Vm. piensa que ella <i>es</i> rica, pero no	<i>You think that she is rich, but she is</i>
lo <i>es</i> ,	<i>not so.</i>
Crés que <i>estoy</i> enojado, y á la ver-	<i>He thinks that I am angry, and so in-</i>
dád lo <i>estoy</i> ,	<i>deed I am.</i>

Sometimes it may be omitted; as

Vmd. *es* rico, pero yo no, or yo no lo *soy*. *You are rich, but I am not, or not so.*

NOTE II. Although the verbs *ser* and *estar*, as has been observed, may be used sometimes with the same adjective ; yet this cannot always be done, there being some adjectives which vary their meaning according as they are coupled with *ser* or *estar* ; as

<i>Ser bueno,</i>	<i>To be good.</i>	<i>Ser cansado,</i>	<i>To be tiresome.</i>
<i>Estar bueno,</i>	<i>To be well.</i>	<i>Estar cansado,</i>	<i>To be tired.</i>
<i>Ser malo,</i>	<i>To be wicked.</i>	<i>Ser vivo,</i>	<i>To be lively.</i>
<i>Estar malo,</i>	<i>To be ill.</i>	<i>Estar vivo,</i>	<i>To be alive, or living.</i>

OBSERVATION. The verb *estar* is often followed by infinitives, which are preceded by the preposition *para* or *por* : with *para* it denotes that the action or energy of the verb, which is in the infinitive, is about to take place ; as, *Estaba el brazo para descargar el golpe* ; the arm was ready, or, about to, strike the blow : with *por* it describes the action, &c. as not having taken place, or expresses an inclination on the part of the agent to execute it ; as, *La casa está por acabar* : the house is to finish, or is not yet finished. *Estoy por ir á verle*, I have a mind to go and see him.

### TENÉR and HABÉR, to have.\*

Both of the above imply possession ; but the employment of the latter is now limited to that of an auxiliary, in order to form the compound tenses of other verbs.

RULE I. *To have*, used as an active verb, is translated *TENÉR*, and as an auxiliary, *HABÉR*, as

<i>Tener amigos,</i>	<i>To have friends.</i>	<i>Habér dicho,</i>	<i>To have said.</i>
<i>Tengo parientes</i>	<i>I have relations.</i>	<i>Habémos hablado,</i>	<i>We have spoken.</i>

NOTE. The verb *tener* is sometimes found used apparently as an auxiliary.

OBSERVATION. When in English the verb *to be* precedes the adjectives *hungry*, *thirsty*, *afraid*, *ashamed*, it is changed into the Spanish verb *tener*, and the adjective into a corresponding substantive : as

<i>Are you hungry ?</i>	<i>¿ Tiene vm. gana ó hambre ?</i>	i. e.	<i>Have you hunger ?</i>
<i>We were thirsty,</i>	<i>Teníamos sed,</i>	i. e.	<i>We had thirst.</i>
<i>He was not ashamed,</i>	<i>No tuvo vergüenza,</i>	i. e.	<i>He had no shame.</i>
<i>Art thou afraid ?</i>	<i>¿ Tienes miedo ?</i>	i. e.	<i>Hast thou fear ?</i>

The adjective *old*, when equivalent to *of age* in English, is also changed into a substantive ; as, he was eighty years old when he died ; *tenía ochenta años de edad cuando murió*. It may also be omitted in Spanish ; as, *Hark ye ! Gil Blas, you are seventeen years old ; ¡ Holá ! Gil Blas, tienes diez y siete años*. The adjectives *hot* and *cold* admit also the same construction, provided they are applied to a sentient being ; as, we shall be hot ; *tendrémos calor*. He was so cold that he could not move himself ; *tenía tanto frío que no podía moverse*. But if the being be supposed insensible, we use *estar* instead of *tener* ; as, He was so cold (to the touch) that I thought he was dead ; *estaba tan frío que pensé que había muerto*.

RULE II. When the auxiliaries *to have* and *to be*, followed by an infinitive, denote some future action, the former is translated *tener que*, and the latter *haber de* ; as,

*Tendamos que escribir, We had to write. Había de venir, He was to come.*

NOTE. The verb *haber*, when used impersonally, requires also *que* before the following infinitive ; as, *No hay que temer*, there is nothing to fear.

\* See also Josse's Grammar, pages 86 and 166.

# TABLE OF CONTENTS.

<i>Common Spanish Abbreviations</i> - - - - -	9
<i>Introduction</i> - - - - -	13

## CHAPTER I.

### OF PRONUNCIATION AND ORTHOGRAPHY.

<i>Of words considered as Sounds</i> - - - - -	14
<i>Of the pronunciation of Vowels</i> - - - - -	15
<i>Of Diphthongs</i> - - - - -	16
<i>Of Triphthongs</i> - - - - -	ib.
<i>Of the pronunciation of Consonants</i> - - - - -	17
<i>Observations upon Orthography</i> - - - - -	19
<i>Syllabical Table</i> - - - - -	20
<i>Of the Accent</i> - - - - -	21
<i>Of Punctuation</i> - - - - -	24

## CHAPTER II.

### OF WORDS.

<i>Of words considered as signs of our thoughts</i> - - -	24
---	----

## CHAPTER III.

### OF THE ARTICLE.

<i>Of the Article</i> - - - - -	25
<i>Declension of the Articles</i> - - - - -	26
<i>Of the use of the Articles</i> - - - - -	27

## CHAPTER IV.

### OF NOUNS.

<i>Of Nouns</i> - - - - -	29
<i>Of the Substantive</i> - - - - -	ib.
<i>Of Genders</i> - - - - -	30
<i>Of Numbers</i> - - - - -	ib.
<i>Of the formation of the plural of Nouns</i> - - -	31
<i>Declension of Nouns</i> - - - - -	ib.
<i>Declension of a neuter Noun</i> - - - - -	33
<i>Of proper Nouns</i> - - - - -	34
<i>Declension of the Article un, una, a or an</i> - -	35
<i>General observations upon the Genders</i> - - -	36
<i>Of the gender of Nouns considered in their terminations</i> -	37
<i>Substantives of both genders</i> - - - - -	ib.
<i>Of Nouns Adjective</i> - - - - -	38
<i>Formation of the feminine of Nouns Adjective</i> -	ib.
<i>Collocation and agreement of the Adjective with the Substantive</i> -	ib.
<i>Of nouns diminutive and augmentative</i> - - -	39
<i>Degrees of comparison in Adjectives</i> - - -	40
<i>Of comparatives in relation to Adjectives</i> - -	ib.
<i>Comparative of superiority</i> - - - - -	41
<i>Of comparatives in relation to Substantives, Verbs and Adverbs</i> -	ib.
<i>Comparative of inferiority</i> - - - - -	ib.
<i>Comparative of equality</i> - - - - -	42



<i>Of Superlatives</i>	43
<i>Observations upon the Comparatives and Superlatives</i>	44
<i>Of numeral adjectives and Substantives of number</i>	45
<i>Adjectives which, joined to a Substantive, lose one or more letters</i>	48

## CHAPTER V.

## OF PRONOUNS.

<i>Declension of personal Pronouns</i>	51
<i>Pronoun reflexive</i>	54
<i>Table of Pronouns as regimen or objective</i>	ib.
<i>Construction of Pronouns as regimen or objective</i>	56
<i>Of Pronouns possessive</i>	56
<i>Declension of Pronouns possessive</i>	57
<i>Declension of Pronouns possessive relative</i>	59
<i>Of Pronouns demonstrative</i>	61
<i>Of Pronouns relative</i>	62
<i>Of Pronouns interrogative</i>	64
<i>Of Pronouns indefinite</i>	ib.
<i>Observations upon the indefinite Pronouns</i>	65

## CHAPTER VI.

## OF VERBS.

<i>Of Conjugations</i>	68
<i>Of Modes</i>	ib.
<i>Of Tenses</i>	69
<i>Of the Tenses of the Infinitive</i>	70
<i>Verbs which have two Participles past</i>	71
<i>Of the Tenses of the Indicative</i>	73
<i>Of the Future Tenses</i>	75
<i>Rules for using the Future Conjunctive</i>	76
<i>Of the Conditional</i>	77
<i>Rules for using the Conditional Tenses</i>	ib.
<i>Use of the Imperative</i>	80
<i>Use of the Subjunctive</i>	ib.
<i>Rules for using the Tenses of the Subjunctive mode</i>	ib.
<i>Of the Persons and Numbers of Verbs</i>	81
<i>Conjugations</i>	82
<i>Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb Haber</i>	ib.
<i>Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb Tener</i>	86
<i>Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verbs Ser and Estar</i>	91
<i>Rules for using Ser and Estar</i>	95
<i>A general Scheme of the termination of Regular Verbs</i>	96
<i>Paradigms of the three Conjugations</i>	97
<i>First Conjugation in Ar</i>	ib.
<i>Second Conjugation in Er</i>	101
<i>Third Conjugation in Ir</i>	105
<i>Paradigm of Passive Verbs</i>	110
<i>Paradigm of Neuter Verbs</i>	114
<i>Paradigm of Reflective and Reciprocal Verbs</i>	117
<i>Paradigm of Impersonal Verbs</i>	119
<i>List and Conjugation of the Irregular Verbs arranged in alphabetical order</i>	121
<i>Important observations</i>	ib.
<i>Agreement of verbs with their Subject</i>	151
<i>Of the Regimen of Verbs</i>	153
<i>Of the Verb as a Regimen</i>	ib.
<i>Of the Noun Substantive as Regimen of the Verb</i>	154
<i>Of pronouns as Regimen of Verbs</i>	ib.

# CONTENTS.

465

<i>Observations upon Verbs</i>	-	-	-	155
<i>Of the agreement of the Participle past with the Subject and with its Regimen</i>	-	-	-	156

## CHAPTER VII.

### OF ADVERBS.

<i>Of Adverbs</i>	-	-	-	157
<i>Observations upon jamás, nunca, no, mas, ménos, muy,</i>	-	-	-	159

## CHAPTER VIII.

### OF PREPOSITIONS.

<i>Of Prepositions</i>	-	-	-	160
<i>Observations upon para and por</i>	-	-	-	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Prepositions which govern the Genitive</i>	-	-	-	162
<i>Prepositions which govern the Dative</i>	-	-	-	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Table of Prepositions published by the Royal Academy</i>	-	-	-	163

## CHAPTER IX.

### OF CONJUNCTIONS.

<i>Of Conjunctions</i>	-	-	-	188
<i>Of the Conjunctions that govern the Subjunctive</i>	-	-	-	194

## CHAPTER X.

### OF INTERJECTIONS.

<i>Of Interjections</i>	-	-	-	194
<i>Names of Countries, Islands, Capes and Seas</i>	-	-	-	195
<i>Names of Cities, Mountains and Rivers</i>	-	-	-	198
<i>Christian Names most used in Spain</i>	-	-	-	199

## SPANISH EXERCISES.

### *Upon the Rules of the Grammar and their application, with remarks and observations.*

<i>Ex. I. Upon the Articles</i>	-	-	-	203
<i>Ex. II. Upon the Articles</i>	-	-	-	204
<i>Ex. III.—Upon the gender and number of Nouns</i>	-	-	-	205
<i>Ex. IV.—Upon the collocation of Adjectives and their agreement with the Substantives</i>	-	-	-	207
<i>Ex. V.—Upon the partitive Article</i>	-	-	-	208
<i>Ex. VI.—Upon Diminutive and Augmentative Nouns and Degrees of Comparison</i>	-	-	-	209
<i>Ex. VII.—Upon the preceding Rules</i>	-	-	-	210
<i>Ex. VIII.—Continuation of the degrees of Comparison</i>	-	-	-	211
<i>Ex. IX.—Upon observations on the Comparatives and Superlatives</i>	-	-	-	212
<i>Ex. X.—Upon the Numeral Adjectives</i>	-	-	-	214
<i>Ex. XI.—Continuation of the same subject</i>	-	-	-	215
<i>Ex. XII.—Upon the Pronouns personal and possessive, and on the Auxiliary Verbs ser and estar, to be; haber and tener, to have; Infinitive and Indicative present</i>	-	-	-	217
<i>Ex. XIII.—Upon the Imperfect and Preterites</i>	-	-	-	219
<i>Ex. XIV.—Upon the Pluperfect and Futures of the Indicative</i>	-	-	-	220
<i>Ex. XV.—Upon the Futures Conjunctive and Conditionals simple</i>	-	-	-	221
<i>Ex. XVI.—Upon the Conditionals past</i>	-	-	-	222
<i>Ex. XVII.—Upon the Imperative; Subjunctive present and Imperfect</i>	-	-	-	224
<i>Ex. XVIII.—Upon the Preterite and Pluperfect</i>	-	-	-	225
<i>Ex. XIX.—Upon the Regular Verbs</i>	-	-	-	226

Ex. XX.—Upon the same subject	227
Ex. XXI.—Upon the same subject	229
Ex. XXII.—Upon the same subject	230
Ex. XXIII.—Upon the preceding Rules	232
Ex. XXIV.—Upon the preceding Rules	233
Ex. XXV.—Upon the preceding Rules	235
Ex. XXVI.—Upon the preceding Rules	236
Ex. XXVII.—Upon the preceding Rules	237
Ex. XXVIII.—Upon the preceding Rules	238
Ex. XXIX.—Upon Pronouns	240
Ex. XXX.—Upon the preceding Rules	241
Ex. XXXI.—Upon the preceding Rules	242
Ex. XXXII.—Upon the Pronouns Demonstrative, Relative, Interrogative and Indefinite	243
Ex. XXXIII.—Upon the preceding Rules	244
Ex. XXXIV.—Upon the preceding Pronouns	245
Ex. XXXV.—Upon the preceding Rules	246
Observations upon the use of <i>vm.</i> , <i>vms.</i> , <i>usted</i> , <i>ustedes</i> , <i>you</i> , &c.	248
Ex. XXXVI.—Upon the Neuter, Reflective, Reciprocal and Impersonal Verbs	250
Ex. XXXVII.—Upon the preceding, and the Irregular Verbs	251
Ex. XXXVIII.—Upon the preceding Rules	252
Ex. XXXIX.—Upon the agreement of Verbs with their subject, &c.	253
Ex. XL.—Upon the agreement of the Participle past with the subject, &c.	255
Ex. XLI.—Upon the Adverbs and Prepositions	256
Ex. XLII.—Upon the Conjunctions	257
Ex. XLIII.—Upon the preceding, and Interjections	259
Ex. XLIV.—Upon the preceding Rules	260
Ex. XLV.—Upon the preceding Rules	261

## VOCABULARY.

The parts of the human body	
The interior parts of the human body	
The five senses	
Ages	
Qualities of the body	
Defects in the human body	
Virtues and vices, good and bad qualities of men	
Of eating and drinking	
Of clothes	
Of idem for women	
Beasts	
Creatures that creep on the earth	
Amphibious creatures	
Insects	
Birds	
Parts of a bird	
Fishes	
Parts of a fish	
Trees	
Shrubs	
Fruits	
Corn and its parts	
Roots, plants and herbs	
Flowers	
Colours	

## VOCABULARIO.

Las partes del cuerpo humano	264
Partes interiores del cuerpo humano	265
Los cinco sentidos	266
Edades	ib.
Calidades del cuerpo	ib.
Defectos del cuerpo humano	ib.
Virtudes y vicios, buenas y malas calidades de los hombres	ib.
Del comer y beber	268
De los vestidos	270
De idem para mugeres	271
Béstias	272
Animales que se arrastran	274
Animales anfibios	ib.
Sabandijas	275
Áves	ib.
Partes de una Áve	276
Peces	277
Partes de un pez	ib.
Árboles	ib.
Mátas	278
Frutas	ib.
Trigos y sus partes	279
Raíces, plantas é yerbas	280
Flóres	283
Colóres	ib.

<i>Parts of a kingdom</i>	Pártes de un reino	ib.
<i>Parts of a city</i>	Pártes de una ciudad	283
<i>Of the inhabitants of cities</i>	De los moradores de una ciudad	ib.
<i>Of a house and all things belonging to it</i>	De una casa y todo lo perteneciente á ella	235
<i>Of country affairs</i>	De las cosas del campo	238
<i>Of the church and things belonging to it</i>	De la Iglesia y cosas pertenecientes á ella	290
<i>Things relating to war</i>	Cosas pertenecientes á la guerra	291
<i>Commercial terms and phrases</i>	Voces mercantiles y frases	294
<i>Vessels and navigation</i>	Embarcaciones y navegacion	299
<i>The year and its parts, &amp;c.</i>	El año y sus partes, &c.	301
<i>The months</i>	Los meses	ib.
<i>The days of the week</i>	Los dias de la semana	ib.
<i>The holidays of the year</i>	Dias de fiesta del año	ib.
<i>Winds</i>	Viéntos	302
<i>Table of current money in Spain</i>	Tábla de las monedas de España	ib.

FAMILIAR PHRASES.

I. <i>Acérca de pedir algo</i>
II. <i>Espresiones tiernas</i>
III. <i>Acérca de agradecer cumplimén- tar y mostrar amistad</i>
IV. <i>Acérca de afirmar, negár, con- sentir, &amp;c.</i>
V. <i>Acérca de consultar ó considerar</i>
VI. <i>Del comer y del beber</i>
VII. <i>Del ir, venir, moverse, &amp;c.</i>
VIII. <i>Del hablar, decir, obrár, &amp;c.</i>
IX. <i>Del oír, escuchar, &amp;c.</i>
X. <i>Del entender y comprendér</i>
XI. <i>Acérca de preguntár</i>
XII. <i>Acérca de saber</i>
XIII. <i>Del conocer, olvidár y acor- darse</i>
XIV. <i>De la edad, vida, de la muerte, &amp;c.</i>
XV. <i>De una tía y su Señorita</i>
XVI. <i>Del paseo</i>
XVII. <i>Del tiempo</i>
XVIII. <i>De la hora</i>
XIX. <i>De las estaciones del año</i>
XX. <i>De la ida á la escuela</i>
XXI. <i>En la escuela</i>

FRÁSES FAMILIÁRES.

About asking any thing	303
Expressions of kindness	304
Of thanking, complimenting and showing kindness	ib.
Of affirming, denying, consenting, &c.	306
Of consulting or considering	307
Of eating and drinking.	ib.
Of going, coming, moving, &c.	308
Of speaking, saying, acting, &c.	309
Of hearing, listening, &c.	310
Of understanding and compre- hending.	311
About asking a question	ib.
Of knowing,	312
Of knowing or being acquainted with persons, forgetting and re- membering	ib.
Of age, life, death, &c.	313
Of a governess and her young lady	314
Of walking	318
Of the weather	321
Of the time of day	323
Of the seasons of the year	324
Of going to school	325
In the school	ib.

FAMILIAR DIALOGUES.

I. <i>Acérca de saludar é informarse de la salud de algúno</i>
II. <i>Acérca del hablar Español</i>
III. <i>Para hablar Inglés</i>
IV. <i>Del hacer una visita por la ma- ñana</i>
V. <i>Del almorzár</i>

DIALOGOS FAMILIÁRES.

Of saluting and inquiring after any one's health	328
Of speaking Spanish	331
To speak English	336
Of making a morning visit	338
Of breakfasting	339

VI. <i>Antes de la comida</i>	Before dinner	340
VII. <i>Comiendo</i>	At dinner	341
VIII. <i>Para comprar libros</i>	To buy books	345
IX. <i>Del alquilar un alojamiento</i>	Of hiring a lodging	347
X. <i>Del informarse de algúno</i>	Of inquiring after any one	350
XI. <i>Del partir</i>	Of departing	353
XII. <i>De noticias</i>	Of news	354
XIII. <i>Entre dos amigos</i>	Between two friends	357
XIV. <i>Del escribir una carta</i>	Of writing a letter	358
XV. <i>Del trocar</i>	Of exchanging	360
XVI. <i>De los juegos en general; y primero de él de los dados</i>	Of gaming in general, and first of that of dice	361
XVII. <i>Del jugar al ajedrez</i>	Of playing at chess	363
XVIII. <i>Del jugar á la pelota</i>	Of playing at tennis	365
XIX. <i>De las diversiones del campo, particularmente de la caza y de la pesca</i>	Of country sports, especially of hunting and fishing	366
XX. <i>Del ir á la comedia</i>	Of going to the play	368
XXI. <i>Del vestirse</i>	Of dressing oneself	370
XXII. <i>Del hablar á un mozo de caballos</i>	Of speaking to a groom or hostler	373
XXIII. <i>De ir á un viage</i>	Of going a journey	373
XXIV. <i>En una posada</i>	In an inn	374
XXV. <i>Para hablar con los empleados en una Aduana</i>	To speak with the officers in a Custom-house	377
XXVI. <i>Para una persona extraviada en una ciudad</i>	For a person who has lost his way in a city	378
XXVII. <i>Un militar vencedor, &amp;c.</i>	A victorious military man, &c.	379
XXVIII. <i>Idiotismos</i>	Idiotisms	380
<hr/>		
<i>Fábulas</i>	- - - - -	381
<i>Epítome de la Historia de España</i>	- - - - -	385
<i>Chistes</i>	- - - - -	387
<i>Correspondencia Mercantil</i>	- - - - -	389
<i>Documentos Mercantiles</i>	- - - - -	392
<i>Cartas críticas, por Cadalso</i>	- - - - -	400
<i>Cartas Familiares, por Isla</i>	- - - - -	405
<i>Reflexiones Morales, por Feijóo, Montengón, Medina, &amp;c.</i>	- - - - -	415
<i>Refranes Españoles</i>	- - - - -	420
<i>Versificación Española</i>	- - - - -	421
<hr/>		
<i>Apéndice sobre los verbos Ser y Estár, Habér y Tener</i>	- - - - -	459









